



A Man On A Mission

Season 4

by : Anshel F.P.W.

CLASSROOM OF
THE ELITE

A Man On A Mission || Classroom Of The Elite [Completed]

AnkitFTW

Published: 2022

Chapter 1 : Man on A Mission

Season 1 : Chapter 1

" One more round. Keep going. Don't stop even for a second. It doesn't matter if you are tired... it doesn't matter if you want to die, push through it... that's how you, the masterpiece can polish yourself even more. "

Inside the white walls of his world, a brown haired boy of age 15 as of that moment, was dodging punches thrown at him, of extreme intensity coming from a 7 time Boxing World Champion. They had already sparred one another for more than 16 rounds, each round of 5 minutes each, far more than a regular boxing match.

Both of them were panting as their movement definitely got a bit sluggish, unlike the early rounds.

The 32 year old champion in front of the boy had scars and injuries all over his face and body, which he covered with tattoos. The professional boxer grinned at him like a predator as he closed the distance between the both of them and threw his left hand near the brown haired boy's midsection, causing him to receive that punch straight to his gut, but instead of being fazed, the teen without any change in his expression threw an incredibly fast jab straight on the World Champion's nose, creating a loud crack noise, reverberating throughout the whole room.

Blood started dripping through the man's nose on the white floor, as he smirked in satisfaction.

" Good job Masterpiece. Guess it's my defeat this time. You truly have improved a lot. "

He raised his hand towards the teen, who grabbed it without any hesitation, causing the older man's smirk to get wider.

Immediately he pulled his hand with an incredible force, but didn't get his desired result as the brown haired teen stood still on his place like a rock , without moving an inch. Immediately the boy's empty eyes radiated a large amount of blood lust as he immediately kned the boxer on his midsection with an incredible force, causing him to drop to his knees. He started coughing out blood but got kicked on his head with an incredible force, causing him to fall unconscious.

But unfortunately for him, the boy was not planning to stop. As he readied his arm for another punch-

" It's enough Kiyotaka. Stop right now. "

The brown haired teen, who now goes by the name of Kiyotaka immediately retreated his arms back to himself and faced the man, calling out to him.

Similar to his own empty eyes, the man looked at him with apathy, while wearing a small frown on his face. The only difference between them was that Kiyotaka's eyes were empty and filled with nothingness whereas the older male's eyes were sharp and radiating cold anger.

The older male immediately pointed towards the now unconscious boxer and raised his voice.

" Immediately take him to the nurse for a check up, while I have a talk with my 'son'. "

" Y-yes Professor.A-ayanokouji. "

" H-hurry u-up. I don't wanna-die yet. "

The unconscious body was picked up by two young males, most likely the age of 23-25, wearing white coats and masks on their face.

Professor Ayanokouji directed his glare towards Kiyotaka, who remained unfazed and looked at the older man with an empty gaze in his eyes, as if he didn't just massacre a 7 time World Champion a couple minutes ago.

" Your last attack was very unnecessary. He could've died. "

" After our Sparring Session ended, he initiated the fight by pulling my arm like that. The White Room taught me that I should always be careful whenever someone sneak attacks me. That's what I did. It's called self defence, so I don't see the problem.

Also you are saying as if I hadn't killed 12 instructors before. "

The boy's voice was monotonous and robotic as he described himself killing 12 people without feeling any remorse.

Professor.Ayanokouji's glare hardened as he immediately turned his back towards the brown haired boy.

" Go to your room and take a shower immediately. After that, enter my room. Let's have a father-son chat. "

Kiyotaka's face showed no change in expression, though he felt disgusted when he heard the word 'father' come out of that man's mouth.

Nodding quickly, he walked away with quick footsteps from that man, trying to somehow hide that disgust beneath the deepest parts of his empty heart.

" Why so far away? Come near me for a bit. I have something important to show you. "

Kiyotaka Ayanokouji, still wearing his white uniform, slowly took

small steps with caution towards his 'father' who was sitting on his office chair at the moment.

Kiyotaka's eyes met some document papers, which that man took out from his drawers.

He sent a bored gaze towards his son, who was staring at those documents with mild curiosity in his eyes.

" Don't be shy and take a look at the documents. I took it out for you personally. It's important for your future. "

Kiyotaka grabbed the papers and started shuffling through them as his father started filling him with information.

" White Room is getting shut down because someone leaked the news of our presence, resulting in the Government starting an investigation against us.

The other students from the 5th Generation are going to be transferred to one of my mansions, for the meantime.

But since you are the masterpiece of the White Room, I can't let you have an easy life or you will start gaining rust on your skills. So, here's your task in the meantime the WhiteRoom is being shut down

You are to be admitted into Advance Nurturing High School, which is directed by one of my close colleagues.

You are being admitted to Class-D, the worst Class of your year.

You would get 3 years on your tenure to get to Class-A.

You are not allowed to change your classes.

If you successfully reach Class-A, you will get freedom for your lifetime, you won't be pressured by me to do anything against your will...

But if you fail on your mission, after graduating from ANHS, just like these past couple years, I would gain complete control over every single action of you.

Am I clear? "

Kiyotaka, who was looking through the pages of the documents of the school, looked back up towards his father with suspicion in his eyes.

" Why are you doing this? There's no way you are letting me gain freedom after all these years. What do you really want? "

Mr.Ayanokouji sent him a small smirk, snatching the papers away from him.

" Don't get cocky now... who says that you are reaching Class-A? I will make sure you don't reach Class-A by sending a lot of hurdles in your path. And staying in Class-D is already enough of a liability for you. "

" What's the deal with this whole Class-D and rising to Class-A? Is

there some kind of class competition or something? "

The old man shrugged his shoulders before getting up from his chair.

" Who knows... "

He slowly raised his hand and put it on Kiyotaka's head, slightly ruffling his hair. One may think it was a loving moment between a father and a son, but it was far from it. He increased his pressure over his son's head and forced him to look down.

" You've worked hard all these years Kiyotaka... Don't you dare disappoint me now. My expectations are incredibly high for you. "

The boy didn't bother pushing away his 'father's' hand and just nodded at him quietly.

Satisfied by his son's reaction, Professor Ayanokouji retreated his hands and slowly made his way out of the room, but he was immediately stopped as Kiyotaka grabbed his hand.

The glare he sent to the brown haired teen was colder than ice which would cause anyone else to freeze in fear. But unfortunately for Mr.Ayanokouji, Kiyotaka was not just 'anyone'. He was the 'Demon of the Fourth Generation'. Not being fazed at all at his father's glare, Kiyotaka looked straight into his ice cold eyes.

" When do I have to leave? "

" Tomorrow."

The brown haired boy slightly raised his eyebrows in confusion.

" No entrance exam or interviews? "

Mr.Ayanokouji gave him a deadpan expression before opening the door.

" You don't need it. "

Without bidding his 'son' farewell, the old man walked away and went towards his favourite location of the facility. The rooftop.

He leaned on the railings while taking out a small packet of cigarettes.

He lit one up before putting it in his mouth as he sighed to himself.

' Show me what you can do, Kiyotaka. I'm looking forward to the results you give me. '

End of Chapter 1

Words : 2219

New fic !!! I'm putting my OregairuxCote fic on hiatus till the end of May.... In the meantime , I'm going to update this one.

It's going to be a Kiyo in Class-D fic. I won't make Class-D act unnecessarily stupid without a reason and give most of the characters their own depth.

Kiyotaka will not be looking for a peaceful life only as he is treating

this less like a freedom and more like a mission.

But still he would be slowly starting to enjoy his life and not forget about his peaceful life-chan.

The ship will be Ayanokouji x a likeable Horikita.

Don't be pissed about it. I'm planning to make Horikita a likeable character with a lot of development, although not too fast but still, and I'm not planning to make her unnecessarily annoying.

So I request you to read this fic and not throw it away just because you dislike Canon Horikita.

Also fuck you to all the people who reported this story before.

Anyways that's all for this chapter. See ya.

Chapter 2 : A New Environment

Season 1 : Chapter 2

Is this freedom? Should I enjoy these 3 years that I am getting away from ' that place. ' Should I enjoy my life or should I just focus on my mission and keep moving forward? '

These were the thoughts going through the mind of one 15 year old brown haired boy, who's name is Ayanokouji Kiyotaka, also known as the **'Demon Of The Fourth Generation'** or **'The Masterpiece Of The White Room'**. He was at the moment waiting at the bus stop, waiting for his bus to arrive. His 'father' talked to him about sending him to school by his limousine, but the boy rejected his advances, as a result of which, the man sighed and dropped him off at the bus stop, around 10 minutes away from the White Room. Guess since this is the last time they will see each other's face for 3 years, the man decided to be a little lenient. How sentimental. He could cry.

Soon, the bus arrived at the stop, as the boy took around 8 seconds, marvelling at the massive size of the vehicle in front of his eyes, before entering it. The driver sent him an annoyed glance, but the brown haired boy didn't even bat an eye at him and went inside.

As he entered the foreign vehicle, once again curiosity overtook his senses as he saw the insides of the bus. There were specific places where people can put their hands which assists to keep them in balance while the vehicle is moving.

In Spite of the many empty seats present in the bus, Kiyotaka went towards the end corner of the bus and decided to stand holding one of those railings. On his way, his eyes went towards a black haired girl with fair skin. She had a stern look on her face as she was reading a book. The reason the brown haired boy's gaze went towards the girl in the first place was because she was wearing the same uniform as his.

Deciding not to stare at her furthermore, the ever curious boy silently went towards the end.

He took out a spreadsheet out of his pocket where he made a rough draft about all the things he knew about the school and started thinking to himself, while looking at it one last time.

' A school where Classes are divided from Best to Worst. So, I can

safely assume that it follows a meritocracy system. If that is the case, it would be quite a difficult task to carry other students to Class-A.

I guess sacrificing some of them in the future is a must... but maybe there's some kind of limitation to that as well.

On what basis will the class compete anyway?

School Tests? P.E Exams? No.... That's too simple for 'that man' to let me join this institution. There must be some kind of special test to check our worth. '

As Kiyotaka was lost in his thoughts, his ears suddenly picked up on a commotion taking place at the front of the bus. It was between an office lady, who was arguing with a blonde haired guy with a decent build. He was also wearing the same uniform as Kiyotaka. They were arguing about how the boy was sitting on a priority seat, not giving it to the old lady and how it should be his duty to serve the society.

In response to that, the boy gave his fair share of an argument with nothing but logic, sealing the office lady's mouth shut who was clenching her fists in frustration.

Later a short haired girl with beige colour joined the conversation and requested at least someone from the bus to give up their seat. Kiyotaka found her high pitched voice a little annoying, but decided to keep his mouth shut.

Later, an office lady out of guilt gave up her seat...

It was quite an interesting scenario this early in the morning. Just the topic of letting someone sit in a priority seat can escalate into such a huge argument..... Someone like Kiyotaka, a foreigner to outside society, had no idea of that.

Soon, the bus reached the desired destination. The new cage which will keep Kiyotaka trapped for the next 3 years... Advanced Nurturing High School.

Not wanting to be late for the Opening Ceremony, Kiyotaka jogged his way to the gym hall. It definitely caused some people to frown in annoyance towards his direction, but it didn't matter to the boy.....

Guess he should've just walked his way into it.. The ceremony was extremely boring where several teachers and investors were giving speeches about the history and the heritage of the Institution.

While they were talking, Kiyotaka noticed that the whole area was filled with CCTV cameras, way more than needed.

' Let's see 1..2...3..4.....9....16. 16 total CCTV cameras in the gymnasium only. Isn't it way more than normally needed? In the training halls of the WhiteRoom the number was only 8. I wonder what's

the reason behind the presence of this number? Do a lot of crimes take place here.. Since Class Competition is the meta here, I don't doubt the possibility.

I have a theory but I should first clarify it before going into the deep hole.'

' Guess I was right. Every single place is littered with cameras .

In the halls there were 12 cameras on the first floor, while there were 10 cameras in the Second Floor. And guess what? The classroom has 4 cameras, hidden right on the corners of the room, away from common people's eyesight. '

After observing the cameras of the class, Kiyotaka slowly took his seat at the far corner of the room, beside the window. It was definitely a good spot to relax during the break time, after a whole day of attending different classes.

He then started observing his new classmates...

They definitely didn't seem too civilised but none of them except for a couple of students looked like troublemakers. Again, looks can be deceiving. There were several people who had already started making friends. They were happily chatting with one another, on different topics like romance manga, fashion shows, games etc.

' I wonder how it feels to live this, freely without any responsibility or pressure over your back. To gain freedom over yourself... Must be nice. '

As he was observing his classmates, Kiyotaka suddenly felt someone's presence near him as someone sat right beside him. It was none other than the black haired girl from the bus. Once she sat down, she right away opened the book she was reading, 'Crime and Punishment', quite a unique find.

' Looks like she is my classmate. Should I greet her? She looks smart ... Again looks can be deceiving but there is no harm in greeting her, is it? Maybe she could be a useful ally in the future. '

" Good Morning. "

Kiyotaka got no response to his greeting as the girl was still concentrating on her book. Realising that he won't get his desired response, he sighed before looking away.

" Good Morning. "

The brown haired boy's eyes travelled towards the black haired girl who gave him a side glance filled with disinterest.

' She looks like she doesn't want to get bothered. Maybe I should leave her alone for now. We have a whole year to interact with one another. Well, let's at least introduce myself. '

" My name is Ayanokouji Kiyotaka. Nice to meet you. "

The black haired girl's eyes went back towards her book.

" Do you mind if I don't give my name? "

" If you are feeling uncomfortable, then sure. No one's forcing you. "

' First impressions are important. Never bother a girl who doesn't look like she is in a good mood, or they would have a bad impression of you regardless of how you act later. It's basic human psychology. '

He heard the black haired girl giving a short sigh before she looked straight in his eyes. Her eyes were slightly narrowed as if she was trying to suspect if he had any hidden intention.

" Horikita Suzune. Nice to meet you..I guess. "

Not trying to bother her further, Kiyotaka gave her a short nod before looking towards the window, while the black haired girl, named Horikita, focused back on her book, feeling slightly thankful that she didn't have to involve herself in unnecessary conversations, this early in the morning.

" This seems like a rather well-equipped classroom. It would appear to live up to people's expectations, hmm? "

The same blonde haired narcissistic guy who sealed the office lady's mouth shut, apparently was a student of Class-D as well. Coincidences can be freaky. He sat on the seat labelled 'Koenji' and started shaping his nails while putting both of his feet on the desk.

Immediately the other students gave him the stink eye and slowly drifted away from him, though it looks like it didn't affect the blonde much as there was still that everlasting smug grin present on his face.

" What an unpleasant co-incidence. "

Kiyotaka heard Horikita mutter to herself while glancing at the boy named Koenji.

' He screams of narcissism but from the way he carries himself and from the way he speaks, I can tell that he is no ordinary person. I might have to keep a close eye on him and see whether he would be useful or a liability. '

As Kiyotaka was lost in his thoughts, the first bell rang and a beautiful woman appeared inside the classroom.

" Hello Students... My name is Chabashira Sae. I would be the Homeroom Teacher of Class-D. "

End of Chapter 2

Words : 2307

A couple changes already... Kiyotaka instead of sitting in the bus, stood at the far corner, causing the " Why were you looking at me " conversation to not happen. Also because of this, Horikita doesn't have too much of a bad impression as Canon.

And because her mood was not soured because of apparently Kiyotaka 'wasting her time ' , here she at least introduced herself.

Also what do you think of the way I'm writing this story? Do you guys

prefer me writing in 1st person POV or 3rd Person?

Anyways that's all for this chapter. Hope you guys are enjoying it. See ya .

Chapter 3 : Questions

Season 1 : Chapter 3

As the first bell rang, the door of the room opened and a young woman with dark brown hair walked inside of the room. In Kiyotaka's eyes, she was extremely beautiful though the boy felt no sense of attraction towards her. It's not just her. He, at the moment felt no attraction towards any person of the opposite sex.

He is like a caterpillar who still has not evolved into a full fledged butterfly. An unevolved species lacking basic human abilities like emotions and social interactions.

Anyways, the woman was extremely beautiful. Her black hair was tied in a ponytail, and paired with her suit and delicate features, she looked like someone who firmly believed in discipline.

Just like his seatmate, her face also kept a stern mask as every step of her heels creating a small clacking noise. She stood on the podium and looked around the whole Class, surveying them.

" Good morning to you, students. I'm the instructor for Class D. My name is Chabashira Sae. I usually teach Japanese History. However, at this school, we do not change classrooms for each grade. For the next three years, I will be acting as your homeroom teacher, so I hope to get to know all of you. It's a pleasure to meet you. The entrance ceremony will be in the gymnasium one hour from now, but first, I will distribute written materials with information about this school's special rules. I will also hand out the admission guide. "

Her voice was monotone throughout the whole speech as if she was reading a script for her introduction. Though no one made fun of it since they were astonished by how gorgeous their homeroom teacher was.

"Being beautiful definitely has it's advantages. Someone could commit a heinous crime and get away with it just because they are beautiful. If I had that perk, then life would've been way easier. I blame that man for not giving me good genes."

The students in the front seats passed the familiar documents to the students behind them. As the documents reached Kiyotaka's hands, he started reading every single word written on it.

The Tokyo Metropolitan Advanced Nurturing School differed from other Japanese high schools in a few key ways. All students are required

to live in dormitories located within the school's premises. Also, except for special cases, like inter school events, students were forbidden to contact anyone outside the school. Even then, one is only permitted to come in contact with other participants during the event. In addition to this; contact with one's family was forbidden without authorization. Naturally, leaving the school grounds without permission was also strictly forbidden. On the other hand, the campus is equipped with many excellent facilities. With its own karaoke spot, theatre, cafe, boutique, and more, one could easily compare this school to a small city, being more than 600,000 square metres in size. The school also broaded another unique feature: The S-System.

I would love to go to the cafe. I know that I'm here to fulfil a mission, but there's no way I'll leave without tasting what actual food from the outside world feels like. Even in today's breakfast, the chefs in the WhiteRoom served plain Oatmeal with different kinds of healthy fruits. It's not that they were bad, but I want to see if food outside the White Room is different or not.'

"I will now hand out your student ID cards. By using your ID cards, you can access any of the facilities on campus, purchase goods from the store, and so on. As you can already infer, it acts like a credit card. However, it is imperative that you pay attention to the points that you spend. At this school, you can use your points to buy anything. Anything located in the school premises is available for purchase."

'So points will act as currency...how fascinating. Points acting as currency, instead of physical money would definitely aid a lot of students to prevent financial troubles.

Also buy anything...I wonder what classifies the word 'anything'. Can I buy the rights to fire a teacher or expel another student? Maybe there are some limitations...Eh,I'll clear all my doubts later on.'

"Your student cards can be used simply by swiping them through the machine scanner. The method is simple, so you shouldn't get confused. Points are automatically deposited into your account on the first of every month. You should all have received 100,000 points already. Keep in mind that one point is worth one yen. No further explanation should be necessary." The classroom immediately erupted in surprise and shock.

"100,000 yen every month."

"Dude we are rich."

Kiyotaka looked towards his side and noticed Horikita frowning in confusion as she muttered to herself.

"100,000 yen every month? Isn't the school being too lenient? "

"I doubt that. Maybe there is some hidden rules that the school is refraining the teachers from informing the students. Doesn't 100,000

yen a month sound too big of an amount to give a student? Then, again it's nothing but a baseless assumption of mine."

Kiyotaka with a low voice interrupted her thoughts as he gave the girl his own opinion.

'Revealing my doubts to her may be a gamble but this would give me a little knowledge of how her mind works...Will she agree with my logic or will she look past it just because I ended my sentence saying that it's an assumption.'

Horikita looked at the brown haired boy's face for a couple seconds before nodding to herself.

"I can see where you are coming from. There's no way the school will give their students a guaranteed amount of 100,000 yen every month. That seems way too far fetched in my opinion. But let's suppose they don't give the students a guaranteed amount, so how will the amount of points differ?"

'She's good. It seems that she is not looking past my words and actually analysing them.'

Chabashira-Sensei slammed her book on the podium, causing the chatter around the whole class to die down. A small smirk then formed on her face.

"Shocked by the amount of points you've been given? This school evaluates its students' talents. Everyone here has passed the entrance examination, which itself speaks to your value and potential. The amount you've received reflects the evaluation of your worth. You can use your points without restraint. After graduation, however, all of your points return to the school. Because it's impossible to exchange your points for cash, there's no advantage to saving them. Once points have been deposited into your account, it's up to you on how to spend them. Do as you like. In the event that you don't want to spend your points, you may transfer them to someone else. However, extorting money from your peers is not allowed. This school monitors bullying very carefully."

*'I see. **Worth** huh.... I wonder how they evaluate it..'*

Kiyotaka looked at Horikita who had her eyebrows scrunched up as she was thinking something deeply.

After discussing all the information, Chabashira looked towards the whole class with a scrutinising expression before sighing softly to herself.

Nobody was paying attention to her words. Most of them were chattering about how incredible it was to get 100,000 yen every month while some were talking about what they are planning to buy after class.

" Well, it appears no one has any questions. I hope that you enjoy

your time here as students of Class-D." Her voice towards the end had a sarcastic tone which no one other than a couple students including his seatmate noticed.

"Excuse Me."

All the chatter died down as the students looked towards the source of the voice. There stood Kiyotaka with his hands rising slightly.

"I would like to ask you some questions please."

"Oh!? Ayanokouji Kiyotaka right? Ask me whatever you want..I can answer them if they are within my capabilities."

Her sharp and sarcastic tone immediately was replaced by a slightly pleased tone as she gave him a small smirk as if she was expecting something.

Horikita opened one of her empty notebooks and looked at the brown haired boy curiously.

"You said that this school determines the Value of the Students based on their 'worth' am I correct?"

"Yes. Your worth has already been decided based on your results in the entrance exam. I believe I already clarified the matter."

In Spite of her words, Chabashira-Sensei didn't look a least bit bothered and even seemed a little amused.

"Can you please clarify whether this 'worth' of ours will fluctuate throughout the whole school year or would it remain constant?"

A lot of the other students, not understanding the meaning behind his words, looked away and didn't bother paying any attention to it. Whereas a couple of attentive students whom Kiyotaka can describe as future assets looked at him with interest in their eyes.

The homeroom teacher of Class-D gave him a smirk of satisfaction as she crossed both of her arms under her bust.

"I'm sorry but I cannot do that."

Instead of looking apologetic, she just gave him that challenging smile of hers.

"Well then, can you please answer me this question. Will our 'worth' be determined with the CCTV cameras over there?"

Immediately the students who were paying close attention, looked towards the place the brown haired boy pointed at and gasped in surprise. The students who were not paying attention, followed their gaze and looked at the four CCTV cameras recording them.

"I didn't even see that."

"They are so high up."

Chabashira gave him a nonchalant smile, though Kiyotaka could feel the little amount of excitement her face was showing.

"Once again I'm sorry but I cannot do that. Any other questions?"

"Just one last question. You said that we can buy 'anything' in this school. Are there any limitations to that 'anything'?"

"Umm I don't understand your words, Ayanokouji-kun."

The short haired girl who was already at the top of the social ladder said that in her innocent voice, causing a lot of murmurs of 'yeah's. Kiyotaka heard Horikita sigh in displeasure while slightly glaring at the girl in front. After a couple seconds, she 'tched' at the annoying mutters of 'the brown haired boy trying to act smart' and glared at all of the idiots, who were vocal in their displeasure.

"I don't think Ayanokouji-kun was talking to any of you. He was talking to the teacher. So would you mind giving your baseless opinions somewhere else?"

Horikita nonchalantly dissed their whole existence in an ice cold tone, way differently than how she addressed Kiyotaka, all the while sitting on her seat, causing a lot of the vocal students to frown at her words. Just as they were about to retort to her words-

Chabashira slowly clapped her hands one time and smirked at her students.

"It's just the first day and you are already acting like this? Not even letting a teacher have a conversation? I'm impressed."

Her condescending tone immediately shut them up. After that she gave Kiyotaka a smile mixed with satisfaction and challenge as she gave her reply.

"Can you elaborate what falls into that 'anything' of yours Ayanokouji?"

"Let's suppose hypothetically, I don't like someone or I'm getting bullied. If I want to, then can I buy the rights to kill that person without facing any consequences?"

The whole room went silent as soon as they heard the brown haired boy talking about murdering someone with a nonchalant tone.

They looked at his face to see if he was joking or not, but that emotionless expression of his proved them that this was a genuine question on his....

Both Chabashira's and Horikita's eyes widened a little, but the former composed herself first.

"Even if you can buy 'anything' there is still some limits to it. For example, you can't buy the rights to kill someone, Ayanokouji or you can't buy the rights to expel someone. Any other questions?"

"No, that's all from me Sensei. Thank you for indulging yourself in this curiosity of mine. I appreciate it."

Kiyotaka sat down on his seat quietly while a couple students, who understood the meaning behind his questions, looked at him with a little awe and those who just looked at it from the base

perspective, looked at him with fear in their eyes,mostly remembering the last question of his.

"The pleasure was mine,Ayanokouji.Your questions were definitely.....interesting to say the least.Just heed one advice from me:

Be Careful....."

End Of Chapter 3

Words :2815

Starting from next chapter the story will be from Kiyotaka's POV. I tried making it 3rd persin but it's really difficult to convey emotions like this.

Also I'm sure you are already seeing the changes in Suzune..The reason she is acting so differently will be revealed later on.

Also,you may ask why is Kiyotaka acting a little differently?Well it's simple.Unlike Canon,He admitted in the school on the same day that he left the WhiteRoom.So he has no idea and thoughts about being average, also because of the lack of Matsuo,his social skills are even worse than canon.

Anyways that's all for this chapter.See ya.

Chapter 4 : Speculations

Season 1 : Chapter 4

Ayanokouji POV

After our homeroom teacher left the classroom, students started talking with one another about various topics. Most of them were discussing how they were going to spend the large amount of points they just received from the school, not even trying to spend a couple seconds to think about my question.

Well it's not like I should blame them. If my old man didn't give me those hints, maybe I would be oblivious to the incoming dread we were about to face.

I gave my seatmate a small glance. She seems to be one of the only people to at least understand the hidden meaning behind my words. Well.... let me rephrase my words. Maybe she is not the only one, maybe there were other students who understood the meaning. If that is the case, then they are quite good at hiding their interest, it seems.

Horikita seemed to be immersed in whatever she was doing. She was jotting down something quickly in her notebooks with a small frown on her face. I decided to see for myself what's going on in that mind of hers. I leaned a little towards her seat. Not too much, that it would make me seem like a creep. It was the perfect distance to make her understand that she was the only person I was referring to.

"Is something the matter, Horikita?"

Her eyes immediately jolted towards me as she closed her notebook. Her eyes relaxed for a second before she twirled her hair over her ear.

"No. I was just curious about the questions you asked. It seems like your deduction is moving in the right direction."

"It seems so. But I need a couple more concrete pieces of evidence to prove my point. What's your opinion on this matter?"

She closed her eyes for a second before opening them.

Her eyes are beautiful if I must say. Are they contacts or natural?

"According to the smirk our homeroom teacher sent your way, when you showed the CCTV cameras, I doubt there is no way the cameras are not involved."

Now, what should be the main use of a CCTV camera in a school? Poor behaviour and cheating in exams, am I correct?"

I nodded at her words, giving her the message to continue. Understanding my thoughts, she took a deep breath before continuing.

"Also, she didn't confirm nor deny when you asked her about the point fluctuation, while she blatantly denied when you asked about the limitations about the things one can buy. This makes me feel like you were correct. If we connect my first theory with my second one, I don't think we will be getting 100,000 points next month as the points will fluctuate, maybe because of the reasons I have stated....like cheating, fighting, not paying attention to classes.. I guess. I apologise if my words don't sound convincing enough, but I don't find any other purpose for the CCTV camera to be present.

But again, just like you said, this is a baseless assumption of mine as well."

She ended our conversation with the line I used on her. She had a small smirk on her face, as if she enjoyed doing that very much.

'As expected...She is not disappointing at all. She caught through the meaning of my words immediately and her theory is also very convincing, if I must say. Now all I need to do is prove that theory correct and acquire my first ally.'

Suddenly I felt that the atmosphere around us quieted down to an unnatural extent.

I looked towards the reason and found most of them staring at us with horrified and shocked expressions. Their eyes were wide as a blonde haired girl immediately yelled while pointing her fingers towards Horikita.

"Are you serious? Are we really not going to get 100,000 points every month?"

She cried out, causing a couple others to follow her as well creating a large commotion among the girl's side. Soon the boys also joined them.

"Excuse me girls, but why don't you calm down for a bit."

A greenish-blond haired guy stood up from his seat with a smile on his face. He was quite good looking as his charm immediately worked as the previously outraged girls calmed down within a second.

His eyes then darted towards me.

"Ayanokouji-kun, right? Would you mind explaining to the whole class what you were discussing with Chabashira-sensei?"

He smiled softly at me at the end of the conversation trying to convey the message that *'It's fine even if you don't.'* But apparently the mindless bunch of girls who were smitten with his smile alone

looked at me expectantly and some were also trying to glare at me, trying to force me into a corner.

'Idiots couldn't comprehend what I was saying and now are trying to force me for answers.I can see why that man labelled these guys as liabilities.'

I looked at the blonde boy who was still smiling at me, ignoring the glares sent to me.

" At the moment, I'm not confident in my opinions to share it with the whole class, there are many loopholes in both of our theories. I doubt anyone of you would stop spending your points without a good enough reason,right? So wait a couple of days. When I find some concrete evidence, I'll notify you."

"Thank you so much . Don't overwork yourself too much."

The blonde haired boy gave me a small smile before going in front of the podium.

A brown haired boy from the other corner of the room gave me a relaxed look as he leaned on his chair.

"You don't have to worry too much man.Just think about how you will spend all these points.100,000 yen is no joke."

He was waving around the phone that the school gave us. As he said that, a black haired boy who looked like a clown, affirmed his suggestion.

"That's correct. I've already made a list of all the things I want to buy.It seems like even the school knew about my brilliantness since middle school and they are offering me these points as a reward for being the best human in the world."

'Dude your superiority complex is off the charts and I can even feel that you just blatantly lied to all of us.What an idiot.'

Immediately after he said that, the girls looked at him repulsively, as if he is an alien, though the man in question was oblivious to their stares.

The gyarus of the class then looked at one another with an excited smile on their faces as a loud chatter filled the class once again, where the liabilities forgot about the potential dread coming in next month and started making plans for the present.

"Hey wanna go to the mall?"

" Yeah sure!!! I need to buy some clothes

"After that let's go watch a movie."

I sighed to myself before sitting down.Horikita was slightly glaring at the girls while clenching her fists.

"I don't even know how people like these are accepted in this institution ... Isn't it supposed to be an Elite School?I can't find even a little ounce of Elite Mentality from them."

Horikita's voice got colder second by second, but this time she

intentionally kept her volume low, so that both of us do not become the centre of attention once again.

I found myself agreeing with her words, though it's not like I can do anything. That man already gave me the orders before I arrived here.

I sighed to myself as I looked towards the window.

' This would be a long 3 years....Though I must say, I'm looking forward to it.'

End of Chapter 4

Words : 2066

It always seemed to me that Horikita would be extremely intelligent and perceptive in the first couple of volumes if you get rid of her superiority complex and tunnel vision.

So this is the reason, she actually was able to make a convincing theory about the S-System

This Horikita is a different Horikita from Canon. Here, she would focus on her improvement, not because of her brother, but because of herself.

This Horikita attained a level of peace with her mind as she observes the situations first, instead of being rude and demanding right away.

The reason for Horikita's change will be revealed later. I'm planning to give her lots of character depth and a good amount of development as well.

So, Look forward to it.

Also it seems whenever I write long chapters, I burn out way too much, to write another chapter the next day.

What do you guys want me to do?

Short Chapters of this length but coming daily?

OR

Long Chapters but slow updates?

I Don't mind either, so it depends on you guys.

Anyways that's all for this chapter. See ya.

Chapter 5 : Authority

Season 1 : Chapter 5

Amidst all the chatter revolving around the class, the handsome dude from earlier slowly clapped his hands, gaining their attention. As all eyes darted towards him, he gave them a bright smile.

It seems it was incredibly effective as most of the girls immediately gained a pink tint around their cheeks.

I slightly gave my seatmate a small glance, just because I was curious to notice if she was smitten by his charms as well, but looks like she was not. She just kept her face as stoic as possible while reading her book. Sensing my glance, her eyes darted towards me curiously.

"Is something wrong?"

"No, not at all. I was just looking at your book. Quite an interesting find, I must say."

Immediately her eyes gleamed a little in excitement, though she still kept her stern face.

"Judging from your words, it seems you have already read it, I assume?"

"Yeah...you can say that. Ever since I was little, I did not have many friends, so I mainly spent my free time reading books all by myself."

Her eyes softened a little as she sighed to herself.

"I know what you feel like. But hey, being alone is not that bad of a feeling you know? You can still enjoy many things by yourself that you can't in front of a crowd."

Her attempt to try to cheer me up didn't work but I felt a little gratitude for her words.

"Thank you Horikita. I appreciate your kindness."

The black haired girl looked back towards her book while shrugging her shoulders.

"I don't deserve your gratitude. After all, I just spoke the truth."

Right as we finished our conversation we heard a lot of approval from the girls of the class towards the handsome boy's request of introducing ourselves.

'Okay...Class Introduction it is... If I want to lead this class from the ruins straight to the top, then I have to make a good impression as well as display a small level of authority over them.'

"My name is Hirata Yousuke. Because I was often called by my first name, Yousuke, in middle school, feel free to use my first name. Although I like all sports, I like soccer in particular, and also plan to play soccer at this school. Please take care of me."

He ended his introduction with a small pleasant smile, causing many of the girls to blush at him. Maybe if I was a girl, then maybe I would've blushed as well... Let's not think about cursed things like that.

Hirata introduced himself in front of the class smoothly, without any hints of nervousness. He displayed a small level of confidence, though it was not to be mistaken with arrogance. And as soon as he mentioned that he played football, yes football, not soccer... His popularity among the class increased four times.

He would be a useful ally to have...

Seeing that his introduction was well received, Hirata looked pleased with himself as his eyes went towards the next person.

"Well, if that was satisfactory... then, can we start self introductions from the beginning?"

After him, was a girl with a shy demeanour. She looked perplexed and nervous that she might mess up her introduction and make things socially awkward. As she introduced herself, her words stopped in her mouth as her face got pale in embarrassment. But soon, after some help from her neighbours, she gained a little confidence and introduced herself as Inogashira Kokoro.

'Sewing and Knitting.... It's not that useful on the surface but maybe I could find her of some use later in the future.'

After she sat down, with a small smile of delight on her face, the person behind her stood up. He wore a dumb grin on his face, as his eyes went towards the opposite sex.

"Hello ladies...I'm Yamauchi Haruki. In elementary school, I played table tennis at the national level, then was the baseball club's ace in middle school—I had uniform number 4. But since I got an injury during Inter High recently, so I am currently in rehab. Nice to meet ya."

' Well... I can use him to gain some extra points. Hopefully the school will allow clowns to do trickery in the middle of the street. I can't find any other use of him as of now...'

The girls looked at him repulsively and some were straight up glaring at the poor boy, who was still grinning to himself, oblivious to his surroundings.

After the disaster of an introduction, the next person stood up.

"Then I'm next, right?"

It was the cheerful girl with that high pitched voice of hers. She was definitely cute and had a decent figure, causing most of the

guy's eyes to direct at her.

"My name is Kushida Kikyuu, and since none of my friends from middle school came to this school, I want to get to know everyone and become friends!"

Her cheerful words with her cute smile definitely caused the other sex to drive towards her.

Although I find the motive of getting to know everyone and becoming friends with them really hectic, I won't judge. Oh it seems she is still talking.

"Then, during vacations or after school, I want to make memories with many people, so please invite me to many events. I've been talking for a while, so I'll end my self-introduction here."

She really likes to say the word 'many' a lot huh...Her motives are definitely pure and it seems she will get along with both the sexes and hold a strong social power. If my introduction fails, then I will use her.

"Then, the next one is□"

Hirata's words died in his throat as he met a fierce glare from the red haired delinquent looking guy.

"You guys idiots? I don't wanna introduce myself, just leave me alone."

He immediately left the room while grumbling to himself. Following him, a couple of other students left as well.

I can understand why he did it. Maybe he is socially awkward and is putting up a tough front? Again that's just a flimsy guess of mine.

Oh? Looks like Horikita is still here. I thought she would leave the class as well.'

"Well, I'm next. I'm Ike Kanji. The things I like are girls, and the things I hate are ikemen. I'm looking for a girlfriend at any time, so nice to meet you! Of course, you better be cute or beautiful!"

His voice had an air of confidence as he blurted out his inner desires without any sense of shame.

Immediately he was met with mocking remarks from the females.

"Wow, cool~. Ike-kun, you're so smooth"

"Can you hear him girls, he's looking for a girl?"

"What a find~"

Unfortunately Ike, who was oblivious to their sarcasm, grinned while accepting them as compliments.

Like that Yamadead guy, Ike also doesn't have much use, but I can feel that he is at least 1 percent more useful than the former.'

"Next is you..."

"Hmph~Fine..."

It was the blonde haired guy, known as Koenji. He smiled at the girls as he put both of his feet on the desk, like a royal king.

"My name is Koenji Rokusuke. Being the only heir of the Koenji

conglomerate, I am a man who will be responsible for Japanese society in the near future. Pleased to meet you, ladies."

His introduction, like the Yamadead guy was also directed at the woman, but since he was actually good looking and was rich, his introduction was well received by the gold diggers whose eyes were glistening while looking at Koenji.

"From now on, I will relentlessly punish anything that makes me feel uncomfortable. Be careful in that respect."

"Eh... Koenji-kun. What do you mean by 'anything' uncomfortable?" Hirata gave him a worried smile, while the boy was still combing his hair, not paying him any attention.

"Exactly as I said. But if I were to give an example-I hate unattractive things. If I saw something ugly, I would do as I said."

Koenji flipped his golden bangs with a 'pwish' as Hirata, feeling a little worried immediately averted his eyes.

His eyes then met with mine as he let out a smile.

"Next is you..."

Sigh...Ok then Here we go..

I stood up from my seat and slowly started walking towards Hirata's direction. Most of the class were giving me confused stares but decided to keep silent.

Soon, I walked past Hirata and stood over the podium where Chabashira-sensei was standing.

I looked down on all of them as they were staring at my eyes, curiously awaiting my next actions.

If I was not on a mission, I would've felt extremely uncomfortable.

I sighed to myself before steeling my will.

"My name is Ayanokouji Kiyotaka. I was homeschooled my whole life, so I'm not good at social interactions. I hope you all can pardon my awkwardness."

"Don't worry Ayanokouji-kun.. I understand how you feel.. no one will feel bothered by you."

Immediately after Hirata's positive remark, other students also spoke up, trying to get rid of my worries.

"Yeah don't worry."

"No one will blame you."

Good. Speaking out about your flaw towards a crowd of people shows them a little about your vulnerability, which would result in you getting sympathy from them.

Also I should later thank Hirata for being the catalyst to my plans

"I appreciate all of your words. Thank you. Now as I was saying, my hobby is reading books and I'm quite good at studies. Also, before I end my introduction, I wanna say one last thing..."

I aspire to be the Leader of Class-D "

End of Chapter 4

Words : 2267

The same thing as of cannon while adding Kiyotaka's thoughts on them, only on how he can use them in the future.

Though there was nothing new here, I hope you still enjoyed the chapter(though i doubt it)

Anyways see ya.

Chapter 6 : Conflict

Season 1 : Chapter 6

"I aspire to be the Leader of Class-D"

As soon as I uttered those words, the class stared at me with confusion at first, before glaring at me.

"Leader? For what?"

"And why should you be the leader?"

"Yeah if we are talking about being a leader...Then Hirata-kun and Kushida-san would be a better choice than a socially awkward guy like you."

The blonde haired girl with the ponytail, who was staring quite intensely at Hirata during his introductions, uttered those words out.

Her words caused a chain reaction as other students immediately joined her argument and started insulting me, this time criticising me because of my physical features.

"We don't want a gloomy guy like you to be our leader..."

"Get off the podium and stop wasting our time..."

"Overconfident prick trying to act smart. I bet your 'theory' was something you made up as well..."

I looked towards the person who said that and it was the brown haired guy named Ike Kanji, the guy who was on his mission to change the school into real life tinder. The other students also nodded to his words and started pointing accusatory fingers at me.

Even though you said some offensive things to me, I'll forgive you Ike. Because your words gave me a nice escape route which I can use to my advantage..

"How about a bet then?"

As soon as I uttered those words, the whole class got silent.

"Hah? Bet? For what?" The blonde haired girl once again started acting obnoxiously causing me to sigh in annoyance at her actions.

"If we don't get 100,000 points by the start of next month, then I will be the leader of the Class and all of you will follow me with no resistance."

"Umm Ayanokouji-kun... Isn't it a bit too extreme? We are trying to enjoy our school lives and it seems like you are planning to make us your slaves.."

Kushida's innocent voice filled with worry caused most of the

students, boys and girls to glare at me.

I noticed Horikita sighing to herself before looking at all of them with cold disgust. She packed her bags before leaving the room, not before sending me a small glance.

A blue coloured short haired girl beside the obnoxious girl started yelling at me for some reason.

"And why should we follow your bet? What's in it for us huh ? "

Again...Thanks for the question.I appreciate it.

"If we get 100,000 points by next month, then starting from then, all the points I get, I will distribute it among the whole class.. How about that?"

All of their eyes widened before a couple of them also started leaving the room.

"I'm not participating in this bet. Sorry. Extorting more points even after getting 100,000 every month doesn't sit well with me."

It was a purple haired guy who said that. Without introducing himself to the class, he left the room as well.

"Miyake-kun wait for me..."

Following him, a blue haired girl left as well along with 7 other students.

I looked at the remaining 29 members of the class, who were still shocked about my bet.Using that reaction, I used it for my advantage.

I tried to make my voice sound as cocky as possible, though it was incredibly difficult.

"What?Scared that you will lose the bet and be my workhorses? Well then... Too bad that I'm surrounded by wimps everywhere."

"Who's scared of you?Hah! Don't make me laugh...As if I, the great Yamauchi would miss the opportunity to get more points.."

Even though the females looked at him repulsively, they agreed with his words.

"Yeah!!!Just like he said. We accept your bet gloomy guy.."

"Guys we should calm down a lit-"

I cut off Hirata as I slowly slammed my bag over the podium, before slinging it over my shoulders.

"Well then, have a good day, future slaves. I hope to get along with all of you."

"Get out of here,freak!!!"

"Serial Killer!!!"

"Gloomy bastard."

I closed the door and sighed to myself.

'At first, I thought that I would make good relations with all of them so that they would naturally accept me as their leader...

But I don't think I would get my desired effect.If I get along with the girls, then boys will hate me..

If I get along with the boys, then the girls will look at me repulsively, labelling me as a pervert.

So having them all hate me would be a better plan. But since they already made their bet, even if they hate me, they have to listen to my orders. I'll then slowly reveal my skills and save them from the total despair they will face...giving them hope and then rebuilding all of them from scratch...

Well then...what should I do now?

Well... better buy some groceries if I have to live alone.

As I entered the convenience store, I was met with the sight of my seatmate, Horikita. She was at the toiletries section, slightly scanning the items. She gave a small glance towards her side, as her eyes met mine.

"Good evening Ayanokouji-kun. "

"Good evening Horikita. "

After we greeted one another, a small silence prevailed among us as we both started buying our own things, going different ways.

As I went towards the chocolate and sweets section, we crossed paths once again. This time, the black haired girl initiated the conversation.

"That's quite a big risk you took Ayanokouji-kun. Are you fully confident about the results?"

I grabbed one of the chocolate bars while slightly scanning it from both sides.It was labelled as 'Hershey's' .

"Yes..I'm fairly confident about the results. There is no way that the school will give us 100,000 points every month, without expecting anything in return.

And I believe that our points will deduct based on the theories we made about the CCTV cameras.."

Horikita sighed to herself before grabbing 2 pieces of white chocolate bars for herself. Her eyes darted towards my basket as she narrowed her eyes at me.

"Ayanokouji-kun...I suggest you don't buy 20 chocolates right away..You will feel sick at this rate..They are extremely high in calories.."

I raised my eyebrows as I started putting back some of them back on the counter.

"I was not planning to eat it right away, you know?I was planning to put it in the fridge..."

"Well...what if for using the fridge and electricity, we have to spend our points? Then you will have an unnecessary expenditure

of your points..If you want to savor your taste, you should buy fresh pieces straight from the store itself, instead of cooling it in the freezer."

Her voice had a slight scolding tone as she was standing in front of me with both of her hands on her waist. In spite of being inside close doors, for some reason her hair started flowing everywhere, making her seem a little cool.

"Right..right. I'll put it away. No need to scold me. Say Horikita, are the prices of those items cheap or expensive?"

I pointed towards the end of the shelf, where there was a crate of cup noodles.

Her face wore a confused expression as she slowly took small steps towards me before both of her pupils narrowed.

She slowly walked past me and scanned a set of items that was beside the items I pointed.

I felt her softly tugging the hands of my shirt as she gestured for me to walk towards her.

I did as she instructed as she wore a small smirk while scanning the set of items in front of us.

"It seems that you already won the bet, Ayanokouji-kun....."

I smirked to myself before shrugging both of my shoulders..

"You can say that..."

In front of us, there was a huge shelf filled with cheap and nearly unusable items. Above the shelf, there was a label on it written as 'Free'.

'Just as I wanted, Horikita realised the oddity of the situation and pieced them together.'

It seems I chose my first tool well...

I can't wait to see what you do in the future, Horikita...'

End of Chapter 6

Words : 2032

What do you think of Kiyotaka acting like this? Instead of trying to make himself approachable and nice at first, like other Class-D fanfics, he is taking the Ryuen approach, although not as Tyrannical.

He will prove everyone by his actions instead of mere words...

Anyways that's the end of this chapter. See ya.

Chapter 7 : Breakdown

Season 1 : Chapter 7

Both the brown haired teen, Ayanokouji and his seatmate Horikita were standing in front of the isle selling the free items. There was a label stamped on it, where it was written that **Only 3 items is the maximum limit for One Student.**

"Only 3 items per month huh...Once again I'll clear some of my doubts.. If a student receives 100,000 points every month, why would they feel the need to take free stuff, extremely worse in quality at such a rate that they would have to put a warning label?"

Horikita muttered to herself while absentmindedly grabbed 2 free bars of soap and 1 bottle of free body lotion, causing Ayanokouji to look at her curiously.

"I thought girls put more focus of taking care of their skin and buy expensive skin care stuff. Was I wrong?"

Horikita gave him a disinterested sideglance before putting her stuff inside her basket.

"Not every woman are the same, Ayanokouji-kun. Everyone has their own preferences. Also, I already bought a high quality body lotion for my skin care, so don't worry. This is for backup Assumptionkouji-kun."

'Assumptionkouji? How did she come round to give me that nickname?'

"What's with the sudden nickname?"

One end of Horikita's mouth curled up slightly as she gave him the smallest of emotions, she ever showed throughout the whole day, through a victorious smirk.

"What? You didn't like the name? I thought it was something clever yet simple related to your character. A person who makes bold assumptions about a random stranger, whom he never met before."

'I just felt like my entire existence and social skills got utterly destroyed by your words Horikita.'

But apparently, the fair skinned black haired lady was not done with her comments as her smirk curled upwards a little more as she continued on her onslaught.

"Though I don't see your existence as a hindrance and find your uncaring attitude a little bold and impressive, others won't accept

you as the leader like that, Ayanokouji-kun. You were able to provoke them with your attitude, but will you be able to control them?"

'It seems Horikita already understood that it would be my victory in the end. Quite impressive.'

Ayanokouji, instead of answering to her question, slowly started walking towards the snacks section gesturing the black haired girl to follow him.

Horikita albeit confused, decided not to speak further and jogged a little to catch up to the brown haired boy who's eyes were curiously looking over all the items.

His dull brown eyes, now had a little gleam in it, similar to that of a kid, who goes to a candy store.

Horikita looked away from Childkouji's face and drew her gaze towards the crisps section.

Although she wouldn't have minded gazing at that rather uncharacteristic expression on her usually stoic neighbor's face for a little longer.

"You don't have to worry about my leadership skills Horikita..My father is heavily involved in politics and wants me to be an important individual of the Future Japan. So, he implanted a fair share of tricks and ways to control a crowd, either through compassion, or through fear...And besides, you seem to have a good sense of authority as well, am I wrong?"

Horikita, who was nodding her head at his words throughout the whole time he was speaking, relatively getting interested more and more as the brown haired boy continued his allocution, looked a little confused at his last couple words and tilted her head sideways like a kitten.

"Where do you seem to get the idea that I have decent authoritative skills, Ayanokouji-kun? I don't think I showed anything worthy of your praise.."

"The way you stood up for me while they were insulting my existence and shut their mouths with cold and concrete logic...I think I saw quite enough to give you my praise.

So, I don't think I have anything to worry about getting the class in control as long as you are by my side."

Not understanding the hidden meaning of his own words, Ayanokouji skipped towards the ice cream section like a little kid, leaving behind a frozen girl who definitely took his words out of context. Her stoic face had a small tinge of pink as her eyes widened a little.

After a couple seconds, she let out a small chuckle before following the direction Kiyotaka headed to..

" You should be careful with your words, Ayanokouji-kun...You almost gave me some weird ideas..."

After that unknowing misunderstanding caused by his words, Ayanokouji requested for Horikita's help in recommending him some flavours of ice cream.

The black haired maiden gave him a weird look as she was opening the glass door of the fridge.

"So, you are telling me that you haven't tried an ice cream before? "

"Yes.You can say that-"

"Your father is extremely strict and he doesn't want you to intake any snacks or other junk products?"

Ayanokouji gave Horikita a small nod while raising his thumbs.

"You catch on quick. That's good. Throughout my whole life, I've never tried snacks before. That's why I asked for your help Horikita. I'm sorry for causing you inconvenience."

'Always try to act like you are feeling guilty of asking someone's help right after a sad story. There would be no person after that who can reject your request. Otherwise they would be called Monsters....Source? Me. '

And just as Kiyotaka predicted, Horikita's eyes softened as she picked 2 tubs of Ice cream.

Her beautiful face along with those two big ice cream tubs in her hand, looked like a perfect cover for advertising the product..

"This pink coloured tub is Strawberry while the purple coloured one is Bubblegum flavoured."

"Bubble Gum? "

Kiyotaka's head tilted a little as he was feeling a little confused at the piculiar taste of the Black Haired maiden, who blushed a little while looking away once she heard his question.

"If you have something you want to say, then do it. I know these two are weird choices, but they are my favourite. So I thought about recommending them to you. I'm not a huge fan of Chocolate or Vanilla. For some reason, they make me feel nauseous. But if you want, then I can put these 2 back and pick those two instead."

'Horikita's favourite flavours huh... If I like them and compliment her for her good choice, our relationship may increase from acquaintances to maybe friends...After that we may sometimes hang out while eating Ice Cream together...

That would a good step in molding her as my perfect piece.'

With that, Kiyotaka softly grabbed Horikita's hand as she was putting back the ice cream tubs. She quickly turned around and swiftly moved her hands away from Ayanokouji's grip giving the

boy an ice cold glare.

"W-what are you doing holding my hand like that Ayanokouji-kun ? D-do you have any ulterior motives? I'm letting you know that I won many martial arts tournaments..So keep that in mind before doing something.."

As she said those words, her breathing got heavy all of a sudden, as she shakingly took a defensive stance.

Seeing her acting way differently than her normal self, Ayanokouji raised both of his hands at surrender.

"Don't worry Horikita. I was not trying to harass you or anything."

Her eyes narrowed even more as she spat with venom in her voice.

"That's what they all say. Everyone has a hidden side to them,Ayanokouji-kun...I will repeat once again, what was your true intention? "

Her breathing got way quicker than it should be...Her face is sweating bullets as if she is scared of my entire existence..For what? Am I the reason ?

No.It all happened when I only grabbed her arm. That's what got her so pressed all of a sudden.

Does she have a deep trauma or something?'

Getting out of his thoughts, Ayanokouji tried to sound as sincere as possible...

"Trust me Horikita...I have no intention of hurting you..I was just grabbing your hands to stop you from putting those items back in the freezer. Because I want to try Horikita's favourites first for myself."

"R-really? A-are you telling the truth?"

Her voice broke as tears welled up in her eyes. Her strong, ice cold image was nowhere to be seen as her breathing got heavier once again...

Sigh...This is troublesome.

Kiyotaka instantly grabbed the Black haired maiden while softly patting her back.

"You are safe, Horikita. Nobody is planning to hurt you. Just take some deep breaths. It will be ok.. Now breath with me."

With that Ayanokouji, himself started taking some deep breaths, to which Horikita replicated his actions slowly albeit steadily.

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

•
•
•
"Are you feeling fine? "

"Yes. I'm extremely sorry for misjudging you like that Ayanokouji-kun. I was not right in my head."

Immediately her words stopped in her mouth as she felt the palm of the brown haired boy over her head.

"Stop talking."

Ayanokouji softly started rubbing her head, as if she was a dog, although he was doing it carefully to not ruin her hairstyle.

The black haired girl on the other hand softly leaned on it and closed her eyes.

"Horikita...You don't need to apologise to me. You were having a mental breakdown. So stop talking and relax."

Horikita on the other hand felt a little conflicted...

'His touch is different...It's cold like the ice but at the same moment warm like the sun... I sense no hostility from his touch....

Maybe this time it will be different. Though I would not raise my expectations....'

End Of Chapter 7

Words : 2422

Yeah...I can't write in 1st person POV for this story. Writing a contradictory character like Ayanokouji's thoughts and actions is way more difficult than I thought it to be. I tried writing 1st person POV over and over, but it was subpar at best.

I hope you all don't mind 3rd person POV.

Anyways...Horikita...

Her sudden change in behaviour is not just for plot convenience. Everything happened because of reasons, which you might already guess..

But it still would be discussed in the future.

Horikita's change had one plus : She got way more bearable but likeable. But what about the other effects? Does she like herself? Is she even okay?

Who knows...

Unlike my other stories, I'm trying to take a more serious approach here. Although there would be a lot of wholesome moments, this story would not be for shits and giggles.

Anyways that's all for this chapter. See ya.

Chapter 8 : Blunder

Season 1 : Chapter 8

It was the Second Day of the School and Ayanokouji noticed some peculiar yet weird things in this institution. Other than their Homeroom Teacher Chabashira-sensei and Maths Teacher Sakagami-Sensei, most of the other teachers were very friendly.

In his honest opinion, including the unfriendly ones, all the teachers way too lethargic. Most of the class were doing their own, respective things and none of the teachers gave them any warnings or punishments. Although Ayanokouji himself didn't attend any school before this, based on common knowledge and his experience in the White Room, this should never be the norm.

'The school really is baiting them hard huh...Should I show a peace sign to the CCTV camera? Maybe at a later date.'

People like Ike and Hondou were playing on their Nintendo Switch in the middle of their lessons. Sotomura, whom everyone was calling 'Professor' was reading something on his phone while striking some weird poses and humming to himself.

The red haired delinquent looking guy, whose name is still unknown to Ayanokouji, was snoring in the middle of the class. His drool was all over the desk. It was quite a disgusting sight.

Yamauchi, the clown who was responsible for the whole class accepting Ayanokouji's bet(*which the brown haired boy was quite thankful of*) , took a quite daring approach. He was reading some black and white pictures on a huge tablet while his left hand was for some reason rubbing his crotch area.

Either way Ayanokouji found his act incredibly disgusting and looked away from the sight. His eyes then focused on the girls. Most of them were using their mobile phones and chatting loudly to one another, while some of them were giving the brown haired boy looks filled with disgust while talking among them in hushed whispers.

Their act didn't go unnoticed by Ayanokouji as he sighed to himself.

'I would love to see how they would feel when the other classes also give them that look while gossiping about them. It would be an irony in itself.'

"This is vexing if I'm being honest. "

He looked towards his seatmate who was grabbing her temples while eyeing all the other students.

"Don't worry about it Horikita. Let them enjoy this month as much as they want. Then I'll work them like hell."

She gave him an amused stare while twiddling her pen between her fingers.

"Maybe you shouldn't say these things out loud Ayanokouji-kun. Your reputation among them would lower even more."

Kiyotaka's eyes concentrated towards Horikita. She was back to her usual self..Her strong, ice cold persona . It was as if the situation in the convenience store didn't even take place.

"That's not a problem. They can dislike me as much as they want. That would make the situation even more satisfying when it finally gets revealed."

"Ayanokouji-kun, are you a sadist?"

"Definitely not. Didn't I tell you? I'm a normal human being with some deduction abilities."

Horikita sighed to herself before giving a small smile of defeat.

"As if I'll believe that."

Just as their small conversation came to an end, the bell rang marking it as the end of the class.

Chabashira-Sensei picked up her books before looking at the whole class for a second.

"That's all for the class. All of you should review it by today. Tomorrow we will start a new lesson. That's all I have to say. Have a good afternoon."

With that she walked away out of the room, not before giving the brown haired boy, sitting at the corner of the room, a lingering gaze.

'Guess she knows something about my origin or maybe the Chairman gave her some hint about me. Either way it will be troublesome if she somehow interrupts my plan of controlling the class.'

Hirata stood up from his seat and slowly walked towards the podium. He gave a smile which caused the atmosphere of the whole class to get 10 times warmer.

"I'm going to the cafeteria to eat lunch. Does anyone want to join me?"

His offer immediately was well received as around 70 percent of the girls of Class-D flocked towards him like headless chickens.

"Me! Me! Let's go to the cafeteria together, Hirata-kun."

Without even stopping to hear any further complaint from him, the blonde haired girl who was antagonising Ayanokouji yesterday dragged Hirata as if he was a ragdoll.

Ayanokouji looked towards his side and found Horikita quietly eating her sandwich while closing her eyes, not being bothered a bit from the rowdy atmosphere of the class. She was nibbling on her sandwich like a cute rabbit.

Sensing his stare, Horikita gave him a small glance.

"Is something on your mind Ayanokouji-kun? My ears are open."

Ayanokouji sighed to himself before getting up from his chair, not before sparing a glance at her.

"Nothing at all. I was just planning to go to the cafeteria. Want me to get a drink for you?"

"I appreciate your offer but I have no need for any drinks today. I already brought ice cold water with me."

Horikita opened her bag and took out her steel bottle, before rubbing it slightly on Kiyotaka's hand who immediately retreated his arms from the sudden cold sensation. Seeing that, Horikita raised her eyebrows amusingly.

"What do you think?"

"It's as cold as your heart."

Ayanokouji decided to tease her but it was not well received by the girl, who once again rubbed her cold bottle on his hand with a small frown on her face.

Now getting used to the sensation, it was less of a discomfort and more of a comforting feeling. During the hot summer, seeing the cold droplets getting stuck on the bottle was definitely a little appetizing.

"Hey...Horikita. Mind if I take a sip? "

"....*Sigh*....Go ahead but don't touch your lips on the mouth of the bottle."

"Umm....Ayanokouji-kun right?"

"Hmm?"

Ayanokouji looked back towards the source of the voice and it was none other than the class angel, Kushida Kikyō, standing in the middle of the hallway with a smile on her face.

"Oh? Future Slave 1...Do you need something from me?"

As soon as the words were uttered from the brown haired boy's mouth, a small frown formed on the girl's face for a second, which once again returned to its previous state as she showed him a beautiful smile.

"I am Kushida Kikyō if you don't remember. Guess I haven't introduced myself to you personally."

She tried to shake his hand, but the boy stuffed both of them in his pocket.

"It's ok but can you please hurry up. Break time will soon be over

and I need to eat lunch."

Ayanokouji emphasised on his apparent loss of patience by tapping his feet on the ground restlessly.

From his gesture, Kushida understood him and slowly moved closer towards him, unintentionally or maybe intentionally pushing her huge bust towards Ayanokouji's eyes.

"Ayanokouji-kun...Are you and Horikita-san close?"

'Horikita-san? How did she know her name? I don't think she introduced herself towards the class...'

"No. Why do you ask?"

"Ahaha it's just you were the only person she was talking to, out of the whole class. So I was just curious. You see, I want to be friends with everyone in the school. But she has this cold aura around her which makes her a little unapproachable."

Her gaze turned towards the ground as her actions reminded Ayanokouji similar to a lost puppy. Anyone else would've bought her cute act but the brown haired teen was hungry and restless.

"Well...Bad for you, I guess. Can you please hurry up and tell me the reason you are bothering me instead of talking to Horikita herself? You see, I am incredibly hungry. If you don't spit out the real reason you are wasting my time within 1 second, then I'll be leaving Kushida."

With that Ayanokouji turned around as her face immediately wore a panicked expression as she hastily grabbed on to his shoulders to stop him.

"Ayanokouji-kun... I want to be Horikita-san's friend. Will you please help me in getting her contact information? And will you please help me in being her friend? She always stays alone and it's really sad to see."

Kiyotaka raised his eyebrows at her, avoiding his gaze from Kushida's bust, which he now sure that she was intentionally doing that.

"Mind telling me why you are so fixated on Horikita herself?"

As soon as Ayanokouji uttered those words, Kushida stopped on her tracks, taking advantage of which he swiftly let go of her grip.

"There are many other loners in the class who still don't have any friends. Take me as an example. So tell me, if you really want to be everyone's friend then why are you coming to a loner like me and asking for my help to befriend another loner, not even sparing the thought to make a friend of me."

Hearing his words, Kushida's eyes widened as she let out an awkward laugh.

"But you are not alone right, Ayanokouji-kun? You always talk with Horikita-san-"

Kushida stopped in her words realising her blunder as Ayanokouji shrugged both of his shoulders and sent a small smirk.

" There you have your answer, Kushida. If you go by that logic, then Horikita is also not alone, right? Have a good day.I wish you good luck in befriending her."

Without looking back at the blonde girl, Ayanokouji made his way towards the cafeteria.

'Kushida Kikyou.... The cheerful angel of the class...For some reason, She knows Horikita's name and has ulterior motives to get close to her. I could've used this situation to my own advantage, and maybe have her as a useful tool to help me with certain situations if I planned to work from the shadows...

But since it's not the case, then I wouldn't have too much use of her, as of now. If she later seems to be a hindrance without being of any use, I won't hesitate to get her expelled.

Maybe I should speak to Horikita about this surprising development and ask her if she knows about Kushida before entering this school...'

End of Chapter 8

Words : 2340

The first conversation between Kushida and Ayanokouji...And unfortunately our two faced clown already made a lot of blunders....

Anyways that's all for this Chapter.See ya.

Chapter 9 : Burden

Season 1 : Chapter 9

It was at the moment, the last period of the day. The subject that is being taught to the students was Maths, supervised by Mr.Sakagami, the homeroom teacher of Class-C.

The atmosphere of the class still remained the same, where other than a couple of students, none of them bothered to pay any attention.

As soon as the bell rang, without speaking any further, Sakagami made his way towards the door, not before looking at the whole class with a cruel smirk.

As soon as he left, the other students of Class-D slowly got out of their respective seats and went towards their friends or cliques. Some of them already made their way out of the room, while some of them remained in the classroom, chatting with one another.

"Ayanokouji-kun did you see that?"

The boy in question looked towards his neighbour who sent him an inquisitive look.

"If you are talking about the look Mr.Sakagami gave us, then yeah..I've noticed it clearly."

Horikita put on a thinking expression with a small frown on her face.

"I wonder why though..."

"I have an assumption..From what we deduced, we are not getting 100,000 points next month right?"

Horikita gave him a nod. "Please continue what you are saying. I'm listening carefully."

Feeling thankful that he doesn't have to stop after each sentence, so that the girl could understand his words, the masterpiece continued his musings.

"This is an Elite School, graduating from which the students can apply to basically any job they want.

But in just 2 days, it is fairly visible that the students in our class are far from Elite material. They don't pay any attention to the class and are living their life freely, spending their points baselessly.

So what's the point of all of this?"

Ayanokouji, instead of deducing any more, asked Horikita a question himself causing the girl to narrow her eyes.

"That's true. Why should the school give these ignorant students points to sustain living as well as a free ticket to their future?

Also seeing us acting this way...Why did Mr.Sakagami smirk like that? Why was he acting delighted-"

While she was muttering to herself, Horikita's eyes widened as Ayanokouji inwardly sighed in satisfaction.

"That's right. Now tell me did you figure it out yourself? Or do I need to give you a couple more hints."

Horikita's eyes slowly darted towards Ayanokouji as she gulped a little, swallowing the saliva building up in her throat.

"Ayanokouji-kun....I don't know whether my next words would sound like a reach..."

"It doesn't matter if your words have no meaning. I'm interested to hear it nevertheless."

Upon hearing his words of reassurance, Horikita sighed in relief before giving him a stern look.

"I don't think everyone would get the desired job that this school advertises. If you look at it from an outside point of view, why should they give the students their desired jobs if all they are good at is behaving recklessly like delinquents and lunatics and spending their points like a bunch of idiots."

Ayanokouji bit back a smirk at the girl's deduction.

"That's good. Looks like I won't have to work too hard on her."

"You don't mince your words at all, Horikita."

"I'm just stating what's on my mind.Everyone has the rights for Freedom of Speech,no?"

With that, Horikita took out her water bottle and started drinking from it in an elegant manner.

"Is the water still cold?"

She gave him a side glance before nodding her head on both sides, expressing her displeasure.

"Anyways, what do you think about my theory, Ayanokouji-kun?"

"

" I've already thought of that some time ago. And your thoughts were extremely similar to mine."

As he said that, Horikita's face visibly glowed up a little, feeling a small sense of pride among herself.

"Even when she puts on a cold and strong exterior, from what it seems like from our previous conversations, Horikita doesn't think of herself as someone significant."

It's kind of weird. She has everything. Looks, Intelligence, A self righteous attitude...Someone like her should be full of themselves...then why is she like this? And why is she admitted in Class-D? From 'that man's' words...everyone in Class-D are liabilities...but it isn't the case

here.Did he make a mis-

No..'That Man' never makes mistakes....

There must be a reason for Horikita's admission in this liability class. '

"Ayanokouji-kun, are you listening to me? "

The brown haired boy snapped out of his thoughts, as he felt his seatmate, leaning towards him while softly poking his hand with her fingers. As she saw his reaction, her eyes expressed a sign of relief as she retreated herself back towards her own seat. She crossed both of her arms under her chest and gave him a levelled glare...Well..glare seems to be a reach..It was a gaze filled with serious intentions..

"Yes. Your deductions were impressive Horikita. That brings me to my next question..

If you think that not everyone will get their desired jobs...Then in your opinion who will get that reward? Think about what led to the start of our conversation today..You will find your answer by then..."

[Imagine this is Long Haired Suzune...Also this illustration is definitely one of my favourites♥♥💧]

Horikita cupped both of her hands as her eyes went towards Hirata and his clique laughing and smiling together. Though Horikita paid no mind to it as she was lost in her thoughts.

Ayanokouji leaned on his desk and faced towards Horikita, who was oblivious of her brown haired acquaintance shamelessly staring at her.

After a couple of seconds, as if something clicked in her head, both of her eyes widened as she clicked her fingers.

"Got it."

Her voice was low and nearly inaudible, though the boy was able to hear it without any problem.

Horikita's posture straightened as her eyes went towards her seatmate, who was still staring at her with his dull gaze.

"Ayanoko- " Horikita stopped at her words and gave Ayanokouji a weird look.

"Why are you staring at me ? "

[The Legendary Question of the Entire Series is Back Imao□□□]

" Nothing..I was just interested in your thoughts. Mind sharing them with me? "

Composing herself once again, she nodded.

"Right. So from my assumptions I th-"

Horikita stopped on her words once again as this time they were interrupted by the ringing of the intercom.

Soon a mellow music played from the speakers for a couple of seconds all around the campus.Then a sweet voice was heard

announcing something.

"At five PM Japan Standard Time today, we will be holding a student club fair in Gymnasium No.1. Students interested in joining a club, please gather in Gymnasium

No. 1.

I repeat, At five PM Japan Standard Time today, we will be holding a student club fair in Gymnasium No.1. Students interested in joining a club, please gather in Gymnasium

No. 1. "

"How about we discuss the matters later , without any audience? Someone might be eavesdropping on our conversation."

Horikita tucked her hair behind her left ear and gave him a short nod.

"Very well. Here is my contact number Ayanokouji-kun..You can call me if you find something important."

Horikita instantly ripped out a small page from her notebook and wrote her contact number in it, before passing the slip towards the boy, who accepted it, feeling a little happy and satisfied with getting a girl's number for the first time.

"Horikita....Are you free at the moment?"

"I was actually planning to go to the Club Ceremony. Why? Do you want to discuss something in private?"

For some reason, the black haired girl leaned close towards his ears as she uttered the word 'private'.

"No. I was planning to ask you to go to the Club Ceremony with me. Would you mind if I tag along with you?"

Ayanokouji received a very small smile from her filled with mischief as she started packing her bags.

"Well...what else can I do? Seeing that my neighbour failed to make a single friend in the whole class makes me feel a little sad and pity for you. So I wouldn't mind dragging you along with me if you say 'Please'."

But instantly all her smug act vanished when her seatmate uttered his next words.

"What do you mean aren't we 'friends' ? "

Her smug persona broke in pieces as the girl froze in her seat.

"A-are we? "

Horikita's voice once again got a little shaky, just like the time at the convenience store.

Is this really how someone makes friends? I searched on many internet sites on how to make myself less rude and acquire friends...But this quick? Is he planning something against me?

....No I shouldn't think like that.Ayanokouji-kun has been nothing but a good company. It would be very rude of me to make vile assumptions

about him..'

As she was in a mental dilemma, Ayanokouji softly poked her on the shoulders, causing her to break out of her trance. The brown haired boy once again made his voice as soft and approachable as he can..

"You don't have to worry too much . I'm fine being just acquaintances with you, Horikita. Nobody is forcing you. Just relax."

Her body visibly relaxed as she slumped on her chair. After a couple seconds, she slowly turned her head towards Ayanokouji and gave him a weak smile.

"I'm a very troublesome person to deal with. I can cause unnecessary problems for you in the future, because of my incompetence. I'm very rude and selfish...as I only think for myself over others..

I'm very bad at communication and sometimes get major panic attacks as you saw yesterday. And I'm a very weak willed girl who breaks down under the smallest amount of pressure...

Even after listening to all these things, do you still think that I'm a good choice to be your friend? "

The only response she received was silence. As she looked towards the boy, all she received was his dead stare..Sighing towards herself feeling a little sad, she got up from her chair.

'What else should I expect? It's natural isn't it?'

But she was immediately stopped in her thoughts as the brown haired boy grabbed her shoulders.

Usually, she would've immediately thrown the person over her shoulders, who touches her without consent, but yesterday, while she was in the brown haired boy's grip, she registered the sensation of his hands deep in her mind.

She looked back and gave a resigned stare towards him, but got surprised when she saw the look in his eyes.

Gone was his usual 'I don't care' look as it was replaced by a stare filled with seriousness and comfort. It reminded her of nii-san when they were still in good relations.

"It doesn't matter how flawed you are, Horikita. Everyone has flaws. Even I have a lot of them. So you don't have to worry that I'll run away from you after listening to your weaknesses.

As your friend, I, Ayanokouji Kiyotaka wouldn't mind helping you overcome these obstacles. Is that all right with you?"

Horikita's eyes widened as she listened to his words. His voice had no deeper meanings as it was filled with sincerity, even through his monotone way of speaking.

For the first time in 3 years, Horikita Suzune let out a proper

smile... feeling a huge burden getting lifted off her shoulders. She slowly raised her hand towards the boy, expecting a formal handshake.

"Please take care of me, Ayanokouji-kun."

The boy accepted her greeting as he gripped her hand back.

"The pleasure is all mine."

'After all, I would be the one to help you in your development, Horikita Suzune....

I'll watch over you with great interest.'

End of Chapter 9

Words : 2658

It looks like even I try to write shorter chapters, it doesn't work out that well with this story.

So, I'm sticking with this length. For this, sometimes updates might not be daily...But each chapter would be decently long like this one..

Also next chapter would be the debut of the Best Brother in Law !!!

Anyways that's all for this chapter. See ya.

Chapter 10 : Brother

Season 1 : Chapter 10

" There seems to be a lot more people than I expected...."

Both Ayanokouji and Horikita entered the school Gymnasium, which was packed with students. Nearly 100 of them. Most of them were freshmen in fact. Both the teens walked at the front of the stage, where there was a relatively less density of students. As the boy was looking through the pamphlets, Horikita decided to break the comfortable silence between them.

" Ayanokouji-kun....what's the main reason we are here again? Is it just because you want to observe the Clubs of this institution ? Or do you have any underlying reason behind it? "

Horikita slightly narrowed her eyes towards the brown haired boy, curious of his sudden invitation. The boy, however, shrugged both of his shoulders and kept reading his pamphlet.

"Nothing of the sorts..I was just interested in the Club Fair and decided to tag along with you so that I don't get bored."

"Then I guess you chose the wrong person to tag along with. I'm not a very entertaining human being to be around with."

"Nonsense. You're ice queen glare is very ent-"

The brown haired boy immediately received a small glare from the black haired girl who tilted her head slightly at him.

"Nevermind."

"Ara~what happened Ayanokouji-kun? Did cat get your tongue?"

A sudden smug air once again formed around Horikita as she elegantly flipped her silky black hair. She then crossed both of her arms and looked down on him like a spoiled ojou-sama gracing mere peasants with her gaze.

For some reason, Ayanokouji found that smug face of her's equally amusing as well as irritating. So he decided to do the best thing the Masterpiece of the White Room is capable of in this situation..... Change the topic.

"Not at all. Say, Horikita are you interested in any clubs?"

Horikita dropped on both of her toes and tapped her chin with her finger. Her eyes travelled around the whole gymnasium for a couple seconds, before she sighed to herself.

"You could say the Karate Club...but it seems like it is not present here."

"Did you practice Karate?"

"Yes.. I was a 3rd Dan in Karate. I was unsuccessful in continuing my Karate lessons because of some personal reasons...It's a big regret of mine."

A small frown formed on Horikita's face for a moment, but it erased immediately as Horikita once again regained her composure, wearing the mask of a stoic ice cold beauty.

' Quite a good mask. Very convenient that she can control her emotions this well...'

As Ayanokouji was thinking this, the memory of the black haired maiden's outburst the day before then popped up in his mind... Causing him to slightly shake his head.

'Maybe not...'

The brown haired boy once again felt someone poking him on his stomach as he was brought out of his thoughts.

He looked towards the person responsible for the actions and it was none other than his seatmate.

"Ayanokouji-kun....were you thinking of something rude about me?"

Her eyes were slightly narrowed like a cat looming on its prey.

"Not at all...I was just curious. Yesterday when you were talking about self defence, was it related to you achieving 3rd Dan in Karate,Horikita?"

As soon as he said that, her expression broke as she looked away in embarrassment.

"Yesterday..I showed you a weak side of mine.I hope you erase that from your memory, Ayanokouji-kun.."

A small tinge of pink blush appeared on her relatively stoic face, making her seem even more attractive than usual.

[P.s. Gap moe is Always the Best □□]

Ayanokouji, trying to drive her into further embarrassment, shrugged both of his shoulders as he tried to make his voice sound as innocent as possible.

It failed.

" How can I forget about that? The Ice Queen Horikita, who never talks with anyone else, was in my arms, enjoying me giving her headpats. It was a wonderful feeling,I must say.

As a man, I felt a small amount of pride in myself."

"If that's what it takes to feel self satisfied then you may have standards lower than the Mariana Trench.. "

"Not at all.I just don't expect much from other people . That's all.Being confined for nearly your whole life definitely takes away all your expectations."

' Why should I expect anything from them, if I sooner or later make

them do that for me of their own volition.'

As the black haired maiden registered his words, her eyes softened a little as she looked away.

"Well...as a friend of mine, it would leave a sour taste in my mouth if I fail to see you succeed in social interactions or get taken advantage of...So I'll keep a close eye on you from now on, Ayanokouji-kun."

"You know it would've been way easier if you just said that you would like to hang out with me in the future."

"Don't twist my words Ayanokouji-kun.....Although you are not completely wrong.."

"See? It's easy to be honest with yourself isn't it?"

'Ironic coming from someone like me....'

Horikita, not finding any appropriate response to get rid of her embarrassment just looked away from Ayanokouji with a 'hmpf'.

Feeling a little amused by their interactions, the Masterpiece of the White Room decided to give his seatmate a break and looked towards the stage, where a certain individual was making her presence known.

It was a female student with purple hair. Her hair was tied into two buns as her face had a relatively serious expression.

'Guess someone's taking their work seriously.'

Her heels made small small clicking noises when it came in contact with the stage, causing it to echo all around the gymnasium.

It caused all the relative chatter to stop as everyone paid their attention to the new stranger.

She effortlessly picked up her mic and started introducing herself.

"My name is Tachibana Akane . I am the secretary of the Student Council and the organiser of the Club Fair . Nice to meet you all . "

'I see...Student Council huh...Should I join them? I may get extra power and a better reputation among my peers, but wouldn't it just be a hassle?'

'I'm here only to graduate from Class-A...I shouldn't delve down into doing other things... But being in the Student Council may give me advantages in the future....'

His eyes slightly darted towards his 'friend' Horikita, who was paying full attention towards the Secretary's words... Ayanokouji tapped her on the shoulder, causing her to look at him...

"What is it, Ayanokouji-kun?"

"Do you want to join the Student Council in the future?"

As she heard his question, Horikita became silent all of a sudden for some seconds..

"At the moment...No. I don't think I would be capable enough to

be a part of the Student Council."

"Why?"

"I have a lot of problems, which would get in the way of doing my work... Plus we have to worry about the Class Matters as well right? Maybe later on? "

'Very well then....I'll remember these words Horikita.'

Ayanokouji gave her a slight nod in affirmation.

"Now please welcome our Student Council President...."

As soon as Secretary senpai said that, Horikita's head turned towards the stage so quickly that Ayanokouji thought that she might get whiplash.

A new face then started walking down the stage...

He had sleek black hair which was neatly combed, in front of his violet piercing eyes was a pair of square rimmed glasses. He was exerting a presence of calmness as well as absolute authority.

Ayanokouji's eyes slightly darted towards Horikita who was unusually quiet for some reason.

She was standing stiff as she was looking at the Student Council President with a look mixed with admiration and fear.

"Horikita? "

Even though the brown haired boy called to his seatmate, he got no response as Horikita was staring at the person intently.

' Does she have a crush on that guy?

Love at first sight?

No....There is literal fear and shock on her face... Even though I'm foreign to the subject...I know that this is not a simple highschool crush...'

Understanding that he wouldn't get his desired response, the brown haired boy sighed to himself before looking towards the person she was staring at as well.

The Student Council President's sharp eyes darted over to all the first years as if he was scrutinising each one of them carefully...As soon as his eyes went towards Horikita, the man's eyes widened a little before he composed himself. Horikita on the other hand lowered her head even more, as she felt his stare.

' Oh? Looks like they know each other.. Ex boyfriend ? '

President's eyes then went to Ayanokouji who was standing right beside Horikita. He raised his eyebrows curiously before slightly nodding to himself.

Not a single word uttered from his mouth... 14 seconds passed and the President was yet to speak..

Some of the first years got impatient and started making fun of him..

" Do your best hahaha "

" Did you forget your script or something ? "

" At least talk dude...."

Most of them started mocking and laughing at him.

Horikita's head immediately rose up as she sent each one of them an ice cold glare, cold enough to save the world from Global Warming.

Even though Ayanokouji was curious about this new situation regarding Horikita and the President, he kept his mouth quiet.

' Regardless I'll get my answers later... I should give her some space right now... '

Even through the mockings, the man in question didn't say anything excepting for looking at them with his calculating stare.

The whole gymnasium got quiet other than their mockings ...

With due time, their laughter died down as well as an uncomfortable silence was created..

" What's up with this dude?"

"Weirdo."

Even though they were whispering among one another, because of the silence, their words echoed around the whole room.

The Secretary glared at them with extreme intensity causing them to lower their heads in fear.

Soon, he finally decided to open his mouth.

"I am the Student Council President of this school. My name is Horikita Manabu."

' Horikita? '

Ayanokouji looked at his seatmate whose entire concentration was focused on the President. It was as if she was lost in her own world, not caring a single bit about her surroundings.

Deciding to snap her awake from her dream world, Ayanokouji slightly gave her a slight jerk on her shoulders, causing her to get startled.

"A-ayanokouji-kun? "

"Are you okay? You looked like you just saw a ghost? "

Her expression softened as she sighed to herself.

"It's nothing too important. You don't have to fret over the matter."

Unsatisfied with her answer, the brown haired boy went towards the next step. He slightly pointed his fingers towards the President who once again went silent.

"Is that your brother? "

"Huh? "

Her face once again wore a panicked expression as she looked at him with an expression, not depicting that of an ice queen.

"How do you know that? "

" You just told me ...Also it doesn't take a genius to figure that out. Your hair colour and eye colour are the same..Also both of your last names are Horikita."

Once again he pointed his fingers towards the Older Horikita who seemed to notice it and looked at the Masterpiece with a curious gaze for a second, before reverting his eyes.

Horikita meekly nodded while looking down.She softly grabbed Ayanokouji's sleeve causing him to look at her with a raised eyebrow.

" Please don't tell anybody about this. I request you."

Her hands once again started shaking as she started breathing heavily...

"Don't worry I won't. Calm down and take a deep breath, you're hyperventilating again."

Once again nodding to him, she let go of his sleeves and started taking deep breaths.

"The student council is looking to recruit potential candidates among the first-year students to replace the graduating third years. Although no special qualifications are required for candidacy, we humbly ask that those considering application not be involved in other club activities. We generally do not accept students involved elsewhere."

He spoke in a soft tone, but the tension around the whole gymnasium was so thick it felt like one could cut it with a knife. He had managed to silence over a hundred new students in that spacious gymnasium. Of course, it wasn't his position as student council president that granted him this deference. That was simply Horikita Manabu's power. His presence dominated everyone around him.

' Is this the power of the Horikitas ? Quite fascinating I must say... Will Horikita Suzune reach the level of Horikita Manabu?

Well there's no need to question about that...I'll make her reach the same level..If not even better.

Because she will be my main piece in this mission.'

"Furthermore, we in the student council do not wish to appoint anyone who possesses a naive outlook. Not only would such a person not be elected, he or she would sully the sanctity of this school. It is the student council's right and duty to enforce and amend the rules, but the school expects more than that. We gladly welcome those of you who understand this."

He didn't pause even once during his eloquent speech. Immediately he hopped off the stage, not before whispering something into the Secretary's ears while looking at Ayanokouji and Horikita..

The brown haired boy slightly raised his eyebrows curiously, watching their interactions.

After that, the President walked away as Secretary Senpai started walking towards the stage.

"Thank you all for coming. The club fair has ended. We will now open the reception area to anyone interested in signing up. Also, registration will be open until the end of April, so if any student wishes to join at a later date, we ask that you please bring the application form directly to the club you wish to join."

Her laid back voice dissipated the uncomfortable silence of the gymnasium as the students started walking away..

Her purple eyes slowly darted towards the two of them, standing at the front.

" You two..First years. Would you mind coming with me to the Student Council room for a second?

The President would like to meet you both for some reason...
"

End of Chapter 10

Words : 3036

Don't expect any more chapters for some days.. I have my exams starting from this Saturday..Maybe after 4th I'll update a chapter.

As a final chapter before a small break, I made this chapter lengthier than others.

Anyways that's all.See ya.

Chapter 11 : Reunion

Season 1 : Chapter 11

" You two..First years. Would you mind coming with me to the Student Council room for a second?

The President would like to meet you both for some reason... "

As the purple haired secretary senpai whispered these words to the both of them, Horikita's relaxed state stiffened once again. Her eyebrows started twitching a little as her fists clenched together.

"R-right now?"

"Yes.Please follow me."

Without waiting for a response, Secretary-Senpai started walking away...

Ayanokouji looked at his 'friend' who was standing still, not daring to move a finger.

' What is the relationship between the two siblings? Why is Horikita so scared of her own brother? Was he the one to give her this trauma? '

"Horikita?"

No response.

"Horikita?"

Once again, no response....The girl was standing still as if both of her feet were glued to the ground.

'Sigh... Well it can't be helped.'

Without waiting any further, the masterpiece of the whiteroom grabbed her hand and started walking behind Tachibana Akane, dragging along his 'friend'.

Immediately she snapped out of her state feeling flustered at the sudden contact. Her eyes directed towards their hands interlocking one another as her face blushed a little.

"A-ayanokouji-kun? What are you doing holding my hand like that?"

" You were not moving an inch from your initial position. Plus it seems like your brother wants to meet you. You don't want to make him wait do you?"

Hearing his logical response, the black haired girl seemed to snap out of her weird fantasy back to reality.

" O-of course not. How can I make nii-san wait?

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
I apologise for my tardiness Ayanokouji-kun. Let's go."

Her voice got to her previous state as her eyes looked a little determined, though for some reason, both of her hands were still trembling.

Instead of letting go of her hand, the brown haired boy gripped it tighter, causing the quivering of her hands to get a little stable.

"I don't know why you are feeling anxious, Horikita...Don't worry too much. I'm here with you right? If something goes wrong I have your back."

Ayanokouji made his tone a little softer than usual, hoping to calm the girl down.

His reassuring words seemed to do its trick as Horikita's hands finally stopped trembling. As rehearsed, she once again took a couple of deep breaths. After a couple of seconds, she sent him a small relieved smile.

"Are you good now? "

"Yes. Thank you for your words."

Ayanokouji nodded while letting go of her hand and stuffing them in his pockets. He looked back a little towards his seatmate, gesturing to her to follow him.

"Let's go then."

"Right."

'Student Council President is Horikita's brother....

Horikita on one hand admires him but on the other hand is scared of him....

Will he be an Enemy of mine or an Ally? Guess there's only one way to find out ...'

The three of them were now standing in front of the Student Council Room.

Tachibana Akane looked back at the duo with a stern look on her face.

"The president is sitting at the other side of the door. I don't know why he wants to see the both of you, but I advise you to not cause any commotion. Am I clear? "

Horikita stiffly nodded while Ayanokouji looked at Secretary-Senpai for a second before looking away, not giving her a good enough reply to end the conversation.

Tachibana felt irked at his nonchalant behaviour and frowned at

him. Still not getting any response, she started glaring at Ayanokouji, who was looking out of the window, feeling bored of the conversation, while Horikita sweatdropped at the situation.

"You....Don't you know how to give a proper response when someone asks you a question? What a rude kouhai you are!!"

Her tone suddenly got hostile as Horikita and Ayanokouji looked at the purple creature in front of them with curiosity in their eyes.

'She is acting like an angry cat.'

'What is she? A species belonging to wild feline?'

Both Ayanokouji and Horikita thought something similar about the new purple haired creature who was growling at him like a wild animal, her calm and composed image, nowhere present anymore.

"Tachibana...Are they here? "

As soon as the new voice joined the conversation, Tachibana Senpai's glare immediately disappeared as she once again wore her professional mask. She looked back towards the now open door where Manabu Horikita was standing.

Tachibana immediately bowed a little towards him in respect.

"Yes I brought them, Horikita-kun. Should I stay here for your conversation or should I leave?"

"I'd prefer to talk to them in private.So I must ask you to leave."

"Very well.Have a good day, Horikita-kun."

"You too,Tachibana."

With that Secretary-Senpai made her way out of the corridor not before sending a sneer towards a now confused Ayanokouji.

'What did I do to make her hate me this early?....Well whatever. It doesn't matter to me. As long as I catch the big fish's attention, his lackey has to have my back. That's how pecking order works...'

The boy then shook his head off the thoughts as his eyes now darted towards the now sibling duo.

Manabu Horikita was staring at his sister with a cold,calculative gaze as if he was trying to figure something out about her.

On the other hand, the younger Horikita was not looking to be in a good condition. She was staring at the ground while nervously twirling her fingers along her braids.

'I'm not going to help Horikita this time.... I've been babying her all this time so that we can have a stable relationship as 'friends', but now I need to know her limitations and her reasons to act like this... And other than her brother, I find no other person as a better choice for this matter.'

Sorry Horikita...You are on your own now..Show me why I should invest my time on you.'

Horikita, after nervously looking down towards the ground for a

couple more seconds, finally gained enough courage to look at her brother right in the eyes.

"Good evening nii-san....I'm very happy to see you once again."

Her voice was quivering but the message was spread towards her brother, who looked at her with interest in his eyes for a second.

'Good job Horikita. At least you had the courage to speak up. Though it was not much, but still... all it takes are baby steps.'

"Good evening to you as well...Suzune. Before having a conversation, why don't we get inside the room? We wouldn't want anyone to spy on us,right?"

"Right."

Horikita's face immediately glowed a little when her brother at least gave her a greeting, to which Ayanokouji just observed the situation with great interest.

Manabu Horikita's eyes then darted towards the brown haired boy, who was standing nonchalantly with his hands stuffed in his pocket. As both of their eyes met each other, a weird sense of connection was felt between them for some reason, to which Manabu felt a little surprised. He adjusted his glasses before turning his back towards them.

'This guy.... I don't know his name...But I can feel that he would be a very important person in this institution.'

Shaking his head off his thoughts, Manabu Horikita opened the room of the Student Council for the both of them.

" Come inside both of you. Let's have a small chat for a couple of minutes..."

End of Chapter 11

Words : 1948

My bad for the small chapter... I was quite burned out after giving my exams but still wanted to write at least one chapter, since I promised you guys...

Next chapter would most probably come tomorrow or the day after tomorrow. The length of the chapters might be on the smaller side for this month... but I'll still be updating them regularly for the next 10 days.

Anyways that's all for this chapter. Though nothing too interesting happened, I hope it was still entertaining.

See ya.

Chapter 12 : Affection

Season 1 : Chapter 12

All three ANHS students were at the moment sitting on their respective chairs. There was a tense silence created between the Horikita siblings. None of them were yet to utter a single word, causing Ayanokouji to sigh in impatience.

'It's not like I'm being impatient. But the 2 Horikita's are just sitting without saying a word to one another for over 3 minutes. Isn't this supposed to be a reunion chat?'

"Why are you here in this school, Suzune?"

The elder Horikita's voice was ice cold, devoid of any emotions. He adjusted his glass before getting up from his seat. Horikita once again looked at her lap, not having the mental power to give him an actual answer.

While waiting for her answer, Manabu Horikita brought 2 glasses filled with water and gave it to the first 2 years.

"Drink some water first. It would help you to get rid of your nervousness."

Ayanokouji noticed Horikita's mouth curling a little upwards as she heard his words before taking a sip of the water. As Ayanokouji was observing the younger Horikita, he was in return getting observed by the elder one, who was looking at him with a cold, calculative gaze.

'Is this guy a friend of Suzune? Throughout my life, Suzune basked in her superiority and other than me, she didn't want to come close to anyone. She always believed isolation and freedom to be similar.'

'Why is she here? Is it to catch up to me? Is it to prove to me that she changed? If that is the case, then she remained the same.'

'Chasing my footsteps was the only thing my sister was capable of.... I tried to tell her so many times that she would not be able to develop like that, but my words turned to deaf ears...'

'Her attitude has changed a little now... I don't know if it's for the best though.... I would have a little more hope that she changed, if she was in some class other than D....'

'That brings me to my latest question... Who is this guy? Does Suzune consider him an equal or is she trying to make him her lackey? That would be incredibly dangerous because this brown haired boy is radiating an aura of superiority... Just who is he?'

After drinking the glass of water served to her, Horikita looked at her brother straight in the eyes without any hints of nervousness or fear, causing both the elder Horikita and Ayanokouji to raise their eyebrows in sync, finding the situation interesting.

"I'm here to improve myself as a human being and polish my abilities. This is an Elite School, so I want to develop as an Elite myself through all the future challenges this school passes to us."

Hearing her answer, Manabu Horikita's eyes widened for a second before he covered his face with his hands in such a way that for the other two it would seem like he was thinking, but Kiyotaka clearly noticed that behind his hands, the elder Horikita was smiling to himself..

(Like this)

'Ok...So he definitely isn't the reason for Horikita's trauma..He just seems like a cold brother who wants the best for her sister.That's good. Now, I don't have to make an enemy out of the Student Council President.'

As Ayanokouji was making theories about his 'friend' and her brother, the so-called brother himself was in deep thought.

'No it's too early for me to stop doubting her. She remained the same for 14 years... In only 2 years,is it possible for her to change that much? From her words, it seemed like she realised her own shortcomings and is trying to change her ways... So why is she put in Class D?'

Shaking his head off his thoughts, Manabu Horikita took a sip of water, while sending a gaze to a nonchalant Ayanokouji who was staring right back at him.

Finding the situation interesting, Manabu narrowed his eyes at Ayanokouji and sent him a cold stare, seeing which Horikita's spine started tingling a little because of the chills. She sent a worried look at Ayanokouji, who however was not budging at all from his stare.

'Interesting.'

"It feels like we haven't introduced ourselves to each other... My name is Manabu Horikita. I'm from Class 3-A. Nice to meet you."

The SCP raised his hands towards Ayanokouji expecting a formal handshake, to which Ayanokouji accepted it.

"Ayanokouji Kiyotaka...Class 1-D. Nice to meet you, Elder Horikita."

This time a tense silence formed between the both of them, causing the black haired maiden to look away from the scene.

Manabu started increasing his grip all the while staring hard into the brown abyss of Ayanokouji, which are called his eyes.

The masterpiece of the whiteroom however was not giving him any reactions to which Manabu felt it was a little impressive for a first year to not faint, barf or break into a sweat because of the

continuous pressure.

After evaluating the boy in front of him enough, Manabu nodded his head in satisfaction and tried to retract his hands, however it seemed to not move an inch.

'Huh?'

Horikita Manabu once again tried to draw back his arm, but it didn't move at all. His eyes darted towards their hands where he can see that the boy named Ayanokouji was now increasing his grip over Manabu's hand.

'I see. It seems like he didn't like my approach of testing hi-Ow. That actually hurts.'

Second by second, Ayanokouji increased his own strength over the grip, causing the elder Horikita to sweat a little, as he was trying his best to draw his hands back.

The younger Horikita, though, started panicking at the situation.

"AYANOKOUJI-KUN!!!!"

"DRAW YOUR HANDS BACK!!!"

"YOU ARE HURTING NII-SAN!!!"

Not giving a single care to Horikita's protests, Ayanokouji's eyes went towards her brother who gave him an impressed nod.

The younger Horikita however, didn't like the fact that she was deliberately getting ignored by her friend. So, she started bonking him in return.

[P.S. Unpopular Opinion : Food Wars Season 1 and 2 were solid 9. After that it just became a 5 . I bet I would get a lot of hate for this lmao. Also Fuck Erina Nakiri. Alice is way superior.]

"AYANOKOUJI-KUN!!!"

"Your grip seems to be quite strong. Did you learn Martial Arts?"

"Nope. Just Piano and Calligraphy. My father is an influential person, so he spent quite a large amount of money to give me the best self defence lessons. As you can see, it worked out pretty well."

"I see. It certainly is impressive. I can feel that by the end of the day my hands will be sore because of this situation."

"DON'T IGNORE ME!!!! RELEASE NII-SAN THIS INSTANT, YOU ARE HURTING HIM!!!"

Horikita yelled right at the brown haired boy's ears which immediately caused him to lose the grip over Manabu's hand and cover both of his ears.

"Don't yell at me woman. Don't you know that you could destroy my eardrums if you yell like that?"

Horikita crossed her hands beneath her chest and sent him a smug smile.

"Really? I thought that The Ayanokouji Kiyotaka is always the best at everything. I didn't know that all it takes is a single yell to

get you in a weak position. How preposterous.."

She tried to make her voice seem as sad as possible, in hopes to mock Ayanokouji.

"If you think it's nothing..Then keep those earbuds closed all the time. Next time I might sneak up a small cockroach or an insect in there. Then you will realise the advantage of having working ears, Horikita Shitzune."

After hearing his not so empty threat, Horikita shivered in fear before composing herself.

"Resorting to empty threats and cursing to prove your point. As expected of someone like you, Brutekouji-kun."

"And how do you know my threat is empty? What if I was waiting all this time to get you close to me just so I can scare the living crap out of you?"

"I watch so many Horror movies that I'm resistant to jumpscare. So, your ploy to creep me out won't work Childkouji-kun. Also, I'm not one of those girls that is scared of bugs and creepy crawlies. So either way it's useless."

Both Horikita and Ayanokouji sent each other an amused stare, enjoying their small friendly banter.

The only other person who was sitting in the room with them had his eyes widened in surprise.

'Suzune is actually talking with someone without being rude to them... She looks like she is having fun... Is this what they call a sense of accomplishment?'

No.... I didn't do anything to feel accomplished, other than trying to push her away from me. I should never take the credit for her growth.. That brings me to my final question... How and why did Suzune change this much? What was the catalyst behind this sudden change?'

Manabu coughed in his hand, snapping both the first years out of their banter. Realising that someone else was listening to their conversation, Horikita blushed in embarrassment before quietly sitting on her chair, while Ayanokouji basked in the glory of his win while sitting like a royal king.

"Say Suzune... Who is Ayanokouji to you?"

Hearing this sudden question out of the Student Council President's mouth, both the first years widened their eyes a little, while the younger Horikita blushed after realising the hidden meaning of his statement.

"W-what are y-you saying Nii-san? There is nothing going on between me and Ayanokouji-kun. He is my friend."

As soon as the word 'friend' was uttered out of Suzune's mouth, Manabu sighed in relief and let out a small smile, surprising his sister.

"Friend huh.. I see. Very well."

His attention then went towards the brown haired boy who was observing the situation.

"Ayanokouji Kiyotaka..... the only student to join Advanced Nurturing High School by recommendation, without having to give any exams or interview . I thought that you might be only here because of your father's political power at first, however after your show of strength, my opinions over you have vastly changed.

And you... Suzune."

Horikita looked at her brother with a gaze filled with curiosity, resembling that of a lost puppy.

"I'm proud of the person you have become. You realised your own flaws and you are trying to overcome those flaws for the betterment of yourself. I'm very pleased to see this development. Good job."

As he uttered those words filled with nothing but warmth in them, Manabu Horikita took a couple steps towards his sister and then gave her a small head pat filled with pride and acknowledgement.

The younger Horikita widened her eyes at the sudden contact, which were then brimmed with tears as she melted into her brother's touch..

'Nii-san is actually comforting me...For how many years I was waiting for this outcome...Just one small touch and it brought me to tears. Hehe~ I really am a weak girl, it seems.'

"Suzune... I'm looking forward to seeing further development of yours...

And Ayanokouji... I hope you make the next three years interesting..."

End Of Chapter

Words : 2541

Finally, the Horikita Manabu chapter is here. What do you guys think of it? I didn't want him to be hard on Suzune, since unlike Canon, here she knows her weakness and is a changed person. Do tell me if you guys liked the route I went with Horikita Manabu.

Also what do you guys think of the chapter?

Anyways, that's all.See ya.

Chapter 13 : A Pleasant Afternoon

Season 1 : Chapter 13

About 2 weeks have passed since April 1. Nothing changed in the class. Most of the students were still doing their usual things: bunking classes, sleeping, reading weird black and white pictures, playing games, texting and chatting with one another.

Within these 2 weeks, other than Horikita, Ayanokouji acquired a new 'friend' in Class-D, who goes by the name of Hideo Sotomura. From his deduction, Ayanokouji realised that his chubby acquaintance was a shy guy who wanted some friends.

So, before the bespectacled dude could join the likes of Ike, Yamauchi and Hondou, The brown haired boy decided to befriend him since he could feel that Sotomura would be an important piece Ayanokouji could acquire in his Arsenal, if he grooms him with attention.

Horikita at first was not excited with Ayanokouji's new friend because she thought much like the other guys in the class, Sotomura was a pervert who doesn't shy away from expressing his inner lust everywhere. However, she was pleasantly surprised when she found out that he was just a shy nerd with low communication skills.

Though Sotomura himself was a little pervert, he kept it within himself so that the girls in the class, who already look at him in repulsion because of his chubby stature, don't get even more repulsed because of his actions.

As class ended, most of the students left the class to go to the cafeteria to have their lunch, while some students were staying in their class having their lunch.

" Horikita-san, did you read the volume of the novel I gave you yesterday?"

Sotomura immediately walked towards the 2 loners located at the end of the room. He looked to be feeling jolly and happy for some reason.

Horikita took out the volume from her bag and gave it to Sotomura with a small smile.

"Yes. After doing my homework I decided to give it a try and

colour me surprised that I actually enjoyed it. Though the vocabulary is definitely a lot more informal and direct than the usual novels I read, it gave me a refreshing feeling with a sense of relatability. I must thank you for recommending this to me, Sotomura-kun."

Hearing genuine praise coming from the Ice Queen of the class, Sotomura blushed in embarrassment and nervousness.

"I brought Volumes 2 and 3 with me as well. If you would like then I would share it with you after the class."

"I would very much appreciate it."

Horikita then handed Sotomura the novel, who then started taking a couple of glances towards the brown haired boy who was looking out of the window.

Sensing the class nerd's stare on him, Ayanokouji looked at him with a confused expression.

"What's up Sotomura?"

"Do you want to read this novel as well, Ayanokouji-dono?"

The nerd then got the unusual support from the ice queen who nodded at Ayanokouji as well.

"I must say you should read it, Ayanokouji-kun. Maybe you would get better at interacting with others after reading the main character's dialogues and start wearing his scowl as well."

"Real funny Horikita. I can't stop laughing after hearing your words 🤔 🤔 "

"Your remote expression says otherwise though.."

Horikita gave him a smug expression before taking out her lunchbox from her bag.

"Very well then, I'll read it. "

As soon as he heard those words, Sotomura visibly glowed and gave him the book.

Ayanokouji opened the first page in curiosity and saw the cover.

' Yahari Ore no Seishun Rabukome wa Machigatteiru ' That's a long name. Also why is this guy checking out the butt of the black haired woman with a scowl on his face. Also the woman looks a lot like Horikita. Is this the reason she was interested in the novel? Is she a secret narcissist?

"Anyways I'm going to the cafeteria to get some food. Are you coming with me, Ayanokouji-dono?"

"Go on ahead. I'll join you a little later."

"Very well. Have a good day both of you."

After that Sotomura skipped out of the classroom while humming a song that he calls his favourite anime op. The chubby guy surely likes to talk in abbreviations a lot.

The masterpiece of the whiteroom then looked at Horikita for a

second, who was for some reason blushing to herself.

"Hey Horikita"

"Whaaa!?"

She immediately backed out with a surprised expression on her face, confusing Ayanokouji. Her face was now beet red in embarrassment.

After that she coughed lightly in her hand and wore the perfect mask of a composed, dignified, stoic woman.

"What do you need Ayanokouji-kun?"

"Want to do something amusing? Since there are not a lot of students present in the class as of now, I think it would be a perfect moment."

As soon as his words registered in her head, her mask immediately disappeared as she immediately backed up, took a defensive posture and started glaring at Ayanokouji.

"I suggest you to not be sly Ayanopervert-kun. I'm not a loose girl who will go along with your wishes grrrr"

The black haired maiden then started growling at him with a glare on her face.

"What are you getting that idea from? Did you forget that there are CCTV cameras over there? There's no way I'm planning to do anything suspicious with you."

The brown haired boy then pointed towards the cameras to which Horikita nodded.

"Of course I didn't forget about the CCTV's. But in spite of their presence, some unique specimens of our class are doing a lot of self degrading and shameless things."

"...Just do what I am doing and follow my lead ok?"

The black haired maiden, albeit confused, nodded to his words.

"Very well."

Ayanokouji then looked back at the camera and did the thing which he had been aspiring to do since the second day he joined the school.

The boy showed 2 peace signs at the camera with a stoic expression on his face. Seeing the vast difference of his actions and expression, Horikita giggled to herself before following his lead as well.

"Peace🕊️🕊️"

As they were done with their job of mischief, the black haired maiden immediately covered her face with her book to muffle her giggles.

Ayanokouji, feeling satisfied with his work, then got up from his

seat.

'Yosh. Work is now done. Now as a reward, let's go eat lunch.'

The brown haired boy then made up his mind to go to his new desired spot, the cafeteria, but was stopped when a familiar hand took hold of his sleeves.

"Where are you going, Ayanokouji-kun?"

"Umm, to have my lunch. I'm going to the cafeteria."

The brown haired boy gave his answer with a deadpan expression as if he was questioning her, *'Are you really asking me this question, bish?'*

But the girl apparently ignored his sarcastic answer as she was lost in her own world. With a small blush on her cheeks, she nervously started twirling her braids with her fingers.

"You don't make your own lunch?"

"Um no. I actually can't cook. Also the cafeteria food is relatively cheap. So I usually just go there."

Horikita then dipped one of her hand inside her bag to search for something.

Unfortunately for her, the thing she was looking for was apparently hidden beneath her other accessories, because of which she had to put 2 of her hands inside the bag. She looked at her dull eyed friend with a panicked expression on her face.

"Please don't leave Ayanokouji-kun. I have something important to give you. I promise it will be worth the wait."

The brown haired boy sighed to himself in dissatisfaction.

'Nothing you give me would be of the same worth as food, Horikita. But guess I'll humour you for a few seconds, since you are my first friend.'

After an excruciatingly long 7 seconds, it seemed that she got her desired thing, since she let out a small smile of satisfaction. Then as if the entire fiasco never happened, she wore her usual composed expression on her face and brought out the item, seeing which Ayanokouji's eyes widened for a second, before he gave her an amused stare.

'I see. So that's why she was so adamant in having me wait for her.'

Horikita gave him a small box covered neatly in a cloth with a shy but cool expression on her face.

"I made a lunch for you though."

The brown haired boy sighed to himself before accepting the gift from Horikita's hand.

'I take my words back. It was hundred percent worth the wait. Horikita, with this one action, you now ascended from the position of a pawn to a knight. I'm so proud of you.'

The brown haired boy, who was apparently lost in his imagination, started wiping a mock tear from his cheek, seeing which his friend gave him a curious and weird gaze.

'What is this idiot thinking now?'

End of Chapter 13

Words : 2250

New chef acquired : Horikita Suzune!!!

New friend acquired : Hideo Sotomura

You may ask why Sotomura of all people. I could've chosen Akito, Sudou, Yukimura or Hirata as Ayanokouji's first friend.

I just chose Sotomura because I like the dude, and other than reaction fanfics, I don't see much of him. And he is pretty useful as well. I'm planning to give him a lot of development so that he feels like a third dimensional character.

Also I apologise for the excessive use of images. I know that some people may find it annoying, but a lot of others appreciate it.

Do tell me if I should add images to the story or should I just leave it for your imagination? I'm fine with both to be honest.

Maybe the next chapter or Chapter 15 would be when May 1 starts and Tyrantkouji arrives at the scene.

Anyways that's all for this chapter. See ya.

Chapter 14 : May 1st

Season 1 : Chapter 14

"Hey did you get any Private Points?"

"Nope. I didn't get any!!! What about you guys?! "

"Zero over here as well dude."

"Did the school forget about giving us the points?"

"Chill out. There must be some malfunctions because of which I guess the points are delayed."

"But I used all my points!! How can I go through this day without a single point?"

"Don't worry about that Karuizawa-san. I can lend you 1000 points to get through today."

"Although it isn't much, I still appreciate it a lot, Matsushita-san."

After listening to all the commotion going through the class, The Masterpiece of The White Room mentally laughed at the situation.

'Looks like we still have some optimists here thinking that it's a malfunction. Well, I'm hoping to see your reaction after Sensei announces the twist.'

"As I thought."

Ayanokouji's train of thought was interrupted when his black haired friend gave him an incredulous look.

"What?"

"You really are a sadist. Although you are not wearing any expression on your face, your usually dull eyes are glistening with amusement. You are really enjoying the situation, aren't you?"

Horikita opened her notebook and her pencil box before glancing at her seatmate, whose amused stare was then directed towards her.

Sitting next to Ayanokouji for a whole month, Horikita came to realise some aliases or forms of her friend.

The first is his Seriouskouji version. It's the version of Ayanokouji which always gets the stuff done as soon as possible. When he is serious, he never gets distracted. It's as if his mind runs on autopilot.

His second form was his Lazykouji version. This version of Ayanokouji likes to do nothing and just sit on his ass admiring the beauty of the environment and the atmosphere like an old man.

His third version was Teasingkouji. Even though his tone remained the same, this version of Ayanokouji's only mission is to

tease Horikita to get any sorts of reaction.

And right now, it's the third and most dreaded version of Ayanokouji sitting beside her.

"Well first of all your comment over my eyes were unnecessary and rude Horikita. I thought of you as my friend but this is how you treat me? Was our relationship only created based on these feeble bonds?"

Ayanokouji intentionally said the last sentence in a louder voice, causing some of the students to look back in their direction. Horikita immediately bit her lips in embarrassment as she started glaring at Ayanokouji for a second. Then as if her mind clicked, she stopped her glaring at her brown haired seatmate and composed herself.

'Don't act like that Suzune. If you glare at him, that means you are giving him the desired reactions. If he sees that his words have no effect, then he will realise how powerless he is in this situation.'

While lost in her thoughts, Horikita let out a small evil smirk, seeing which Ayanokouji raised one of his eyebrows in curiosity. The black haired maiden then turned her head towards him and decided that it would be the best decision for both sides if she takes a tactical retreat.

"So...Ayanokouji-kun, do you think the practice exams last week were random? Or will they have any significance?"

'Changing the topic huh...You think you would be safe by escaping the situation? Very well...at least for a few minutes, I'll let you live in peace Horikita.'

"I think the practice exam was to evaluate us, I guess. Sensei herself said there were no risks. There's one thing I realised ever since attending this institution. Our homeroom teacher may act vague or not give us any information, but she never really lied to us...as of yet. But even if the exam influences our private points, it won't matter either way, cause I'm sure with the amount of stupidity that went on for this month, it won't go unpunished."

"Did I ever tell you that you get quite intimidating while you talk about these matters?"

"Do I? I don't think I seem scary."

'I lied as naturally as I breathe. Of course I know that I seem scary and sooner or later I'm going to use my intimidation factor to rule this class. Today will be a long but fruitful day...I can feel it already.'

Our chatter stopped when our homeroom teacher opened the door. The panicked chatter of the class stopped immediately as every single student looked at her in apprehensive as well as hopeful gaze.

Sensei's face was stone cold without a single hint of emotion in it.

It was as stoic as a porcelain doll. Among the veil of silence created in the classroom, the only sound that reverberated throughout the whole room was the sound of the heels of her shoe hitting the cold floor.

Even though it was just a simple sound, among the uneasy silence of the room, the clacking sound of her heels made the atmosphere 10 times more tense.

Soon Chabashira-sensei put the white poster of some sorts on her desk as she stood on the podium.

"All right, your morning homeroom is about to begin. Before we get started, does anyone have any questions? If so, now is the time to speak"

Immediately a lot of students from the class raised their hands. One of them was the class perverts Ike and Yamauchi's friend Hondou.

"Um, I checked my point balance this morning, but I didn't see any deposits. Points are given on the first day of every month, aren't they?"

The others retreated their hands and started nodding to Hondou's words as if they were sure that was the case.

'Miserable is the only word I can think of while looking at them...'

The only word they wanted to hear from Sensei's mouth was " *It's a malfunction from the school. But don't worry, you guys will get your points later in the day...*" But unfortunately for them, fate is more cruel than it seems.

"Hondou,I already explained this before, didn't I? Points are deposited on the first day of the month. I've confirmed that points were wired this month without any issues."

All their hope went down the drain as they looked at one another confusingly.

"Um, but....nothing was deposited into my account, though..."

'Still trying to convince yourself? I must give you some praise for your incredible optimism. If only you used that for the good.'

The blonde haired girl named Karuizawa shot up from her seat.

"Sensei, what seems to be the problem? We didn't get a single point this month and here you are saying that the school gave us our points...This is all confusing."

Her friends backed her up by saying "Yeahs!!!".

"Pfft-"

As soon as he heard the noise, the brown haired boy turned his head towards the source of it. It was none other than Horikita, who immediately covered her mouth with a notebook.

"It seems you are quite enjoying the situation."

"Are you not as well? Seeing them suffer for their own actions is

bringing me a lot of joy."

"Say Horikita...you have enough points to go through this month, right?"

The black haired girl then brought out her device and showed it to her friend with a smug smile.

"Yup. I have **92,000** points still left. If I didn't know the situation, most probably I would've spent around 15k but somehow I conserved my needs and spent about 8k points.What about you?"

Ayanokouji took out his own device and showed it to Horikita...where it said **88,950**.

Horikita slightly nodded to him and gave him a small smile.

"Guess we don't have to worry about this month the-"

"What a bunch of dumb idiots you kids are...."

Her words stopped in her throat as Chabashira-sensei's ice cold voice filled with contempt and ridicule.

The students of Class-D were baffled at her words, but soon were outraged at their teacher for calling them idiots.

"Dumb?"

"What are you talking about?!"

"Sit down Hondou, I'll explain once more.Pay close attention to every single word I am saying, because I will not be repeating it again."

Hondou reluctantly sat down while the others looked at Chabashira curiously.

"Points were deposited...That much I know for certain.There is no chance that we forgot about anyone in this class, understood?"

Once again the only reaction on their faces was filled with bewilderment and confusion.

"This is getting kind of repetitive. I thought they would be smart enough to at least get the situation now... It seems I was wrong."

Sighing, Ayanokouji stood up from his desk, seeing which most of the eyes of the class went towards him.

Horikita sent him a confused stare to which he slightly nodded at her in reassurement, calming her nerves.

"What is it, Ayanokouji? Want to say something?"

Chabashira gave him a smirk as if challenging him to do something. Although beneath that cruel smile of hers, the brown haired boy was able to notice another feeling : '**Hope**'...

That expression on her face definitely surprised the brown haired boy at first, before he composed himself.

"It seems just like me, Chabashira-sensei also wants to reach Class-A. All those subtle glances, her trying to lead me on and now this face of hers..."

Very well. It seems like our interests are similar to one another sensei .

I hope for your future cooperation.'

Ayanokouji stuffed his hands on both sides of his pockets as his eyes darted towards the students of Class-D, then he looked back at his homeroom teacher with a nonchalant expression.

"As much as I am enjoying seeing them suffer just like you, I think it would be better if we speed up the conversation a little, don't you think? As a leader of Class-D, I request you to not involve yourself in the mindless questions of these idiots and just give us the information."

As he completed his words, Horikita widened her eyes in surprise.

'It seems like Ayanokouji-kun is taking the active approach...I thought he would be a little more passive...Very well then. I guess this would be more effective if Ayanokouji-kun thinks so...'

The other students rose in outrage at his words.

"Who do you think you are, you bastard?!"

"How dare you call us idiots?!"

"Who even made you the leader?! Our leader should be either Kushida-san or Hirata-kun!!!"

The two students on the other side were wearing different expressions on their faces.

Hirata was staring at the brown haired boy with a concerned gaze, while Kushida, who was hiding her face behind the notebook, failed to hide that she was evilly grinning at him.

'Looks like I made my first enemy. What was her name again? Ku-something like that right? So, not letting her get close to Horikita resulted in her going against me... Well not like it matters either way. Even with all their hate.. a mere commoner can't rebel against their King... they need a group of other rebels.'

'But even if they all get together to eliminate me, it's not like they will be successful. Because unlike a king who hides behind his soldiers, metaphorically I will be a god against these mortals. It's not overconfidence, it's just mere facts.'

A surprising assist came from a very odd person.

"Fu~ I guess you trash pieces of garbage of this planet forgot about something... As expected of trashy existences like you. Staying near you all will sully my beauty."

Koenji, not even opening his eyes to look at his classmates, just murdered them with his words. Before the idiots once again start their mindless rally against Koenji, Ayanokouji starts his attack.

'Even though it wasn't needed, I appreciate your sudden assistance Koenji.'

"Did you guys forget?"

"Huh? Forget what?"

"Forget the deal we made, geniuses? Well.. Of course you did..

What else can I expect from you all?

Did you forget the bet where we decided that all of you will be my slaves if we don't get any points next month?"

Once again whispers among the students of Class-D broke out, all of them directed against the Masterpiece of the White Room.

The greyish black haired clown Yamauchi tried to act ignorant, in spite of being the one to accept his offer.

"What are you saying? We never accepted any-"

"Did you guys forget about the CCTV's?"

Just this one word from the brown haired boy stopped all the chatter as their faces filled with annoyance were now replaced with horror as they finally realised their deed.

'Well isn't this cute? Guess they finally understood their place.'

Not missing this chance, the brown haired boy continued his attacks.

"All of you forgot right? I even showed you guys the camera but what was the use? You slept, you played with your phone as well as your certain body parts."

Ayanokouji stared right into the eyes of Yamauchi as he said the last words. The others followed his stare and stared at him in disgust and revulsion.

The boy on the other hand, looked down on his lap and started sweating profusely.

"You are the worst."

"It's all because of you."

"I wish you were not here."

Mindless hate started chattering from the girls directed towards Yamauchi, who started to tear up because of the embarrassment.

Ayanokouji then clapped both of his hands loudly, causing them to look back at him.

"Now don't blame him for everything ladies. You are not spared as well. So as I was saying you slept, you played, you talked, you texted, you entered the class late.... And you still have the gall to place blame on others and demanding points.. Isn't this kind of ironic?

I can just buy the access to get the specific footage and show you all our deal, but then you will have to compensate for my lack of points with your own. None of you would want that right?"

They all reluctantly shook their heads to which Ayanokouji nodded to himself.

"Very well... Now I'm leaving everything to Chabashira-sensei, but I'd like to say one last thing to my slaves..."

Playtime is over boys and girls. Get yourself ready to work. Cause I'm not planning to spare any one of you. "

End of Chapter 14

Words : 3230

The chapter you were waiting for... Tyrantkouji enters the scene. Unlike the other tyrant stories, I'm not going to have him rely on violence entirely. Violence will be there but to control someone, in my opinion Ayanokouji doesn't need to rely on that.

It's more of Ryuen's thing. Ayanokouji would be like Sakayanagi, just more active and way more cunning. Any obstacles in his path would be removed without any hesitation.

So get ready for a lot of expulsions in the future... Whether it be different classes or his own class... Who knows?

Also what do you think of the chapter? I didn't want Kiyo to just roast them unnecessarily just to vent out stress because after the 1st day, no one paid him much attention and no one tried to bully him.

*So having him just continuously bully them while no one could respond to him because of him talking in **Bold** font seemed kind of cringe to me.*

Ironic right? Because that was something I did in Ayanokouji Doesn't Hold Back. Whenever I read the early chapters of that story, I cringe so hard lmao.

Anyways that's all for this chapter. Next chapter may come out after 22nd April, since my exams are once again starting.

I will update one last chapter of A Little Change before going into my break though.

Have a nice day. See ya.

Chapter 15 : Resistance

[Lol even though this is a Horikita story...This meme was just too good to not post]

Season 1 : Chapter 15

" Playtime is over boys and girls. Get yourself ready to work. Cause I'm not planning to spare any one of you. "

Most of the students from Class-D gulped at the threat of the brown haired boy, realising the severity of the situation they put themselves in. Whereas some ignorant students of the class were still not able to comprehend the situation.

Two of them were a short blue haired girl named Shinohara and a beta looking guy named Miyamoto.

"Why should we have to work for you huh? "

"What's the use of it?"

The brown haired boy sighed to himself before looking at their homeroom teacher, who let out a small defeated smile at the situation.

'They say Ignorance is bliss but it really does become a pain in the ass in certain situations doesn't it....'

"You know....It's better if you get quiet. Then Sensei would actually be able to explain the details of this school. The constant protest of you guys is just wasting all of our time. So why don't you do all of us a favour and just keep that mouth of yours shut ?"

Horikita immediately stood up and admonished the both of them with her signature ice cold glare and cold facts, resulting in them to get silent.

"This is just a waste of my time. Fuck all this. I'm leaving."

The red haired guy named Sudou kicked his desk in frustration and immediately stood up with the intention of leaving the room.

'Already ditching class since homeroom? Can't be more proud of you, red hair...'

The red haired guy named Sudou slung his bag over his shoulder and started walking towards the door. Though for some reason instead of using the door located on the end corner of the room, he decided on a bolder approach.

He walked towards the front door and soon stood in front of Ayanokouji, glaring at the brown haired boy.

'Trying to use your large stature as a means of intimidation? What

else can I expect from a delinquent like you.'

"Listen up fucker. I don't care if you order the others but don't you dare try to bother me. I don't care if I help this class or not. If this doesn't go through that skull of yours, I wouldn't mind smashing that knowledge in it."

Sudou finished his sentence while roughly poking on Ayanokouji's forehead with his finger.

The others widened their eyes while observing the new hostile situation created in the class, while some of them mentally cheered for their red haired classmate wanting him to teach the apparently gloomy loner a lesson.

The model student of Class-D, Hirata Yosuke immediately shot up from his seat with a troubled expression on his face, already sensing what was about to happen....

Horikita on the other hand sat down quietly at her seat, while fixating a cold calculative glare towards Sudou. Then as if something clicked in her head, she suddenly started rummaging her bag and picked her ex best friend out of it. She looked at the item in her hand with a small reminiscing smile.

'Oh how much I missed you, my dear Compass-kun....Although I promised to myself I won't use you anymore, but if it means I have to protect Ayanokouji-kun, then I won't hesitate to use any weapons in my arsenal.'

With that, Horikita closed one of her eyes and aimed the compass at Sudou's direction from the end corner of the room. The students in the line of sight of compass-kun widened their eyes in fear before scooting towards the side.

Not minding the constant poking of Sudou's fingers, the brown haired boy looked at the now aiming Horikita and shook his head on both sides.

'Don't do this Horikita. I already got the situation in my hands...'

As if reading the thoughts of her brown haired friend, Horikita sighed to herself before stuffing her dear old friend inside her bag.

'Guess it's farewell for now... Bye Bye Compass-kun.'

"Oi you bastard..You ignoring me? Well that doesn't matter to me. Nod if you agree to not bother me."

Ayanokouji let out a small yawn before stuffing his hands inside his pants, completely bored of the situation, annoying Sudou even further. The red haired guy grabbed both sides of his collar in annoyance but was stopped when Ayanokouji looked at him right in his eyes....surprising Sudou even more...

'He is not scared of me? Everyone gets scared when I act like this? But I sense no fear from him...'

"And what if I don't agree Sudou? What if I force you to be my

slave? Will you punch me in front of the class? Will you punch me in front of our homeroom teacher? Will you punch me in front of 4 CCTV cameras? "

Sudou's grip slightly loosened as his mind finally started registering the consequences of his actions....But it seemed like Ayanokouji was not done with his words...

'Let's make my first obedient dog now shall we?'

"Why are you here in this school,Sudou? Is it because you want to get your desired job?"

".....Yes. Why do you care?"

"Well too bad for you. As long as we stay in Class-D, none of us will get our desired jobs...Isn't that right, Sensei?"

The rest of the Class widened their eyes at this new revelation and looked at their homeroom teacher with a panicked expression on their faces.

The homeroom teacher of Class D, Miss Chabashira also widened her own eyes at this question asked by the brown haired boy...

'How does he know th- Oh...I shouldn't be surprised. It's him after all.'

She immediately composed herself before answering his question with a small smile on her face.

"Yes. You are completely correct,Ayanokouji. As expected of you."

'As expected huh... It seems like she is aware of my abilities. Very well. '

Sudou's eyes widened at the revelation as he now wore an uncharacteristic panicked expression on his face.

"D-does that mean I won't be getting a confirmed spot in a basketball team after I graduate from here? What's even the point then?"

Sudou's voice got quieter and quieter by the second as Ayanokouji mentally smirked to himself after acquiring the new knowledge.

"Basketball huh...Do you think any team will accept a hot headed delinquent like you with no sense of manners? How can someone like you be a professional player when you don't even have the patience to stay awake for 45 minutes in a class...How will they accept someone like you who doesn't even know how to work together? Now let me ask you...Do you really think someone like you deserves it?"

"Shut up bastard. It doesn't matter if I graduate from Class-D or not...I'll become a basketball player of my own abilities."

'It seems like even with that attitude of yours, you are still a headstrong guy with a righteous motivation...Now if only I could fix up that attitude of yours.... Wait, isn't that what I am doing?'

"Not possible man...You think you would be a pro like this?"

The brown haired boy then made his voice as mocking as possible, surprising his black haired friend at the sudden change of tone in his normal emotionless voice.

'Ayanokouji-kun...This is a dangerous game he is playing...Sudou-kun is a dangerous target to poke. Should I help him? No....Ayanokouji-kun instructed me to not intervene... He also told me that his father gave him self defence classes. I should not worry about Ayanokouji-kun.I should trust him....Otherwise what's the point of us being friends...'

With that Horikita started taking deep breaths while not moving her eyes away from the spectacle in front of the class.

"Not a single team would choose a spoiled brat like you....So why don't you just give up Sudou? You are useless after all..."

"You bastard!!!!"

With a manic rage, Sudou immediately grabbed one of the collars of the brown haired boy and threw a huge right hand towards him with an inhumane force behind it.

Chibashira's eyes widened at the situation but she composed herself as soon as possible when she noticed the ever so composed look of her future favourite student.

"Sudou-kun!!!!"

Hirata immediately shot up from his seat and ran towards them trying to stop the situation but failed in his mission because of what happened next.

What happened the next second, was something no one else would have expected.

One second Sudou was towering above Ayanokouji with his fist raised, the next second he was on the ground while both of his hands were grabbed behind his back by the gloomy brown haired boy of the class, his ever present stoic look still present in his face...this time seeming more intimidating than ever.

Every single time Sudou tried to free himself from the brown haired boy's grip with his power, the grip seemed to increase further and further, making it nearly unbearable for the red haired delinquent.

Ayanokouji's grip over both of Sudou's hand increased causing him to let out grunts of pain,while the brown haired boy sighed to himself.

In the ever silent classroom, the only sound that reverberated throughout the whole room was that small sigh, which for some reason caused every person present to have a chill in their backs.

"And this is why I don't like using violence One second they act like they are some hot shit... trying to intimidate or taunt me, the next second they are lying on the ground, throwing their hands everywhere like dead fish... Same old situation every time.... It gets

really boring, you know..

Are you done resisting me,Sudou?"

Not getting any response, Ayanokouji pulled both of his hands while pressing Sudou's back with his leg, causing him to howl in pain.

"I said, are you done resisting me, Sudou? On a count of 1,2,3.. I want a reply...

.

.

.

.

.

One

Two

Thr-"

"I'm done. I'm done. Please release me. I'm sorry. I'll follow every single word of yours..."

As soon as those words were uttered from the mouth of Sudou, his hands were released as they fell on the ground. Instead of standing up, Sudou layed down on the ground, not finding any strength to move himself.

Ayanokouji's eyes then went towards all the other students, who immediately flinched at his gaze, except Horikita and Sotomura.

"As I said, once again... I don't like using violence...So don't try to attack me alright? Follow me quietly and I'll get you all to Class-A in no time. Go against me, you'll face hell. It's that simple. "

End of Chapter 15

Words : 2580

First glimpse of Violence....Though there won't be too much of it in the future, but it can't be COTE without fights....

Although we can't consider this a fight, Kiyotaka just subdued him from moving further, otherwise Sudou would have gone night night.

Anyways, that's all for this chapter. Next one would be most probably after April 16 or April 22...

See ya.

Chapter 16 : Consequences

"Chabashira-sensei, how much time do we have left for the homeroom?"

After listening to the brown haired boy's question, Chabashira looked at her watch before sighing to herself.

"Only 1 minute, Ayanokouji...."

"Well that sure is troublesome. In normal terms you won't be able to discuss the important matters then...Because of the interference of certain disturbances."

Ayanokouji's brown eyes then darted towards every single person who created a commotion, as they looked down in fear...

They wanted to protest against the apparent gloomy loner of the class, but what can they even do against someone who manhandled Sudou, the scary delinquent of the class.

The more responsible students of the class fell into a dilemma. They really needed to know the information about the School's system. Maybe they can ask their friends from other classes, but who says that they won't lie...

This time however, only one question saved them from this panic and difficulty...

"Sensei....how many points would it take for you to stay in the class for 5 more minutes?"

All of them had their eyes widened while Chabashira let out a small smirk.

"10,000 points."

"Isn't that cruel, Sensei?"

The homeroom teacher of Class-D shrugged her shoulders before giving him a small smile.

"I can't do anything about that, Rules are rules...Either you pay the points or I am leaving....Time is up for homeroom."

"If it's a rule, then we can't do much about it huh...Very well, I'll pay the points. As the Leader of Class-D, the least I can do is sacrifice 10,000 private points for the wellbeing of my class."

With that, Ayanokouji went towards Chabashira to send her the 10,000 points, but was interrupted when Horikita stood up from her seat.

"I want to pay 5,000 points. Is that alright?"

Chabashira-sensei's eyes went towards the black haired girl whose

eyes were filled with resolve, as the woman let out a small smile.

" Horikita huh....I see. Yes, you can pay as well. There are no rules against dividng an amount between students."

With that both the students paid the points to the homeroom teacher of Class-D while the rest of the class looked at them with a helpless gaze, while some of them looked at them with admiration... One of them was one Hirata Yosuke...

' I still don't understand what is going on and why Ayanokouji-kun wants to be the leader....But he himself sacrificed his points for our betterment...While fighting Sudou-kun as well, instead of knocking him out and injuring him, Ayanokouji-kun just stopped him from moving further, handling the situation very well.

I see..If Ayanokouji-kun wants to be the leader, then I would have no problem with it....Because he is already managing the class in 5 minutes way better than I did in a whole month..'

"Very well....Now listen closely and carefully to my words,Students of Class-D."

Chabashira-sensei loudly smacked her notebook on the podium, causing every single person in Class-D to pay close attention to her words.

"Firstly, all of you should be grateful to Ayanokouji and Horikita...If I'm being frank, with an attitude like yours, none of you deserve to know this information. I should just pack my bags and leave this hellhole of a room. But here I am, only because Ayanokouji and Horikita paid the points. So be grateful,defects..."

The class looked a little confused and annoyed when Chabashira called them defects, but they didn't have the courage to speak up after all the events that took place, prior to the situation.

A cold and tense atmosphere formed in the Class when Chabashira went silent for a second, before silently chuckling to herself...Seeing which Ayanokouji sighed. The others gulped in nervousness, awaiting the words of their homeroom teacher.

'She is having way too much fun tormenting the idiots...Well, I can understand her feelings. She must have wanted to kill herself after observing them for a whole month.'

"You guys want to know why you didn't receive any points this month, am I correct?"

One stiff nod from them and Chabashira continued her rant.

"A total of ninety-eight absences and late arrivals. Three hundred ninety-one incidences of talking or using a cell phone in class. That is quite a few infractions over one month. In this school, your class's results are reflected in the points that you receive. As a result, you wasted all of the 100,000 points that you should have received. That's what happened.

I explained this all to you on the day of the entrance ceremony, didn't I? At that moment, Ayanokouji even asked a very important question of whether one's worth in this school fluctuates or remains constant...But instead of listening to him, what did you guys do? Accusing him of being a quote unquote Smartass who likes to show off."

Every single one of them lowered their heads in shame while Horikita let out a smile filled with satisfaction while watching them. Ayanokouji noticed her expression and sighed to himself.

'And this is the girl who was accusing me of being a sadist.'

This school measures its students' true abilities. This time, you were evaluated as being worth nothing. That's all."

Chabashira-sensei's robotic voice echoed around the room as the atmosphere got even more tense as the students of Class-D began to realise their predicament.

'Congratulations geniuses, you are finally touching grass and coming to terms with reality. I'm very proud of you all.'

The brown haired boy heard the noise of pencil moving against paper. He looked towards the source of the noise. There was Horikita who seemed to be tallying the number of absences, tardy arrivals, and instances of talking in class down in her notebook.

"Chabashira-sensei. I do not recall hearing you explain that to us before—"

"What? Are you incapable of understanding something unless it's explained in detail?"

"Of course. There was never any talk about reducing our points. Had that been explained beforehand, I'm sure we would have avoided being late or talking during class."

"That is a rather bizarre argument, Hirata. It is certainly true that I don't recall explaining the rules of point distribution. However, didn't you all learn in elementary school not to be late or talk in class? Was that not taught throughout your elementary and junior high schools?"

"Well, that's—"

"I'm sure that in nine years of compulsory education, you learned that being late and talking in class are bad things. And now you say that you can't understand this because I haven't explained it to you? I'm afraid your reasoning is flimsy. If you had simply acted properly, then your points would not have dropped all the way to zero. This comes down to you taking personal responsibility."

Unable to refute to her cold facts, Hirata scowled to himself before reluctantly sitting down.

"Having just entered your first year of high school, did you honestly think you'd receive 100,000 points every month with no

strings attached? At a school established by the Japanese government for the express purposes of training gifted people? That's unthinkable. Try using some common sense. Why would you leave it to chance?"

Although Hirata appeared to be frustrated, he looked the teacher straight in the eye.

'I admire your resolve, Hirata... I really do...But it's useless in this situation..'

"Well then, could you at least explain in detail how points are added or deducted? We can keep that in mind for future reference."

"I cannot tell you. We cannot disclose the methods behind our student evaluation. It's the same as any other organisation. When you enter a company, it is the company's choice whether or not to tell you how it evaluates its employees. However, I'm not cruel, and I'm not trying to be cold. In fact, this situation is so pathetic that I will give you one bit of guidance."

Chabashira-sensei then showed the class a cruel smirk while tapping the podium.

"Let's say that you stop being late to class and have no more absences... Even though zero points will be deducted from you this month, that doesn't mean that your points will increase, either. That means next month you will still receive zero points. From another perspective, you could say no matter how many times you're late or absent to class, it doesn't matter. So, you're not really at a loss, are you?"

'Ouch sensei....You really like playing the role of a villain don't you..It seems both of us will get along petty well.'

Hirata frowned in annoyance while clutching his desk in annoyance.

"Now let's get to the main topic, shall we?"

From the tube she carried, Chabashira-sensei removed a white rolled-up poster and spread it out. She stuck the poster to the blackboard with some magnets. The still-confused students stared blankly at the poster.

In the poster, a different way of evaluating points was shown.

Class Points

Class A : 940

Class B : 650

Class C : 490

Class D : 0

Realising the sorting of the points, Horikita's eyes widened as she looked at her seatmate.

"There it is, Ayanokouji-kun. Just as we discussed that day... It seems all of our evaluation was spot on..."

Her eyes started glowing in excitement as she felt proud of herself, decoding the school's rules. Seeing that face of hers, the brown haired boy almost cracked a smile in amusement.

Keyword : 'almost'

While the both of them were basking in their joy, the more perceptive students of Class-D widened their eyes, realising the situation, seeing which Chabashira hummed to herself in satisfaction.

"You've all been doing whatever you pleased this past month. The school has no intention of preventing you from doing what you want. Your actions, such as being late or talking during class, only affect the points you receive. The same goes for how you use your points. How you choose to spend is entirely up to you. We have not put any restrictions on point usage.

But you should keep it in mind that every single action results in a consequence. And all these actions of yours this whole month made the school value your worth as 'Zero'. Do you get me? You are nothing....This is the consequence of your actions and this is the sole reason why all of you are students of Class-D...

Because in the end, nothing will change the fact that all of you are nothing but **defects**..."

End of Chapter 16

Words : 2553

Most of the chapter was pretty similar to that of the light novel, while I added some tweaks to it.. So I wouldn't be surprised if you guys found it boring...

This was the 2nd Chapter of May 1st....The next chapter will be the final one...

An Important question....

Who do you want to be the next 'ally' or in simple words 'tool' of Ayanokouji ?

a) Matsushita

b) Karuizawa

c) Kushida

Anyways thats all for this chapter. See ya.

Chapter 17 : Movements

Because in the end, nothing will change the fact that all of you are nothing but defects..."

Most of the students widened their eyes at what their homeroom teacher Chabashira just announced. Some students who realised the meaning of her words, looked down in shame while some were still ignorant of her words, started panicking to themselves. Ayanokouji sighed to himself seeing their reaction and sat down quietly in his seat, observing his friend to check her reaction.

Unlike the other students, Horikita didn't seem that fazed about being called a 'defective'. She let out a small 'tch' filled with frustration and continued writing something on her notebook. While writing as she felt the brown haired boy's gaze upon her, she gave him a small look of enquiry.

"Is something wrong?"

Ayanokouji lightly shook his head at her words before looking towards their teacher.

"Nothing...It just feels like you are not surprised or offended by having the teacher call us defects."

"....oh that."

Horikita let out a small sigh before tucking a small strand of her hair over her ears.

"I know my own weakness and that's why I'm trying to overcome it, so I'm not surprised of getting the title of defect.... But if I may ask, why are you in Class-D then? Colour me surprised... From my point of view... you are incredible ..What's the big weakness of yours that overshadows all of your abilities?"

Horikita slightly leaned towards the brown haired boy with narrowed, sceptical eyes causing him to sigh in annoyance...

'I see.... So this is the disadvantage of getting too close to someone...'

"It's a personal matter,Horikita. I don't want to discuss it. I hope you understand my request."

Hearing his rejection though, Horikita had no change of expression as she gave him a small nod before returning back to her seat.

"My apologies Ayanokouji-kun. Curiosity overtook my sense of rationalism."

Not wanting to continue the conversation, Ayanokouji gave her a nod and looked back towards their homeroom teacher, who was enjoying grilling her dear defective students a lot.

"However, I have to say, this year's Class D was the first to ever spend all of their points in a single month. I am impressed by how much you indulge yourselves. Wonderful, just wonderful."

She let out a small laugh while clapping her hands in praise.. Her laugh echoed throughout the walls of the room causing the "honour" students to click their tongue in frustration.

"So, does that mean that once we reach zero points, we'll always stay there?"

"Yes. You will remain at zero until you graduate. But don't worry, you can still have a room in the dorms and free meals. You won't die."

'Well that's a lie, Sensei... But I guess without mine or Horikita's presence 'Zero' would have been the final result of Class-D. But since I'm here, they wouldn't need to worry. How generous I am....'

"Won't the other classes make fun of us?"

Sudou loudly kicked his legs on his desk in frustration, causing others to stiffen up at the sound. Sudou, realising his blunder, looked at the brown haired boy, who looked like he was staring right at Sudou's soul.

As the others looked at his gaze, they got chills all over their spine as they hurriedly looked away, while Sudou just lowered his head in fear, the pain of having his arm stretched to an inhumane level, still lingering in his body.

Satisfied with the reaction, Ayanokouji let out a satisfied hum and looked towards Chabashira, who was wearing a satisfied smirk on her face, while watching their interaction. As the class quieted down once again, she looked towards the delinquent red haired boy.

"What? You're still worried about your dignity, Sudou? Well then, work to make your class into the best one."

"Huh?"

"Your class's points aren't just linked to the amount of money that you receive each month. They're also indicative of your class rank. Ayanokouji figured it out on the first day. That's why he was so adamant of becoming the leader. But instead of keeping an open mind, you insulted him without even hearing what he has to say."

Hirata looked at the homeroom teacher of Class-D with a confused gaze.

"How do you know about this situation, Sensei? You were not

present in this room when it happened, right?"

"CCTV"

"Oh I see."

"Anyways now let's get to our next topic, shall we."

Chabashira then unrolled the white poster and stuck it on the wall. It listed the names of everyone in class. A number stood next to everyone's name.

"Judging from these, I can see that we have quite a few idiots in this class."

As her heels clacked against the floor, she glanced at everyone.

"These are the results of the short test you took a while ago. Your sensei was so happy after your excellent performance. Come on, what in the world did you all study when you were in junior high?"

With the exception of a few high scores, almost everyone tested below a sixty. Even if one ignored Sudou's wonderful score of fourteen points, there was Ike, scoring a little above him at twenty-four points. The average score was sixty-five.

"I'm so glad. If this were an actual test, then seven of you would've had to drop out."

"D-drop out? What do you mean?"

"Oh, what, did I not explain this to you? If you fail a midterm or final exam in this school, then you have to drop out. If we applied that rule to this test, anyone who scored below thirty-two points would be out. You guys really are stupid, aren't you?"

"Wh-what?!"

Ike and the other students who failed the test... wailed in despair.

"Look at the marks at the top!!"

The brown haired girl named Matsushita nudged another girl named Satou on her shoulders causing her to look at the score and let out a gasp.

Seeing her reaction, the others looked at the scores as well and widened their eyes.

Ayanokouji Kiyotaka : 100

Koenji Rokusuke : 100

Yukimura Teruhiko : 94

Horikita Suzune : 93

"Look at Koenji and Ayanokouji's score!!!"

"How the hell did they get full marks? They must've cheated right?"

It seemed that because of the shock, the others failed to respond to Yamauchi's baseless question, causing him to let out a small whine.

' One last chance.... It's not that I am feeling angry at Yamauchi's words... but these meaningless accusations with no proof would be very annoying to deal with every single time... Mob mentality of people with Zero IQ is very troublesome to deal with.'

Horikita looked at Ayanokouji with a surprised gaze in her eyes.

"You got full marks? But the last couple of questions were extremely difficult and not in our syllabus..."

The brown haired boy shrugged his shoulders in response.

"I told you about my upbringing, right? Since I was alone most of the time, I usually spent time reading books and studying. When my usual syllabus came to an end, I started solving the higher questions. That's why it was not that difficult to solve them."

"I see. You really are great at everything, Ayanokouji-kun. Guess I shouldn't have been surprised. Though, it surprises me that the blonde narcissist over there got hundred as well. Guess he is not all talk huh?"

Horikita pointed towards Koenji, who was looking at his mirror without any care.

'I wish I had a life like yours Koenji... Completely free, without any burden on my shoulder, without any chain to hold me back, a life filled with freedom.'

"Oh, one more thing. This school, which operates under government supervision, boasts a high rate of advancement into elite education and workforce placement. That is a well-known fact. It's very likely that most of you have chosen a college or future workplace. However, nothing comes easy in this world. Mediocre people such as yourselves would have to be naive to think that you could easily get into the college or workplace of your choice."

Horikita turned her head towards her seatmate with widened eyes.

"Every single speculation of yours hit the mark..."

With his eyes widened at this sudden revelation, Hirata stood up with a relatively panicked expression.

"In other words, you're saying that if we want to get into the company or college of our choice, we must, at minimum, surpass Class C?"

"You're wrong. To make your dreams of a bright future come true, your only option is to overtake Class A. This school guarantees nothing for any other students."

"T-that's absurd!!! How come we were not made aware of this!!!"

A bespectacled boy named Yukimura stood up from his seat with a furious expression on his face. Guess he was not a fan of suffering like this, all the while being an honour student.

Before another chaos broke out in the class, Ayanokouji spoke out.

"Oh shush will you? Chabashira-sensei already has not much time left and you are still not letting her complete?"

Not seeming to back down from an argument, Yukimura narrowed his eyes towards the brown haired boy.

"Don't you feel dissatisfied being in Class D as well, Ayanokouji? You got Full Marks right?"

"Yukimura.... Did I stutter? I told you to sit down right?"

Even though he looked like he wanted to say something, he realised that Ayanokouji is not someone who will give empty threats. So he adjusted his glasses and begrudgingly sat down.

Chabashira gave her new favourite student a nod filled with acknowledgement before grabbing her stuff.

"It looks like your bubbles have burst. If you had simply understood the harsh reality of the situation from the start, then this long homeroom period might have meant something. Your midterm exams are in three weeks. Please think things over, and be careful not to drop out. I have confidence that you can find a way to avoid getting red marks on your report cards. If at all possible, challenge yourself to act in a way befitting a skilled individual.

Also....Ayanokouji-kun? Would you mind meeting me in the Faculty Office? Since you are the class leader, I need to discuss some class related matters with you..."

Just before leaving the room, Chabashira looked back at him with a small smile on her face.

'I must say she is certainly beautiful when she smiles. She almost made my heart flutter.'

The Masterpiece of the White Room looked at her with a curious gaze.

'Is it a normal thing between the leader and the homeroom teacher to discuss class matters in private? Guess she is hiding the true reason she is calling me for. Whatever... not like it matters to me.'

With that he stood up from his seat and walked towards the podium. The students who had their heads down in shame looked up only to see his emotionless gaze upon them.

"During lunch period... no one leaves the room. We will solve the midterm problems during that time. Stuff those bellies of yours with expensive food after the school ends...Wait, who am I kidding? You all don't even have points to buy a single thing right? Expensive foods have a long way to go. Free meals then it is."

Hearing his provocative words, the defects glared at Ayanokouji in frustration, who this time looked at them with a small glare of his, causing them to look down in fear.

"Do you have something to say? **Then out with it right now.**"

Not a single syllable was uttered by any student as they were too scared to speak.

"While I am in the Faculty Room, would you mind controlling the class for me, Horikita?"

"H-huh? Me? "

The others looked at the black haired girl for a second before looking down once again, not finding any possible faults in her to speak against.

However there was one reaction from a certain person, which was quite distinct than the others.

It was none other than the alarm clock of Class-D. The person whose voice is so annoying that it will wake anyone who was sleeping. It was none other than the cheerful girl of Class-D, Kushida Kikyou.

Even though she had a smile on her face, her eyebrows were twitching in annoyance as her fists were clenched.

'Kushida Kikyou.... A truly fascinating person huh... I feel like if I give her too much freedom and time, she would be an annoying person to deal with. It's like those RPG games of Sotomura where while you want to fight a main boss, a random wild character spawns in the wild and wastes your time....'

I should deal with her as soon as possible. There is no reason to give her too much freedom so that she gets the opportunity to try to do anything against Horikita and disturb my Class.

But before that... Let's have a small discussion with Chabashira-sensei....'

End of Chapter 17

Words : 3060

In the poll of last chapter, the votes of Kushida and Matsushita were both extremely close.

So, like the genius author I am, I decided that it would be a good decision to have Ayanokouji make them both his tools(´n`)

Anyways I have only two subjects left which are relatively easy compared to others. They are Accountancy and Business Studies. I had some time and decided why not just write one chap.

I hope you enjoyed it.

That's all. See ya.

Chapter 18 : Co-Operation

Both Chabashira and Ayanokouji at the moment, sitting on their respective sofas facing one another. A small veil of silence prevailed between them where neither of them spoke with one another. Sighing to himself, the Masterpiece of the White Room broke the silent ambience.

"So....what's the deal Chabashira-sensei? What's so important that I have to bunk a class to speak with you?"

"Don't worry about that Ayanokouji. I already informed the teacher of your absence using the excuse of discussing class matters....So, Class-D won't lose any points because of this... not like they have anything to lose."

Chabashira-sensei ended her words with a sharp jab while chuckling to herself, before once again looking at her stoic faced student with a serious expression on her face.

"About the matter of why I called you.... Let's just say, you gained some curiosity in me. I just wanted to talk to you about some matters. Of course, you are not bound to stay here. The door is open for you to leave any time. No one's stopping you."

With a smirk on her face, Chabashira-sensei got up and went towards her counter.

"Do you want some tea, Ayanokouji?"

Without waiting for his response, she carried two cups filled with warm black tea and served him with a smile on her face.

"Using a beverage as a catalyst to make me stay here? Smart and Cunning... Now, I have to stay here and listen to her till the tea is finished..."

"Well, not like it matters to me. I can walk away any time I want. But I'm quite interested in this teacher of mine. So it would be best for me to stay here."

"Thanks."

Saying his gratitude, Ayanokouji took a sip of the tea, all the while maintaining eye contact with his homeroom teacher, who was observing him with a sly smile on her face.

"Ayanokouji Kiyotaka... you are truly remarkable I must say.."

Breaking the silence, Chabashira-sensei praised him?

"Really? What gave you that idea sensei? I think I'm acting like a pretty normal student."

The woman scoffed lightly before sipping her tea.

"Well... realising that the school wouldn't give 100,000 points on the 1st day, asking me about the limitations of the items one could buy, scoring full marks in an exam where some questions were from a high level syllabus, stopping a student who is well trained in basketball and has a decent build with great ease, and with one gaze shutting off a whole class... I'd say all these feats make you worthy of this title, doesn't it?"

"You sure keep tabs on everything I do Sensei... Is being a Stalker your part time job?"

Not being a little bit offended by his question, Chabashira nonchalantly smiled at him and replied.

"Well... as a teacher, I must keep tabs on all my dear students right? I don't think this relates to stalking of any sorts.."

I see.... She keeps tabs on all of her students huh...That sure is troublesome....'

"Is keeping tabs on all of your students only related with the present situations or do you know about their past as well?"

Hearing this sudden question, Chabashira's eyes widened for a second before it started gleaming with anticipation and excitement.

"What if I say I know about the past of every single student of mine? Is there any problem with that?"

With a relaxed posture her eyes were only fixated on her brown haired student who went silent for a couple seconds, before he looked back up. His nonchalant expression was nowhere to be seen, as his eyes were filled with seriousness.

"You are lying sensei... "

Chabashira gulped a little at his words before composing herself, masking her expression with a smirk.

"I am? What caused this sudden uncertainty?"

And there it was, those eyes of his...filled with nothingness, like a vortex trying to pull someone in.... Like a dark abyss ready to devour everything it sets its eyes on... A pair of eyes so beautiful yet so empty at the same time.

"I know that for a fact Sensei... If you were made fully aware of my past, then I doubt you would be calmly drinking tea in front of the presence of someone like me....."

Huh? What does he mean by that?'

Hearing this sudden declaration, the Homeroom Teacher of Class-D was albeit confused but she soon shrugged it off before sighing to herself.

"You are right, Ayanokouji... I'm not aware of my students' pasts but what I'm aware of is your abilities...."

I see... so this is the main point of the discussion huh...'

"After the admission tests were over, Chairman Sakayangi called me to the staff room and informed me that Advance Nurturing High School will get their first recommended student, who will join Class-D.

At first I was rather confused... Why would a recommended student join the class of the defectives? But then the Chairman told me that you possess abilities and intellect that no ordinary teenager in this world has... And the only reason you are placed in Class-D is to balance the scale. Irony isn't it? Possessing so much power that you are the reason that we had to change our format for you..."

Getting no desired response from the brown haired boy, Chabashira sighed to herself before continuing.

"I never believe what other people say. I wanted to see you in person to judge you if you really are as capable as he said....And colour me surprised, you didn't disappoint me at all, Ayanokouji.

So....The reason I called you here is to ask you one question Ayanokouji..."

Her nonchalant voice turned serious within a second as the masterpiece of the White Room gave her a curious gaze.

"What is your motive in this school, Ayanokouji?"

Not beating around the bush, Ayanokouji replied to her truthfully.

"To graduate from this school as a student of Class-A."

Hearing this answer, Chabashira's eyes started glowing even more as if she was a kid in a candy store, before she lightly coughed in her hand and composed herself.

"You possess inhuman abilities and intellect. A person of your calibre can get any desired job you want. Yet you want to graduate from Class-A? Why is that?"

Her narrowed eyes were able to hide the growing excitement bubbling inside her heart.

Ayanokouji sighed to himself before looking towards the window, staring at the horizon of the sky....

"Ever since I was young.... My father implemented only one thing within my head... Complete Victory. He rigorously trained me to be the best in all the fields and hammered the ideology of being the ultimate winner within my head.

That's why I don't believe getting 2nd Place or 3rd Place is an achievement. What I desire is a complete victory. A student of my calibre deserves to be from Class-A right? If the Chairman wants to make my life difficult, then I just have to do it myself..."

By the end of his words, he inspected his homeroom teacher's face. She was not even trying to hide her happiness anymore. She picked up her cup to hide that smile of hers, but it was easily noticed by the brown haired boy.

"Since you asked me one question yourself, you wouldn't mind if I ask you one as well, right?"

"Sure, go ahead. I don't mind."

"Does having your class get to Class-A gives you the teachers any benefit as well?"

Surprised by his question, Chabashira slightly choked on her tea.

"H-how did you get to that conclusion?"

"Well.... It seems that you need to do a better job at hiding your emotions, Sensei. Your ice cold mask breaks immediately once you feel truly happy, am I right? The moment I said that I want to graduate from Class-A, you started smiling like a highschool girl whose crush just accepted her proposal."

"That's certainly a unique way to compare different scenarios Ayanokouji. Well... I can't answer your question since it's confidential."

I see... Just like the S-System. This can't be revealed as well...'

"But there's one thing I would say to you. I also want my Class to graduate from Class-A. It's been a dream of mine for a long time.

I would maybe tell you my story sometime later when we get better acquainted, but I want to say you one thing.....

As long as you try to reach Class-A and produce noticeable results, I wouldn't hesitate to help you if you need it. Is it clear?"

She slightly raised her hand towards him as a gesture of handshake, to which he looked at it for a second before grabbing it.

"Crystal Clear. "

With that, the Masterpiece of The White Room stood up from his seat, causing Chabashira to let out a sigh of dissatisfaction.

"I would like to say one thing to you, Sensei. I'm planning to take some big and risky measures to make the Class more worthy in the future."

She slightly raised her eyebrows in curiosity.

"And what might those measures of yours be that you have to warn me about?"

"Expulsion, Suspension, maybe Violence. I'm planning to get rid of the dead weights of the class soon. In the future, they would cause more loss than profit either way. It would definitely not be good for our Class Points at first but I hope that you keep an open mind to it and don't disrupt my plan."

"Very well... I'll trust you Ayanokouji. I hope you do this the right way."

"Of course I will. Don't worry. It was fun talking to you Chabashira-sensei. Have a nice day."

She let out a small smile at his words before taking out her phone.

"The feeling is mutual Ayanokouji. Have a nice day."

With that the brown haired boy walked out of the room. His eyes darted towards another teacher who was walking towards his direction. She had chestnut coloured hair and she was definitely tumbling on her feet for some reason.

As her eyes fell towards Ayanokouji. Feeling curious, she called out to the boy.

"Hey hey... Who are yo-"

As she was trying to grab hold of him, the boy simply shrugged her off and walked away, lost in his thoughts.

The woman, feeling a little annoyed by this interaction, grumbled to herself.

"I need a beer to calm myself down. How dare he not even spare a glance at me. What a rude student."

The so-called 'Rude Student' however was lost in his thoughts.

'Gaining the Cooperation of Chabashira-sensei was definitely not something I was expecting. Here I was, planning to make a new 'tool' from the group of capable students of Class-D and then suddenly the homeroom teacher herself volunteered. It was definitely a welcoming decision I guess....'

Chabashira Sae... I look forward to your cooperation in the future...'

End of Chapter 18

Words : 2601

New tool : Sae-Chan Sensei acquired...

Anyways what do you guys think of the chapter? While writing I felt like I rushed it a little. Does it feel like that?

Also I made a new cover for the story. Which one do you guys like more ? The previous one or this one?

That's all for this chapter. See ya.

Chapter 19 : Hanging Out

"I am beat."

"Not only you. I am tired as well. It's very hard dealing with idiots, when you yourself are smart huh..."

Both Ayanokouji and Horikita at the moment were sitting on a bench beside a closed food truck. The shadow from the huge truck created a small canopy which was keeping them safe from the scorching heat of the sun.

"Well isn't this a surprise? Horikita Suzune compliments herself and insults the defectives in the same sentence. Looks like you are finally getting some confidence in yourself."

"Oh quiet will you. I'm always confident about myself. What I'm not confident in is making rational decisions. I have to do better than that."

Hearing her words, Ayanokouji leaned back on the bench while giving her a side glance.

"I think you did pretty good today though. You yourself took leadership in shutting down the Shino-something girl with relative ease. Even Hirata's snobby blonde simp couldn't counter your words. It was very entertaining I must say."

As the brown haired boy said that, his mind went towards the incident that took place during the lunch period.

Flashback 2 hours 30 minutes ago

"First of all, no one leaves this room till the end of our discussion. Is that clear?"

No one dared to make a response, as they sat still in their place. Most of them had their heads lowered down in fear, while the students who finally realised that listening to the brown haired boy would ultimately be of good to them, looked at him straight in the eye, awaiting his response.

"Well isn't this cute? Looks like the idiots finally realised their place. And it seems my actions won some people over to my side, judging by the almost pleasant expression on their faces. Let's see... the notable

ones are Hirata, Matsushita, Akito and Hasebe. Well.. If Hirata supports me, his minions are bound to follow me.'

[P.s what's Haruka's last name? Haruka or Hasebe? I forgot lmao]

"Why are you trying to annoy us, you gloomy bastard? Just leave us alone, you shit head."

As the brown haired boy was about to give them further instructions about their study group, the loud mouthed blue haired girl who always hangs around with Hirata's harem stood up from her seat with a frustrated expression on her face.

The other students looked at the blue haired girl named Shinohara with expressions filled with horror. Seeing their faces, Shinohara realised the situation she put herself in and started sweating bullets from the nervousness.

'And here I thought, things will be easy. Now, how to deal with this bitc- this disrespectful woman?'

While the brown haired boy was lost in his thoughts, he received a surprising yet not so surprising help from the first and closest 'friend' of his whole life.

Horikita stood up from her seat in an elegant and refined manner and took small but quick steps towards the standing Shinohara, who looked at the incoming figure of Horikita with confusion.

As Horikita stood in front of Shinohara, the black haired maiden let out a small comforting smile, easing the worries of the loudmouthed girl.

Getting the courage to speak up, Shinohara tried to gain Horikita's favour.

"Horikita-san, you are that guy's seatmate right? Why do you help him so much? Did the creep force you to do something? Is he a perv-"

Bam

Not letting Shinohara complete her sentence, Horikita immediately slammed her palm on Shinohara's face with a tight, loud slap, the sound of it reverberating throughout the whole room.

Ayanokouji let out a low whistle watching the scene in front of him.

'I don't think this is an appropriate time to say it, but wow... That was hot. Nice going, Horikita. You made my work less annoying now.'

Horikita wore an irritated scowl on her face while the person in question was holding her now red cheek with shock and pain in her

face.

"Oi how dare you hit my friend?"

"Huh?!!"

Horikita sent an ice cold glare with an intimidating expression on her face towards Hirata's clingy simp who immediately sat down, looking down at her lap.

Shinohara's other friends wanted to retort to Horikita, trying to stop her but one crook of Ayanokouji's neck and his empty gaze towards their location, caused them to sit still in their seats.

Horikita tightly grabbed Shinohara's blue hair and made the loud mouthed girl look at her straight in the eyes.

"Ever since the first day, for some weird reason, you have been quite the bothersome person, Shinohara-san.

Constantly interrupting us when we talk about important business. Using your phone and loudly talking in class, making us lose our private points and holding a weird agenda towards 'my friend' Ayanokouji-kun. And now you accuse him of being a pervert right in front of me. You've got quite the nerve, don't you?"

Horikita's grip on Shinohara's hair tightened as she let out whimpers of pain.

"Horikita-san please stop. We will lose class points at this rate..."

Kushida tried to calm the situation down, causing the defects to sigh in relief, all the while hoping that their 'dear angel' Kushida gets successful.

"Oh? So now you care about Class Points? If all of you didn't act as defects and dumb idiots then we would have gotten them this month correct? The worst class other than us is 490 points ahead of us? Do you realise how bad that is? And the reason for this situation is immature brats like Shinohara, Karuizawa, Satou, Sudou,Ike, Yamauchi,Miyamoto and even you and Hirata-san. So I suggest you keep your mouth shut Kushida."

Horikita loosened her grip over Shinohara's blue bangs and looked towards her friend to ask for his confirmation to lead the conversation. Ayanokouji gave her a small nod of confirmation , resulting in her letting out a small smile.

She then turned around from the group of defectives and quickly walked towards the podium and soon stood beside Ayanokouji while looking down at the students of Class-D.

"We are helping you guys to pass this exam without facing any consequences. So we expect full co-operation and gratitude.We are planning to form study groups where the students with good grades will help those with lower grades. And all of you must attend. We would not listen to any rejections. You guys did all you wanted for this whole month, now it's time to work.

If you don't cooperate with us, prepare to face harsh consequences."

"By the way, Horikita... are you faring well right now? Was it a good idea to wear such clothes in the hot summer?"

Ayanokouji gave the girl beside him a look over from her head to toes, causing the ice cold girl to blush in embarrassment.

She was wearing a black turtleneck sweater shirt, which was one size larger than her own, and was covering her short mini skirt, letting her smooth white legs to enjoy the gentle breeze of the dusk.

Horikita tugged her turtleneck even further down and surprisingly it covered her knees. She then gave her 'friend' a smug look with faint pink adorning her cheeks.

"It seemed like you were enjoying watching my legs too much,Ayanokouji-kun. I didn't think you were a pervert~"

'So we are playing that game huh? Very well then..'

"I'm not perving on you though... I'm just admiring the beauty of my friend. You look fabulous today, I must say."

"-ack!!"

It seemed like his words were a critical hit, stabbing right into Horikita's heart. Her faint pink blush now turned more visible as she stammered in her words.

[Think of this as Horikita instead of Yukinoshita... though both of them looks identical lol]

Trying to keep her composure, she tried to admonish the boy beside her to not toy with her heart.

"A-ayanokouji-kun don't tease me. I-it doesn't suit you!!!"

"That pink blush on your cheeks says otherwise though."

To prove his point, the brown haired boy gave a gentle poke towards Horikita's soft,squishy cheek, resulting in her face turning beet red.

"Kyaaaa!!!"

She immediately pulled her turtleneck upwards and covered her mouth with it so that her friend wouldn't see the faint smile she was letting out.

As the both of them were doing their shenanigans, the brown haired boy heard faint footsteps coming towards their way and looked at the person.

It was an old man, mostly of around age fifty, who was wearing a light blue shirt. As he noticed the two students, he gave them a small smile of understanding.

"Looks like you two are enjoying the shade huh.. It's comforting isn't it?"

Horikita, who snapped out of her thoughts, at first gave the old man a confused gaze, before seeing that he was opening the door of the food truck beside them with a key.

'Oh I see... He is the owner of this truck.'

"Yes it's very comforting. I must say, you chose a good destination to place this truck. Not an area too crowded, but not a barren place. Seemingly in the presence of trees which give out a fair share of oxygen... it's bound to be successful huh..."

'Ayanokouji-kun analyses everything it seems ...'

Horikita let out a small smile of amusement while the old man started laughing boisterously.

"You think too much, young man. I didn't even take these things into consideration. But now that you say it, it makes me seem a little smart doesn't it? Hahaha.

By the way I hope you don't mind me asking, but would you mind helping this old man out?"

His face had no ulterior motives as he gave them a gentle smile. Ayanokouji looked towards Horikita for a second before nodding to the old man.

"How so grandpa?"

"It's nothing much... But would you mind buying some food while you are hanging out? My menu is very cheap so that everyone can eat it regardless of their points or money. Even a small amount of something would mean a lot to me. Getting a customer this early means good omen. That's why I'm requesting you."

"I see.....

How about it Horikita? Are you fine with it?"

Horikita gave the old man a small gaze as she noticed he still kept that gentle smile on his face. Sighing to herself she gave Ayanokouji a small nod of confirmation.

"I see no problem with it."

As 'grandpa' heard her answer, he visibly glowed up before he almost ran towards his truck before running towards them and handing them the menu.

"Here's the menu, children. Take as much time as you want."

Nodding to him, both of them looked at the menu.

'As he said, the prices really are cheap. Also it seems like the menu gets modified by seasons and temperature of the atmosphere. Quite convenient, I must say.. '

As the both of them were surveying and analysing the menu catalogue like they were some world renowned professional chefs,

two people arrived in front of the truck.

"Hello Mr.Saburo. Where's the menu for today?"

"Oh President-san. Two youngin's sitting at the bench over there have the menu. You can walk over there and wait for them to finish."

"Very well... Also please don't call me President outside the school.. It's embarrassing."

Both of them heard a faint female chuckle and the recognizable voice of the former student. Horikita's eyes visibly lightened up as Ayanokouji looked at her with amusement. Soon, the other two students walked towards the bench and stood in surprise meeting the two protagonists, who were looking at them.

Horikita, without waiting for a second, greeted him, completely ignoring the woman beside him leaving her sulking.

"Hello nii-san!! Good afternoon!!"

'Horikita...you are way too excited.'

Ayanokouji waved his hands in acknowledgement.

"Hello there, Horikita-senpai, Tachibana-senpai..."

The Student Council President sighed to himself before giving them a small smile.

"It's you two huh...Good afternoon."

End of Chapter 19

Words : 2769

How many waifu points for this Suzune? Even while writing the chapter I felt butterflies in my stomach at the scene of Horikita manhandling Shinohara. It felt too satisfying to write lol.

Was it cringe ? I tried to lower down the cringiness as much as possible.

Anyways what do you guys think of this chapter?

See ya for the next one

Chapter 20 : Study Session

"It's not like that Sudou. Give me your notebook for a second."

With a hesitant expression on his face, the red haired delinquent of Class-D passed his notebook towards Ayanokouji who took out a small pencil from Horikita's bag, causing her to look towards him.

"Hey, that's mine."

"You are teaching Satou, Matsushita and Hasebe History right? What's the use of a pencil for that? I'll give it back after I use it."

Not deciding to continue their bickering any further, Ayanokouji looked towards the notebook with Horikita's pencil in his hand. However, it seemed that the black haired girl was not done as she was giving her friend a reprimanding stare.

"Isn't it common courtesy to ask someone if you want to borrow, more like snatch their things away from them?"

'Sigh...Horikita, as nice as you are, sometimes you get really stubborn, don't you?'

The brown haired boy sighed to himself before giving Horikita a resigned stare, who was staring at him with an anticipated expression on her face.

"I see. I'm sorry for that. Can I borrow your pencil, Horikita?"

The black haired girl put on a smug expression on her face before nodding towards Ayanokouji.

"Of course Ayanokouji-kun. As your 'friend' ,I see no harm in lending you my accessories. Though I would appreciate it if you ask me next time."

Changing her subject, she looked towards the most intelligent one of her 3 classmates.

"So where were we, Matsushita-san?"

However their conversation was stopped as the brown haired boy muttered to himself while giving her seatmate a side glance.

"Hardass."

Without even looking back, he started scribbling on Sudou's notebook and started teaching him, while Horikita looked at him with a smile while her eyes were twitching in annoyance.

"Did you say something, Ayanokouji-kun?"

"Nope. Not at all. You must've heard someone else."

"I think I heard your voice perfectly though. How can I confuse that boring, monotone voice of yours with someone else's ?"

"Your hearing has gotten worse. Must be because of all the bullshit you hear on spotify all day."

Without waiting for her response, the brown haired boy started writing on the notebook, completely ignoring Horikita's existence as the black haired girl puffed her cheeks in anger.

"Hmph!!"

Satou slightly giggled at the scene causing the black haired maiden to look at her.

"What happened, Satou-san?"

"Oh it's nothing. It's just that both you and Ayanokouji-kun seem a little different than when you are in class, you know?"

Horikita slightly tilted her head in confusion.

"How so?"

Instead of the gullible reddish brown haired girl, it was now Matsushita who responded to her question.

"Well while you guys are in class, both of you act like honour students, not in a good way though. Both of you are always serious and act very scary and intimidating in certain situations, making you guys kind of hard to approach. So, it's kind of surprising for us to see both of you act like normal students."

Hearing her explanation, Horikita slightly nodded to herself before putting on a thinking expression.

"Well....that's how we usually act with one another. Ayanokouji-kun only puts up the intimidating front when he needs to acquire results or certain advantages, which would in the end help the class in the long run. "

"I see. But Horikita-san, was it necessary for you to hurt Shinohara-san like that, yesterday?"

"Of course it was. If someone else continuously insults your friend for over a month without any particular reason, wouldn't you get angry at them? I merely acted on my instincts and took the side of Ayanokouji-kun. If slapping Shinohara-san was needed to stop her from insulting my friend, then I wouldn't hesitate to do it again."

Hearing her words, Hasebe let out a small small smirk.

"Horikita-san you are a little protective of Ayanokouji-kun, it seems."

Hearing Hasebe's words, Satou once again let out a small giggle, causing Horikita to let out a soft smile as well for a second, before she once again put up a professional front.

"Ok students, enough chit chat. Let's get to study now, shall we?"

"Ai ai miss."

-
-
-

-
-
-

"Do you understand this problem, Sudou?"

Sudou scratched the back of his head for a second, before once again taking a look at the notebook.

"I understood the first four steps, but I can't understand the other eighteen steps."

"Very well..Pass me the notebook and pay attention carefully ok?"

"Yup. My bad Ayanokouji."

"Don't worry about it."

"That's right... Unlike the other study groups, I decided to teach Sudou alone, since he is definitely the weakest student. I was planning to add Ike and Yamauchi to the group as well, but decided against it, since I realised they would just be a bother."

So to get them to actually study, I picked out the only catalyst that could save their stupid ass. That is Kushida. Having Miyamoto join the both of them as well, we handed Kushida her own trio of sims."

I'm confident that Kushida must be mentally cursing me right now, for making her suffer like this, but who cares? Personal feelings are just a hindrance to a mission."

For Horikita's group, it was a fairly balanced group. Horikita was the student who got the most marks in the group, so naturally she was the one responsible for teaching the weaker students. After her there was Matsushita who got 65.... A fairly average score. And for the weaker students, we chose to include Satou and Hasebe there."

And it seems that for some reason, they are getting along. Well, that is good. Other than me, Horikita herself needs allies and friends whom she can put her trust in. And if Horikita acquires them as friends, naturally they will be my allies as well, since Horikita always remains stuck to me."

Everything is going perfectly as I planned.'

-
-
-
-
-
-

"Thanks man. Even though I got a massive headache solving these problems, I finally understood the basic formula behind the problems which was a first for me."

"That's good to hear. I'm happy that our hard work wasn't in vain."

Sudou gave him a slight nod with a calm smile on his face, very uncharacteristic of the usual scowl that adorns his face.

"Thank you for staying calm with me through all of this, Ayanokouji. It must be annoying going through the same problems over and over."

"It was nothing. Don't fret about it."

"But still...It was the first time someone didn't get annoyed with me because of my incompetence, to which I'm truly grateful for. It's thanks to you, that I finally understood the problems which I mostly just memorised and forgot while giving the exams. "

To show his gratitude, Sudou gave him a slight bow, causing all the four girls to widen their eyes in surprise and shock, seeing this new side of Sudou.

"If you truly feel grateful to me, then pay me back by taking the midterms seriously ok?"

"You got it man."

He then took a look at his phone before sending the brown haired boy a glance.

"Hey, our basketball training will start within 5 minutes. Is it ok for you if I leave the session?"

"Yeah. Our session is over for now anyways.I assume that you will join me tomorrow as well?"

"Yeah don't worry about it. Once again, thank you Ayanokouji."

"All the best for training."

Sending a two finger wave, Sudou left the library as the four girls darted their eyes towards their brown haired classmate. Horikita dropped her pencil over her notebook before leaning towards Ayanokouji's chair.

"It seems that Sudou-kun has his calm side as well, huh? Were you aware of that?"

She spoke the words in low volume, although the three girls heard it and looked towards the leader of Class-D curiously.

"Ever since the first day, I realised something. Sudou is a simple minded human being. If someone acts rudely with him, he will act like that in return. But if someone acts nicely with him, then he would act nicely in return."

Not being able to contain her curiosity anymore, Matsushita looked at Ayanokouji with a questioning gaze.

"If that is the case, then instead of having him as your friend, why did you fight him first, Ayanokouji-kun?"

Both Ayanokouji and Horikita slightly raised their eyebrows as they heard Matsushita's words.

"It seems that she is well observant. And her perfectly average marks of 65...Is that a coincidence? Or is she holding back?"

Shrugging off his thoughts, Ayanokouji looked at the brown haired girl who was twirling her bangs, anticipating his answer.

"Well... if I act nicely with him from the start, he would start thinking of me as a pushover and not agree with my decisions or plans. That's why, I decided to confront him first, to show him the difference in our levels, so that he can't disagree with me when I command him or think that he is on a higher pedestal than me."

Hearing his answer, all the three girls widened their eyes in surprise, as the blue haired girl named Hasebe opened her mouth.

"That's actually a really smart yet simple plan, though if I was a guy, I would definitely not have the courage to go against Sudou-kun."

Hearing her answer, Satou shivered in fear.

"As you said, Hasebe-san. It requires some massive balls to do that stuff. Also now that I think about it, you were really cool yesterday, Ayanokouji-kun. You, as well Horikita-san. Even though you slapped Shinohara-san, we understand your reasoning and that makes it even cooler."

[P.s. this woman is so cute]

Satou's eyes were glistening in excitement while Matsushita and Hasebe let out a slight chuckle.

"I didn't mean to act cool, but I thank you for your compliment Satou."

Unlike Ayanokouji who received her compliment with a calm expression, Horikita on the other hand slightly blushed at Satou's words.

'I'm still not used to receiving praise from others... Sigh..Get a grip over yourself, Suzune.'

Turning back to her professional mode, Horikita surveyed her 3 groupmates.

"We are done with the lesson today. Did you guys understand everything?"

Satou gave her a mock salute in response.

"Yes, Horikita-sensei. You were a really good teacher."

Hearing her words, Horikita gave her a small smile in response.

"I see. That's good to hear then."

Her small smile caused the three girls to suddenly blush all of a sudden in surprise, not expecting the ice queen of their class to act so soft all of a sudden.

As the four girls engaged in small talk, Ayanokouji slightly leaned on his arms while observing them, as his mind wandered towards the events of yesterday, especially his talk with Manabu Horikita.

'My sister is still a newly hatched chick in the battle of eagles and vultures. Please take care of her, Ayanokouji.'

'You don't have to worry at all, Horikita-senpai. Your sister is growing at an increasing rate pretty fast. If she faces any trouble, it's my duty to

get rid of it. I can't allow someone else to hurt my piece after all.'

End of Chapter 20

Words : 2598

Well ... that was one boring break. I had literally nothing to do . No games, no anime, no good YouTube videos... the only way I spent time yesterday was chatting with a bunch of weirdos on Discord all day.

So to get rid of the boredom, I once again got back on the grind.

I'll try to make the Satou,Matsushita dynamic as uncringey and wholesome as possible. Their whole dynamic in most of the fanfics make me cringe so much for some reason. I'll try to make it organic and not as forceful as the other stories.

That's all for this chapter. Tell me if you enjoyed it. See ya.

Chapter 21 : New Acquaintances

"Ayanokouji-kuuuuun"

"Hm?"

Ayanokouji looked up to see Satou slump down on her chair like a dead animal. Horikita let out a troubled smile while lightly bonking the reddish brown haired girl with her notebook.

"Satou-san, we still have 1 chapter left. Bear through it please...."

"Noooooo, my stupid brain can't take any more knowledgEEEE....Ayanokouji-kunnn help meee."

She looked at the brown haired boy with hopeful eyes only to get disappointed as Ayanokouji dodged her puppy eyes without breaking a sweat.

"I think you forgot that Horikita is the leader of your group Satou....not me."

"Meanie."

Matsushita and Hasebe decided to cheer up their study mate, since they were tired as well and wanted to get the whole session to be over as soon as possible.

"You can do it Satou~"

"Fight Satou Fight~"

Unable to resist their cheers, Satou felt herself getting pumped up. But she had to play along as if their cheers didn't affect her at the slightest. So she puffed her cheeks before letting out a small sigh.

"Fine~ Let's do it Horikita-san!!!"

"Yeah~"

The other two girls joined in as well, as the black haired maiden for some reason stared at Ayanokouji.

"What? Want me to cheer as well or what?"

Hearing his question, Horikita lightly giggled to herself.

"I was not looking at you for that, but I must say, I'm kind of interested to see the ever stoic Ayanokouji-kun acting like a cheerleader."

As if influenced by her words, the other three immediately looked at the brown haired boy with stars in their eyes.

"Ayanokouji-kun!!!! Please cheer for us!! A handsome boy like you cheering would definitely make me study!!!"

To prove her point, Satou tried to grab both of Ayanokouji's

hands, however the brown haired boy dodged her grip and stuffed both of his hands inside his pants, before looking at Satou with an empty stare.

"Weren't you one of the girls who called me a gloomy bastard before?"

Satou's eyes widened at his words before she immediately looked away while nervously twiddling her fingers.

"H-huh? Oh...I wasn't evolved back then, but now I fully matured as I can clearly notice the beauty of Ayanokouji-kun~"

"Real smooth Satou-san~"

Matsushita teased the girl with a smirk on her face, as Satou looked away with a small blush of embarrassment on her face, as she started whistling to herself.

"Hey....I was planning to go meetup with one of my friend. So, can I take an early leave?"

Hasebe spoke out as she took a look at her watch, resulting in Matsushita's target of teasing to dart towards her.

"What? Are you planning to meet up with a boy, Hasebe-san?"

"Yup."

The blue haired girl nodded to her words, causing the two girls to go stiff for a second, before they let out troubled smiles.

"Hasebe-san sure likes to move fast hehe."

"Hmm what do you mean?"

"Nothing. Just forget it."

"Anyways Horikita-san, do you mind?"

The girl in question took a look at her phone to check the time before sighing to herself.

"I doubt we would be able to cover this chapter anymore. So sure I guess."

"Yeah!!!"

"But!!!"

Horikita's ice cold words stopped her on her tracks as the black haired maiden levelled her with a cold glare.

"From tomorrow, we would take our sessions fully serious. No half assing anything."

"It feels weird to hear Horikita-san cuss."

Both Satou and Matsushita let out small giggles before mock saluting to her.

"Don't worry captain Horikita. From tomorrow onwards, we would follow every single one of your instructions."

●♠♥◇♣♣◇♥♠●

"Well see you guys tomorrow. Don't slack up on your studies."

Horikita slung her bag over her shoulders as the two girls nodded to her, before looking at Horikita and Ayanokouji for a second.

Sensing their gaze, the brown haired boy looked at them with a confused expression.

"Hmm? What's up?"

"Ummm etto....."

Satou walked closer to the two confused students while nervously twiddling her fingers.

"D-do you two want to come with us to the Keyaki Mall?"

"Huh?Why? What's the use of that? I was planning to go to rest at my dorm...Why should we go to the mall?"

With no change in her tone, Horikita started throwing out rapid questions towards the now baffled Satou, who's brain immediately got overloaded with all the questions coming out of Horikita's mouth.

Matsushita decided to help out her friend and walked up towards them.

"It's to get both Ayanokouji-kun and Horikita-san some Drip."

'Drip? Does she want me to be wet? Why is that? Is it because it's too hot? Is she being considerate for me? Well... I'm thankful for that...But why go to the mall instead of going to the Water Park?'

Seeming to share a mutual feeling of ignorance, Horikita looked at them with a confusing gaze as well.

"Drip? What is that?"

Satou decided to join the conversation.

"We want the both of you to get all sauced up!!!"

"I'm sorry, but I'm afraid I can't follow this conversation."

Both the girls sighed to themselves before looking at the two honour students as if they are aliens.

"What we are saying is that, we want the both of you to come with us to the Keyaki Mall to buy some clothes."

Understanding their words, Horikita nodded to herself, while Ayanokouji asked a question that was lingering in his mind for quite some time.

"I see....But do you even have the points for that?"

"Ahh don't worry about that Ayanokouji-kun..Your words made me think carefully, so I only spent 40,000 points this month. I warned Satou-san as well and she spent only 50,000 points."

With a proud expression on her face, Matsushita lightly slapped Satou's back, as the girl lightly blushed, while rubbing the back of her head.

"Hehehe~"

'Yup. There's no doubt about it. Matsushita is way smarter than the group of girls she hangs around with. But it seems she doesn't want to

show her abilities and lead a lowkey life filled with momentary peace....Well, unfortunately she is in my class where peace was never an option. My apologies in advance, Matsushita. '

Horikita nodded in acknowledgement before looking at them with a questioning expression.

"If that is the case, then why was Karuizawa-san begging everyone to lend her some private points?"

"Well....I tried to warn her, but she paid no mind to it. And Shinohara-san also said that we are being too overly cautious and didn't care at all. So, in the end we didn't care about what consequences they will face as well. You reap what you sow after all."

Matsushita's words got a little colder than usual as Satou looked at her with widened eyes, before she composed herself and nodded at her words.

"Good job on being cautious about my words, Matsushita. I'm happy that someone atleast had the slightest knowledge to actually look through the plotoles of the S-System."

"Thanks. But we are dodging the main topic. Are you guys coming or not?"

Both the girls looked at them with puppy eyes, causing Horikita to look away for a second.

"Fine....But I'm not spending any more than 10,000 Private Points."

Horikita lightly scratched her cheeks while still looking away from them.

"Yay~ What about you leader-kun?"

This time for some reason, Horikita joined the two other girls and looked at Ayanokouji with hopeful eyes.

"Only if you guys treat me with Ice Cream. Deal?"

"Deal!!!!"

All three of the girls yelled at the same time, before looking at one another and let out small giggles of amusement, before walking towards their new destination.

Ayanokouji followed the three girls before looking at the beautiful orange sky for a second, where the sun was setting.

'Even if I'm on a important mission for my permanent peace, I guess it doesn't hurt to momentarily experience that 'peace' sometimes.... Because in the end, this is what I'm fighting for....'

End of Chapter 21

Words : 2024

My bad for the small chapter than usual. The problem was I had enough ideas I wanted to write about, but I was feeling way too lazy to execute them at the moment lol. I'm sure a lot of authors share this

mutual feeling.

Anyways, to compensate for it, I'll make the next chapter longer than usual.

Anyways , I hope the chapter still was enjoyable though....See ya.

Chapter 22 : DripKouji

'Is this what 'peace' looks like? Then I'd rather be in the White Room for the rest of my life.'

With his expression blanker than usual, Ayanokouji Kiyotaka stood like a statue with dozens of bags hanging from every bone of his body.

"Couldn't you guys just buy a shopping basket instead of using me as your luggage boy?"

"Nope~ Since we are out shopping with a boy, we intend to make yourself as useful as possible~Here hold this luggage boy."

With that Matsushita hanged another bag around Ayanokouji's neck as the boy looked like he wanted to kill himself.

'Is this what Hirata goes through on the regular? You have my condolences, pretty boy.'

Then as if an angel descended from the heavens, his saving grace tapped on his shoulder with a small smile on her face.

"Here, give me some of the bags Ayanokouji-kun. My hands are idle."

Horikita grabbed two designer bags from Ayanokouji's hands and slung it over her shoulders.

"You have my gratitude, my respectable friend."

Horikita lightly giggled at his words.

"Why so dramatic? You sound like those Old grandpas from the fantasy movies..."

"I didn't have the privilege to indulge in those, however I must say I'm kind of interested to find the resemblance in both of our speech."

"Blegh~ Can't you two talk in a simple manner? It's as if you guys are trying to flaunt your vocabulary!!"

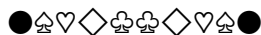
Satou looked at them with narrowed eyes as Horikita gave her a confused look.

"That was never our intention. However, we'll be careful next time.Thanks for your warning Satou-san..."

"You did it once again Horikita-san~"

Matsushita lightly giggled in an elegant manner before starting to walk towards another designer store.

"Let's go guys. We have just one store to go through...Then we will get our leader some drip~"



"Ayanokouji-kun~"

Hearing the sing song voice of Matsushita, the brown haired boy turned towards her direction, as the girl started flaunting her new dress.

To raise her charm even more, Matsushita turned around and intentionally showed the boy her 'assets' to try to alleviate a reaction from him.

However all her hopes disappeared when the boy still wore his usual stoic expression on his face.

"Hmm.... You look like a corporate worker."

"Gah!!!!"

As if arrows struck her heart, Matsushita tumbled while clutching her chest with a tearful sigh.

The other two girls who just arrived smirked at the scene in front of them, before walking towards their respective changing rooms.

Noticing her sudden change in expression, the leader of Class-D realised his blunder and tried to do damage control.

"However that dress gives it a classy feel which compliments your elegant look pretty well and makes you look even prettier than usual.

Also, since it's summer, the clothes are light and will be easy to wear. Overall, a pretty good fit. Nice job, Matsushita. I'll give you an 8/10."

Ayanokouji gave her a small thumbs up as the brown haired girl blushed from all the praise she was receiving. However she soon composed herself and let out a weak laugh.

"Haha... you shouldn't say those words so carelessly Ayanokouji-kun~ You almost made me fall for you."

"That was never my intention, however I appreciate your compliment."

Matsushita meekly nodded at his words and went silent, while waiting for the other two girls. However, Ayanokouji could clearly notice the pink tint adorning her cheeks.

'Looks like my words did their job in calming Matsushita down. Good job, me.'

"How about me, Ayanokouji-kun?"

The brown haired boy's eyes wandered towards the foxy girl of Class-D who was looking at him with a mischievous grin on her face.

"Hehe~ What happened? Cat got your tongue?"

Satou twirled around in her place while giving the boy a full show of her clothes, that ever present grin still present on her face.

"No no, it's just that why did you buy winter clothes in the month of May? You are not planning to wear it in summer, are you?"

Hearing his blunt question, the foxy girl stopped on her place and levelled him with an annoyed glare.

"Mou~ just compliment me, will you? I don't want to hear actual criticism. Just fuel my ego please!!!"

"Very well then. You look cute Satou. I'll rate your costume a 7/10."

"Yesss!! He gave me a rating of 8/10. Suck it, Satou."

With a victorious look in her eyes, Matsushita looked at Satou with a smug smirk on her face, while the reddish brown haired girl puffed her cheeks in annoyance.

Just before both the girls could continue their quarrel, the door of the changing room of Horikita opened as the girl walked out with an embarrassed blush on her face.

"I've never wore clothes like this before....."

Both the girls' eyes widened at the sight in front of them, before their eyes immediately darted towards their stoic leader who was nodding his head.

"Although your look is definitely unexpected, it actually fits you quite well, Horikita. You look quite pretty in that costume. I'll give you a 9/10."

"Is that..... good?"

"He gave me an 8..."

"I got a 7...."

Both the girls wailed out in their misery as Horikita wore a proud smirk on her face, as she now walked towards the brown haired boy and handed him a bag, resulting in the boy to look at her inquisitively.

"What's this for?"

"Your 'drip' as Satou-san says. We weren't able to find much clothes which can fit your look, so we chose the one with the best quality."

"Yes!!! It's time for the main course now!!!"

"Matsushita, ready your camera!!! We gotta take the pics!! The pics!!"

Without a second thought, the girl in question took out a huge DSLR from somewhere and aimed it towards Ayanokouji, causing the boy to slightly widen his eyes.

"Where did you get that camera from?"

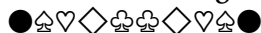
"It's not an important matter. The only important thing is you changing into the clothes we chose. Now shoo shoo~"

Matsushita waved her hands at him, while Satou giggled at the boy, who sighed at the girls. His eyes went towards Horikita as he

could literally see her eyes glowing in excitement.

'Guess she is hyped about seeing me in new clothes as well...I wonder why though? It's just some clothes after all...'

Not wanting to bother himself into any unnecessary conversations, the brown haired boy walked inside the changing room as the three girls looked at the closed door in anticipation.



"I don't think these are summer clothes, are they?"

From inside the changing room, the ever present dull voice of Ayanokouji could be heard clearly.

"No they are not. But who cares? It's the Drip that matters. Now get out quickly leader-kun."

"Sigh....Yeah yeah... I'm coming."

With that, Ayanokouji walked out with a blue jacket hoodie with green highlights adorning it's sides. There was the brand of 'Nike' labelled on it in green highlights.

Immediately all the three girls blushed at the new look of the boy, as Matsushita immediately started clicking pics at a rapid pace.

Satou nearly got a nosebleed as she leaned back on a wall with a dreamy voice.

"Yeah~ Now that's our leader, all right."

After clicking enough pics, Matsushita dropped her DSLR, which Satou caught with a panicked expression on her face, and ran towards the brown haired boy.

"Ayanokouji-kunnnnnn you look so handsome. 10/10 from me."

Satou joined her friend in complimenting the boy as well.

"Yeah yeah!!! 10 from me as well!!! You look so different than usual. In a good way, of course, isn't that right Horikita-san?"

All three eyes went towards Horikita, who immediately averted her eyes, not before sneaking a quick glance towards her friend. Both of her cheeks gained a small blush as she meekly nodded to their words.

"Yup. You look really handsome Ayanokouji-kun. I'll give you an 11 out of 10."

By the end of her words, her cheeks turned pinker than usual as she still kept sneaking glances at the boy, who nodded to their words.

"I don't know what you guys find special in my clothes, but I must say, hearing your compliments vastly improved my self esteem. So I must say that I'm thankful for your words."

"Ayanokouji-kun look at the pic, I took of you!! You look sooooo good."

Matsushita hurriedly snatched the camera from Satou, who

immediately whined about not being able to gawk at the masterpiece anymore.

Matsushita immediately handed the boy the DSLR, as Horikita leaned from behind him to take a look at the pic as well.

'Not being a narcissist, I must say I do look kind of good. Is this what they call Drip? I must thank Satou and Matsushita for this....'

End of Chapter 22

Words : 2131

Dripkouji makes his appearance, already stealing a bunch of girl's hearts. But many are going to be broken as Ayanokouji only cares about one. His ultimate Waifu : Freedom-chan

Anyways that's all for this chapter. I hope you guys enjoyed it.

See ya.

Chapter 23 : Hindrance

"Good morning Ike!!!"

"Good morning Yamauchi!!! I woke up early this morning, I just couldn't help but feel so excited for today!!!"

"As you said man!! Today is going to be our heaven. "

'Ike, Yamauchi.....It's a surprise to see the two of them so excited this early in the morning. Well, for perverts like them who likes to touch themselves in broad daylight, I can decipher the reason they are so excited for today.'

"We are going to see some boobs!!!! My bois say HELL YEAH!!!!!"

An awkward silence filled the room as every single female student of Class-D looked at Ike and Yamauchi with hateful glares, while the other guys of Class-D looked back and forth between Ayanokouji and the two idiots with a nervous expression on their face.

However it seemed that the both of them remained oblivious of all the hate they were receiving and directed their attention towards the chubby boy of Class-D.

"Hello Professor, did you prepare the things I ask for?"

To emphasise their friendship, Ike tried to sling his hands over Sotomura's shoulders.

Horikita widened her eyes for a second, not expecting one of her only acquaintances to be friends with the two 'trashies' of Class-D. But soon her widened eyes narrowed as she slightly turned her head and gave Sotomura a scrutinising glare, awaiting his actions.

"My bad, Ike-dono but I will not participate in such foolish actions which puts a woman's dignity to shame. I shall retreat from this mission of yours."

With a refined and elegant voice, Sotomura rejected the both of them, causing them to look towards their bespectacled classmate in betrayal, while Horikita's eyes softened.

The chubby boy then walked towards Ayanokouji and gave him a small bow filled with regret.

"I apologise for my foolish actions, Ayanokouji-dono. Ike-dono and Yamauchi-dono nearly persuaded me in helping them continue their shameful mission. Please forgive me for not notifying you, the Class Leader, of such problems."

The girls of Class-D, who used to think nothing of Sotomura and

associated him with the three idiots, looked at him in a new light, sensing his regret and goodwill.

"It's alright Sotomura. I forgive you this time. Can you elaborate what 'this' shameful act Ike and Yamauchi were planning?"

As if a hawk found their prey, all the eyes of the girls of Class-D were darting between Sotomura and the two idiots, who started sweating in nervousness, all the while sending Sotomura pleading looks.

"Ike-dono and Yamauchi-dono wanted me to record the bodies of every single girl of Class-D, so that they can bet about their breast size."

"....."

The whole class got silent as the hateful glares now evolved into something malevolent and violent.

"You two are the worst!!!!"

"You are nothing but trash!!!!"

"Just die already!!!"

Sudou immediately retreated in shock, realising that the two friends that he befriended were nothing but Perverts.

".....You guys are disgusting."

Just before the girls were about to erupt and waste further class points, The brown haired leader of Class-D stood up from his seat and walked towards the podium.

"....."

Silence prevailed in the whole room, as the two boys in question looked down in fear and anxiety while the others looked at their leader(which some of them still didn't accept) with anticipation.

"Ike, Yamauchi....."

Ike didn't have the courage to look up after being the recipient of all the hate he was receiving, while Yamauchi somehow mustered up enough courage and looked towards the brown haired boy with a shaking smirk on his face, as if he was proud of his actions.

"Y-yes"

However that smirk immediately vanished when he met the eyes of the Leader of Class-D. He still had no change in expression in his face, which made his next words seem unpredictable, resulting in the atmosphere to turn even more tense.

"Be thankful that Sotomura revealed your actions so that you didn't get caught while spying on the girls. If you were caught then, both of you would've been labelled as Perverts and would've committed a crime, which is Sexually Harassing the girls. "

Horikita threw a pen towards the boy, to which he sent her a thankful nod, before Ayanokouji started twirling the pen within his fingers, radiating his air of nonchalance around the whole class,

causing both the guys to drop their guard.

However the light atmosphere between them immediately disappeared as Ayanokouji threw the pen at a huge speed towards Yamauchi, as most of the students let out a gasp. The clown of Class-D ducked his head trying to save himself from the attack, but the pen carved itself into his notebook right beside his head.

Ike immediately shifted away from Yamauchi, whose smirk immediately vanished, getting replaced with a scared look.

"In a school, where mere bullying and failing in an exam has severe repercussions like expulsion, what do you think will happen if such an action is reported.

You guys would be the most hated person in the entire school, and be a subject of insults and death threats before you get expelled.

Not like you guys have a good reputation anyway."

Both the two boys gulped hearing the words the brown haired boy said to them with his usual apathetic tone. Even then, his words carried a certain authority which made every single uttered from his mouth seem like a matter of fact instead of a speculation.

"As for your punishment.....since you guys wanted to harass the girls, why not let the girls decide your fate?"

The girls looked at the brown haired boy with stars in their eyes, mentally thanking him for giving them a chance, before sending their glares towards the two boys.

"Just kill the both of them!!!"

"They don't deserve to live."

"Trash of the society!!"

Ike and Yamauchi slumped on their seats with a depressive aura on their faces, not expecting the entire class to go against them.

'What else were you expecting? unlikable pricks'

But unexpectedly both of them got the help of the 'angel' of Class-D as she stood up with a 'worried' expression on her face.

"Umm Ayanokouji-kun, wouldn't it be too cruel to punish them only because of one action? Shouldn't we give them one last chance to prove themselves?"

Ayanokouji slightly raised his eyebrows in curiosity as he watched Kushida trying to explain herself. The other girls of Class-D immediately sent her mixed reactions. Some were repulsed, while some agreed with her.

Hirata's blonde simp immediately wore a disgusted expression as she gave the two boys a stink eye.

"Why do you think they deserve a second chance Kushida-san? Isn't this already too much? These bastards read Hentai in class and

were planning to record us!!!! How can you even say that they don't deserve to get punished?"

'Wow...For once I'm actually thankful for your outburst Hirata's simp. You made the situation even juicier than before.'

"Yeah!!!"

"As she said!!!"

Some agreed with Karuizawa while some agreed with Kushida. It looked like there was a silent war between the two girl cliques of Class-D, which holds a major power regarding the decision of the Class.

'How fascinating. I wonder what will happen when I destroy both of these stupid cliques. They are nothing but hindrance after all.'

Shaking his head off the thoughts, the brown haired boy's eyes went towards Hirata Yosuke who was trying to calm the hostile atmosphere, but failing to do so. Seeing his pathetic, feeble attempts, Ayanokouji let out a small sigh.

'I wonder what would be the state of this class if instead of taking an initiative, I would've just not participated instead? Could Horikita then lead the whole class by herself? Yeah...She has the ability to do that.'

But if I'm talking about either Hirata or Kushida then my answer is no. Unfortunately the only thing that makes them a valuable asset are their good looks and good behaviour, but I doubt they are even organic.'

Their abilities are basically useless when the person they face is an emotionless husk of an empty boy who has nothing to hold him back... Oh wait, that is me.'

Shaking his head off his thoughts, Ayanokouji walked towards the failing Hirata as he tapped the boy on his shoulders.

'Now...Let's gain the support of a few girls shall we? By showing them the ugliness of the person they so very much desire....'

"Hirata...."

"Hmm?"

The pretty boy of Class-D turned his head towards Ayanokouji with a confused expression on his face.

"If you were the leader of Class-D, what would you do with Ike and Yamauchi?"

It was a simple question, however it had a lot of implications beneath it. The whole class got silent as the girls of Class-D caught their breath, anticipating the answer of their very dear Hirata-kun.

Without wasting a second, Hirata responded to his words with a small troubled smile.

"Even though what they were planning was deplorable, I would give them one more chance to redeem themselves."

'Bingo.'

Everyone sighed in displeasure hearing his answer.

"Why give them a second chance? Isn't what they did a crime? Also if I'm being honest, both Ike and Yamauchi are quite useless for the class....Isn't it a better decision to just get rid of both of them?"

Hearing his cold and calculative words, all the weaker students immediately shuddered in fear as they could clearly feel the incoming doom falling upon them.

Hirata clenched his fists and slightly glared at the boy.

"Are Class Points and Private Points all that matters to you? Don't you care about others feelings?"

"Feelings of who? Some defective bastards who thought it's a good idea to record girls without their consent. I think it's a little weird that Hirata Yosuke, the Model Student of Class-D is not even reprimanding them for their crimes but instead trying to protect them. How deplorable~"

By the end of his words, the brown haired boy tried to imitate the same foxy tone as Satou, but failed miserably as both Satou and Matsushita giggled at his misery.

"Nice try Ayanokouji-kun, don't mind."

Both Shinohara and Karuizawa slightly narrowed their eyes at their friends, wondering why they were on friendly terms with Ayanokouji before shrugging that thought away since they have more important stuff to do.

The blonde haired gyaru immediately stood up and glared at Ayanokouji.

"Why are you trying to provoke Hirata-kun? He has nothing to do with this matter!!"

"But he is not taking any action against them and in fact trying to protect them. Do you really want your boyfriend to support the people who wanted to measure your bust size Karuizawa? I didn't know both of you were into 'that' sort of stuff..."

"Stop....I would never want that."

"Then why are you trying to stand up for your 'boyfriend' when I'm showing him his wrong doings? Don't you care about him? Do you even love him, Karuizawa?"

His empty eyes almost stared hole into Karuizawa as the blonde haired gyaru's mouth widened in shock and fear. She however gained a little composure before looking towards Ayanokouji's empty eyes.

"W-what are you trying to say?"

"Nothing....it's just that, when I'm trying to help Hirata, you are standing in my way, fully knowing that Hirata's way of thinking is wrong. What kind of girlfriend does that? My bad since I'm not well

acquainted with all these sort of stuff but this kinda seems, I don't know fa-"

"Ayanokouji-kun..... please stop. This is going too far."

Not letting the brown haired boy finish his words, the model student of Class-D interrupted him. Hirata clenched his fist while looking down as a tense atmosphere formed around the whole class as none of the students steered their eyes away from the 2 students standing close to the podium.

Ayanokouji nonchalantly put his hand in his pockets before turning away from Hirata.

"Fine. I'll stop for now. But listen one thing Hirata....Unlike you, I don't care about anyone's wellbeing in this class. As of now, I only care about myself and my wellbeing. I only care about results. Your words, your ideals have no importance as long as I'm here. So get rid of your pipe dream of getting to Class-A with everyone, otherwise the next time you try to get in my way, you won't be present here to even carry that hope. It's not a threat....Just a warning."

Ayanokouji's eyes then went towards Ike and Yamauchi as the both of them cowered in fear. He slightly tilted his head towards them before finishing his words.

"Since the exhibitionist Kushida who I seem wants to get perved on by you guys, saved you, I'm letting you be one last time. Get that through your stupid heads. **One Last Time.** Better not forget it."

"This is not the time yet for expelling Ike and Yamauchi. I can still use the both of them to manipulate the defectives and having them accept me as the leader. I'm only giving Ike and Yamauchi one warning..... Just one. One more slip up and I'll expel the both of them by any means."

*Hirata and Kushida are close to that as well. Both of them are already hindrances in my way. If they try to disrupt my plans any further, causing me to lose my freedom, then I'll get **rid of them by any means necessary.**'*

End of Chapter

Words : 3105

Longest chapter yet for this story....

Next chapter may take a little while to update, since I've been neglecting my other stories for some time, or I may neglect them even more to write this one....

Who knows?

By the way what do you think of the chapter? I felt that expelling them right now would be way too quick since they didn't commit the crime yet....They were just planning on it. And mere words, I think is way too unreliable to expel them on the basis of it.

But alas, don't worry. Expulsions would take place soon....No plot armour, no stupid decisions, no simping for character growth(looking at you CanonKouji), only one mission, that is Class-A.

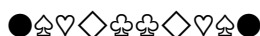
Anyways that's all for this chapter.See ya.

Chapter 24 : Manipulation

As the boys entered the locker room, a silent atmosphere prevailed among them, following the previous incident.

There were some boys in Class-D who were not happy with what Ayanokouji did, since they also wanted to bet on the girls, but they would never say it out loud. While the decent bunch of Class-D were thankful to their leader, since otherwise they would get lumped up in the shenanigans of the two idiots.

Ayanokouji sighed in satisfaction, enjoying the momentary peace that was created, himself being one of the main reasons to cause it.



"As a punishment for today's actions, I'm letting the both of you off with a warning."

Ike and Yamauchi let out a relieved smile however their internal hopes were shattered yet again.

"But, both of you are not allowed to enter the pool with the rest of the Class. By the time we have our swimming class, both of you would feel sick and take a rest in the nursing room. Am I clear?"

"H-huh?"

Both of them looked like they were seeing ghosts, while the girls nodded to their leader's words while mentally thanking him.

"How is that fair to us?!"

"We want to have fun in the pool as well !!!"

"It's not like you are a teacher...You are a student like the rest of us!!!"

"Let us enjoy life man...."

Both of them cried and whined in protest while looking at Kushida with puppy eyes, who immediately let out a small understanding smile at them before looking at Ayanokouji with her own puppy eyes. But before she could talk, the brown haired boy raised his hand to stop her before looking at the two idiots.

"Very well then. Since it's Kushida who is requesting me, both of you can do whatever you please, Ike and Yamauchi."

Both of them let out huge smiles before looking at the angel of Class-D with an extremely thankful smile.

However the same couldn't be said about other students. Most of them gave Ayanokouji a disappointed gaze before minding their own business. The girls immediately looked at him with a disappointed glare.

However the four girls who were somewhat close to Ayanokouji looked at him with a questioning gaze, while Horikita somewhat felt betrayed.....

'What is Ayanokouji-kun doing? Why is someone like him moving right in Kushida-san's palms? Is he attracted to her? But why not anyone but Kushida-san.....'

.....

.....

It's always her. It's always Kushida-san.... What else can you expect, Suzune? Wherever you go, this girl still won't give you a momentary peace....

No...don't think about that Suzune....Past is past. Never dwell on it...You just have to move forward. This time I won't let Kushida-san do whatever she pleases. She is way too dangerous if she has all the information. I need to stop her early on, using whatever means possible. But for my first task, I need to keep Ayanokouji-kun away from her.'

As the black haired maiden was lost in her thoughts, she unconsciously gripped her pen way too hard and snapped it in the process, causing Matsushita and Satou to look at her with a concerned gaze.

Both of them looked at one another with small frowns on their faces before softly whispering to one another.

"Looks like Horikita-san is not happy huh?"

"Duh...did you just see her snap that pen? Even I'm kind of getting a bad feeling by the sudden association between Ayanokouji-kun and Kushida-san for some weird reason..."

"Gut feeling?"

"Yeah you could say that...."

As she said her words, Matsushita's eyes once again darted towards Ayanokouji, who was staring at nothingness with those empty eyes of his, not even acknowledging the presence of the smiling Kushida.

Once the two retards finished their cheers, their hopeful eyes now returned to Ayanokouji who for some reason was opening the door of their classroom, aiming to walk outside, confusing the students of Class-D...

Kushida walked up towards him with a confused gaze.

"Ayanokouji-kun....where are you going?"

"Chabashira-sensei's room. I'm reporting Ike, Yamauchi as well as you to her. After that it's her decision whether to let you in the

swimming class or not."

Immediately as he said that, the class got silent as Horikita's frown immediately turned normal as she puffed her cheeks to stop the incoming laughter.

Matsushita and Satou snickered at the frozen Kushida before sending the brown haired boy thumbs up who gave them a short nod, confusing one Karuizawa Kei of their relationship even more.

"Noooo what the hell,Ayanokouji!!!!"

"You just said do whatever you please!!Why are you ratting us out now, you bastard?"

"Don't get me wrong Ike...I indeed said 'Do whatever you please'... But I never said that I wouldn't do whatever I please as well....

And what I want right now is to report both of you and Kushida to Chabashira-senseiIt's as simple as that."

Kushida's angelic smile faltered for a second as she furrowed her eyebrows at him.

"Why me Ayanokouji-kun? Why are you so mean to me?"

"Yeah!!! Why are you reporting her? She didn't even do anything!!"

Shinohara stood up to protest but immediately was forced to sit down by Satou and Matsushita who pushed her down and forced her in her seat.

The blue haired girl immediately turned towards them with a frown on her face.

"What are you doing, you two? Can't you see how badly he is treating her?"

"Do you really want to get slapped again Shinohara-san? Did you forget how much makeup you had to use to cover that slap mark on your face?"

Matsushita teased the girl as Satou snickered at her brown haired friend's words. Shinohara's face erupted into a blush filled with embarrassment as she turned away from them.

"S-shut up."

Not wanting to waste their time further on their blue haired loud mouthed acquaintance, both Satou and Matsushita looked towards their leader with anticipation and curiosity in their eyes.

Ayanokouji however was not faced at the slightest while Kushida was trying her hardest to manipulate the atmosphere around her in her favour.

His eyes, as dull as usual, surveyed the beige haired girl for 3 seconds as she immediately turned silent at the prolonged stare over her.

"I'm reporting Ike and Yamauchi because of their plan. As for your case, Kushida, to me it seems you are kind of mentally

unstable, aren't you?"

Immediately Kushida stopped in her tracks as her eyes widened and her fists clenched in fury.

The other students were shocked at Ayanokouji's words and wanted to protest, but ultimately were fixed in the seats as they noticed the ice cold glare, a certain black haired maiden was sending them, daring a single one of them to speak even one syllable.

Kushida composed herself and made her voice even more teary than usual.

"W-why are you insult-"

"Let me finish my words before doing your puppy act Kushida....It's getting on my nerves, always getting stopped at every single thing I say."

To further prove his annoyance at the situation, Ayanokouji glared at Kushida and then towards all the students who were against him, causing them to zip their mouths shut.

'Good. Looks like that did the trick. Like my god, I know they are dumb but why can't they realise that fact and let someone with a brain actually talk without interrupting them every single time?'

"For Ike and Yamauchi's case I don't need to elaborate, do I? But for you, I need to save you Kushida."

"S-save me?"

The beige haired girl looked at Ayanokouji with a confused gaze as the boy slowly walked towards her.

"Of course. You are so kind Kushida. So very very kind. You help anyone if they are having trouble and are always cheerful no matter the situation. It's very admirable if I'm being honest."

"H-huh?"

Ayanokouji put his hand over her head as he was most probably planning to give her a head pat causing Horikita to sigh to herself in annoyance.

'I know that Ayanokouji-kun is trying to manipulate Kushida-san, but why is he getting so handsy with her? This is really infuriating but I must remain calm....Why am I getting so worked up anyway? Weird.'

The brown haired boy slowly applied a little pressure over his hand causing Kushida to let out a startled squeak.

Hirata immediately stood up to protest against him.

"Ayanokouji-kun, unhand Kushida this instant. What you are doing is wrong at so many lev-"

"Did you forget about my warning?"

Hirata reluctantly sat down with an annoyed expression on his face as his fists were clenched in annoyance and anger.

Ayanokouji then forced Kushida's head to move towards the two

idiots who were watching the scene in front of them with a horrified gaze. The brown haired boy then dropped his head over Kushida's shoulders, causing her to lightly blush at the sheer closeness of their bodies.

"Just look at those two. Ever since school started, they always tried to strike up conversations and tried to flirt with you for no reason.

And every single time, the only things their eyes were drawn towards was your chest, your behind and your thighs.

And in return of their predatory stare, instead of giving them a response, what do you always do?

Smile at them like you are oblivious of their actions and cheerfully engage in a conversation with them, all the while their eyes are on your chest yet again.

Isn't that hard, Kushida?"

Ayanokouji softly whispered in the girl's ear causing her to jolt at his warm breath, before she shakily gave him a response.

"W-what are you trying to say, Ayanokouji-kun? I never felt uncom-

"Shhh don't say a word. I know that's not your real feelings....Since I used to be like that as well...Hiding your true self just for appearance's sake.

Always having to adapt to any situation, even though you despise the place you are in, but you have to follow it through to the end....Because you want everyone to perceive you as a 'nice person' after all.... Am I spot on with my words, Kushida? Isn't this what you always feel like?"

"I-I...."

Not seeming to respond to her words, the beige haired girl looked down at her feet, while most of the class,not hearing any of their conversation, were looking at the both of them with a confused gaze.

"Don't worry Kushida, I can help you though....Isn't that a good deal? Getting the help of someone who experienced once what you are going through? Wouldn't it feel nice to get the help you deserve?"

"Mhmm..."

"But I have a condition for that. Never get in my way, Kushida. Stop trying to appease everyone just for appearance's sake.

If you want to get in my way though....forget all the nice things I said to you in an instant, because I will be the sole person responsible to destroy all of this feeble relationship you are creating....

Everything gone....In an instant."

The beige haired girl immediately shuddered as Ayanokouji backed out from her before surveying the class.

"So what's your decision, Kushida?"

"I-I"

Ike and Yamauchi once again sent her hopeful and pleading stares, hoping that their angel saves them again.

But alas, fate wasn't so kind to them, as Kushida gave them a short bow.

"I'm sorry but I can't always support your actions Ike-kun and Yamauchi-kun. I request you to not get into the pool, won't you do that for me?"

She activated her puppy eyed stare and gave them a pleading look, causing both of them to look away with a blush.

"F-fine."

"If Kushida-san says so...."

She immediately let out a smile in response, and sat in her respective seat.

'Good job Kushida...Even though she clearly hates it....She still put her body into use while manipulating Ike and Yamauchi....As expected of someone as rotten as her.'

Satisfied with the actions, the brown haired boy silently walked towards his seat, all the while Horikita was sending him a glare filled with fury and rage, causing the boy to look at her with a confused expression.

'Now what's up with this weirdo?'

Not seemingly bothered by her glare, Ayanokouji sat down on his chair, all the while the side of his head was getting drilled by all the glares his 'friend' was sending towards him...

'Why is she glaring at me so much?'

The brown haired boy slowly leaned towards the black haired maiden to ask her problems.

"Hey Horikita, what happened? Why are you glaring so mu-"

He unfortunately couldn't finish his words, as Horikita gripped his cheek with both of her fingers like a vice and 'gently' started pulling them, while giving Ayanokouji an 'innocent' look.

"What are you saying, Ayanokouji-kun? I'm not angry even in the slightest."

"The glares you are sending me is saying otherwise-Ow."

Her grip over his cheek increased further before she let go of it with a smug smile on her face, admiring the red mark over her friend's face, courtesy of her own actions.

"Now I feel better."

Ayanokouji sighed to himself, before softly patting his red

swollen cheek and wincing at the slight pain.

'What a troublesome woman.'

Immediately both of his cheeks were playfully gripped by Horikita's fingers once again, this time with a lot less force though.

"Did you say something, Ayanokouji-kun?"

"Nothing...I'm sowwy Horikita. Pwease release me."

Horikita smiled at him softly but shook her head sideways.

"Nope. I'm not letting you go till I feel like it."

'Someone save me from this devil...'

End of Chapter 24

Words : 3069

My god...my hands are in pain from all the writing... It was even harder writing this chapter, since I'm basically a novice in manipulating someone.

I hope the chapter was satisfactory, though I know it could've been executed way better than this.

Anyways, I hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.

Chapter 25 : Lovebirds

During the swimming period, due to the absence of the two perverts of Class-D, Ike and Yamauchi, most of the girls except Karuizawa and Sakura joined the pool.

On one side Matsushita was already playing in the pool with Satou and Hasebe with huge smiles on their faces.

'Guess they are having their fun. Well...that's fine with me. From what I've seen from the first day, Hasebe was a loner, who only engaged herself in conversations with the purple haired boy named Miyake Akito.

Having some female friends would definitely make her more sociable and open to others. Once that step is done, then I can see if she has any uses or not...'

On the other side, Kushida was purposefully playing in the water closer to the area the boys were standing at, and some of the boys were gawking at her voluptuous, smooth figure drenched in the water of the pool.

The boys were watching her figure with widened eyes and pink blush around their face, however the only place their eyes were fixed on was Kushida's breasts and posterior.

[Don't be horny brothers...Resist it!!!]

Sensing their gaze, Kushida turned around and gave them an 'innocent' smile and a huge wave, causing her already voluptuous body to jiggle further, causing the boys to blush even more.

'Look at those eyes....It's as if Kushida gives them one permission, they would be ready to jump on her without a doubt...Well, as long as they don't create a commotion or plan anything vicious, I don't care what they do... And it seems that Kushida herself is trying to steal their attention. Truly rotten to the core, I must say...'

It was quite an alluring site, but Ayanokouji didn't care about those things in the slightest. Rather, he couldn't feel any sexual attraction towards Kushida.

'I wonder, unlike most of the guys, why do I feel nothing about the physical appearance of Kushida? She is cute and she has a nice body. If I was normal, maybe I would've felt something about her.

But now, I feel nothing. What if being in the WhiteRoom for fifteen years made me asexual? That is indeed troublesome, but that is not out of the equation....Sigh, that man stole my freedom as well as sexuality...Truly a despicable human being.'

As the brown haired boy was in his mental dilemma, he felt somebody poke his shoulders and looked back to see Horikita Suzune looking at him with a nonchalant gaze.

Her hourglass pale figure was visible to his naked eyes, where small water droplets were falling from her body, since she just got out of the shower.

"What are you doing all alone?"

Ayanokouji immediately darted his eyes away from her figure and gave an immediate response.

"Nothing....I was feeling quite bored. So I was just waiting for you."

'Don't think about anything else Kiyotaka. Think about your mission, that's it...That's the only reason you are in this school right? Other things don't hold any importance.... Think about your freedom.....Nothing else..'

It was at that moment Ayanokouji Kiyotaka discovered that he was indeed not asexual

Giving him a small nod, Horikita sat right beside him and dipped her legs in the pool water with a bored look in her eyes.

"Hmm, it's kind of cold, don't you think?"

Hearing her words, Ayanokouji himself dipped his legs in the pool water releasing a small hum of affirmation.

"Yeah, you're not wrong....It's better that way though. It feels quite refreshing in my opinion."

"I feel the same way."

Her eyes went towards the pool as she gave the girls of Class-D who were playing with one another a distant look, before her eyes darted towards her brown haired friend, who was staring at her body with a side eye, without any hint of shame.

A small blush crept around her face for a second before she composed herself and tried to steal one glance at his body in return, but unfortunately or fortunately for her, her one small glance turned into a full blown stare.

Feeling her prolonged stare at his body, Ayanokouji looked towards Horikita whose eyes were fixed at him.

"Say Ayanokouji-kun, what is your exercise regime at the moment?"

"What makes you think that I exercise?"

"Well....your father trained you since a young age right? There must be an exercise regime...."

Also judging the development of your forearms and back muscles, there's no way you can still maintain such a good figure without daily exercising, right?"

Immediately as she said that, Horikita realised her blunder and

immediately tried to shut her mouth with her hand, but alas, fate was too cruel for her as Ayanokouji immediately activated his third form.

TeasingKouji

"Hmm....It seems that you are quite fascinated about my muscles Horikita....Perhaps, do you have a muscle fetish?"

The black haired maiden's face immediately let out a small blush as she coughed in her hand.

"Not at all. I'm just admiring the hard work you put in to get such results that's all...Also, I advise you to not come to such preposterous conclusions all of a sudden."

The brown haired boy then started checking out the body of Horikita from top to bottom with a scrutinising gaze before slightly nodding to himself.

"Your body is not that bad as well, Horikita. Guess your Karate lessons did some wonders huh?"

The already blushing Horikita's face now looked almost red as she covered both of her chest with her hands, before sending Ayanokouji a meek glare.

"Stop staring, pervert...."

"Woah woah hold on. When you stare, you can admire my body, but I can't do the same? What's the logic in that?"

"H-how can you say all these things with a straight face? Don't you have any shame?!"

"Nope."

Unable to retort further, Horikita sighed to herself before furrowing her knees towards her body. Her eyes then once again darted towards Ayanokouji, who was splashing the pool water like a little child.

"You didn't answer my question from earlier, Ayanokouji-kun..."

"Oh? About my training regime?"

"Yes."

Ayanokouji put on a thinking expression while tapping his finger on his knees before turning to her.

"I wake up at around 5:30 A.M.....Then go for a run, 4 Km a day and do some sit ups and pushups. Nothing more...Just some light training to keep my body fit."

Horikita's eyes widened at the revelation as she leaned a little closer towards him.

"You call that light training?! Professional boxers go for around 10 Km run only during their boxing camps, but you do a 4k run everyday and then attend school as well?!"

"Let me correct you, Horikita. Professional boxers go for a 10k run and then do their boxing training as well. And if you do it by

yourself, you will realise that a 4k run is not that hard. The number just seems high. You just have to push past that mental block. Once you push past it, everything will go smoothly."

Horikita slightly nodded at his advice before she softly poked his bicep with a solicitous expression.

"I see.....That's certainly some new knowledge you gave me."

"You really do have a muscle fetish, Horikita. Nice to know that."

The black haired tsundere immediately leaned away while twirling her black bangs.

"S-shut up. It's nothing like that."

"Look at you lovebirds flirting in broad daylight~"

Both Ayanokouji and Horikita's eyes went towards the source of the voice and it was none other than Matsushita, who was looking at them with a teasing grin.

Suddenly out of nowhere, her foxy friend Satou popped out from behind her back with her own grin as well.

"Get a room, you two~"

Hearing the teasing tone of their acquaintances, Horikita immediately shuddered before looking at them with a slightly worried expression.

"Did you hear what we were talking about?"

Matsushita put her thumb and index finger beneath her chin and put on a thinking expression for a second, before letting out a sly grin.

"If you are talking about a certain ice queen admiring Ayanokouji-kun's beautiful muscles and poking them with a dreamy expression on her face, then yes."

"Even I'm amazed by his godly body, but I'm resisting myself. I didn't know you were this freaky Horikita-san~ Doing such sameful acts in broad daylight. How bold of you~"

Horikita immediately glared at Satou, but the girl just whistled to herself not minding her glare.

Ayanokouji gave his black haired friend a small stare while sighing to himself.

"What can I say? I truly am unlucky...Horikita touched my body without permission, but when I complimented her, she started calling me a pervert. What in the gender equality is this?"

Matsushita plopped beside Ayanokouji before playing along with his act.

"I know right? Horikita-san truly is cruel~You can touch my body if you want, Ayanokouji-kun. I'm sure Horikita-san wouldn't mind, would you Miss Ice Queen?"

Unable to handle their teasing anymore, Horikita slightly puffed

her red cheeks before diving in the water, fully ignoring the three students who were having way too much fun with her.

Satou got up from the pool and sat beside Matsushita while engaging in conversation with one another, while bringing up Ayanokouji's name in their conversation a few times, however the brown haired boy showed no interest in their words and lied on the cold marble floor, darting his eyes away from the wet bodies of the two beautiful girls beside him.

'Horikita....From our first interaction, I realised that much like me, she was an introvert as well....During our first month, other than me, she didn't talk with anyone else...

The main reason being Kushida. Ever since the first day, I noticed Horikita deliberately avoiding Kushida all the time, so in the end she didn't manage to make any female friends, since Kushida is the glue to all the cliques... So, she became all alone and closed off her heart from the others.

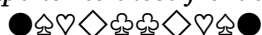
Surprisingly Matsushita and Satou, out of nowhere, somehow slowly but surely started opening that heart of her's, much like they did with Hasebe.

I hope having both of these girls as her friends, Horikita could regain her confidence back and develop to be as strong as the other Class Leaders.

After that, I would promote her from a Knight to a Rook, and in no time she might become the queen, based on her development.

Having a strong piece like Horikita and someone like Matsushita assisting her from the sidelines would definitely be dangerous for the other classes....

Guess, out of the bunch of defectives, there are certainly some incredibly useful items, who just need a little amount of tinkering to be superior to those from the other classes..



' I can't wait to see all of your development, useful members of Class-D. I hope none of you disappoint me.'

End of Chapter 25

Words : 2616

A small glimpse of Hornykouji and HornyKita 😏😏...A light hearted chapter after the madness of the last two...

Also for any of wondering, Chabashira didn't give Class-D the wrong syllabus here unlike canon, because of her talk with Ayanokouji. She already knows of his abilities and she doesn't need to test him...So Class-D are safe in that regard lol.

Anyways that's all for this chapter.Hope you guys enjoyed it.See ya.

Chapter 26 : Sudden Proposal

"Matsushita...Do you have some time? I need your help with something."

Matsushita, who was talking with Shinohara, Satou and Karuizawa, looked back towards Ayanokouji who was slightly waving at her and Satou, trying to get their attention.

Both Karuizawa and Shinohara gave him the stink eye while the other two girls gave him a short wave in response.

"What do you want? Can't you see we are busy? Go away."

Shinohara tried to shoo him away as if he was a dog, while both Matsushita and Satou frowned at him.

Ayanokouji sighed to himself in annoyance.

'Sometimes I wish that I could have Horikita as my familiar, so that she would stay with me 24/7. I really miss her slap at the moment.'

A small image of a warrior Horikita with a sword flashed in Ayanokouji's mind, before the boy shrugged his thoughts away.

"I don't think I asked you anything, Shinohara. The person I'm talking to is Matsushita. And this is an important matter for the betterment of the class. Please don't interrupt me."

Shinohara's face immediately got red in anger as she clenched both of her fists.

"Yo-"

"Please keep your mouth shut Shinohara-san. Ayanokouji-kun must have some business with me, that's why he came here. Our chat can wait, you know?"

The blue haired girl looked towards Matsushita with a betrayed look, not believing that she is siding with the so-called 'gloomy tyrant' instead of her own friend.

"Matsushita-san....Why are you siding with him instead of me?"

However before Matsushita could give a response, Satou spoke up.

"It's not like we have to agree with you all the time, just because we have been friends for a month. In that logic, we are friends with Ayanokouji-kun as well. So don't cause unnecessary fights...I beg you."

'Wow....I didn't know Satou can talk so well...Colour me impressed.'

"Hey hey, What's going on with you two? Ever since the group

study started, both of you got way too distanced from us. What's the deal with the both of you?"

Karuizawa immediately joined the conversation with a confused tone in her voice.

Ayanokouji mentally slapped his head, already regretting his decision.

"This is going nowhere.....I'd rather do the whole thing myself instead of hearing all this bullshit every single time I try to talk with these two."

Ayanokouji gave both Matsushita a small gaze before walking towards the door.

"I'm waiting only 5 minutes. Please come within that time period, or forget that our conversation took place."

Without waiting for their response, the brown haired boy left the room, lost in his thoughts.

"Damn it Horikita. Of all days, you had to eat your lunch with your brother today? Well....I can't blame her, I guess. But still, with her cooperation, the situation would've been way easier."

While Ayanokouji leaned on the wall outside the class, Matsushita immediately started packing her stuff, while Satou helped her, all the while Karuizawa and Shinohara were giving them confused gazes.

As soon as they were done with her work, Matsushita gave Satou a light wave and started walking outside the room, not before getting interrupted yet again.

Karuizawa grabbed her hand tightly before sending her a worried glance.

"Matsushita-san....Is Ayanokouji-kun blackmailing you? Why are you leaving us, your friends, only to meet him in such a hurry?"

However much to Karuizawa's surprise, Matsushita easily threw away the hand that the blonde haired girl was grabbing her without breaking a sweat.

"Karuizawa-san, did you forget what happened the last time when someone questioned Ayanokouji-kun's intention?"

The brown haired girl's eyes went towards Shinohara before once again fixing on Karuizawa.

"I hope you choose your words carefully. We don't want any repeats of the past, do we?"

Matsushita gave her blonde haired girl a very 'peaceful' smile, causing Karuizawa to immediately lose her grip as her eyes harboured a little amount of fear, seeing the exact same smile she is all too familiar with.

Without saying a word, Matsushita immediately walked towards the door of the classroom, while Satou sneaked towards Hasebe's desk to chat with her, all the while Karuizawa was frozen in her

seat, while Shinohara... eh she is unimportant. Let's skip her.

•
•
•
•
•
•
•

"So...What do you want with me, Ayanokouji-kun?"

Matsushita immediately initiated the conversation with a sly smile on her face, as Ayanokouji turned towards her.

"Nothing much. Just follow me. Although you might think of me as a scumbag after this. So I already apologise for that."

Without waiting for her response, Ayanokouji started walking through the halls, gesturing the girl to follow him.

Matsushita raised her eyebrows slightly before her teasing grin got even bigger.

She slightly tip-toed towards the walking figure of the boy, all the while maintaining the smile on her face.

"Oh no~ Is Ayanokouji-kun planning to do something despicable to me? Well....I don't mind. Did you forget what I told you during the swimming class?"

"Hm? What did you say?"

The brown haired girl stood on her toes as her face met the ears of the boy. Immediately her warm breath came in contact with his ears, as she whispered to him.

"You can touch my body if you want, Ayanokouji-kun. I don't mind if it's yo-Ow!!"

Matsushita immediately grabbed her head with both of her hands, as Ayanokouji gave her a soft bonk.

"Don't try to elicit any reaction from me. It wouldn't work."

"Tch. Why is it so hard to get you to at least change your facial expression?"

Matsushita grumbled to herself while rubbing the top of her head.

"So....What do I have to do, Master Ayanokouji?"

"Master?"

The boy in question slightly tilted his head in confusion, while Matsushita giggled to herself.

"Well at least I got something of a reaction. So what's this 'despicable' plan Ayanokouji-kun?"

"Don't worry about that. Just quietly follow me and you will soon understand. Also..."

"Hmm?"

"Please don't call me master again."

•
•
•
•
•
•
•

The whole walk towards the cafeteria was... annoying to say the least.

Matsushita for some reason was being extremely nosy and asking her fellow brown haired acquaintance all sorts of random questions, sneaking some personal ones into them, thinking that Ayanokouji will fall into her trap and answer them.

However, as the Masterpiece of the White Room, Ayanokouji experienced psychological warfare too many times, 100 times more cruel than this. So he dodged every single one of her questions without any problem, causing the girl to sigh in disappointment.

As soon as they reached their destination, Ayanokouji's eyes surveyed the whole cafeteria before both of his eyelids fixed on his target.

'Got you'

"Follow me."

He started walking towards a bespectacled Senpai, who looked to be in his third year, eating the free meals.

Ayanokouji took a seat right across from him, as Matsushita sat beside him, still confused.

"Excuse me, are you an upperclassman?"

"Hmm? Yes I am. Who are you?"

The student regarded them in a calm and disinterested manner, all the while focusing on his free meal.

"Are you a second-year student or a third-year senpai?"

"Third-year. Let me guess, you are a first-year?"

Ayanokouji gave him a short nod, while Matsushita gave him a questioning gaze as if asking him, *"Where are you going with this?"*

"You are absolutely correct. I'm Ayanokouji Kiyotaka from Class-D. Aren't you from Class-D as well, senpai?"

His calm demeanour immediately disappeared as the student frowned at him.

"What does that have to do with you?"

Matsushita widened her eyes and looked towards him, as if asking him, *"How did you know?"*

Ayanokouji answered her by looking down at the meal the third-year was eating. Following his gaze, Matsushita at first looked at

the food with furrowed eyebrows, before she nodded in understanding.

'Good. Looks like I won't have to explain to her.'

Ayanokouji pointed towards the meal he was eating.

"It's not very tasty, is it?"

With an irritated expression on his face, the third-year stood up with the tray in his hand.

"You are really irritating, aren't you? Stop bothering me."

He started walking away, but stopped in his tracks as soon as he heard the nonchalant empty voice of the brown haired boy.

"I want to ask you something. If you listen, I'll show you my gratitude."

"Gratitude? "

With a slightly interested expression on his face, he reluctantly sat back down.

"Do you still have the problems from the midterm test from the first semester of your first year? Or, if not, do you happen to know someone from your class who does?"

"Do you even understand what you're asking?"

"It's not particularly strange, is it? I didn't think it was against school rules to study using old test problems."

"Why are you asking me?"

"That's simple. I believed I'd have the highest chance of success if I worked with someone who doesn't have any points. Honestly, that free vegetable meal doesn't look good. Of course, things would be quite different if you actually liked eating the vegetable set. What do you think?"

As if considering his words, the third year student looked to be in deep thought, before he gave the boy an inquisitive gaze.

"How much are you going to pay?"

"Five thousand Private Points. I'm afraid that's as high as I can go."

"I don't have the old test problems, but... I know someone who does. If you want him to help you, though, you're going to need to offer at least 30,000 points. If you've got that, you're fine."

"I'm afraid that 30,000 is a no-go for me. I don't have that much."

"How much do you have?"

"Ten thousand points..."

The senpai immediately furrowed his eyebrows as he heard his answer...

"10,000 huh? That's way too low. I understand the predicament you are in, but I don't think I can help you."

As the third-year was once again getting up from his seat, Ayanokouji's eyes immediately went towards Matsushita.

'Matsushita, I choose you.'

Understanding his intentions, the golden brown haired girl sighed to herself before standing up.

"Please senpai. Please try to understand our predicament. None of us are getting much class points and if some of our classmates fail, then we will suffer even more consequences. Please help us. We will promise you to repay that favour."

To exaggerate her point, Matsushita grabbed his hand with her own, eliciting a small blush on his face.

'Caught you.'

"Hmph. Very well then. I'll give you the papers if you give me 7,000 points. Fair deal?"

"Make it 6,000 and I'll agree."

While Ayanokouji gave him a bored stare, Matsushita gave him her puppy eyes, which in correlation with her beautiful face, made her appear even cuter than usual.

"V-very well. This is very annoying."

"Good. I'll pay you 6,000 points."

"Then we have a deal. Of course, I'll have to ask you to transfer the points in advance."

"Fine, but if you do anything to stab us in the back, I won't forgive you. Even if you're an upperclassman, I'll do anything and everything I can to make sure you're expelled."

"You're scary. Fine, I get it. Besides, when you transfer points, there's always a record of it. If rumour spreads that some first-year students ripped me off, it'd look bad."

"All right then. Since I'm paying you 6,000 points, can you toss in a little bonus? I want to see the answers to the surprise test that we took after being admitted."

"All right. I'll toss in them too. You will get the things you want by tomorrow morning."

"Very well then. Goodbye."

He immediately left the cafeteria, not wanting to be noticed by anyone.

Matsushita immediately sent him a pout and a red face filled with annoyance and embarrassment.

"T-that was so annoying!!! I can't believe you called me here, only to use my body as bait, Ayanokouji-kun. Truly despicable. Such a brute~ I'm fearing for what the future you is planning to do with me~"

By the end of her words, her frustration disappeared as she once again wore a teasing grin.

"I already warned you before that you might think of me as a scumbag."

Matsushita shrugged her shoulders before nonchalantly replying to him.

"Eh...It doesn't matter to me that much. Unlike Hirata-kun, I don't care much about satisfying everyone or keeping to my ideals. So I think I resonate with your way of doing things more."

"So in other words, you are trying to say you are a masochist for me?"

Immediately her face turned red as Ayanokouji unleashed his third form upon her.

'How the tables have turned.'

"N-no I'm not. I'm just saying that, I wouldn't mind helping you again, though I need something in return as compensation of all the humiliation you put me through."

"What do you want? I will try to fulfil it, if it is within my capabilities."

As soon as he said that, Matsushita's grin got even bigger than usual as her eyes started gleaming in excitement.

"Then....Go on a date with me!!!"

End of Chapter 26

Words : 3074

After Story : 1

New contestant joined the battle....I repeat a new contestant joined the battle...

Now the main question is, will Kiyotaka finally stray away from his love of Freedom-chan and go on a date with Matsushita? Or will the brown haired girl be the first to experience Kouji's rejection.

Horikita : *"Where am I in all of this? Wasn't I supposed to be the main character?"*

Author : *"Shut up Suzune. Only Ayanokouji is the main character. Request some other authors to make a story about you and then come back when you are a main character..."*

Horikita pouts in annoyance.

Horikita : *"Hmph!! Fine...I may not be the main character. But don't forget that I am the Best Girl!!!"*

All the while Horikita and Author-san were quarreling, Ayanokouji was watching the drama in front of his eyes all the while munching on some popcorn.

*Lmao ☐☐☐ Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter.
Anyways that's all for this one. See ya.*

Chapter 27 : Your Real Self

"Then....Go on a date with me!!!"

Ayanokouji Kiyotaka didn't move an inch from his chair while his eyes went towards the girl who was grinning to herself.

'A date? With someone like me? She must be joking....However it's never bad to reconfirm things...'

"Excuse me? A date?"

"Yup!!! Would you accept this request of mine?"

Matsushita's eyes were gleaming in excitement as she was wearing a hopeful smile on her face, causing Ayanokouji to release a small sigh before looking at her.

'Or not.'

"You do know that I don't harbour any feelings for you right? And still you want me to go on a date with you?"

"Yeah, it doesn't matter to me either. I don't seriously harbour that feeling as well, I just want to hang out with you alone, without any distraction.

Also who says that you won't harbour any feelings for me? After our date, we may fall in love with one another and then marry each other and live happily the rest of our lives!!!! Kyaaaaa!!!!!!!"

The leader of Class-D wasn't able to say a word as Matsushita started squealing to herself,lost in her fantasies.

The other students present in the school cafeteria gave the duo some weird looks before returning to what they were doing.

'What a weird girl.'

To stop her from her wildest fantasies, Ayanokouji gave her a soft bonk on her head yet again,causing her to wake up to reality.

The girl in question once again grabbed her head in pain while sending a glare towards the brown haired boy, who looked too unbothered with the annoyed stare his fellow acquaintance was throwing at him.

"Stop bonking me, Ayanokouji-kun!! It hurts!!"

"Then start acting like a normal girl. You look like you took too much LSD and now squealing like a wild pig everywhere."

Matsushita puffed her cheeks in anger at the analogy, before returning back to the topic.

"So....What's the answer? Do you want to go on a date with me?"

"Matsushita, I don't mind going on a date with yo-"

Immediately the brown haired girl let out a huge smile and nearly jumped off her chair, not letting the brown haired boy finish her sentence.

"Yippee!!!"

"As long as you pay for the food."

"....."

'Not so yippee now, are we?'

All her cheerfulness immediately vanished as she sent her fellow acquaintance a stare filled with horror. She immediately pointed her fingers towards him in an accusatory fashion.

"Are you kidding me? Why do I have to pay for the food?"

"Well of course, you will pay. You are the one who wants to go on a date with me after all."

"B-but you have a lot of Private points, don't you?"

Ayanokouji raised his hands in a surrendering posture before looking at her with empty eyes.

"Hey now? How can you even say that I have Private Points? Were your ears not working when I told the third year that I have only 10,000 Private Points?"

"Don't fool me Ayanokouji-kun. I know that you are lying. When we were shopping for clothes, I took a peak at your device and clearly saw that you had 87,000 points. Where did the remaining 77,000 points go huh?"

With a huff, Matsushita sat down and started sending the boy an accusatory stare, awaiting for his answer.

Ayanokouji however went quiet all of a sudden, mostly thinking of an answer before raising his head up to meet her cerulean eyes with his own brown ones.

"I....spent it all on ice cream?"

"Why are you asking yourself that question?"

"I also wonder about that."

The brown haired girl immediately slapped her hand over her head, feeling despair and frustration.

"This is going nowhere."

However she immediately picked herself up from her despair and started acting like a cute girl, trying to woo Ayanokouji.

"What is this Ayanokouji-kun~ Are you seriously going to have a beautiful maiden like me pay for us? Won't you be a gentleman and spon-"

"Yes. You will pay for the food. Also cut out the act, it's creeping me out."

The brown haired girl slumped on her seat, having nothing else to throw at the leader of Class-D.

Ayanokouji, sensing her incoming despair, decides to take

advantage of the situation.

'It's always best to strike the iron while it's hot.'

"How about this Matsushita? You pay 85%, I'll pay the other 15%."

"Not at all. Decrease the percentage."

"Very well then. 84-16?"

Matsushita released an irritated sigh while Ayanokouji gave her an amused stare.

"You cheapskate. Divide the ratio 70-30."

'Score.'

"Ok."

Not even wasting a second, the leader of Class-D gave a response with a smug undertone as Matsushita fell into his trap.

"Dammit I could've gone lower..."

Ayanokouji stood up from his chair before stuffing his arms in his pocket as he looked down towards the whining figure of Matsushita.

"It's your fault. I was ready to pay 55% but you graced me with your generosity. Have my sincerest gratitude, Matsushita.

By the way, let's have our date after the midterms okay? It's better to not get distracted right now. "

"That's fair. Then we can enjoy our date and do lovey dovey stuff with one another without any worries~"

Matsushita released a sly smile before walking alongside him to their classroom, while Ayanokouji dodged her teasing words like a professional dodgeball player.

However, soon he got into his business mode and immediately gave the girl a cold stare, causing her to stand stiff and look at him with a serious gaze in return as well.

"Also don't tell anyone about the papers, just follow my words for now. Got it?"

Matsushita raised her eyebrows in intrigue, not understanding the reason Ayanokouji wanted to delay helping their classmates.

"Why is that, Ayanokouji-kun?"

"Think about it by yourself. It's fairly easy if you look at it from common sense. If you can't understand this simple thing by tomorrow, then you are quite dumb, Matsushita."

Matsushita pouted at him before looking away.

"Hmph!! Just wait for tomorrow. I'll give you such a good answer, that it will blow your mind away."

"I'll be waiting for that."

•

•

•

•
•
•
•
It was night time at the moment. Ayanokouji was lying down on his bed looking at the ceiling, his ever monotone and uninterested gaze still present in his face. However the brown haired boy seemed to find himself in a huge dilemma.

'I need something to drink.....Water is not doing it for me....Should I get some Cold Drink? The closest vending machine is still too far away though... That's too much work...'

"....."

'Whatever. Let's just go there. I can also feel that something interesting might happen tonight...More reason to go then.'

Without a second thought, Ayanokouji got himself out of his bed and wore some casual clothes before getting ready to buy a drink.

•

•
•
•
•
•
•
•
'Guess my intuition wasn't wrong....'

Returning to his dorm after buying his drink, Ayanokouji stopped on his tracks for a second, before walking behind a certain person within a distance, who seemed to not notice his presence at the slightest.

'What is she planning to do? Secret rendezvous with her boyfriend or something like that? That definitely is an option...A girl like her definitely would not want to make her relationship public or the defects would act like hyenas and attack her boyfriend.'

'It would be good for my morals to leave her alone and give her privacy, but unfortunately I also am a person rotten to the core. Morals don't work on me.'

Soon, the girl stood in front of an empty abandoned building before casually walking up the stairs, all the while she was humming to herself.

'Hmm, this place is way too sketchy for couples to hang out...Does she have a hobby of ghost hunting? Or maybe is she doing some sketchy stuff? Like drug dealing or something? That's definitely not out of the realm of possibility.'

Also why is she still wearing her school uniform? Did she directly come here after her study sessions? That sure is some dedication to her

job...'

As the girl climbed upwards the stairs, Ayanokouji slowly but surely followed her steps, in a silent manner, not letting her be aware of her presence.

Soon, she reached the roof and dropped her bag there. She walked towards the railing of the roof still humming to herself, while Ayanokouji made himself comfortable behind the door and was observing her actions through the small crack of the rooftop door.

Immediately she stopped humming to herself and did something which was surprising but yet not truly surprising at the same time.

*'So this is what your real self is, huh, **Kushida**?'*

"Ahhh, so annoying!"

Her low voice was clearly audible in the ever silent atmosphere as her grip over the railing tightened to the point that if she had the power, she could've ripped them off.

"Those damn perverts, constantly ogling me while I tutor you. Just because I'm nice doesn't mean you get to constantly stare. Fucking disgusting! It's as if boobs are all in your fucking minds!!! Why don't you just kill yourselves huh??!!!"

'I feel the same way, Kushida. Don't worry, I will soon get rid of them only because of you... I'm doing so much for you...I truly am the best leader.'

Kushida started kicking the railings as hard as she could, venting all her anger and frustration out on them.

"And don't even get me started with that Ayanokouji!!!!!"

'Oh? I am on her target list as well? Then I won't help you Kushida. Screw yourself. Have fun with your platoon of simsps.'

"That bastard thinks he knows me huh!!? Trying to sweet talk all the way to my ears trying to get in my skirt!! I know bastards like you, fucker. You act like some robot, but you are the worst of all the perverts."

'Unfortunately even if I was a pervert Kushida, you would be the last person to whom I will be sexually interested in. I can already think of 20-30 females in this institution, who are in my opinion 100 times prettier than you.'

"Also you think I don't understand you? Pushing all the perverts into my group intentionally and making me frustrated, then wanting me to vent my anger to you, so that you can act as my saviour? Never bitch!!! I'd never go along with your plans."

'Well isn't this nice? She seems to be a little smart as well...Guess she is not just boobs and smiles. Have some brownie points for figuring 2% of my plans, Kushida.'

"Also that skank **Horikita**!!!!!"

The way Kushida uttered the word Horikita with such aggression, that Ayanokouji immediately observed even more closely.

"That bitch is still here!!! How dare she apply to this school?! Here I thought I would finally have some momentary peace and all my hopes were gone when I had to see her ugly fucking face!!!!

Also how dare you talk back to me, Bitch!!! All you are good at is seducing that boring bastard, Ayanokouji and just because he gives you some attention, you think you are some hot shit?

Just wait, you slut!!! I'll give you the true heavenly experience you are oh so familiar with!! Just die, you stupid bitch!! Or I'll have to push you to death myself, yet again, which I failed last time. But this time I won't!!!!"

*I see....So this is what she is truly like huh.... Also **Familiar, yet again, last time**...these are some truly interesting phrases you used Kushida...giving me quite some answers I needed all this time along....'*

Without waiting another second, Ayanokouji kicked the door with a huge amount of force behind it, nearly breaking it from his hinges. Kushida startling in fear looked back with panicked eyes, which immediately narrowed as she registered the identity of the person, who was responsible for scaring her.....

.

.
. .
. .
. .
. .
. .

One human being stood on her feet, all the while clenching her fists and glaring at the other with full hostility.

While the other, was just standing there with an empty expression, not bothered at all in the slightest.

Both their eyes then met one another, as this time Ayanokouji reciprocated Kushida's feelings and glared at her with full hostility, surprising the beige haired girl, before she glared back as well, although with less intensity.

'You truly fell into a trap , Kushida....Now would you sacrifice your pieces and then ultimately gain advantage, or would you mindlessly try to save your pieces without any aim, and break yourself apart? Please entertain me.'

End of Chapter 27

Words : 2916

After Story : 2

Finally, Kiyotaka experienced Kushida's real self and got to know a very small glimpse of Horikita's past and wha-

Horikita : "If you reveal anything, I'll stab this compass in your

throat."

Author : "Whoa whoa Suzune chill out. I'm not revealing anything..."

Horikita sighed in relief before lowering her compass as Author-san immediately took a running stance, before grinning at the black haired maiden.

Author : "Yet."

Horikita : "You bast-"

Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya. Give me some suggestions on what you would like to see in the future chapters.

Chapter 28 : Blackmail Gone Wrong

"How are you doing Kushida? Feeling calm yet, or are you still frustrated?"

Not even bothering to look the girl in the eye, Ayanokouji casually walked past her and leaned on the wall of the roof, drinking his cold drink, enjoying the calm, cold breeze.

Kushida's face immediately snapped towards him as it contained undiluted rage and anxiety..... Anxiety of being caught in the middle of her rant, and rage of being caught by none other than the tyrant of Class-D of all people.

Her face immediately morphed into an ugly frown as she slowly stepped towards him.

"You....What are you doing here?"

Setting his can down, Ayanokouji slightly looked up at her annoyed face and let out a small yawn.

"Nothing much. I was quite bored and saw you walk up here all alone. Thought I would get some blackmail material, and oh boy I got more than what I asked for."

To further acknowledge his point, Ayanokouji hummed to himself while nodding his head. He then picked up his can and walked past the frozen Kushida.

"Thank you for giving me some important information, Kushida. Have a nice day."

But as soon as he was about to walk away, Ayanokouji felt his hand locked up in a firm grip. He slightly looked back to see the social butterfly of Class-D sending him a cold glare. Her cold, calculating eyes were surveying him like she was trying to predict what his next move was about to be.

"How much did you hear?"

"Everything."

"If I were you, I would never tell anyone what you heard or saw today. Don't tell a soul about what you saw today, and don't interfere in my life. I'll let you go if you swear."

"Or what if I do tell?"

Her glare intensified while Ayanokouji's face remained the same as it always is. Completely blank.

"Or you will face the consequences of betraying me."

He slightly raised his eyebrows at the comment before giving her

an amused stare.

"And what can the mighty Kushida do to make me suffer?"

The sarcasm behind his voice made the girl in front of him irk in annoyance, before she let out a small smile.

"Then I'll tell everyone you raped me."

She said those words without any hesitation, as if she did this thing more than once.

'What a unique woman.....It's truly disappointing that the person who caught you was me, or this act of yours would have some impact.'

"That's a false accusation, you know? No one will believe you."

"No, I don't think it would be a false accusation."

Immediately she grabbed his hand and placed it on her left breast. Ayanokouji slightly brought the can near his mouth and started drinking all the while ignoring the soft sensation on his hand.

'I take back all of my compliments. This is disappointing.... I was expecting much more from her....But I guess, not everyone is like Horikita...'

Kushida's eyes widened in shock as she was not able to believe the scene in front of her.

'Why is he so calm? The prettiest girl of the whole school is having him squeeze her breast and he is not even looking at me? Am I not pretty enough?!

Wait, wait, that's not my motive. I just want to blackmail him. What am I getting so worked up for?'

After a couple seconds, she threw his hands away from her breast and gave him a calculated glare.

"I got your fingertips in my shirt. One word and you are done for. I'm going to leave this uniform in my room without washing it. If you betray me, I'll hand it over to the police. Co-operate with me and I'll not do anything to harm you...Am I clear."

'I don't know if this girl is actually smart or dumb? Why did she think this was a good idea? Well....let's show her the consequence of trying to blackmail me.'

Immediately the hand that Kushida threw snapped towards her neck and grabbed hold of it, surprising the beige haired girl.

"Huh?!"

Without waiting a second, Ayanokouji threw her towards the nearest wall by her neck with a huge force behind it.

Kushida's eyes immediately teared up from the sudden painful sensation in her back.

"Ayanok-"

"Now now don't speak any further, Kushida."

While one hand of his was still gripping her neck tightly, his

other hand slowly went towards her thighs, causing the girl to feel a chill down her spine.

Seeing her face morph into that of a fear, Kiyotaka loosened his grip over her neck as she started coughing.

"You....what are you doing with me?"

She tried to glare at him, but unfortunately fear overtook her feeling of rage, as her voice came out as meek instead of cold.

The littlest amount of authority she had, however, immediately disappeared when the next words were uttered from the mouth of the boy.

"Well....you did try to frame me of raping you correct? And I have nothing to gain, but everything to lose. So I thought, if I'm getting in trouble either way, wouldn't it be better if I atleast get something out of it?"

His hands that were on her thigh, moved up a little as Kushida's eyes started watering up, as she glared at him in rage.

"You bastard!!! You fucker!!! I knew it. You are like every single one of them. You are nothing but a pervert."

"Says the girl who placed my hand on her boobs voluntarily. Who's the pervert here? I think you are actually, in fact enjoying this, aren't you Kushida?"

Kushida scoffed at him, all the while trying to stop his hand which was close to her panties.

"You think I would like this? Don't joke with me. I would rather have sex with Yamauchi, than do this with you."

'Hoh? Those were some bold words you spoke Kushida? I will remember them till I die.'

Ayanokouji let out a small sigh filled with disappointment.

"I see, guess I have no other way round. I just have to force myself on you..."

Ayanokouji immediately held both of her arms over her head with one hand and started unbuttoning Kushida's jacket, as the girl started flailing her legs everywhere, trying to kick him away from her.

"Go away Ayanokouji!!!! Leave me!!! "

"No I don't think I will. "

Even in that situation, his voice was ever calm and collected, which resulted in Kushida feeling a huge amount of anxiety. She started trembling in fear.

While one of his hands was holding her arms, his other hand, which was done unbuttoning her jacket, squished both of her cheeks.

"Kushida, take off your jacket."

With teary eyes, the beige haired girl glared at him one last time

as she obediently took off her jacket. Her garments fell on the cold cement of the rooftop as she looked up at Ayanokouji who was staring at her.

"Now what? Want me to undress now, you pervert?"

"Can't wait for the main course huh? Unfortunately you are not my type. I already got what I wanted from you."

"Huh?"

Taking the half empty can, Ayanokouji started pouring the beverage on her jacket, all the while keeping eye contact with the now frozen Kushida.

As soon as realisation hit her, her eyes widened before she ran towards her garment, but as soon as she was close to pick it up, Ayanokouji tripped her legs, resulting in her falling on the ground face first.

He grabbed the girl by the hair and forced her up to look at him.

"The so-called jacket that you were trying to use as evidence, is now drenched with orange juice...Specifically over the area where you forced me to touch you without my consent.

Now....I wonder, will you go to school tomorrow wearing this jacket, or would you go home and wash the jacket? I think the second option would be much more comfortable, since no one wants to see the so-called "*Pretty Girl*" of Class-D to be surrounded by ants or other vermin, correct ?"

Kushida tried to glare at him one more time before he smashed her face on the cement floor, while sighing to himself.

"Don't be angry with me Kushida. It's all your fault. I tried to help you...I volunteered to listen to your ventings, yet you were the one who thought that it would be a good idea to blackmail me. This is the consequence of your own actions..."

The girl mewled in response, not having any energy to further continue this fiasco.

Realising that his work is done, Ayanokouji stood up on his feet before dusting his clothes off the dirt, as he put one of his hands in his pocket, searching for something.

The now tired Kushida, who seemingly lost all of her will to engage any further, looked at him with a resigned gaze, before nearly falling into unconsciousness.

"Here you go."

He took out another can of orange juice and rubbed it on the girl's cheek, making her jolt in response to the sudden cold sensation.

"Huh?"

Seeing her confused gaze, Ayanokouji kneeled down for a second to maintain eye contact with the beige haired girl.

"Take this as a compensation for all the beating you recieved. I may seem like an asshole, but I'm not as heartless as you think I am..."

'You are a liar, Kiyotaka.'

"I have a lot to discuss with you, but it seems like you are going to faint at any given moment. Go to your dorms and take some rest."

Done with his words, Kiyotaka stood up before walking towards the door.

"W-wait."

Kushida meekly called out to him, causing the boy to look back towards her.

"Are you planning to reveal what happened today?"

In Spite of the pain and fatigue, there was still the presence of anxiety and fear in her mind.

'Score.'

"As long as you work for me, then I won't. Prove your loyalty to me. The moment you slip up on the slightest of matters, my mouth will coincidentally slip up on the matter as well..."

Kushida groaned in annoyance before giving him a reluctant nod.

"Very well...Not like I have any choice in this matter. I am fighting a losing battle either way."

"It's good that you still have some brain cells left after having your face smashed into the concrete. Now, take some rest and don't forget to clean your uniform."

With that Kiyotaka walked out of the rooftop as Kushida leaned on the wall, taking small sips of the drink. Her knees were hunched close towards her body, as her throat was still sore from all the yelling and choking.

'I'm literally within the palm of his hands now Dammit...If only I delayed my venting session to tomorrow, then this would've never happened.'

Well...at least he was considerate enough to buy me a drink and not ask me about my past or something....'

However fate seemed to be cruel to her as immediately a notification popped on her mobile.

She picked up her device as both of her eyes widened, seeing the text.

☐

Ayanokouji Kiyotaka : *Let's talk about your and Horikita's relationship later, okay? Have a goodnight Kushida.*

☐

'FUUUUCCCKKKK!!!!!!'

End of Chapter 28

Words : 2911

After Story : 3

Author : Finally...I somehow was able to finish this chapter....For some reason, I couldn't write more than 200 words everytime I thought about writing this chapter....But somehow I was able to go through the struggle.

Wait Hold up-

Author-san stopped in the middle of his rant as felt someone giving him a headpat.

He looked back and saw that it was none other than the compass weilding tsun tsun, Hornykita.

Author : "What are you doing?"

Hornykita : "You seem pretty stressed...Whenever I feel sad, Ayanokouji-kun gives me a headpat. So I thought it would work on you as well."

Author-san blushes while falling in love, before his eyes widened in realisation...

Author : "Wait- is this your way of bribing me to not share your past at the moment?"

Not giving him a response, Horikita retracted her hands and looked away like the Tsundere she was. However small beads of sweat could be seen on her forehead .

Hornykita : "N-not really...."

Author : "Welleven if you had ulterior motives, your actions still swayed my heart, so I'll delay the matter. Now go away, I need to finish this chapter."

Horikita softly giggled to herself before giving him one reassuring pat of satisfaction.

Hornykita : "Good puppy."

Author : "Fuck off."

Chapter 29 : Other Leaders

As Ayanokouji stood in front of the elevator, waiting for it to reach the floor he was residing at, his mind wandered towards the incident of last night.

I did say that I want Kushida to follow my every order, but to be honest, I can't find much use for her.....

To help me control the class, I have Horikita by my side and I can use Satou and Matsushita and improve them further to be central figures among the women of Class-D....

So, in a sense, Kushida is kind of useless. Well, at least I can keep her within my leash and extort information about other classes, since she is the only creature of our class, who for some reason really wants to be friends with everybody....

Which brings me to my next thought.... Why?

When I witnessed her real self, it came to my understanding that much like every single human being, Kushida also doesn't like hanging out with people 24/7 and holds grudges.... So why does she want to be everyone's friend?

That's kind of hypocritical even coming from a monster of contradiction such as myself.'

The door of the elevator then opened as Ayanokouji witnessed a kind of surprising yet weird sight in front of him.

There stood Horikita and Kushida... Whereas on one side, Kushida was continuously barraging her companion with a lot of small talk wearing a huge smile on her face, Horikita wore a grimace while tightly clenching her fists in frustration.

As soon as her eyes met with Ayanokouji's, all her frustration immediately vanished as she gave him a nod with a small smile on her face.

"Good morning Ayanokouji-kun. "

Kushida, behind her, immediately stiffened before composing herself as she greeted him with a smile on her face.

"Good morning Ayanokouji-kun. "

Completely ignoring the beige haired girl, Kiyotaka walked inside the elevator and stood in between Kushida and Horikita, immediately forming a bridge of gap between them, as Horikita released a sigh of relief.

"Good morning Horikita."

Deciding to spend the remaining time on the elevator in a comfortable silence, Horikita took out a small novel and started reading it, while Ayanokouji took slight peeks at it, trying to decipher the plot.

But alas, fate was cruel to him as he forgot the pest who was standing behind him.

Kushida poked his back with a fake pout on her face, trying to act cute.

"You didn't greet me, Ayanokouji-kun. "

"Don't want to waste too much energy talking with you. One word and you start babbling about random things. Sorry Slave 1 but I like my momentary peace."

"Pfft-"

Horikita slightly snorted to herself, before turning her attention towards her book, smiling to herself.

Unknown to her, Kushida immediately glared at Ayanokouji before forcing a smile on her face, as she changed the topic.

"A-ayanokouji-kun, you have a bedhead. Did you not get enough sleep?"

"Not really. I just had a nightmare, which was so scary, that I had to stay awake all night."

This gained the curiosity of both the girls as Horikita closed her book before looking towards her brown eyed friend.

"And what was the so-called 'scary' nightmare'? Would you like to elaborate?"

"Don't even remind me. In my nightmare, Kushida tied me to a chair and was constantly chanting at me, "*Ayanokouji-kun please be my friend*" ,over and over like it was some sort of ritual. It truly was a terrifying sight"

Unable to keep her stoic face anymore, Horikita started giggling to herself while Kushida wore a fake sad expression on her face.

"Why are you being so mean Ayanokouji-kun? I just want to talk with you..."

"And that's where the problem lies. 'You' want to talk with me, whereas 'I' don't want to talk with you. Also can you stop pestering Horikita? It's been 1 and a half month....I think you should get the idea by now that she wants nothing to do with you."

"He is absolutely correct. You and I are way too different Kushida-san. You trying to make friends with me, is in fact making my distaste towards you increase more and more with every interaction.

Also, you don't have to worry about me being alone.... I made some acquaintances with whom I enjoy my time way more than I do with you."

Kushida wore a frustrated expression on her face while sending a cold glare towards Kiyotaka. As soon as he noticed it, he slightly whistled to himself as he slightly patted his chest and gave Kushida a light nod.

Understanding his gesture, her glare vanished as Kushida forced a smile on her face, giving him a nod in response.

"That's right.... You are nothing but my puppet as of now....Carve this one thought in your mind."

•
•
•
•
•
•

"Thank you for helping me back there, Ayanokouji-kun."

"Don't worry about that. I noticed that everytime Kushida tried to engage in a conversation with you, your face looked uncomfortable. I tried to help you the best I can."

"And you did a remarkable job at that. I tried to shrug her off so many times but she just kept pestering me over and over. Hopefully this will be the end of that."

"I sure have some doubts about that."

As the both of them were walking towards their room, Kushida walked a little in front of them and was constantly taking glances towards Horikita and Ayanokouji.

"Also....just because you helped me...Don't think I forgot what you said just now."

"Huh? What do you mean by that?"

"It seems that it's your part time job looking at my face at any given time. I know that I am pretty beautiful, but aren't you giving yourself away too easily? Whenever my eyes go towards your direction, I constantly feel you stare filled with malice and corrupt intentions. It makes me fear for my chastity. "

Horikita slightly covered up her medium but premium chest with a distressed expression on her face.

"It seems that I am not the only one who can't keep my eyes towards myself. How do you know that I always stare at you? That means your eyes also go towards me, correct?"

All the smugness in Horikita's face disappeared as the girl lightly laughed to herself, probably finding a good enough excuse within that time frame.

However it seemed that Ayanokouji still had enough ammo in his AR as he fired his next shots towards Horikita.

"Also, don't even start with the corrupt thing. You were this close

to start drooling while looking at my shirtless body, you muscle fetishist."

Unable to retort any further, Horikita threw a light punch towards Ayanokouji's stomach wearing a blush on her face.

"Ow...Why are your muscles so hard? What do you ea-"

She immediately covered her mouth while wearing an expression filled with despair as she could notice the air of smugness revolving around her brown haired friend.

"Looks like the muscle specialist Horikita Suzune is back at it again... It seems like I should be the one fearing for my chastity, not you."

This time, Ayanokouji covered his chest trying to imitate a mock scared expression, however with his ever stoic face, it was quite a hilarious sight, eliciting a chuckle from Horikita.

"Both of you seem to have quite fun with each other don't you? Are you two dating?"

Kushida suddenly stopped on her tracks and walked along the same pace with the other two as she smiled at them.

'And here she comes, destroying the momentary peace, yet again.'

However before Kiyotaka could give her a response, Horikita seemed to already have a retaliation prepared within her sleeve.

"Just because a boy and a girl enjoy each other's company doesn't mean that they always have to date one another. If this is your way of thinking, then I find it quite disrespectful, Kushida-san. Also, leave us alone."

Horikita swiped her braids a little and immediately started walking away, before looking back towards Ayanokouji, who was still standing beside Kushida.

Noticing her confused expression, Kiyotaka gave her a nod of assurance to which she walked away.

"So, what do you want now bastard? You messed up my whole plan, you son of a bitch."

Kushida's ever cheerful voice was nowhere to be seen as she bit her fingernails in frustration.

"Now now, don't be feisty with me. Remember your position at the moment. Since it would take some time for the class to start, why don't you follow me for a second?"

"Not like I have a choice."

Kushida grumbled to herself before following Ayanokouji to wherever he was going.

-
-
-
-

-
-

"Ok Kushida, give me information about that guy."

As her eyes darted towards the person Kiyotaka pointed to, Kushida started giving him an explanation with a voice resembling that of a robot.

"Ryuuen Kakeru, Leader of Class-C. He rules the class only based on the factor of intimidation. He uses violence to maintain his control over Class-C. From what I've heard, he is cunning and stubborn."

Nodding to her words, Kiyotaka looked at the guy in slight curiosity.

"I see. So what you are saying is that he is kind of like a watered down version of me?"

"I don't know who is a bigger bastard. Him or you."

"Of course, it's me."

"You're saying as if you are proud of the fact that you are an asshole."

"Irony coming from someone like you."

"Fuck you, Ayanokouji."

"As I said the last time, I won't. You are not my type, Kushida."

"That's not what I meant...."

Kushida released a resigned sigh while slumping her shoulders.

"You are really annoying."

As they were talking, the magenta haired boy named Ryuuen's eyes darted towards them as he gave Ayanokouji a small smirk.

Trying to vex him, Ayanokouji slightly raised his hand and showed him a middle finger, to which Ryuuen chuckled to himself, before giving him a middle finger in response, as he walked away.

'And this is how assholes communicate with one another.'

-
-
-
-
-
-
-

As both of them were now walking towards their classroom, someone interrupted their stroll.

"Good morning Kushida-san~"

It was a voice of a girl. Her voice was soft yet it was radiating an aura of kindness and cheerfulness. Turning his head towards the person, Ayanokouji raised one of his eyebrows in curiosity.

She was extremely pretty and had beautiful strawberry blonde

hair. Her smile was infectious as she was waving towards Kushida. Behind her were a couple of girls, most probably her classmates smiling at Kushida as well.

"Good morning Ichinose-san. "

"Hmm, is this your boyfriend walking with you?"

Ichinose? It's my first time hearing her name....From the way the others are looking at her, it seems that she is quite the popular one.

Guess I need to use my Pokedex for this. Kushida, I choose you.'

He slightly leaned towards the beige haired girl and whispered in her ear.

"Introduce us to one another and make yourself useful."

Wearing a smile on her face, she started doing her job.

"Hehe not at all. This is Ayanokouji-kun. One of my classmates. Ayanokouji-kun, this is Ichinose Honami, the leader of Class-B. "

'Leader of Class-BInteresting.'

"Ayanokouji Kiyotaka. Nice to meet you."

Kiyotaka raised his hand towards her as she grabbed it softly.

"I'm Ichinose Honami from Class-B. Nice to meet you, Ayanokouji-kun. "

"Honami-chan, we are about to be late."

One of the girls behind her with short blonde hair tugged her sleeve, causing Ichinose to look at the time.

"Oh yeah, you are right. Goodbye Kushida-chan. Let's hang out later okay? You as well Ayanokouji-kun, Let's introduce ourselves properly next time."

'Yeah.....I'll pass on that.

Meeting 2 Class Leaders in a single day It was quite a satisfactory day, I must say. On first glance, Ichinose seems to have a lot of charisma, while Ryuen seems a little more interesting....

Now the only leader left is the Leader of Class-A.... I wonder just how impactful the presence of the so-called 'Best Class' will be...'

End of Chapter 29

Words : 2913

Author-kun was wearing an evil grin on his face as he introduced the Ichinose Honami in the story...

Author : *"He He He, one more waifu with big booba, added to the story, now what will you do now, Horikita Suzune? You are about to be dethroned~"*

Horikita on the other hand, pouted to herself for a second, before wearing a smug expression.

Horikita : *"Did you forget? Ayanokouji-kun prefers medium over big. Also personality plays a bigger role than body, and we both know that is a fact."*

Author : *"Personality huh?"*

With an evil expression on her face, Author snapped his finger as another Horikita out of nowhere stood in front of them.

She was wearing a small scowl to herself before noticing the stares the other two were giving to her.

Other Horikita's scowl got even bigger as she glared at them.

Other Horikita : *"Why are you staring at me!?"*

Author looked back towards the horrified Horikita.

Author : *"Personality huh... What do you want to say now?"*

Horikita : *"Please kill me."*

Chapter 30 : Midterms

As soon as the class ended, Ayanokouji looked towards his assistant in this quest and gave her a small nod, seeing which she stood up from her desk and made her way towards the podium.

Most of the class looked at her with a confused gaze as for the first month as she was not someone who took part in the Class matters. So seeing her walk towards the podium was certainly a confusing sight.

She slightly coughed in her hand before looking at the class with a small smile on her face.

"Excuse me guys, can all of you wait for a second and not leave the class?"

Sudou, who was already packing his bags ready to walk away, looked towards Ayanokouji for a second, before sitting down as soon as he understood his gesture.

'Sit down, Sudou.'

"What's the matter, Matsushita-san? Is it something important?"

Karuiwzawa looked at her with a questioning gaze towards which she simply nodded in response.

"Yeah. But before that, Ayanokouji-kun, I think it's your turn to take the stage."

"Ehhh?!"

Not letting the dumbos yell even further, Kiyotaka quickly stood up from his seat and walked towards the podium.

Matsushita sent him a small glance with gleaming eyes, as if she was trying to say, "My work here is done, now reward me."

'Thanks for your work Matsushita, if it was not for you, I would have to argue with the idiots for 5 more minutes, just to get my point across. It seems that having a beautiful girl by my side is really convenient. '

The moment the students of Class-D realised, instead of Matsushita, it was Ayanokouji who wanted them to stay, some of them froze up while a couple of students already prepared themselves to object to every single word of his.

"Before I say anything important, I would like to say something to a couple of students. Shinohara, Karuizawa, Ike, Miyamoto, Hondou, Kushida, Hirata, Yamauchi.....Don't speak a single word. If you don't talk back to me, this matter will end quicker than usual. Understood?"

The students whose names were dropped looked at him with a surprised gaze. Hirata let out a small troubled smile.

"As long as you are not expelling or beating someone to death, then I think no one will interrupt you."

"That's good to hear. Now.... Matsushita, be a dear and give everyone the papers, Okay?"

"Got it bossu."

Kiyotaka then handed out the papers to her, as Matsushita stood in front of the door with the stack of them in her hand.

Seeing the sight in front of them, the students of Class-D felt confused as well as intrigued, wanting to know what those papers are...

"These are the question papers of the previous years. Those test questions and the ones that will appear in the exam for tomorrow are most likely going to be identical or at least close to being identical..I advise everyone to memorise the answers for each subject."

Immediately their feeling of confusion was replaced with that of surprise, shock and joy...all mixed together.

"A-are you s-serious?"

"H-how did you get this?"

"We don't have to study anymore!!!"

Horikita's eyes widened for a second before she stood up from her seat and asked a pretty valid question, causing the chaos of the class to halt quickly.

"W-wait Ayanokouji-kun, will this not result in accusations of cheating?"

"You don't have anything to worry about. If the school truly believed it was cheating, it would have been explicitly stated in the rules. Also by the gestures of the third year I got these papers from, I came to a conclusion that, although buying test papers of previous years is a little surprising, this happened before nevertheless."

"However, this may prove ineffective. Isn't it true that old questions are no longer relevant? The test this year may have nothing to do with the previous one."

"Although the issues may not be identical, there will be some parallels. That was hinted at in the last mock exam."

Horikita slightly narrowed her eyes at him, as if trying to scrutinise every single word coming out of his mouth, all the while, the students of Class-D were watching their exchange with expressions of shock and surprise adorning their faces.

"Can you please elaborate further?"

"Sure. So where was I again?.....Right.After further investigation, I discovered that they were questions that second-and third-year

students were learning. To put it another way, they didn't think first-year students would be able to address those challenges.

Isn't it pointless to include problems that can't be solved? They're most likely there for reasons other than to put us to the test. What would happen if the problems on the mock exam were identical to those on previous mock exams?

I had that thought and I just wanted to make sure, whether my judgement is correct or not. That's why, I bought the old test papers from the third year, just to sate my curiosity and colour me surprised....Every single questions are similar to one another. Word by word."

Then as Horikita was about to sit down, Ayanokouji sent her a small glance to which she looked confused for a second.

His eyes then went towards defects for a second as he gave Horikita a small nod, as she understood what he was trying to say.

"Hey....why did you need to go so far and buy these question papers with your own points? You scored 100 on the test right? I'm sure, you can ace them without their help."

'Good job, Horikita. You hit the nail right on the head.'

"Well.....Even if I get good marks, our results are still going to be judged collectively, correct? So what's the point in myself getting 100, if the others fail?

That's why I'm giving all of you guys these papers, memorise the problems or solve them, whatever you do, just practice them. I'm sure you will get good marks by the end of it."

Giving him a small nod with a smile, Horikita elegantly sat down on her seat, as the defects of Class-D were looking at Ayanokouji with an expression filled with a little amount of guilt and remorse.

Sudou walked towards Matsushita with an excited smile on his face, as she gave him a gleaming smile as well.

As soon as he took the paper from her, he gave Kiyotaka a small bow.

"Thank you so much for that, Ayanokouji. I'm sure with this, I won't fail anymore."

However the response he received from the boy was a light bonk from Ayanokouji.

"Instead of thanking me, go and study. Also....you would have passed even without the papers...You did good during our Study sessions."

Giving him one last smile and a small wave, Sudou walked out of the room as other students started taking the question papers from Matsushita, all the while giving Ayanokouji their thanks.

Soon Koenji stood up from his seat and walked past Matsushita, causing her to give him a confused look.

"You don't want one, Koenji-kun?"

Koenji turned his head towards her and gave her a refreshing smile while flipping his blonde bangs.

"Don't worry about that pretty girl. I was just letting all of you cherish my presence for a bit longer than usual, as I was quite interested to see what beautiful plan Ayanokouji boy was about to produce. And my expectations were not ruined as this was indeed beautiful."

"Well thank you for your compliment Koen-"

"However it can never be as beautiful as a perfect existence like me, Hahahahaha!!!!"

With that, Koenji walked out of the door as his boisterous laugh was reverberating throughout the halls of the corridor.

Matsushita let out a troubled smile while Kiyotaka shrugged his shoulders, not knowing what to say after that.....flamboyant speech by Koenji.

After that, the other students also took the papers from her hands, while sending their thanks to Ayanokouji.

Ike even apologised to him in front of the whole class for constantly disrupting the class, to which Kiyotaka felt like there was still some hope for humanity.

'Mission one success. Defects tamed Level 1 complete.'

-
-
-
-
-
-
-

It was the day of midterms.... Most of the students of Class-D appeared relaxed and confident, appearing to be prepared for the incoming hurdle in front of them.

'Looks like they are pretty confident...As long as they don't cross the line of confidence and get overconfident, I guess that's acceptable.'

Even without the test papers, I chose the groups in such a way that they would get their study done as well as they won't have any problems regarding their chemistry....And looks like it worked. Good going, me.'

"Looks like you are quite happy with yourself, Ayanokouji-kun."

His neighbour gave him a smug smile while doing her last minute revision.

"Don't act so smug about it. Aren't you feeling satisfied as well seeing a dumb idiot like Satou looking so confident?"

"I heard that Ayanokouji-kun!!!!"

Seemingly ignoring the foxy girl's outburst, Horikita rubbed her

temples in nervousness.

"I hope she and Hasebe-san does well... otherwise all of our efforts will have no meaning."

"I feel you."

The door of the class opened as Chabashira-sensei walked inside the classroom with her usual stoic face. However as soon as her eyes met Kiyotaka's, she let out a smirk, feeling quite excited of what trick her student will show her in the exam.

Her eyes then went towards all of the students of Class-D as she scanned every single one of them, before letting out a small smile.

"No absences. Well, that's to be expected. This is the first hurdle of the oncoming hell, waiting for all of you in the future. Are you all ready?"

Chabashira-sensei let out an ominous smirk, creeping some of the students of Class-D.

'Sensei, why do you make things so troublesome?'

"Chabashira-sensei, everyone has been studying diligently for the past few weeks. No one in our class, I believe, will fail."

'That's quite a daring statement for someone who is quite oblivious of all the idiotic pests in this class... Well, at least his words of confidence are a good thing in this situation, so I shouldn't criticise him.'

"That's quite some confidence you got there Hirata. Let's see if you back up your words or whether your words fall into the category of arrogance."

"I'm sure that none of us will be forced to drop out due to the midterms. We'll prove it to you!"

"We'll see about that. Everyone of you should do your best in the exams. If every single one of you passes, you will get a reward."

"Reward?!"

"For now, don't think about it. First give the exams, got it?"

"Yes sensei."

Ayanokouji felt someone tapping his hand. He turned his head towards the person, as Horikita gave him a small smile.

"Let's do our best, Ayanokouji-kun."

"Yeah."

End of Chapter 30

Words : 2597

My bad for the slow update....I was busy binging all the Sidemen videos I missed this year xD.

Also this fic reached 80k already...100k is not too far, it seems.

Amyways, I hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya

Chapter 31 : Female

As soon as Kiyotaka got the test papers, he immediately scanned every single question to check whether there were any dissimilarities in the question or not.

'Score. Every single question is identical to those of the previous years. They are just arranged differently.'

He looked towards his black haired seatmate who gave him a victorious smile before she focused her attention towards her paper.

His eyes went towards the other students of Class-D as he could see smiles on their faces. Satou and Matsushita gave him a small thumbs up to which he nodded at them.

Seeing their interaction, a certain teacher looked at them with mild interest and curiosity. She soon darted her eyes away from Ayanokouji with a small smirk.

'I can't wait to see what kind of surprise you prepared for me, Ayanokouji.'

-
-
-
-
-
-

Soon, the midterm exams came to an end as the students formed different groups among them and were talking to one another.

Similarly, Sudou and Sotomura also joined the three girls who were surrounding Ayanokouji.

"How did you do, Sotomura?"

"It went perfectly, Ayanokouji-dono. I don't want to brag but I am pretty confident that I might get around 65 to 70."

"Good going Sotomura-kun~"

"Who would've known that you would finally grow a backbone? I'm so proud of you~"

With mock tears, Satou and Matsushita lightly slapped his back, causing the chubby boy to blush in embarrassment.

"How about you Sudou-kun? Are you feeling confident that you will pass?"

Hearing Horikita's question, Sudou leaned on the wall while

giving her a proud smirk.

"Hell yeah. Because of Ayanokouji's help, I easily understood the problems beforehand...

The test questions further helped me in the test. So I don't have anything to worry about."

"That's good to hear. Good job Sudou."

"Thanks."

"Ayanokouji-kun~"

Matsushita let out a sly smile before tiptoeing towards the boy as he sighed in annoyance understanding what she was planning to do.

'Just kill me.'

"You didn't forget our deal, did you?"

With her sly smile still present on her face, Matsushita leaned way too closely towards Ayanokouji as if she was about to kiss him, causing Kiyotaka to slightly widen his eyes.

'That....wasn't in the deal.'

"Stop!!!"

Satou immediately yelled as Horikita widened her eyes at shock. She pointed towards the both of them with slightly shaking arms, her eyes still not believing the sight in front of her.

"W-what are you doing, Matsushita-san?"

Matsushita sent her a smug smile, enjoying the jealousy radiating from Horikita.

"Oh? Did I not tell you guys? Ayanokouji-kun promised me that he would take me to a date once the exam is over. Isn't that right, Kiyotaka-kun~"

Satou gasped to herself.

"She used the sacred first name!! Holy shit."

Horikita composed herself before shooting daggers towards the brown haired boy, who

looked like he was mentally exhausted, however unknown to her, Ayanokouji already was planning to divert this awkward situation into a not so awkward one.

"Ayanokouji-kun, is what Matsushita saying true?"

"Hmm? What are you talking about?"

As soon as he feigned ignorance, Horikita's grip tightened over her desk as she started glaring at him.

"Don't feign ignorance in front of me. You know what I'm talking about."

"Actually I do not. I think it would be easier for me to understand if you explain it to me."

Horikita's ears turned red as she started fuming in anger and jealousy, the sight of which amused Ayanokouji to no end.

'At least I got to see such a masterpiece in front of me. For that, I

wouldn't mind forgiving you for causing chaos this time, Matsushita. '

"A-are you really planning on going on a date with her?"

"Of course he is. Isn't that right, Kiyotaka-kun~"

To further prove her point, Matsushita used both of her hands and tugged them around Ayanokouji's neck and hugged him at such a close distance, that he could smell the sweet scent of her shampoo.

'Is this rose? Or lavender? Unfortunately I don't know the difference between their smells, since the only shampoo I used in the WhiteRoom was milk based. Even after getting out of the facility, I didn't change my choice. It seems that old habits die hard.'

"She is not....exactly lying."

"I see."

With a meek voice, Horikita turned away from the sight, while wearing a frown on her face, seeing which Kiyotaka looked at her with confusion.

'Why does she sound so sad about it though? Does she think that me going on a date with Matsushita would ruin our friendship? That's quite problematic. The situation went out of hand, which is first for someone like me. I need to fix this, somehow.'

The only problematic thing here is that brain of Ayanokouji's which was as dense as mercury. He truly is the Ultimate harem protagonist.

"Horikita, the only reason I'm hanging out with Matsushita is because of a deal, since she helped me in acquiring the papers. That's all."

"B-but why did you go to Matsushita to ask for her help? Was I not enough?"

In a dramatic fashion, Horikita clutched her chest with her hand while the Leader of Class-D looked at her like she was nothing but a tool.

"What can I do? The moment I wanted to do my task, a certain birdie told me that Horikita Suzune was having her lunch with her nii-san. So I unfortunately had to choose the second option, which was Matsushita. "

"Gasp So I'm nothing but a stand-in for Horikita-san? Ayanokouji-kun, how could you?!"

With a drantic fashion, Matsushita dropped on her knees while cursing the gods.

"Kouji-kun, kouji-kun, what about me? Am I behind Matsushita-chan?"

With an excited smile on her face, Satou looked at him with expectancy, to which Kiyotaka hesitantly nodded to her, resulting in Satou squealing to herself.

Matsushita looked down at her friend like she was literal trash.

"You sound way too happy for someone who is a rebound for the replacement of the main waifu. Raise your own standards, sis."

Horikita's aura of depression vanished as she was smugly smiling to herself while looking down at Matsushita as if she was a mere peasant.

"Like the caring person I am, I see no problem letting you borrow Ayanokouji-kun for a day, Matsushita-san. However, immediately after your date, you must return him back to me."

'It seems like you got it wrong, Horikita. You are the one who is in my possession, not the other way around.'

"Whatever you say, your majesty. Now, Ayanokouji-kun let's go!!"

"Now?"

"Yup!! There's no better time."

Grabbing both of his hands, Matsushita put it close to her chest, as Ayanokouji's brain slightly tingled up, feeling the sensation of her breasts.

'Jeez, Kiyotaka. You are the Masterpiece of the White Room, who literally had to grope Kushida's massive bonkers last night. What are you getting flustered at? It's just some soft lumps of meat. That's right, compose yourself.'

As soon as both of them got up, Ayanokouji's eyes went towards Sudou and Sotomura who were for some reason watching Kiyotaka and the three girls in amusement while eating popcorn to themselves.

However the most surprising sight was that they were wearing some weird type of 3-D glasses where one side was green while the other was pink.

"Oi Sotomura, what's this you are wearing?"

Hearing his question, the other three girls gave them weirded looks, while Sotomura smirked to himself.

"Don't fret over it, Ayanokouji-dono. This, over here is an artefact I, the Demigod, have created. This is what I call, the Shoujo glasses."

'Shoujo?'

Sudou took off his glasses with an impressed smile on his face, while he was still smacking on those popcorn.

"What the hell, Sotomura? It was incredible. How did you make such a thing?"

"Hu hu hu, as a demigod, I must not reveal my secrets to you, Sudou-dono. However, I must say, I am truly pleased that you like my artefact.

"I wanna see, I wanna see!!!"

Without giving them a second, Satou snatched Sotomura's glasses

with a smile on her face while Hideo looked at his '*precious artefact*' with despair in his eyes.

"My baby!!!"

Horikita and Matsushita also stood in line behind Satou, curious about the weird glasses.

"Now, Ayanokouji-kun and Sudou-kun, act something. I wanna see whether this turns it into a Shoujo atmosphere or not?"

"What is Shoujo?"

Hearing the brown haired boy's question, all of them stood dumbfounded, before Sotomura crawled towards his legs with a smirk on his face.

"It seems like our leader is not cultured enough. Don't fret, Ayanokouji-dono, I'll soon make you a man of culture. "

"Ayanokouji-kun, Sudou-kun, Hurry up! Hurry up!!"

Satou was looking at them with shining eyes, unable to contain her excitement.

'Waku waku.'

"Yeah yeah. What should I do, Sudou?"

"Ehh, I don't know. Why don't you just grab my collar for a second? I think it would give her enough material. "

'Material? What material is he talking about? And why is Sotomura evilly chuckling to himself like a mad scientist?.'

"Very well."

Ayanokouji grabbed Sudou's collar and slightly pulled him upwards in the air, causing the redhead to slightly widen his eyes in shock.

"Whoa dude, how did you get this much strength? I'm pretty heavy, you know?"

"I learnt Piano and Calligraphy, so you can say my forearms are quite well developed."

"Ayanokouji-kun, everyone clearly knows you are lying, but you must limit the bullshit that comes out of your mouth. It's frankly unbelievable how easily you can spout the wildest lies with that straight face of yours."

Horikita give a condescending smile as she tugged her hair behind her ears.

"Oh plea-"

SPURRRRTTTTT!!!!!!!

'Okay....what the fuck?!'

Out of nowhere, Satou's nose bursted out blood as she squealed to herself with a big smile on her face.

"HOTTTT!!!!!"

.

.

•
•
•
And then she fell unconscious on the floor.

Horikita picked up the unconscious Satou and slightly put her head above her lap, causing Kiyotaka to look at the fainted girl with slightly envious eyes.

'That....seems very comfortable. I bet you are having a good time, Satou.'

"What did Satou-san see? I wanna know as well."

"Don't worry, Matsushita-san. My special artefact Shoujo glasses even has an option where it can record the illusion one can see. You can put on those glasses and relieve those....wonderful experiences."

With a bright smile on her face, Matsushita put on those glasses.....

•
•
•
•
•
And she fainted with a nosebleed as well.

"Do you want to try as well, Horikita-san?"

Hearing his question, Horikita let out a troubled smile while ruffling Satou's soft hair.

"As the only responsible female here, I would rather not indulge myself in these....rather dangerous things."

Getting slightly curious, Ayanokouji snatched the glasses and immediately put them over his head.

'Now let's see what the fuss is about...'

•
•
•
•
I wanna kill myself '

End of Chapter 31

Words : 2639

Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter.

Also, I got a cameo in AnanoDepritus's reaction fic. It's really good, so do check it out and get my guy to 900 followers as well...

My results for board exams are coming out this Friday, so I'm frankly really nervous. The pressure from my family about my score is not helping me either.

So let's pray that I do good, or I will never write a chapter again.

Just kidding lol.

Anyways that's all for this chap. See ya

Chapter 32 : Date

"Say Ayanokouji-kun, how is the food?"

Kiyotaka looked up towards his plate to see his brown haired date looking at him with expectance.

"It's pretty good, I must say. I was not expecting the price to be this low."

"Hmph. You should have not underestimated my investigation skills. I was one of the first persom who found this cafe with Satou-chan and Karuizawa-san."

With a confident tone in her voice, she puffed her chest out, seemingly proud of herself.

"I see."

"....."

"....."

"....."

"What's up?"

"Hmm? What do you mean?"

"Well...You got quiet all of a sudden. Did something happen?"

Matsushita slightly widened her eyes before giggling to herself.

"You don't hold back your words, huh? You are just as blunt as always."

"It's always better to be blunt about things, rather than having a miscommunication. "

"That's not wrong."

"So? What happened?"

With a small sigh, she gave him a beautiful smile.

"It's nothing. I was just feeling glad to have some genuine friends for the first time. It sounds weird, but I'm really glad that I joined this school."

"I see....You didn't have many friends before coming here?"

"Hmm? Not really."

The usually cheerful voice of Matsushita turned into a breathless whisper as she twirled her straw over her smoothie.

"Most of the people who tried to be friends with me, all wanted that liberty because of the power my father holds or because of my money. At first I didn't mind it, but later it can get quite annoying you know?"

"I can see that. So, what made you join this school? Any specific

reasons?"

"I guess I just wanted to start over a new leaf. Make new relationships with people who don't know about my social standing or my parents' money and just wanted a normal highschool life."

"How unfortunate for you. Instead of experiencing a normal high school life, you are now stuck in a death game where only the best class succeeds."

"But it's alright, I guess. As long as Ayanokouji-kun is our leader, we can win it."

"You sound way too confident. What achievement of mine gave you this kind of confidence?"

Matsushita twirled her bang behind her ear before slightly tilting her head at him.

"You got the skills, you got the smarts and you are rated the 2nd most handsome student in our first year Ikemen list. I think that gives me enough confidence."

"Ikemen list? What's that?"

"Let me show you."

With a quick pace, Matsushita took out her phone and shoved it near his face.

『 IKEMEN LIST : 1st Year 』

1st : Satonaka [class A]

2nd : Ayanokouji [class D]

3rd : Hirata [class D]

4th : Hashimoto [class A]

5th : Shibata [class B]

"This... seems very creepy to be honest."

"Hmm? What do you mean?"

"Imagine if it was the other way around and boys made a list about ranking other girls as well. How would you girls feel about that?"

"Oh? Then whoever started that ranking would be thrown into the '**Bastards who should Die**' list."

'They even made a list for that? It seems like these women have a lot of free time in their hands.'

"Then you guys can rank us, but us boys can't rank you? What is this hypocrisy?"

"Well, us girls make this rank so we can inspect you. But if the boys make this poll, it would be to perv on the hottest girls."

"What in the double standard is this? Society is terrifying."

"Though—"

Matsushita immediately wore a sly smile on her face as her face turned slightly pink.

"If it's you who is perving on me, then I wouldn't mind."

"You do realise that you're blushing correct? If you are too embarrassed to say something, then don't say it."

She instantly covered her face with her hands while chuckling to herself.

"I'll remember it bossu."

Nodding to her, Kiyotaka took one last look at the poll and slightly raised his eyebrows.

"Matsushita, who is this Satonaka guy? Does he come from an elite family like you or something?"

"What? You don't know him?"

"Was I supposed to?"

Her eyes widened at the revelation, before she coughed in her hands to compose herself.

"Well, what can I say? You sure are unique Kouji-kun. Satonaka-kun is a child celebrity. He starred in various movies and he is pretty good at acting.

Going along with his good looks, it was without a doubt that he would've snatched the throne for the hottest Ikemen of the first year."

"I see...What about me though? I don't think, I did anything influential to make me seem like a 'hot' guy."

"Did you forget? When we shared the photo of DripKouji in all it's glory in the school forum, a lot of the girls were smitten by your handsome features and your stoic face.

Some even call you, *'The Stoic Prince'*."

"That's...pretty cool."

"Here, take a look at this. I made a fanpage for you and it already has around 238 members. It seems that even our senpais couldn't resist your charm."

'You made a fanpage of me? Just how thirsty are you, woman?'

Kiyotaka looked at the fanpage and slightly widened his eyes at the sheer amount of popularity he has among the females.

'Is this what they call the power of god? Guess you did bless me with some good genes, old man.'

▮ **Fanpage of Ayanokouji Kiyotaka** ☆

— Created by *Elegant Lady (Matsushita Chiaki)*

"Cringe username."

"Oh please... I spent a lot of time and couldn't get any good names. Just focus your eyes on the page instead of criticising me, ok?

Here I am, increasing your popularity and giving you a small amount of power and authority over the females of this school, and

you are doing this. How rude."

Matsushita pouted her cheeks in annoyance while Ayanokouji looked at her with amusement in his eyes.

Name : *Ayanokouji Kiyotaka*

Class : *D*

Hotness Rating : *9.3/10 (175 students voted)*

Likes : *168*

Dislikes : *7*

Reviews :

Elegant Lady [Admin]

He seems pretty quiet and reserved at first, but once you get to know him better, he is actually a really good person and fun to be around.

EverFoxy

He is a great friend of mine and is a really funny guy, even if he doesn't mean to be. Also he is really blunt about what he likes and dislikes and doesn't shy away from telling you so, which in my opinion is worthy of praise.

"It seems that both you and Satou think quite highly of me. I'm touched."

"Your facial expression says otherwise. You look quiet creeped out, Kouji-kun."

"Not really, that's just how my face is. It's rather impressive to be honest, how so many people admire me. Makes me feel special.

But I must say it kinda weirds me out, how you guys are writing 'Reviews' about me as if I'm a product."

"Hehe~ don't worry. You'll get used to it."

While speaking to her, Kiyotaka was casually scrolling through the comments as one of them crossed his eyes.

SnowWhite

Ehh...seems interesting enough, but not that much to catch my attention.

You need to impress me more to get within ny radar, Junior-kun.

"Hehe...What the hell? Do you think Koenji-kun made a Catfish account to trick us into thinking he is a senior senpai? That seems like his way of speech."

"....That seems possible."

Interesting enough to get within your radar? Well, excuse me miss but I'd rather not. Your way of speech is enough to give me the creeps.'

Ayanokouji was brought back from his thoughts when he heard a

tiresome sigh coming from the mouth of his brown haired date.

"What's up?"

"It seems that Shinohara-san wants to defame you by anyway possible. Wanna see?"

"Not interested."

"Then I'll delete her comment right now. We don't need unnecessary toxicity, do we?"

"How and why did you guys even get Shinohara as your friend? That girl seems to hate everything except Hirata."

Matsushita chuckled at his words before taking a sip of her smoothie.

"It just happened on a whim. Karuizawa-san introduced her to us and we just got acquainted. Although her recent actions are making me doubt her credibility and intellect."

"Ouch. If I was Shinohara, I would've crawled inside a hole and not come out. Your words are too brutal, Matsushita. "

"Sorry~"

As Ayanokouji was about to give her back her phone, by mistake he clicked the home button and widened his eyes at the sight in his device.

"Matsushita, why do you have a picture of me as your wallpaper?"

With an inhumane speed, the phone was snatched away from his hands as the blue eyed maiden wore a panicked expression on her face.

"Hehehe.....you were...looking hot, so I couldn't resist myself."

'What is up with these females?'

"While I do appreciate your compliments, I do find it quite scary that you took a picture of me unnoticed by me and then are using it as your Wallpaper, only because I'm hot.

At this rate, I might even think you do dirty stuff in your room while thinking about me."

With a sarcastic tone of his voice, Kiyotaka ended his words, however his plain expression turned into a slightly worried one, when he saw the girl in front of him sweating bullets all the while wearing a blush on her face.

'Hold up. Wait a minute. Something isn't right...'

With slight caution as if he was approaching a wild animal, Kiyotaka uttered his next words out.

"Wait...Do you do that stuff thinking about me?"

He saw the girl widen her eyes as she twitched for a second, before she nervously chuckled to herself.

"Hehehe~ who knows?"

'Goddammit.'

End of Chapter 32

Words : 2501

My update schedule is fucked lmao. My bad.

It's just my C.A. Foundation course has started and it's 7 hours tuition everyday on top of my 1 and a half hour tuition for general.

I literally don't have any free time, it's crazy. But I'll still update as much as I can.

Anyways that's all for this chapter. I hope you enjoyed it. See ya.

Chapter 33 : Proud

"How was the date?"

Right as Ayanokouji was about to take a seat, his black haired seatmate threw him a glance mixed with irritation and jealousy? while fiddling with her pencil.

"It was pretty decent, I guess. Had a nice chat with Matsushita and came to the knowledge of a fan page of mine existing in the school forum."

"I see. I also unfortunately had the liberty of seeing that fanpage. It's literally everywhere in the forum. You seem to grow quite a fanbase."

"Yeah.....Being handsome has its perks it seems."

At his sarcastic comment, Horikita slightly raised her eyebrows while giving him a small smirk.

"Never took you as a narcissist. Guess we learn something new everyday."

"....It was a joke. I'm not Koenji."

"Oh really? Sometimes your voice gets so boring and dull that I can't seem to find the difference between a joke and a fact. I sincerely apologise for the misunderstanding. "

With a mocking bow, Horikita let out a small giggle as Ayanokouji's eyes twitched in annoyance.

"I thought you would like that. Your onii-san seems to like that trait of mine, you know?"

"And what does nii-san have to do with your boring voice?"

"What I'm trying to say is, a brocon like you always seems to replicate her own brother at a lot of things. So I thought both of you would have the same preference as well."

Immediately Horikita's hand went towards his waist trying to pinch it, but The Masterpiece of the White Room dodged her attack and instead flicked her fingers, causing her to reel it back with a frown on her face.

"I made lunch for you....But I won't give it to you, anymore."

With a cold annoyed voice, Horikita turned away from him as Ayanokouji mentally sighed to himself, while a veil of awkward silence was created between them.

"There we go. It seems like my words seem to get under her skin as she didn't like me comparing her with her brother. I'm sorry Horikita, but I

needed to say it to break you away from your brother's shell.....

Now...how should I calm this situation?'

Shrugging himself from his thoughts, Ayanokouji looked towards his seatmate who was scribbling something on her notebook, while glaring at it.

'Poor notebook-kun, suffering from the wrath of the Ice Queen all by itself.'

"Say Horikita, I was planning to cook all by myself for the first time. Do you want to be my guinea pig?"

"Huh?!"

Immediately she turned towards him with her glare still present on her face.

'Excellent move, me. Truly a masterpiece....at failing at every social interaction.'

"I want to cook something, and since you are my first friend, I would like to treat you. Do you want to eat something?"

Horikita narrowed her eyes at him while looking at him suspiciously before sighing to herself.

"What ulterior motive do you have? Even if your face is the same, its still way too suspicious how you are offering me food out of the blue."

"I would like to reconcile with you..And from what I've heard, food is the first step to get inside a girl's heart. "

The black haired maiden slightly blushed in embarrassment as her glare lessened.

"You are quite the saint, aren't you? Not even making any excuses and getting straight to the point."

"My father taught me to never lie, as it's a bad trait to have."

'Says the person who's entire life is based on a lie...'

"That's.... frankly not believable."

Kiyotaka slightly raised his eyebrows while allowing him to speak further.

"How so?"

"If your father wants you to be the future President, then shouldn't he train you to lie effortlessly and impactfully? Because pardon my knowledge but I think every single politician has to lie at some point to appease the public."

'I guess I never took any precaution of how smart Horikita can be....Sigh, how troublesome.'

"That's a good point, but you are missing one thing. The reason my father didn't train me to lie is because he believed that if he does so, then I would lie to get myself free from every situation I face, the consequences of which could be very heavy in the future.

So, I'm not exactly saying that I never lie. What I'm saying is, I

only lie when necessary."

'And that's 24/7.'

With an understanding expression, Horikita nodded to herself while hearing him attentively.

"I see. I think I get it now. I never fully got the grasp at this, but your life is pretty complicated, isn't it?"

'You have no idea.'

Sending him a small smirk, she took out her all time favourite book, **"Crime and Punishment"** and started rereading it, yet again.

'How many times will you read this book, woman? I already think you did it 4 times after joining this school...Maybe I should ask her to lend it to me in the future to see what the hype is about.'

"Say Ayanokouji-kun, when are you going on a date with Matsushita-san, **again?**"

Hearing her emphasis on the word again, Kiyotaka slightly tilted her head to look at her face.

Her face was as stoic as most of the time, yet, she was wearing a small frown.

"Is that jealousy I hear? Not going to lie, I wasn't expecting that from you."

"Jealousy? For what? I'm not jealous of anyone? I'm just asking a simple question. Don't even think for a second I was jealous of Matsushita-san. "

"We don't have any plans as of now. It was a one time thing. But maybe if you want, both of you can hang out with me toget-"

"Not interested."

'At least I tried.'

Kiyotaka sighed to himself before trying to make a mock sad expression, even though it failed.

"And here I was thinking about spending time with you....Alas...it seems Horikita only has her nii-san in her heart. "

Immediately she blushed in embarrassment while trying to glare at Ayanokouji.

"W-why are you bringing up nii-san again in this conversation? Also, don't try to play smart with me. You think I don't understand your motives?"

"...And what do you understand?"

"You are trying to act as if you are sad all the while trying to trap me into your harem. You sure are devious, Ayanokouji-kun. "

"Harem? What is that?"

Horikita's snarky attitude paused as she looked at her brown haired acquaintance with a blank gaze, before she breathed out in relief as she muttered to herself.

"Thank god Sotomura-kun didn't share those kinds of light novels to

you."

"It's nothing Ayanokouji-kun. It's nothing important. "

"That smile of yours sure seems suspicious. "

"Don't worry about it."

"Kouji-kun, Horikita-san, good morning~"

Matsushita and Satou soon surrounded their desk while their blonde haired friend sighed to herself before walking towards her seat.

"What's going on? Why is Horikita-san grumbling to herself?"

"Nothing important... Horikita was actually jealous of you. It seems that she also wants to go on a date with me."

"Really?"

Instinctively Matsushita looked towards the black haired girl with a smirk on her face as Horikita sent a glare towards Kiyotaka who ignored her completely, lost in his thoughts.

'What should I eat tonight?'

"Horikita-san, are you jealous of Matsushita-chan? Well, don't hide it. Truth to be told, I was also extremely jealous of her, when the news. But us girls gotta stick together so we can get a chance as well, right?"

Satou's kind of motivating words seemed to get a small smile from the black haired girl, however before she could lay out a response, the door of the classroom opened as Chabashira-sensei entered the room with her usual stoic face, causing the two girls to bid them goodbyes and went towards their seats .

Chabashira's face met Ayanokouji for a second as she sent him a small smile before walking towards the podium.

"Good morning everyone. You guys....sure seem excited."

"Chabashira-sensei, we were told that the results would be out today, but when exactly?"

Ike raised his hand to ask her the question with an unusually calm voice and a thoughtful expression on his face.

' Ever since the Question Paper incident, he seems to mellow down a little and is kind of acting like a decent human being. Nice character development Ike... Though there is still a lot for you to improve in the future, I'm looking forward to it.'

And it seems Horikita shared the same thought as him, as she looked at the usual perv of Class-D with a little surprise.

"Don't worry about the results Ike....I was planning to show it to you guys before lunch, but seeing your excited faces I changed my mind."

With a quick pace, she took out a poster and posted it on the board, before turning towards the students with a small smile on her face, seeing which they stared at her in shock, noticing the huge

difference between the usual Chabashira-sensei and this one.

"I must say, I was not expecting you guys to all do so well. Excellent job, I must say. Even with such a setback in the first month, it seems you guys are starting to learn. Sensei is proud of you."

Then as the marks are shown, everybody started cheering in happiness while the eyes of the leader of Class-D were drawn more towards the window as he saw a huge eagle preying on a pigeon.

There was no satisfaction or happiness within those eyes....it was even duller than usual. No one noticed this change, except for the person who was sitting right beside him, however she decided to stay quiet.

Who knows what's going on within his mind....

End of Chapter 33

Words : 2404

Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter....Somehow I was able to write the chapter within the small amount of free time I got. Hopefully next chapter will come out soon, but I'm not so sure.

Anyways we are close to 100k for this book, so let's complete this achievement.

Anyways thats all. See ya.

Chapter 34 : A Small Stroll

Season 2 : Chapter 1

I, Kiyotaka Ayanokouji, am a boring soul. My life outside the whiteroom is as boring and monotonous as one could imagine.

Everyday I wake up, brush my teeth, take a shit, eat my breakfast, wear my clothes.... And on to the adventure.

Sometimes I pass the time reading some books or playing some games that the Professor recommended to me. I mean the FPS Shooter games are fun and all, but it gets boring pretty quickly when you handle a gun and kill a lot of people with it in real life.

Was that too much information? Meh, who cares.

Anyways, today the Midterm Results are out. I'm not going to say that I'm excited or nervous, because frankly I'm feeling nothing. Even if this is the first hurdle of the school, it's just the one of many. If any students fail this one, then the only thing I need to do is put more pressure on them....

I sighed to myself while drinking my cup of coffee as I was looking outside the window.

'Leadership really is not my cup of tea.'

Taking control of the whole class and ascending them doesn't seem to be a tough task for someone like me, but it definitely is...

I don't have any leadership qualities compared to Horikita, Hirata and even Kushida. The only way I'm keeping the defects at check is by using force or by the method of Carrot and Stick.

I don't understand that man at all. If you want your son to be the leader of Japan in the future, then why not give him some Leadership or Social lessons? How can you be that dumb?

Or well....Maybe this is him making me learn how to control the masses and defeating other self proclaimed and experienced leaders by throwing me into a den of death battle... That seems smart to be honest.

With this, maybe I can taste the so-called defeat that I yearned beneath the deepest pits of my mind for such a long time...But I won't long for it now.

I have a lot of stuff to do before desiring defeat in someone else's hands.

Thinking of which, who has the capability to defeat me?

Maybe I can groom Horikita and develop her into someone as

capable or even more than her brother, Manabu Horikita and maybe I can get a challenge from her in the future.

The magenta haired guy who gave me the middle finger might also be competent....I didn't witness any feats from him, but I can sense that he would be a fierce adversary.

Class-B's Ichinose Honami is not a challenge for me now, but who knows, with her incredibly kind behaviour, maybe she also has a second side to herself like Kushida.

Our resident narcissist Koenji might also be the one to change my fathers beliefs, but I don't have much hope for him. He tries to minimise his work as much as he can so he can get free time.. To be honest, I don't find myself annoyed with that, since I would've done the same as him if I could get freedom as well.

'Speaking of Koenji, I have to take a different path to make him Co-operate with me.'

Soon, my cup of coffee came to an end as I slung my bag over my shoulders, ready to go to the sacred institution, awaiting for the judgement they pass on our pitiful souls...

□□□♡□□□

While walking through the relatively empty street, Kiyotaka took a chance to take a look at the beautiful scenery around him. The whole street was covered by small trees and bushes on both sides adjoining a beautiful park where a lot of children were playing with their parents, which caused him to be lost in his thought.

'Aside from students like us, how do ordinary people live in these premises? This is an extremely secure land under the supervision of the Government... Maybe these are the children of the numerous workers or sellers who reside here... That's the only possible explanation I can get.'

As he was continuing his stroll, a beautiful melodic voice cut off his steps.

"Ayanokouji-kun ~"

"Hmm?"

Ayanokouji turned his head towards the person to find none other than Ichinose Honami, the Leader of Class-B, waving at him.

For some reason she was jogging to try to catch up with him, though he doesn't know the reason behind it.

'We don't even know each other that much.'

Soon, she came in front of him trying to catch her breath before giving him a wide smile, causing the boy to further wallow in self confusion.

'Why are you smiling as if I'm an old friend of yours? We only conversed with one another maybe once.'

"Good morning Ayanokouji-kun. "

"Good morning to you as well, Ichinose. Normally I don't see you around going to school this early...Any special occasions?"

'Even though I didn't want to engage myself in any conversation with anyone at this time of the day, the chance is however too good to miss. This is literally the Leader of Class-B, a walking treasure of information.'

"Hehe~ It seems you are very observant. Normally I never enter the school early, but since today is the result of our midterms, I'm feeling pretty excited and nervous at the same time. Staying at home doesn't do much to discard that anxiety. Do you get what I'm saying?"

With an excellent manner, Ichinose continued the conversation comfortably like the Social Messiah she was.

'Truly fascinating. I wonder what would've happened if I could be like her and Kushida in this departmentActually let's not think that, it would be really weird. Me and Social in the same sentence can never go along.'

"Yes, I do understand. Although our feelings are only mutual about the nervous part, because I'm definitely not feeling excited at all."

Her cheery composure turned into a slightly worried one as she nodded her head at his words.

"That's understandable. The situation in Class-D is definitely not the best they could have hoped. Maybe getting 0 private points last month resulted in some of them losing hope completely? It's quite sad I must say"

'Yeah...you're wrong about that.'

"Exactly. And seeing one of my classmates already getting expelled and not enjoying their high school will definitely bring out a sour taste in my throat.

Who knows how many of them will get expelled today...Hopefully it stays within the one or two range. Any more of them and I don't think we would ever ascend from Class-D. "

Her eyebrows furrowed a little as she was trying to think of a good answer to give him while the boy was constantly pressing on a stress ball inside his pocket.

'Using pity on someone like her is definitely the best way to break through her walls.'

Also, who knew that buying that stress ball would be so useful? It's literally getting me through this conversation with her.'

"Frankly I don't have much to say about that but I do understand your pain, Ayanokouji-kun. All I can give you as advice is just move past this obstacle with a smile on your face.....now that I think about it, I've never seen you smile. Am I boring you?"

Ichinose slightly tilted her head while walking a little too close to him, causing Ayanokouji to take some steps back, causing her to stare at him in confusion.

'Is she oblivious of what she is doing? Or is she also trying to extract information from me by playing an act like Kushida?'

"Not at all. It's just that my face is always like this. My facial muscles are constricted to the point that I can't freely smile. It's kind of painful, because I can't freely express my emotions but whatever."

"I see...It must be annoying huh. I bet that many classmates of yours ignored you because they thought that you were too uninteresting or boring because of your stoic face..."

She blurted out those words without a second thought while wearing a smile on her face, causing an imaginary arrow to strike in Kiyotaka's ice cold heart.

'Ouch. It seems like this girl is not like Kushida. She says whatever she has in her mind....Although I must say, it definitely pained my heart hearing someone so ruthlessly obliterate my social life, all the while wearing a smile.'

"Ouch Ichinose."

Realising the situation, the pink haired girl blushed in embarrassment before wiggling her arms everywhere trying to correct herself.

"I-I don't mean it like that. Jeez, let me finish my words, will you? What I'm trying to say is most probably your classmates were way too judgemental about the lack of emotion on your face, and didn't even bother to converse with you.

They are missing out to be honest."

"Missing out? How so?"

"Of course they are missing out. You are a fun person to have a conversation with, Ayanokouji-kun. Even though you don't talk alot, your presence makes the situation kind of comfortable."

'If I was a normal person, I would have blushed and immediately proposed to you Ichinose.'

"But it seems that Kushida-san likes your presence as well. And given her social pull, I'm sure she will help you get some other friends."

Kiyotaka mentally laughed at her words while pressing the stress ball even harder than usual.

Ichinose then tiptoed a little in front of him before turning back towards him.

"Also, if you want to hang out with me, I don't mind at all being your friend. As I said, you are a fun person to be around, Ayanokouji-kun."

"Thanks for your words, Ichinose. I really appreciate it."

Ichinose just smiled at him before her eyes widened in realisation for a second as if she just remembered a very important thing.

"By the way Ayanokouji-kun, can you meet me at the park behind the class after school? I kind of need your help."

She twiddled her fingers while giving Kiyotaka a pitiful look, causing the boy to look away.

"What does she want? The park behind the school gets empty during the evening? In the books Sotomura gave me, the main character always confesses in this kind of atmosphere. Is the situation the same?"

"Clarify. What kind of help do you need?"

"I-its something personal. All I need is your presence and nothing more. Please help me this one time."

Sighing to himself, Kiyotaka pressed the stress ball so hard that it nearly bursted in his pockets.

"Fine. I'll help you just one time, but you'll owe me one."

Her face filled with sadness definitely glowed up as she smiled at him.

"Definitely. Thank you so much Ayanokouji-kun. "

"You're welcome. Let's get inside the school now."

"Yeah... All the best for your results."

"You too."

□□□♡□□□

"Why did I agree to help Ichinose, you may ask...It's quite simple. Unlike Kushida, to me it seems Ichinose is naturally kind and doesn't have to fake herself to have a huge social pool.

Also she seems to be a little naive, which I can turn into an advantage of mine if I can get into a close acquaintanceship with her.

Having the leader of the Second Best Class of the 1st Years owing me a favour is also too good of an opportunity to pass up.

Now that I have such a good start, let's just hope everything goes well in the Midterms and no one fails... '

End of Chapter 34

Words : 2837

Finally we got 100,000 reads in this book □□, This makes it the third book of mine reaching 100k reads all the while within 8 months of being an author. It's a very surreal feeling, so I thank you all so much for reading my stories.

Anyways, what do you guys think of the new cover? This is the cover of the story which I will use for Season 2 of Man on A Mission, which started from this chapter...

Also Speaking of Season 2, it seems I need to clarify something. Ayanokouji Doesn't Hold Back Season 2 will unfortunately not happen anymore....

I know some of you guys liked the book a lot, but I'm sorry. When I reread the book, there are just so many flaws that I can't seem to continue. Also I just don't have anything to write about it further.

I may put some chapters of 2nd Year or 3rd year, or even Post Graduation as one-shots. If you guys want it in that format, then let me know.

Anyways that's all for this chapter. Hope you guys enjoyed it. See ya.



Chapter 35 : Results

Season 2 : Chapter 2

After Chabashira-sensei announced the results

As the poster became visible to the students, their eyes almost popped out of their sockets in surprise and shock.

Not a single student including Ike, Yamauchi or Sudou got a single failing mark in all of their subjects.

What was even more surprising was that there were 8 rows of students who got full marks in all of their subjects, which included Ayanokouji, Horikita, Koenji, Hirata, Yukimura, Kushida, Matsushita, Mei-Yu Wang.

Kiyotaka gave a slightly impressed nod towards his brown haired date as she smiled in glee, before looking towards Horikita who was trying her best not to smile while looking at the results.

"Good work, Horikita."

His words caused her to look towards him, which ultimately resulted in her smiling at him.

"Good work to you as well. I'm sure with this our class will get the starting point in the Class Competition."

"There is no doubt about that. However we can't let this win get in our head otherwise it will be disastrous. "

"Ever so serious are you? Not that I dislike it since you are absolutely correct."

"Yesss!!!!"

"We did it!!!!"

All hell let loose in the room of Class-D as all the defects started cheering to themselves, relishing the fact that they survived and pushed through their first obstacle in this institution.

"Everybody silence."

One word from Chabashira-sensei herself and their cheers immediately stopped as the defects could sense a cold gaze from their leader from the corner of the room, the sight of which amused the Homeroom Teacher of Class-D to no end.

"It seems like your leader doesn't even need to spend any energy to calm you down anymore. How impressive, my dear students finally evolved from utter trash to mindless cattle. I wonder what the next stage will be..."

Her words definitely struck a chord among the students as they

glared at her, however her own glare caused them to look away.

"Now, don't act smart with me. I'm actually complimenting you guys. What I'm trying to say is instead of cheering to yourselves like the dumb idiots you are, give credit to the person because of whom you passed and listen to him in the future if you want to succeed further."

Ending her rant, Chabashira-sensei gave Ayanokouji a small nod with a very small smile on her face, as the other students swallowed their pride and sent him stares filled with gratitude.

'What a troublesome teacher. I know she said that she would help in whatever I want, but still how could you put me on a spot like this? You're going to make me feel embarrassed, you know? 🐼 🐼'

"Anyways congratulations for all the good results and thank you for your service Ayanokouji."

Begrudgingly the boy in question stood up from his seat before surveying each of the students with a cold impassive gaze causing them to look away.

" Good job on the exams, all of you."

Immediately they looked back at him with a smile, but as they were about to cheer once again,

"But—

Don't forget that this was just a one time thing. If I didn't get those papers, then best believe that we wouldn't have gotten such high marks right? Because in the end, defects can't work by themselves without the help of polished products."

His words seemed to provoke them as all their gratitude was close to disappearing, however Kiyotaka sensed a strong gaze coming from a certain person, causing him to look in that direction.

"Now, don't glare at me like that Hirata. I'm feeling scared because of you."

Matsushita and Satou chuckled at his words while Hirata's glare intensified further.

"I, in fact, we all appreciate your help a lot, Ayanokouji-kun. But is it really necessary for you to insult us at any given opportunity you get?"

"Yes."

"Why is that? What kind of sin did we cause to be disrespected by you every single time? This whole month, not a single one of our classmates created any trouble. So why are you doing this?"

"So, not creating any trouble and behaving like an actual human is praiseworthy? Oh wait, why am I asking? Of course it is praiseworthy for useless cattles like you. Very well, good job for acting like a normal species."

Not wanting to argue any further, Hirata sat down with a 'Tsk'

while Karuizawa glared at Kiyotaka, not liking how he shut down her 'Boyfriend'. However her glare seems to have no effect as the leader of Class-D didn't even spare a glance at her.

"If you guys want to prove me wrong and show me that you are actual human beings instead of '*mindless cattle*' as Chabashira-sensei said, then act like model students now. Prove me wrong.

Though we are quite behind Class-C, We finally entered the battlefield along with the other classes with this victory. So I hope we will continue this form and not cause any slip ups. Am I clear?"

".....Yes."

"Very well. That's all from me. Once again, good job, I guess."

Not speaking any further, The leader of Class-D walked towards his own seat among the cold silence his words had created.

'Even though I don't have the best Leadership qualities, I think this was an acceptable 2 months. I need to further improve myself in this criteria or it will be troublesome in the future.'

CLASS POINTS (after Midterms)

Class A : 1004

Class B : 663

Class C : 492

Class D : 94

"Say guys, want to hang out and party after school?"

With an excited gleam on her face, Satou looked towards Kiyotaka and Horikita all the while sitting on Horikita's desk, urking the girl.

"That's a good idea. However we need to do it after evening. I have my basketball practices."

"Don't worry about it, Sudou-kun. We will not start without you. After all the party is for you~"

"For me? What reason?"

With a confused expression on his face, the red head pointed towards himself as Matsushita puffed her cheeks trying to stop her laughter, while Satou had a mischievous glint in her eyes.

"After all, the most stupid boy of Class-D passed the midterms with flying colours and no failures. That deserves a party, don't you think?"

"Pfft-"

Not being able to control her laughter, both Matsushita and Satou started chuckling to themselves while Sudou grumbled to himself. However he got an unusual assistance from the resident black haired ice queen, who fixated her eyes on Satou with a small smirk.

"You are talking too much crap for someone whose highest score was 69. In terms of average, I think Sudou-kun has beaten you, Satou-san."

"Whattt?!"

"I testify as a witness as well. What Horikita said was absolutely true."

"You too Ayanokouji-kun!!! I thought we were friends."

'Friends? I've never seen you guys as my friends. All humans are nothing but too-'

He was snapped out of his thoughts when he felt his seatmate pinch him with a frown on her face.

"....What?"

"I felt like you just thought of something very rude. That's why I felt the need to pinch you."

'What? How did she kn-'

This time he couldn't continue his thought as he was bonked by Matsushita who was wearing a small smirk. When she met his eyes, there was only one response from her.

"This was my revenge for all the attacks my head has suffered because of you. Don't mind Kouji-kun."

'You little-'

With an almost inhumane speed both of his hands went towards Horikita and Matsushita as both of them flinched at the sudden speed and closed their eyes.

"Ow!!! /Ouch."

Ayanokouji flicked both of their foreheads with his finger really hard, causing it to turn red.

Satou who was also readying her arms to give Kiyotaka a good ol' smack, receded her arms back, not wanting to suffer the wrath of annoyedkouji who was looking at her, as if trying to taunt her by saying **'I dare you, Do it.'**

'Hehe~ I cherish my life a lot unlike two certain dumbos. Sorry but I will choose the peace route with you, Ayanokouji-kun. '

Raising her hands in surrender, Satou let out a weak laugh as both the girls were pouting at the Leader of Class-D with small tears welling up inside their eyes.

"Why did you have to flick me so hard?"

"You started this. Don't try to victimise yourself, MatsuSHITa."

His emphasis on that specific part of her name caused the girl to go berserk in anger, by making her remember some annoying childhood memories.

"I'll Kill you Kouji-kun!!!"

"Yeah. Good luck with that."

Right before she could pounce on the boy, Sudou held her back with a troubled smile on his face.

"Let me go, You red Shit head!!!! I'll kill that emotionless bastard."

"Yeah...no."

Ignoring the chaos of his group, Kiyotaka checked the time and stood up from his chair causing the others to look at him.

"I need to go for a meeting. Notify me in whose room we are hanging out."

"Wait, who are you meeting with?"

Hearing Horikita's question, he looked back to see all of them looking at him curiously, even Matsushita who was perfectly calm, contrasting her crazy activities 10 seconds ago.

However one name caused all the girl's calm behaviour to shatter in pieces.

"Ichinose Honami."

All three of them stood stiff like rocks while Sudou and Professor let out a small smirk, seeing their reaction, while uttering the same word together.

"Another one to the list. "

End of Chapter 35

Words : 2434

Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter.

Also, the new trailer of COTE finally made me excited for the show, unlike the first one. Guess, the studio are ready to redeem their mistakes in Season 1.

They even fixed Mashima-Sensei ☐☐.

Anyways that's all for this chapter. See ya.

☐☐☐♡☐☐☐

Chapter 36 : Advice

Season 2 : Chapter 3

"Good evening Ayanokouji-kun. "

With a small smile on her face, Ichinose walked towards Kiyotaka who was sitting on a bench scrolling through his phone, causing him to look up from his device in order to greet her.

"Good evening to you as well, Ichinose. So what seems to be the problem? Mind enlightening me?"

Hearing his straight to the point question, she let out a troubled chuckle, seemingly a little hesitant to herself.

However she decided to remain silent for a bit, making Kiyotaka sigh to himself.

"Ichinose, I came here because you asked me for help. I think it's best for both of us if you could inform me about your problem."

His voice was the usual however if one carefully deduces his tone, they could clearly hear the tiredness behind it.

"A-ah I'm sorry for troubling you, Ayanokouji-kun. Actually the matter is...."

"The matter is...."

Kiyotaka slightly tilted his head in curiosity as Ichinose was still stammering to herself.

'Am I really getting confessed? She has the shy high school girl act going on at full throttle...'

But we don't even know each other that well. Did she fall in love with me at first sight or something?"

However his predictions or fantasies, one may judge it however they want, was broken off by her suddenly yelling at his ears.

"I'm getting confessed here."

'Huh?'

"Huh?"

Feeling confused, he looked around the area finding no one aside from himself and Ichinose Honami.

"What are you talking about? I'm not confessing to you. You're confusing me."

"No no. Listen to me. Today one of my classmates gave me a love letter and told me to meet here. Look at this."

She quickly took out the letter and handed it to her accomplice,

who looked as confused as ever, still he took it and surveyed the letter.

'Hmm...Judging by the way it is written and the excessive and pretty decorations, I doubt any boy would have the patience, and if they do, then my god, they are madly in love with Ichinose.'

"I still don't understand. What does this have to do with me?"

"Uhhmm, she is a very close friend of mine and I don't want to reject her face to face, so could you pr-"

"Pretend to be your boyfriend?"

"Exactly."

"Why not someone else? I bet there are a lot of other boys who would love to be your fake boyfriend. "

"Umm, I just feel more comfortable with you than any other boys, excluding my classmates, whom I can't involve in this matter."

'That makes sense. If she decides to fake a relationship with a boy from her class, then they have to act lovey dovey 24/7 in front of the girl, which would be really troublesome.'

"I see... I'm sorry Ichinose but I'm not doing that."

Hearing an immediate rejection, she lowered her head for a second before looking back at him with a small smile.

"Yeah, I understand why you don't want to be involved. I apologise for putting you in such a situation, Ayanokouji-kun. "

"No..That's not the main point. In my opinion the way you are going with this situation is completely wrong, Ichinose."

Looking at him confused, Ichinose remained quiet, wanting to hear his explanation further.

"This girl spent all this time writing this letter for you and is mustering all her courage just to confess to you.

In this world, where the society looks down upon humans who are in love with the same sex, she still overcame it just to let you know about her feelings.

Don't you think you are spitting right into all her efforts just because you don't want to hurt her?"

'Ironic coming from someone like me.'

Not seeming to find an answer, Ichinose looked down in remorse while Kiyotaka continued.

"Also don't you think it will hurt her even more when it finally gets revealed that we weren't actually dating and you were lying to her all this time?"

"I-I.."

"I understand what you are coming from Ichinose. But I don't think it's correct. Of course it's my opinion after all. You may do whatever you want, but please don't include me."

Ichinose's eyes didn't move away from the ground as she kept

quiet to herself, contemplating his words. Not wanting to further include himself in such an awkward situation, Ayanokouji stuffed his hands inside his pockets and turned around from her.

"You are right."

As soon as he was about to walk away from her, Ichinose spoke out loud, causing him to tilt his head back at her.

She was smiling sadly, as if she was ashamed of herself.

"I was blind to not notice it. I was so focused on not wanting to hurt her and preserve our friendship that I didn't think of all the consequences one lie could create. I'm extremely sorry for being so naive, Ayanokouji-kun. Thank you for opening my eyes."

Ehh, I didn't do much. After reading too many romance novels, this whole situation brought the romantic side out of me.

Guess I should call it Lovekouji.'

"It's all right, don't worry about it. Look over there, guess your date is here."

Looking towards the direction he pointed, they met the sight of a girl with short blonde hair, who was jogging towards their direction.

"Good luck, Ichinose."

Giving a small pat on her shoulder, he walked away from the scene after the strawberry blonde haired girl sent him a reassuring smile.

"Thanks for that Ayanokouji-kun. I'll owe you a favour."

"That sounds good."

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

Tchinose Honami, the Leader of Class-B. A kind hearted girl with extreme charisma and social pull. However it seems she is too kindhearted for her own good. If she overcomes that obstacle though, she could be a formidable opponent for me to pass the time, after I get my class to the top.'

□□□♡□□□

Ayanokouji POV

While washing the dishes, I took one last look at my phone before closing it and continuing my work.

No one said anything about hanging out in the group chat.

Oh well, not that I mind. It means I get to have some free time for myself, which I seemed to be not getting ever since my momentary freedom.

I mean ruling over a class, looking after your too- I mean 'friends' and overcoming any adversities that the school throws at you anytime gets pretty tiring.

Sometimes it's best to just lay down, look at the ceiling and just wonder to yourself.

'How did I get so lucky?'

For fifteen years, the only thing surrounding me was white walls, mentally unstable students, psychopathic instructors and my father.

Just calling him that makes me grimace.

It's not that I hate him or anything, it just feels weird to know that the person who put you through all that torture and tribulations, all for his selfish gains was none other than your own father.

I bet most of the candidates of the White Room hate me for that, if they are even alive.

Not that it matters to me what others think. But I can't help but think to myself....

Why did he let me experience this temporary freedom? If he wanted me to polish my leadership skills, then he could've just added one more subject to the 100s of them that was on my daily routine.

Did he finally grow a heart and wanted to redeem for his act-

Wait, who am I kidding? That's my own father. I should know him more than anyone.

Us, Ayanokouji's are soulless from the deepest pits of our heart.

I'm sure there is some specific reason because of which he let me attend this place. He must be planning some twisted fantasy regarding me, in his head....

After washing the dishes, I layed on my bed and checked my device one more time, before dropping it on the bed while sighing to myself.

"The most I can do is make the best out of these three years. Who knows what the future holds for me...."

That man promised me lifetime freedom if I survive this battle, and if he doesn't stay true to his word....

I'll make sure he suffers the consequence of lying to me.

End of Chapter 36

Words : 2040

I'm on a roll these last couple days. I finally got some breaks from my tuition and the excitement of Season 2 is resulting in me writing chapters this quickly. Hopefully it's not rushed.

Anyways that's all for this one. See ya.

☐☐☐💖☐☐☐

☐☐☐💖☐☐☐

Chapter 37 : Answers

Season 2 : Chapter 4

As Ayanokouji was slightly nodding off to sleep, the bell to his dorm room rang all of a sudden.

'Who is it now?'

Releasing a small sigh and cracking his muscles, he stood up from his bed and made his way towards the door. Before opening it, he looked through the peephole to register who the person disturbing his sleep was...

And it was none other than Horikita.

Not wanting to make her stand too long, he opened the door, immediately being greeted with the warmth of the outside in comparison to the air conditioner.

Horikita, who was in her school outfit, was sweating from her forehead and was looking a little tired. However her lips spread out in a very thin smile when she saw him opening the door.

"Good evening, Ayanokouji-kun."

"Good evening Horikita. Please come inside."

"Thanks for having me."

As she went inside, he could smell her body odour mixed with the scent of her perfume and sweat.

'Judging from her worn out expression and her smell, it seems like she was outside all this time. I wonder what she was doing.'

As Horikita sat down on his bed, Kiyotaka walked towards his kitchen to make her some beverage.

"Horikita, coffee, tea or cold drink?"

"Cold Drink please."

Nodding to her words, he brought two glasses and a bottle of Fanta inside the room.

"So...what happened with everyone? I thought I told you guys to notify me in the group chat."

Immediately she facepalmed at his words and rubbed her temples in annoyance.

"Don't even get me started. Just after you left, Sotomura-kun remembered that an anime he loves will start airing today."

Matsushita-san and Satou-san were raided by the girls of our Class and got forced to party with them and when the two of them noticed me, they forcefully brought me along with them as well.

On our way, we found Sudou-kun who seemed to be in a pretty bad mood for some reason. He didn't say anything to us and left quietly."

While she was saying this, her grip over the glass gradually increased as Kiyotaka looked at her with amusement.

"So, how did it feel for the antisocial, ice queen of Class-D to finally let go of that stupid book and touch some grass?"

Her eyes twitched in annoyance as she gave him a very 'peaceful' smile.

"If I wasn't wearing a skirt at the moment, I would've dropkicked you into oblivion."

"I would like to see you try."

Sighing to herself she lied down on his pillow for a second, before looking back at him with an embarrassed reaction.

"You...don't mind, do you?"

"500 Private points for 1 minute is the charge. Pay it or get away from my pillow."

Immediately his face met the soft sensation of the pillow which was thrown at him with full force by a pouting Horikita.

"I'm kidding. Here you go, I don't mind."

"Thanks. I'm way too tired."

"Why didn't you go to your room and take a nap then?"

"W-well I just thought that since we couldn't hang out, you would feel lonely.... And these last few days, we are not getting much time to spend together. So...."

She barely whispered out the words while hiding her face in his pillows as Kiyotaka looked at her with a slightly different gaze than usual.

"I see. You are certainly right about that. I was feeling a little lonely, so I do appreciate your presence Horikita."

"You do?"

Her head perked up from his pillows as he noticed her ears were slightly red.

"Yes I do. So mind sharing your so-called hellish experience with the girls?"

"Hah....."

With a sigh, she started kicking her legs back and forth in frustration.

"If it weren't for Matsushita-san and Satou-san, I would've gone insane."

I wanted to really slap Shinohara-san yet again but I somehow controlled myself.

Karuizawa-san was so obnoxious and bossy, it was nearly making me puke in annoyance. And, want to know something even more

frustrating? Her bossy act felt really fake for some reason."

Kiyotaka's ears immediately perked up at this revelation as he looked at the lying figure of his black haired 'friend' with a serious gaze.

"What do you mean by fake? Explain."

"Judging by the way you speak and act with Kushida-san, I guess you already figured out her other side, correct?"

'Horikita herself talking about Kushida? How fascinating. This is too good of a chance to miss. I will be getting some answers by tonight.'

"Yes, I already figured it out one night when I found her cursing all of us to death. It was quite entertaining, I must say."

Hearing his words, Horikita let out a dry chuckle while twirling her braids.

"Karuizawa-san in my opinion was kind of like the opposite of Kushida-san. Sometimes I felt like she was just purposefully being a 'bitch'. Please pardon my crude language."

"I see. That's certainly weird. Can you give me some examples?"

"Umm, she was trying to take the lead in any conversation that was taking place, and when she wasn't getting any importance, she was kind of lashing out, like grumbling to herself, groaning in annoyance and blabbering out various harsh words.

Both her and Shinohara-san were not happy with my presence and they didn't even attempt to hide their distaste, as they tried to bully me."

"How pitiful. I would've loved seeing their faces filled with despair when they realised their mistake of bullying the one and only Horikita Suzune."

"Yes. Which brings me to my next point. As soon as I glared at Karuizawa in annoyance, it was as if all her bravado disappeared as she meekly looked away from me. After that she ignored me and didn't even meet my eyes. It was like she was an entirely different person."

'Karuizawa Kei... At first I thought of her as nothing but Hirata's lapdog and the voice of the group of bitches of Class-D. Guess there's a little more behind that shallow mask she puts on.'

"I see. Keep a close eye on her, Horikita. If we find any of her weaknesses, then it would be easier to have a leash on her."

"Very well. Although I'm not a huge fan of underhanded work, I understand why you are doing this. I'll keep an eye on her and notify you."

With that she sat up on the bed while her eyes surveyed Ayanokouji up and down.

"Ayanokouji-kun...why are you still wearing your uniform?"

"Well....the talk with Ichinose was pretty tiring, so I laid down on

my bed after returning before drifting into sleep, until you woke me up."

"O-oh I'm sorry for that. I shouldn't have come to your room late at night."

"No it's alright. Don't apologise. Because of you my sleep schedule is not ruined. Stay here for a bit, I'll get changed. You can watch the TV if you want."

"No, I'm alright. I'll just lie over here. Go get changed."

Giving her one final nod, Ayanokouji went towards the bathroom leaving her all alone in his room.

□□□♡□□□

Horikita was lying on my bed reading a book while Ayanokouji was sitting on it while scrolling through his phone.

For him, It felt kind of weird that a prim and proper girl like Horikita was nonchalantly putting herself in such a vulnerable position in front of a boy, all the while wearing a short skirt and black stockings.

'She really trusts me that much huh? Well, I'll try my best to not break that trust of hers. But, I guess what I'm about to do now, may cause that bridge of trust between us to crack.'

"Say, Horikita... I want to ask you a personal question, if you don't mind."

Immediately she turned around and slightly narrowed her eyes at him in confusion.

"What is it, Ayanokouji-kun?"

"You knew Kushida before joining this school, correct?"

Immediately her air of nonchalance disappeared as Horikita stiffened for a second, before clenching her fists.

"Yes.... I do. What about it?"

There was a small sense of hostility coming out of her words as if she was on edge.

"When I found Kushida's real self, I heard some quite interesting things coming out of her mouth."

Horikita's eyes widened for a second, as if she already knew what the next words were. Tears welled up in her eyes as she glared at Ayanokouji with a lot of hostility.

"Some of them also includes you."

"Stop it Ayanokouji-kun. I don't want to listen."

"I'm sorry but I'll make you listen regardless of your wishes."

With that he took out his phone and played a certain recording which made Horikuta's blood run cold.

"Just wait, you slut!!! I'll give you the true heavenly experience you are oh so familiar with!! Just die, you stupid bitch!! Or I'll have to push

you to death myself, yet again, which I failed last time. But this time I won't!!!!"

Closing the device, Kiyotaka looked at her with his cold, empty eyes.

"What does she mean by this Horikita? Care to explain?"

"I just said I don't want to. I'm leaving. Thanks for having me."

Immediately she stood up with a small frown on her face as she took her bag, but immediately her hand was grabbed by the boy who yanked her by the arm and effortlessly threw her on the bed, causing her to widen her eyes.

"I don't think I've given you the permission to leave just yet."

"W-what are you doi-mpph?!"

Her mouth was immediately covered by his left hand as Kiyotaka got on top of the lying figure of Horikita who was trying to yell, while trying to resist the best she could.

"Horikita. I asked you a question and you have to answer it to me. Do you understand?"

As Ayanokouji held both of her hands over her head with his other hand, she tried to kick her way out of it all the while tears of helplessness streamed down from her eyes.

To stop her from kicking him, Kiyotaka put both of her legs over his hips while pushing her down with his pelvis, all the while glaring at her with his cold, impassive eyes... The ones she saw quite a lot of times, but this was the first time directed at her.

Still, not giving up, she started to bite the hand that was covering her face, yet it didn't budge away from its place.

'Our position may seem taboo and even to some point sexual, but both of our minds are filled with too much hateful and dark thoughts to even think of unnecessary stuff like that.'

All I want now is answers and Horikita Suzune will give them to me, no matter what.... It doesn't matter how I get the answers from her....

Because once I get them, I'll finally be able to break her from these shackles and free herself... In order to win, I need to do this....That's all that matters.'

End of Chapter 37

Words : 2663

First conflict between Suzune and Kiyo....Well, conflict is a big word. It's more like an interrogation which was pending for all this time, that we knew was bound to happen.

Instead of going to the aggressor, Kiyo chose to ask the victim herself since she would be much more vulnerable in this situation.

Anyways, what do you guys think happened between Horikita and Kushida? Give me your theories.

That's all for this chapter. I hope you guys enjoyed it. See ya.

□□□^୨୨୨୨୨୨୨୨୨

Chapter 38 : Her Past

Season 2 : Chapter 5

".....Why are you doing this, Ayanokouji-kun?"

Her voice turned meek and helpless as her makeup was ruined because of the tear stains.

"All I want is some answers from you, Horikita. Just imagine, if you don't tell me your matter with Kushida and why is she like this....and if then she does something that harms this class....whose fault do you think that will be?"

"W-who?"

"You.

If you don't tell me the matter and stay silent, then how will I know the atrocities Kushida can commit if she wants to get rid of someone?

Don't you understand Horikita? She said that she wanted to **Kill** you."

Horikita shivered in fear as Kiyotaka let go of both of her hands, letting them fall on her sides.

"What do you think will happen, when because of the lack of my presence, she in fact does the job and kills you?

What do you think your friends will feel like?

What do you think your parents will feel like?

What do you think your **nii-san** will feel like?"

She crawled up into herself and started sobbing to herself while Ayanokouji looked at her shrinking figure with satisfaction before forcing her to look him in the eye.

"Listen to me, Horikita. The most common way people give up their power is by thinking they don't have any....Are you weak?

Do you think Kushida is stronger than you?"

"N-no."

"Then why are you acting like this? Why do you fear her? Is this truly the sister of the Student Council President? How pitiful can you be?"

"P-please stop it Ayanokouji-kun....What do you gain by doing this?"

"A girl who has nothing but social power is enough to scare someone like you. How disgusting."

"Shut up, you know nothing about her."

"And what do I need to know about a two faced girl whose only advantage is to wear a stupid mask."

"Shut up Ayanokouji-kun!!! What do you know nothing about her to make such flimsy conclusions?!!"

With a loud shriek, she sat up and fiercely glared at the boy in front of her.

"Nothing. That's why I'm asking you...Why are you scared of what Kushida can do? Tell me your story, Horikita."

"....."

"Kushida..... used to be my best friend."

□□□♡□□□

"Hello, I'm Kushida Kikyou. What's your name?"

I looked at her for a second before moving my eyes away from her. 'She seems annoying.'

However she sat right beside my empty seat before grabbing my book away from me.

"What are you reading?"

"Give it back."

"Not until you introduce me."

"Tch. Horikita Suzune is my name. Now give me my book back."

Immediately I was met with a gleaming smile from her as if it was the warmth of the sun radiating from her.

"Nice to meet you, Horikita-san."

How disgusting.

□□□♡□□□

"What are you doing all alone?"

Sigh...Every single day she has to bother me.

"Can't you leave me alone?"

"But...won't you be sad?"

"I would be much happier being alone than being disturbed by you every single day."

I didn't even spare a glance at her but suddenly I heard the sound of sobbing. I looked in the direction and was met with an unusual sight.

"How can you be so mean, Horikita-san?"

What? You are the one annoying me. How am I mean?

However suddenly I was met with the scornful gazes of the entire class because I made their class princess sad.

How disgusting. It makes me want to puke.

□□□♡□□□

"Suzune, I heard you made one of your classmates cry for no reason? Is that true?"

What? How can this even reach nii-san's ears? How did this matter escalate so much?

"Y-yes. She was constantly invading my private space, that's why I

asked her to leave me alone."

Even if I wanted to, I couldn't bring out a lie when nii-san was looking at me with that cold glare of his.

Hearing my answer he sighed to himself before looking at me with disappointment.

"You are mistaking independence and freedom with solitude Suzune. I expect you to apologise to her tomorrow and make up with her."

W-what?

"N-no I can't do that."

My pride doesn't allow me to bow down in front of others.

"Why? Do you think you are so superior that you can't even say sorry? I didn't think my little sister would be this foolish."

With that nii-san left me alone and walked away while I dropped to my knees and looked at the ground.

'Why should I say sorry? I didn't even do anything wrong....'

In Spite of that I swallowed my pride and apologised to her which in fact forced me to be her friend.

After spending a lot of time with her, I soon didn't start to mind the presence of Kushida-san...Even though she was way too eccentric, I was getting used to her personality.

We engaged in conversations with each other regularly where she told me various things, like how most boys in my class were infatuated with my looks, but were too scared to ask me out because of my personality.

Not that I cared about what those pitiful insects thought anyway.....

After being friends with Kushida-san for 2 years, I soon let go of the initial edge I had towards her and started freely talking to her.

One time my mouth slipped as I revealed that I loved nii-san the most out of anyone in this world.

I didn't mean it like that, but still it was quite embarrassing. However, surprisingly, she didn't chuckle or laugh at me... Instead she just smiled and looked away while nodding to herself...

Something which I found very odd at that time, but didn't say anything... Looking back at it now, I definitely should've said something.

I also learned at that time that Kushida had a huge crush on one of our classmates Masao Ikitani. He was a very handsome boy with a charming personality, however I felt his gaze drawing over to me various times, to which I felt really creeped out.

During that time, a lot of boys confessed to me, to which I brutally turned them down and insulted them, causing many of those weaklings to tear up from my words.

Of course, many of the girls were not happy that I was breaking their crush's hearts but since I was friends with Kushida-san, they didn't do anything.

Nii-san was not happy with my behaviour and he warned me that Kushida was not a good influence, but my antisocial self didn't find anyone worthy to be my friend other than her.

Then everything changed with one incident. Right after nii-san left the Middle School and we got promoted to the 3rd Year, Ikitani-kun proposed to me.

"Would you like to go out with me?"

I noticed Kushida-san widening her eyes before glaring at me all of a sudden...I knew that she had a crush on him, but being jealous of me this quickly? I never expected that.

"No I won't. Get lost. You are disgusting."

All the students gasped as Ikitani looked at me heartbroken before giving me a resigned smile.

"That's ok....Thanks for your answer, Horikita-san. "

The next day it was revealed that he changed schools after that incident.

'Just because he was rejected, he did all of that. How weak can someone be?'

However, that was when most of the girls started bullying me....

'Unintentionally' pushing me when I was eating, pouring water over my head, punching me, slapping me, pulling my hair, thumbtacks under my chair, red spider lily on my desk, nothing was missed.

During that time, Kushida-san didn't even spare a glance at me or tried to help me. Not even any of the boys did anything, since all of them were insulted by me as well...

It was at that moment I realised what nii-san meant by his words...

'You are mistaking independence with solitude.'

I had no one to support me.... And I was the sole cause of it.....

So I fought all alone against all of them. I resisted as much as I can, but in a 20vs1 it's impossible, you know?

But I still didn't understand why they bullied me to this extent? Just because I rejected their crush, they did all that? No....It made no sense at all... There must be some other reason for it. I'm sure of that.

It was at that moment, I saw a very small smile crawling up on Kushida-san's face as she was witnessing me getting beat down.

'W-what? Why was she smiling?'

I wanted answers from her. Why was she not doing anything to stop them? Why was she smiling while watching me get bullied? Was she not

my friend?

One day, I came across a very surprising and shocking sight. It was after school was over. I was fixing my appearance in the school washroom while hiding my cuts and bruises with makeup, I noticed Kushida-san walking inside the classroom all alone.

Feeling curious I followed her and was met with a shocking sight.

She was cursing out every single student in our class with a cold, husky voice that I couldn't ever think belonged to her.

"And Horikita....That bitch. Because of her, I couldn't get with that crybaby Ikitani, who would've been my ticket to stardom to become the most popular student of the school.

All because of that slut Horikita, everything was destroyed. Well, at least I get to enjoy seeing her get beaten up every single day. That sates my desire for revenge, I guess."

'I couldn't believe my ears... Was all our memories meant nothing to her? Did she really think nothing about Ikitani ? Was she acting this whole time?'

Not wanting to stay quiet any longer I opened the door much to her shock. Then her eyes turned into fury as she glared at me.

"What are you doing?"

"That's my line. Did the time we spent really meant nothing to you?"

"Of course not. I just wanted to get close to the sister of the School President. Once he was gone, your use was gone as well."

"Did you really think nothing about Ikitani-kun?"

All I met in regards was a mirthful chuckle from as she leaned towards the window.

"Of course not. He could've been useful to me but you destroyed that chance. So everytime I watch you get bullied, it makes me feel great euphoria."

She let out a manic laugh while evilly grinning at me.

'Is this really Kushida? Is this really the girl I've known for 2 years? It's unbelievable. '

"Why am I getting bullied, Kushida-san? I don't think rejecting a guy will result in this much suffering. Did you do something?"

"Of course I did. As the most loved person in the class, all I need is to fabricate some lies in such a way that it seems true.

You should thank me for helping you gain such pain tolerance, Horikita-san. "

Anger fueled my entire body as I couldn't keep hold of it anymore. She was behind everything.

"You...you Bitch!!"

"Hehe, who knew that you could curse? Guess I should consider myself lucky to experience it.....

But since you knew about this other side of me, it will create trouble

for me right? My whole reputation would be destroyed..."

Her eyes suddenly welled up with tears as she looked towards the window.

"I'm a very despicable human, aren't I? I made you suffer so much pain because of my selfish desires.."

What is she talking about? Why is she suddenly acting guilty for no reason?

"Isn't it better if I just end myself?"

'Huh?'

Without waiting for any response she climbed over the window railing causing me to widen my eyes.

"Kushida-san what are you doing?"

"Killing myself."

Even though my mind wanted a sick traitor and an inhumane person like her gone, my morals and my body moved before my mind could ever register it.

"S-stop it Kushida-san!!!"

I instantly grabbed her but felt myself off my feet as Kushida used my own momentum against me and threw me off the ledge off the window.

"Sike, you thought hahahahahahaha..."

As I was falling off from the window, the only thing that my ears could hear was her sick laugh as the words my brother said sprang up in my head.

"She is not a good influence for you, Suzune. Cut ties from her."

Haah I guess this is what I get for not listening to him.

'Will this be the end? Am I really going to die? I don't want to die....I have a lot of things left to do....'

I'll miss all of you... Dad, mom, nii-san... Hope all of you stay happy.'

Spplllarttttt

When I gained consciousness, I was shocked. I was alive..

It came to my knowledge that 2 of my ribs, one hand and one of my legs were broken and I suffered facial injury for which I have to do surgery...

'I guess this is what I get for being so gullible and arrogant....'

My entire view towards the world changed.... Along with Physical Therapy, I started to attend Mental Therapy since my 'accident' was labelled as Suicide.

My parents took me out of the school as I homeschooled for my final year, before attending Advance Nurturing High School.

I hoped that I never have to see the face of a traitor such as herself

yet again

Unfortunately fate was not so kind to me...'

End of Chapter 38

Words : 3134

Finally the past between the both of them was revealed.

I tried to make it as realistic and not overdramatic as possible, yet keeping the dark theme and the twistedness of Kushida.

Also, the reason her accident was labelled as a suicide was because Kushida herself called the teachers and said that she saw Horikita jump off the window. Also, they couldn't find it was her since Horikita's uniform was filled Handprints from all the punches and beating she recieved... and blood mixing with it, makes it quiet difficult...

So, when Horikita was deemed alive, they dropped the whole investigation as she herself was too traumatised to say anything.

Anyways that's all for this chapter. See ya.

□□□♡□□□

Chapter 39 : Responsibility

Season 2 : Chapter 6

By the time she was done with the story, Horikita was hyperventilating as tears were streaming down her face, as Kiyotaka s in understanding.

"The person who literally threw her from a window is attending the same class as hers. Of course she was scared...."

"Now everything makes sense. Her lack of confidence, her snapping at me when I unknowingly touched her, her meek behaviour from time to time...."

Kiyotaka carried Horikita by the waist and forcefully laid her down on his lap while stroking her hair gently.

"It's alright, Horikita. Everything's alright. Kushida won't even touch a single piece of your hair in this school. That I can promise you."

Not responding to him, she was still sobbing to herself while thinking of the traumatic situation. Soon, she regained some of her voice before looking at the boy with scared eyes.

"Y-you can't even fathom the fear I felt when I was falling from the sky....It was one of the worst experiences one could ever go through."

"Even I had to never go through something like that... The friend you knew for 2 years attempting to kill you? It's really shocking."

Grabbing her, he gently hugged her while patting her back, as he decided to open up at least a little to her about some of his own experiences.

"My father also tried various methods on me to increase my pain tolerance, but I can't ever imagine a person to go through that and still survive with the nightmare of that incident.

You are strong Horikita....You are really strong...Still moving forward and pushing yourself despite such a thing, I really respect that."

The girl fully released all her stiffness and laid over Kiyotaka's body as if she was a domino falling over. Kiyotaka however gently tucked her in his bed and held her hand to make her feel comfortable.

"I'll keep my word to you, Horikita. I'll never let someone like Kushida come close to youBut you just have to do one thing for

me."

Her closed eyelids groggily opened as she drowsily looked at him.

".....what is it?"

"Just trust me at all costs. "

Hearing his words, she let out a weak smile before moving his hand from her palms to her cheek.

"Don't worry Ayanokouji-kun. You are someone who gained nii-san's recognition and you are my first real friend.

Even when you cornered me like that, at first I was scared but soon I thought logically and realised that you would never do something like that without any specific reasons.

I'll always trust you Ayanokouji-kun, but in exchange.....Please trust me too."

'Huh?'

"Whenever I see you look towards the window, I always notice your eyes filled with emptiness and stress. It's as if a huge burden is over you 24/7.

I know that I may be weak and your problems may be way bigger than what I can comprehend, but please at least let me share that 1% of the burden, so that you can feel a little light. "

".....Horikita."

'Her weak smile along with the small droplets of water adorning her eyes while she was looking at me with nothing but trust and adoration.... She looked beautiful...That look of hers....

I hated it....I absolutely hated it...

Why is she trusting someone like me? I'll throw you away after your use you know? Why are you looking at me with those eyes? I never thought of you as my fri-'

"Say Kiyotaka....if you could get one wish of yours to be complete, what would it be?"

".....I want to be a normal human and have friends who I can genuinely trust..."

".....hehe that's quite a wish big man but I can promise you that one day your wish will come true. Just pray to yourself and push forward 'kay?"

".....thanks for your kind words Miss Diana."

"Don't worry about it my boy."

'Dammit Kiyotaka....why are you thinking back to that conversation? It's the philosophy of life that a human should only prioritise themselves for survival. Thinking about others only brings trouble and further despair... Don't be fooled by Horikita's wor-'

"Please trust me too."

Taking a deep breath, he laid beside Horikita who soon hugged him while wearing a smile on her face.

"Go to sleep, Horikita. Tomorrow we have school and we don't want to be late, are we?

"Yeah...Good night, Ayanokouji-kun."

"Good night."

As she closed her eyes, he let out a resigned sigh while looking at the ceiling.

'Have I gotten emotionally weak? Before coming here, I wouldn't have even cared about her experiences....But seeing her cry like thatmade me feel some sort of way. I need to sort out my thoughts.

As for Kushida Kikyou.....At first I thought I could keep her within a leash and make use of her....But now my plans have changed for her. She is not someone I should take lightly....

I will make her suffer the same way she did to Horikita. But first-'

His eyes then went towards the sleeping Horikita who was lightly snoring while holding his hand. With his other hand he moved the small parts of her hair from her face.

'I need to pick up all the pieces of the remnants of a broken Horikita Suzune and put them all together. And I know exactly what I need to do for that.'

With that he opened his phone and wrote down a text.

☐ from

Ayanokouji Kiyotaka :

Please free your schedule and meet me at the Student Council Room all alone. We need to have a discussion.

to

: Manabu Horikita ☐

☐☐☐♡☐☐☐

"So....what do you have to say, Ayanokouji? I had to delay today's Student Council Meeting for your so-called 'discussion' you

know?"

Manabu Horikita, the Student Council President himself served Kiyotaka some tea and some cookies while taking a seat in his respective chair.

"Well, my bad for having you delay a five minute meeting that you can literally take any time you want."

"Now, don't give me that sass. So tell me, what's the matter?"

Biting on one of his cookies, Kiyotaka's relaxed expression turned a little serious which created a veil of uncomfortable silence through the room.

".....Kushida Kikyuu. You know her don't you?"

Immediately after hearing her name, Manabu's confused eyes turned into that of understanding as he gave the brown haired boy a small nod in response.

"She is Suzune's so-called Best Friend. I found her behaviour a little suspicious so I told my sister to cut off ties from her. However it seems like she didn't listen."

"Since you are ignorant of these matters, let me share some things with you. Last night, Horikita revealed quite a lot to me."

"What is it?"

"Your suspicions about Kushida Kikyuu were all correct. Ever since you left your Junior High, she made your sister's life hell.

Don't you see her change and sometimes think to yourself '*what happened for my foolish little sister to change that much?*'Well, Kushida happened."

The elder Horikita looked away from Ayanokouji towards the window with guilt in his eyes.

"I was actually glad that I saw some changes in Suzune. But this information changes a lot of things and makes me feel sick and ashamed."

Taking a deep breath he took a sip from his tea, he continued.

"So...what did Kushida do? Can you elaborate?"

"No."

"Why?"

"I don't think I should reveal someone's secret to someone else so freely. You are her brother right? Why don't you ask her yourself?"

"But...."

"But what? Are you that ashamed of yourself that you can't even speak to your own little sister about her trauma and comfort her? I didn't know the Student Council President is devoid of basic human interaction."

'It seems funny when it comes from me.'

Kiyotaka didn't get any response as Manabu sat silently while thinking about the information dump he got. Seeing this as his time

to go, Kiyotaka stood up from his seat.

"Class is about to start soon. I'll see you later, Horikita senpai. Just...let me give you one piece of advice.

What happened to Horikita is worse than you can imagine. So try to make her as comfortable as possible and act like an actual brother for her this time.

You are partially the reason for this all, so take some responsibility and help your sister, otherwise she wouldn't survive in this school. Have a good day."

Not letting the President give him a response, Kiyotaka walked out of the room, leaving Manabu all alone to think to himself.

"Oh~ And who do we have here?"

As soon as he closed the door, he looked towards the person and found a boy with a decent build and blonde hair. There was an egoistic smirk on his face as he slowly walked towards the brown haired stoic boy.

"So, who are you, kouhai? And what were you doing in the Student Council room?"

"I sent an application for a spot in the Student Council a little later than usual. However, the president called me and rejected my offer."

Hearing this, his smirk got bigger as he put one of his hands on Kiyotaka's shoulders.

"My name is Nagumo Miyami from Class 2-A. I'm the Vice President of the Student Council. What's your name?"

"Ayanokouji Kiyotaka from Class-D. Nice to meet you, Mr.Vice President."

As soon as heard Kiyotaka's class, Nagumo's grip over his shoulders released as he let out a sigh filled with disappointment.

"Good to meet you kouhai. You may go, I have no further use for you."

I think you got the wrong idea, Mr. Vice President. It's up to me to decide if you would be useful or not.....

But still, it's a good thing for me to stay out of his radar. I heard that has quite some schemes around his sleeves which led to him being the Vice President.

Let's see Nagumo Miyabi... Would you rather be useful to me? Or would you be someone I need to get rid of?

Either way works for me.



As for Kushida, she is walking on a very thin thread. One mistake and I'll show her hell, ten times worse than what she did to Horikita.'






Words : 2541

Kiyotaka finally coming in terms with the so called thing he lacks...That is emotions. There is still a long way to go for him, but a small start is all someone needs to walk through the right direction..

As for Manabu Horikita, I mean who else is the best person to stay by Suzune's side than her own brother. Who knows, she might be a lot better than canon by working by her brother's side....

Anyways, Ayanokouji's and Horikita's relationship will definitely develop from here on now, albeit in a slow pace.

Hope you guys enjoyed this chapter. See ya.  

Chapter 40 : Problem

Season 2 : Chapter 7

Time ✕ 5 : 45 a.m.

'Wait....Why is Ayanokouji-kun sleeping beside me??!!'

As soon as she woke up, Horikita Suzune found herself laying on the chest of her seatmate who was softly snoring to himself.

'This doesn't look like my room. Where am I-'

She then started to remember the incident that took place last night as pink blush adorned her face.

'Dammit, how can I sleep so comfortably next to a boy like that? Have some shame, Suzune..'

'Uwaa my clothes are sweaty as well... Thank God, I still have time to go to my dorm to change...'

'But before that, I'm thirsty....'

She quietly untangled her hands from Ayanokouji's body, her blush still present in her face and got out of the bed sneakily, not wanting to disturb his sleep.

She then walked towards his refrigerator and opened it, finding herself shocked.

'What the hell?! 4 Large Tubs of Ice Cream, 3 large bottles of Fanta, 2 Bottles of Coke, 20 Hershey's Chocolate Bar...'

'How can he eat so much unhealthy food?'

With an annoyed expression, she drank her water as a small thought passed through her mind.

'He didn't cook himself any breakfast Right?'

Once again checking the fridge, she found herself smiling to herself, realizing Ayanokouji in fact didn't have any breakfast ready.

'Hmm...For going through all that trouble for me last night, as a sense of gratitude, I could cook him a nice breakfast...'

'Only because of the hospitality I received, nothing else.'

She walked towards his closet and picked out a panda apron.

'This is so cute. Who knew that someone like Ayanokouji-kun wears a panda apron? I kind of want to see it in person.'

She then walked inside the kitchen and started cooking with her masterchef worthy hands.

Timeskip of Horikita mixing a lot of weird ingredients like a maniac but still miraculously making it taste good

As she was done with her food, she stored the food in a lunch box before attaching a sticky note on the box.

'Be grateful that you are eating my food as the first meal of your day. Hmph~'

'Have this limited edition magnificent lunch box that you can't get anywhere as a reward for assaulting me, driving me to tears and forcing me to sleep with you.'

If I had the knowledge that you would be this dangerous, then I would have taken safety precautions. Anyways, I hope you enjoy the food and I expect a thank you. Your welcome,

Horikita Suzune.

Reading the letter, Kiyotaka released a deep sigh before lazily opening the box.

'Well... At least I got some free food after all those prickly words. Horikita truly doesn't hold back on her words, does she? '

However his eyes slightly widened at the beautiful aroma of the food before he started digging in.

"Thanks for the food. "

After his talk with Manabu Horikita, Ayanokouji was strolling through the school premises since there was still some time left before class started.

'Because of all the competition and chaos, I've never said this... But wow, this school is absolutely beautiful. Even with all the nasty tactics, fights, chaos and war, in the end, it still radiates the aura of a high class prestigious institution.'

While Kiyotaka was looking at the walls surveying the pictures of all the previous batches who graduated as Class-A students, he was brought out of his thoughts when he felt someone tapping his back.

He turned towards the person and it was none other than Hirata Yosuke.

"Good morning, Ayanokouji-kun."

"Good morning to you, as well, Hirata. You came early today, huh?"

Hirata released a small chuckle at his words.

"Not really. I usually arrive at the school a little earlier than the projected time. Though I found myself shocked to see you strolling through the premises right now. You usually arrive just before class starts. "

'He seems quite observant. Or am I one of his main focuses? since I'm like the final boss, he needs to defeat to lead the class.'

"Yeah...I had some matters which needed to be discussed. So, instead of having a discussion after class, we thought it would be a

good idea to take it before class."

"Did you get any private points today? We should've gotten it right?"

"Yes. Today is the date, but I didn't get anything."

"Maybe it's some glitch made by the school."

"It could be."

"Would you mind walking to the class with me?"

"I won't mind. Let's go."

While the both of them were walking towards their classroom, Kiyotaka noticed a lot of female students flocking together to experience their presence, causing him to feel a little weird, seeing which Hirata gave him a troubled smile.

"I'm sorry you have to experience all this... because of me."

"It's alright. Don't worry about it. Although I do find it...pretty surprising. To think that you have to go through this every single day... I feel your pain."

Hirata awkwardly laughed at his words, before his face turned serious.

"Ayanokouji-kun, what is going to be your next step?"

"Huh?"

"It seems like whenever something is happening, you are already 10 steps ahead of the problem. So I'm wondering if you have any plans within your mind."

"I do have some plans, but I'm not willing to share them with you, Hirata. Since you are one of the students who always tries to get in my way, revealing it to you would be a little weird, wouldn't it?"

"I guess that makes sense. However you have to understand that violence and threat doesn't go right if you use them all the ti-

"I think you don't understand the situation fully Hirata. There are only a small number of students who are having problems with the way I lead the class. And those selected numbers include You and some of your fanbase.

Hell, even Ike showed some gratitude to me and is trying to improve himself. Do you think it would've been possible under your leadership?"

Not finding any words, Hirata looked away from him, however Ayanokouji didn't stop at that.

"Also whenever something happens, all you talk about is how I control the class using violence. Can you give me an example when I did something like that?"

The only time I used violence was when Sudou tried to attack me. And does it seem to you that Sudou has any problems with me?"

"....No it doesn't. But I don't like how you insult all of our classmates at any given opportunity you get."

"Even Chabashira-Sensei does that. Does that mean that you would want to replace her as your homeroom teacher?"

"That's unthinkable!!"

"Then why are you targeting me? Hirata... One piece of advice for you. Let go of your morals for once and just think logically, if what I am doing is wrong. If you find any faults in the way I lead the class, then I'll willingly give up that position.

It seems we have reached the class. Have a good day."

The entire class at the moment was in panic as they still didn't receive any private points despite gaining 95 Class Points.

'It's understandable from their point of view. They somehow managed to survive a whole month with their leftovers of the first month. So not getting anything in the third month as well, must be annoying.

Although I wonder what's going on? Is this really a problem the school's facing, or is it something else?'

Not receiving any response from Hirata in return, Kiyotaka walked towards his desk only to find a smirking Horikita who was blushing to herself.

'Acting smug while blushing? That's truly a deadly combination.'

"Good morning, Horikita."

"Good morning to you as well, Ayanokouji-kun. Did you enjoy the food that I prepared for you?"

"Yes I did. Although I lost some of the taste because of the words you wrote on the sticky note."

"...Was it wrong though? What I wrote were just some facts."

"Yeah.....sure."

Hearing his sarcastic reply, she gave him a thin smile before taking out her phone.

"Ayanokouji-kun, did you receive any points today?"

"No...I did not. I have no idea what's going on. Let's just wait for Chabashira-Sensei to explain, I guess."

Speaking of the devil, the door of the classroom opened as their Homeroom Teacher walked towards the podium and was immediately met by numerous questions from the impatient students.

"Sensei, why didn't we get any points?!"

"Is there some glitch that the school made? Or do we have another problem?!"

"Sit down quietly. I'll explain everything."

Her eyes then went towards Sudou who immediately lowered his head refusing to meet her gaze, which made Kiyotaka feel a little confused. He then remembered what Horikita said to him last night.

"We found Sudou-kun who seemed to be in a bad mood."

'Just what kind of problem did you get yourself this time, Sudou?'

End of Chapter 40

Words : 2499

Since I'm getting quite mixed reactions from last episode about this matter, what do you guys think of Horikita from the 1st episode of S2?

I found her to be quite enjoyable and not at all annoying. It seems the anime still wants to keep on going with her S1 personality which I'm happy about.

Even Kei has been toned out a lot. I remember in the start of Vol.4 she was constantly bitching about not being on the same group as Hirata, but here, I guess in order to make her likeable from the start, the anime skipped it.

Machida you simp. How can you fall for that act so easily?! You were supposed to be a Class-A student.

Yukimura looks and sounds really handsome and calm. Am I the only one who thought that? My guy looks like an absolute chad.

Anyways after every episode, I'll write about what I enjoyed and what I didn't. You guys can share your opinions as well.

Last episode's MVP for me was without a doubt Ichinose.

Anyways that's all for this chapter. See ya.



Chapter 41 : Weak

Season 2 : Chapter 8

"Sae-chan Sensei! Do we have 0 points this month too?! When I checked this morning, I didn't have a single point."

"Oh, so is that why you guys were so restless?"

"This month, we worked our asses off! We got past the midterms... So isn't it cruel to still be at 0!? We weren't late to class, weren't absent, and didn't whisper!"

"Don't go off deciding things on your own. Let me talk first. Ike, you clearly worked harder than I've ever seen you try. We recognize that. Naturally, the school understands how you feel too."

After being admonished by her, Ike quietly sat down.

Ike's frustration is well justified. Not only did he try to reduce his perverted acts, but also he tried to cause as little of the damage he can while learning earnestly, all because of his selfishness.

So, not getting the desired thing for which you worked so hard for, must annoy you to no end.'

"Well then, these are this month's point totals."

All the other classes were relatively close to each other, excluding Class-D.

Class Points

Class A : 1004

Class B : 693

Class C : 492

Class D : 91

"Huh? Is that 91? Did we actually increase our points?!"

'No shit Sherlock.'

"Don't be so excited already. All the other classes increased their points about the same amount you guys did. The gap didn't get any closer. This looks like a reward for just passing the midterm. Everyone was paid about 100 points."

Horikita, who was taking notes of every information she could, frowned to herself. She wasn't happy with the outcome of the midterms which was understandable.

'Both of us thought that the results of the Midterms would lead to an increase or decrease of Class points based on average score or percentile. But, the school gave all the classes a nearly equal share of Class Points, which neither increased our gap, nor decreased it. It's still constant.'

"Are you disappointed with the outcome, Horikita?"

"Not really. At least we got some Private Points. Something is better than nothing, after all. Also, because of this, I understood how the school distributed the points."

"What did you understand, Horikita-san? Can you share it with us? We are quite confused."

Ike, who seemed to be high on caffeine as he was taking the lead of every single conversation, stood up from his seat and looked towards the black haired maiden, causing other students to look in her direction as well.

"Umm?"

Not understanding what to do, Horikita looked towards her seatmate for help who sighed to himself.

'What are you, my child?'

"Go ahead. Explain it to him."

".....right."

Taking a small breath, she directed her attention towards Ike and stood up from her seat.

"Every single class got 100 points as a result of the midterms but if we see the Class Points closely, none of them seemed to get 100 Class Points in this month. The most a class got is Class-A which is 94, whereas the least is Class-B which is 63. Class-C got 82, whereas we got 91.

Which means that the deductions we got during this month are reduced from this 100 points instead of the Total Class Points if that makes sense. Of course it wouldn't be from our perspective since our total was 0, but check it from the other classes perspective."

'Good job, Horikita. You explained it perfectly. I doubt any of them are confused anymore.'

"So, in other words, in terms of behaviour and conduct, we were the Second best Class this month, correct?"

"Exactly. And it's all thanks to me."

Even with that dull voice, Ayanokouji's comment lightened the atmosphere as the students of Class-D chuckled at his words.

"Sensei, if this is in fact true, then why did we not get any Private Points? I'm quite confused about that."

"This time, there's a bit of trouble. The points for the first-years were delayed. Sorry, but you'll have to wait for a bit longer."

"Eh~, seriously? Because the school is having trouble, shouldn't we get some kind of freebie?"

Karuizawa's comment caused Chabashira to look at her in pity.

"Don't blame it on that. The school decided it, not me. Once the trouble is resolved, you'll get your points. If there are any points left, that is."

With that, Chabashira-sensei walked out of the room, once again giving Sudou a side glance as the sound of her heels reverberated throughout the whole room.

"If there are any points left, that is...."

"What did she mean by that?"

As soon as lunchtime started, Sudou immediately left the classroom and went somewhere, causing his friends to look at the door he walked away from in confusion.

"Sudou-kun is ignoring us, isn't he?"

Matsushita's comment caused Horikita to put on a thinking expression, while Kiyotaka was lazily looking outside, observing birds.

"Yes. And if you look at his face closely, it seems like he is on edge or he is nervous. I wonder what's going on..."

"Horikita, you said to me that you three found him in a pretty bad mood yesterday, correct?"

Ayanokouji's words brought her out of the thought as she nodded at him.

"Yes. He didn't dare make any eye contact or even greet us and just walked away. It was definitely a little weird."

"....Should we go and talk to him?"

"Don't do that Satou. At the moment, he is deliberately ignoring us. Confronting him right in his face is definitely a bad idea. Wait for him to get a little comfortable with himself."

"Exactly as Ayanokouji-kun said. However, I can't help but question whether the delay in the private points was somehow related to Sud-mphh?!"

Kiyotaka immediately closed Horikita's mouth with his hand while gesturing to the others to stay silent as well.

"This is not the right place to discuss this. If that's in fact true, then the feeble unity that we somehow created in the class would be destroyed to pieces. Understood?"

"Mhmm."

The others nodded to his words while Horikita tried to forcefully remove his hands, to which he relented and released her, causing her to take a deep breath, before narrowing her eyes at him.

"You are getting way too handsy with me this past few days, Ayanokouji-kun."

"I don't hear you complaining though. Judging by the blush on your face, it seems like you are almost enjoying this."

"Grrr."

Not having anything to say in response, she growled at him before looking away, her blush still present.

"Kiyokita ship is finally starting to sail, it seems. Hard luck for you, Matsushita-chan."

"Mmhm. It really is sad for a pure maiden like me to be rejected so early. Lend me your shoulders to cry, Satou-chan."

Matsushita tried to act sad while wiping mock tears while Satou reassuringly patted her back.

"Don't mind Matsushita-chan, don't mind."

As soon as class ended, the door of the room opened by the homeroom teacher of Class-D.

"Sudou. I have something to tell you. Come to the staff room."

Sudou, who was trying to quickly leave the classroom, was stopped by Chabashira-sensei.

"Hah? What business do you have with me? I have basketball practice now."

With a restless expression on his face, he opened his bag, grabbed his uniform and showed it to Sensei.

"I already talked to your advisors. You don't have to come, but you'll face the consequences later."

Her words immediately resulted in him stiffening up in shock before he spoke out, although in a slight nervous tone.

"What the hell....Is this going to end quickly?"

"That depends on you. Just by staying here, we're wasting more time."

Without looking back at him, she walked out of the room, followed by a nervous Sudou.

Kiyotaka and Horikita immediately exchanged gazes with one another.

"What do you think happened, Ayanokouji-kun? Even Chabashira-Sensei is getting involved with his matter now?"

"Hmm.... We know that Sudou is impatient and rude. When he is with us, we were successful in making him feel comfortable which is why he seems calm and collected.

He was supposed to go to basketball practice yesterday, correct?"

Picking up their bags, both of them walked out of the room.

"Yes. What about it?"

"And you said he was in a pretty bad mood. Maybe the students in his basketball team said something to him, which resulted in him using violence. I'm not too sure but I think that's within the realm of possibility. The way Chabashira-sensei was talking with Sudou, it was as if he committed a crime. So I'm leaning towards this theory."

"Given Sudou-kun's personality, it's possible."

"Hey you two!!!"

Interrupting them from their conversation, Kushida walked

towards them with her usual cheery expression.

Horikita's mood immediately soured as she tightly clutched Kiyotaka's uniform while he sighed in annoyance.

"What do you want, Kushida?"

"Nothing. It's just you two seemed on edge for some reason. Is everything okay? Horikita-san looks pale. Are you okay?"

With a 'concerned' look, Kushida tried to approach her but her hand was immediately slapped away from Horikita by Ayanokouji.

"We are in the midst of an important conversation. Don't waste our time and get lost."

"W-what? I-I just wanted to say h-hell-"

"Didn't I say it once? Get lost Kushida. Don't make me repeat myself."

Kiyotaka fiercely glared at her, causing her to freeze in her place for a second, before she let out a forced smile.

"I-if Ayanokouji-kun wants me to go away, t-then it's okay. Have a good day, you two."

"I hope you have a horrible day, Kushida. Hope you step on dog's shit."

"Pfft-"

Chuckling to herself, Horikita started walking away with Kiyotaka following her, not before glaring at an annoyed Kushida one last time.

"You seemed to be really annoyed with her, Ayanokouji-kun. What's the matter?"

As if she already knew the answer, Horikita let out a smug smile.

"What can I say? Just seeing her face after our talk last night for some reason fueled me with a strong sense of annoyance, thanks to you."

"Hehe~ you're welcome, I guess."

As Horikita laughed to herself, Kiyotaka couldn't help but almost smile at her.

'DammitWho would've thought that I would be annoyed about a person who harmed someone other than me...'

I've really gotten weak...

I've gotten really weak....

Although...

For some reason..

I don't particularly hate this weakness of mine....'

End of Chapter 41

Words : 2598

Before I end the chapter, let's have a heated debate shall we? The one debate which every COTE fans does all the time, but no one's ever tired of it.

For the easy one first :

Top 5 Male Characters of COTE

Mine are :

1. Ayanokouji
2. Ryuen
3. Manabu
4. Koenji
5. Tsukishiro

Name your top 5.

And now for the controversial one :

Top 5 Female Characters of COTE

1. Arisu
2. Ichika
3. Horikita
4. Kiryuin/Matsushita
5. Ichinose/Kei

What do you guys think of my list? I think it's pretty decent. I can't wait to see all the chaos that is about to be created here 🐼🐼

Anyways, Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.

Chapter 42 : Excitement

Season 2 : Chapter 9

After Kiyotaka finished his dinner, he prepared his bed and laid down on it, ready to go to sleep and get rid of all the stress of the day.

'Who knows when I'll get a peaceful sleep again? The whole Sudou matter will be quite annoying to deal with, I can already tell. I still don't have the knowledge of the problem he is in, but I can make a wild guess.'

While he was lost in his thoughts, the bell to his dorm rang as Kiyotaka walked towards the door and looked through the peephole to see who the person was, calling for him this late in the night.

'Oh well, here we go. Speak of the devil and he shall appear.'

Opening the door, he gave the person in front of him a lazy wave while shifting himself towards the door to create some free space for them to walk inside.

"What's up Sudou?"

"H-hey man, sorry for disturbing you this late at night."

"It's alright. Come inside first."

".....Thanks for having me."

With slow steps, Sudou walked inside the room with his face covered in sweat. Sudou meekly sat in one end of the corner of the room as he was given a wet towel and a glass of ice cold water by Kiyotaka.

"It's pretty hot outside. Wipe the sweat off."

"Thanks, I appreciate it."

"So tell me Sudou, what's the problem?"

"I think I'm in quite a big problem. The only person who could help me in this situation is you."

"I see. Is it related to the situation in class where Chabashira-sensei called for you?"

Sighing to himself, Sudou wiped his face before looking at Kiyotaka.

"Yes it is. I might get suspended from school for a while."

'Suspended? That's quite the revelation. But it's not unexpected, I guess.'

"Why are you getting suspended? You didn't do anything to Chabashira-sensei, I assume?"

"Of course not. It's much more complicated. "

"Then explain."

Kiyotaka then took out his phone and started the voice recorder, causing Sudou to look at it confusingly.

"Umm why are you recording our conversation? Not that I'm against it..."

"I thought I should share this discussion with Horikita and I bet you would feel tired to repeat this whole scenario for her once again."

"I see. That's certainly smart. So, what happened is, actually, I beat up some students from class C yesterday. And earlier, Sensei said that I would be suspended... This is probably punishment for that."

'I see. Just as I thought.'

Sighing to himself, Kiyotaka looked towards Sudou with a scrutinizing gaze.

"To be honest I thought it would be something like this. I'm honestly not surprised. "

"H-huh?! What do you mean?!"

Sudou wore a surprised expression hearing his words, as Kiyotaka slightly raised his hand for him to calm down.

"Yesterday Horikita notified me that she saw you in a pretty bad mood, and it was right after your basketball classes.

And when Chabashira-sensei called for you, my mind immediately went towards the scenario where a fight broke out.

But, I'm sure you didn't engage yourself in violence without any reason, correct?"

"Of course not. I'm not stupid enough to beat someone up without any reasons."

"I know that. So explain everything in detail from start to finish. Don't leave a single thing out. Got it?"

"Yeah...But before that, can I get some more water?"

"Sure. Give me the glass."

"Thanks."

"So...what happened?"

"The club advisor and I were talking about being able to be a regular for the summer tournaments."

"Regular huh? Only in your first year at that? Congratulations. "

"Hehe thanks."

Sudou rubbed the back of his head in embarrassment from the praise he received before his face turned serious once again.

"Actually, I was the only first year to be nominated for becoming a regular. And even then, it's not like I'm definitely becoming a regular.

On the way home, those guys... Komiya and Kondo, who are also in the basketball club, called me out to a special building. They said they had something to talk about or something.

I could've ignored them, but I've argued with them quite a few times during club activities, so I thought I would settle this. Of course, I went to meet them, you know? And then this Ishizaki guy was there, waiting for me.

Komiya and Kondo were this guy's friends, and said how they couldn't stand that a class D student like me was being considered as a regular. He then told me to either quit or face a painful experience. I refused and beat them up, but then all of this happened."

"And then...you were portrayed as the villain huh?"

"Exactly."

With an exasperated nod, Sudou quietly drank the water, all the while sending Kiyotaka a helpless gaze.

"When you told this to Chabashira-sensei, what did she say?"

"She told me, even if it's true the school won't believe anything without factual information behind it. They said they would give me time until next Tuesday to prove it. If I'm not able to, I'm suspended until the summer. On top of that, the whole class will be deducted points as well."

"I see. This whole ordeal is certainly troublesome. Even if you aren't at fault, you are still going to be punished regardless, you know?"

"What?! Why? If it's proven that I'm innocent, then why would I still be punished?"

With an enraged expression Sudou threw his fist on the ground, however his angry expression immediately disappeared when Kiyotaka slightly tilted his head at him and gave him a dead stare, causing him to shift uncomfortably.

"Calm down Sudou."

"Y-yeah my bad."

"It's alright. I understand that you are frustrated but try to think logically in these types of situations. I'll explain why you will have to compensate in simple terms...

You hit them, but they didn't hit you. That's a big reason why, I

think. It's a more difficult problem than just saying 'self-defence'. If they came at you with a knife and a metal bat, things would be different. Normally, if they were going to pick a fight, they would probably prepare for it.

'Self-defence' is when you have to defend yourself against sudden, dangerous attacks. For example, when you lost your composure against me and tried to punch me. But I, instead, stopped you. That was 'self-defence.' However, I don't think this is exactly 'self-defence'."

"I-I don't understand. There were three people, three. I think it's sufficiently dangerous."

"Whoever brought it up first has the upper hand. The victim's testimony works as evidence.

We have to prove you innocent. The school won't take your word. By any chance, did you notice any CCTV cameras or any person in that area?"

Sudou put on a thinking expression for a second before snapping his fingers.

"There might be something. It might just be my misunderstanding, but... When I was fighting with those guys, I felt a strange presence around the area, as if someone was watching."

"I see. Then there might be the possibility of an eye witness."

"Do you have any idea on how to look for the eyewitness?"

"Hmm? Maybe we could ask people one by one or maybe by a poster...."

"Umm, this might seem shameful, but can you possibly keep this a secret?"

If rumor of this spreads, it'll make its way to the basketball club. I don't want that to happen. You understand, right?"

Sudou looked away from Kiyotaka in frustration and guilt.

"Even then, if we prove your innocence, then you would have no problems."

"Please understand Ayanokouji... If I can't play basketball, I have nothing left..."

Sudou pleaded to him while clenching both of his fists together as Kiyotaka sighed to himself.

"Fine. I'll try my best. As long as the Class-C students do not spread the rumor, your secret is safe with me..... and Horikita, I guess."

Sudou chuckled at his words, before lightly bowing to Kiyotaka.

"Thanks for the help man. I know this is really bothersome, and I hate pushing this stuff on your shoulders."

"Let me ask you one question, Sudou. Think properly and answer it to me.

Why do you think, of all the people, You were the one who was targeted?"

Sudou looked at the ground, seeming to be deep in thought, before looking up guiltily.

"It's....because of my small temper, isn't it?"

"Yes. Even though you mellowed out a lot, your volatile tendencies are still present which is why Class-C chose you as an easy scapegoat.

So I suggest you to try to keep your behaviour in check, got it? I'm sure what happened today is enough of a reality check."

"Yes man. I'm sorry once again. Have a good night."

"Yeah good night. Go and sleep peacefully Sudou. Don't worry about the case. I'll find a method to save you."

Sudou's crestfallen expression lightened up a little as he laughed out loud.

"That certainly gives me confidence. See ya Ayanokouji. "

"Yeah...."

With that Sudou walked away as Kiyotaka closed the door. He took the wet towel that Sudou was using and threw it inside the washing machine before laying down on the bed and looking at the phone which was still recording.

"Anyways, I doubt you are still awake. And if you are, I bet you are still reading that stupid novel of yours...what's it called again, oh right, **Crime and Punishment**. I hope you won't mind the headache that I sent you this late at night, Horikita.

Have a good night."

Turning off the recorder, he sent the audio file to his black haired friend before closing his eyes, planning to drift to sleep.

'Even if I have a lot of work tomorrow, at least I can make use of one last peaceful sleep.

Heh, it's like I'm trying to cling to the last straws of any hint of peaceful life, I experienced this last month...

I guess Show time will finally start from this point onwards....

Even if I miss this peace, I can't lie but....

I'm feeling a little bit excited.'

End of Chapter 42

Words : 2462

Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter.

I very much enjoyed the war that happened in the comments section last chapter Lmao.

So many people started insulting each other all because of some fictional characters .It was actually gold lmao ☐☐

Anyways that's all for this one. See ya.

Chapter 43 : Mob Mentality

Season 2 : Chapter 10

And the next day was certainly not peaceful. The problematic events still continued.

During homeroom, Chabashira-sensei had an announcement to make, which certainly made matters a lot more troublesome.

"I have an announcement for you all today. There was a bit of trouble the other day. Him over there, Sudou, and some class C students were involved in an incident. To tell the truth, it was a fight."

Immediately the class got noisy as most of the students looked towards the now ashamed Sudou.

Chabashira-sensei's face was remote without any emotions but if one observes her very closely, they could see the lingering anger and frustration present behind those brown orbs of hers.

"Uh... why hasn't the matter been resolved already?"

The ever peacemaker Hirata stood up from his desk and asked the question.

"The complaint was raised by class C. They said it was a one-sided fight. However, when we asked Sudou, he said that their claim was not true. He said that the class C students called him out, looking for a fight."

"Hmph~ how detestable red-haired kun. Just hearing about the atrocities you committed is sullying my existence, having to breathe the same air as you. "

Without even sparing him a glance, Koenji started brushing his hair while looking at himself in the mirror.

'Koenji truly is a wildcard isn't he? One moment he would be by your side, the next moment he would be against you. Truly the definition of someone who doesn't care about anything in the slightest.....'

I need him by my side at all costs. And I need him as soon as possible.'

Sudou looked very annoyed at his words, but he took a deep breath, trying to compose his anger and looked at Chabashira-sensei.

"I wasn't in the wrong; it was self-defence."

"But you have no evidence. Am I wrong?"

"No....You aren't wrong. I don't really have any evidence, but please trust me."

"In other words, we don't know the truth yet. Therefore, the situation has been put on hold. The outcome will be decided on who the actual perpetrator is."

"I can assure you that I'm innocent. Those Class-C students set me up."

"He says so himself, but as of now, there's not much credibility. If, as Sudou says, there is an eyewitness, the situation may change. If there are any witnesses to the fight, please raise your hands."

Chabashira-sensei looked towards every single student, where most of them gave mixed reactions.

Some of them were glaring at Sudou, while some of them remained indifferent to the matter.

However, Kiyotaka noticed one reaction which was quite different than the others.

'I see. Her expression is certainly not normal.'

He suddenly felt a small poking sensation in his waist. He looked towards the direction and saw Horikita gesturing him to look towards the end corner of the room, where his gaze was lingering for the past few seconds.

'Horikita found her suspicious as well. As expected of her.'

Kiyotaka slightly leaned towards her and whispered in her ear.

"Don't worry I noticed her. Let's ask her privately later."

"Got it."

Kiyotaka's eyes then fell towards Chabashira-sensei who was also gesturing towards that direction with her eyes.

'It seems like everybody noticed her. She can't even fake an appearance huh? Getting her would be easy.'

Kiyotaka just mouthed *"I'll deal with her"* to which she directed her attention back towards a nervous Sudou.

"Too bad Sudou, but it seems like no one here was a witness."

"...Looks that way."

"In order to look for a witness, each teacher is informing their class about the situation."

"Hah!? You told everyone!?"

Sudou's eyes immediately widened as he clenched both of his fists together in frustration.

'The only thing you didn't want to happen is happening right in front of your eyes..And you are so helpless that you can't even do anything...'

Sucks to be you Sudou...'

"Damn it!!!"

"Anyway, that's all. We'll most likely get a final decision by next Tuesday, taking the presence or absence of evidence into consideration. Homeroom is now over."

With that Chabashira-sensei walked out of the room, while Sudou looked towards Kiyotaka for a second. Seeing the nod the Leader of Class-D gave him, Sudou let out a relieved sigh and walked out of the room.

'Keeping him here while everyone starts insulting him would have quite some devastating consequences. I have to let Sudou go for today. Points be damned.'

And as soon as he left, just as Kiyotaka predicted, the backtalk started.

"Hey, isn't Sudou the worst?"

"If we lost points because of Sudou, doesn't that mean we're going to have 0 points again?"

"Damn it. And just when we were starting to get points, there he destroyed our hope yet again."

"He should just get expelled."

Kiyotaka immediately stood up from his seat and walked towards the podium with the intention of controlling the damage.

"Everyone be quiet."

His words had an immediate effect as the insults stopped and the defectives looked towards their Leader who was surveying every single one of them.

Kiyotaka then started narrating the entire story to the class about what happened as every single one of them listened with full concentration.

"I'm asking once again. If anyone knows someone in this class, among your friends, or among your senpais that saw what happened, tell me.

You can contact me at any time. If by chance it comes to my knowledge that someone of you knew about this incident and didn't bother to notify me, then be prepared for consequences."

Kiyotaka especially stared at the suspicious person while uttering the word 'consequences' as she lowered her head in fear.

"Anyways, none of you need to worry about anything too much.

Since, Sudou is my friend, I sincerely apologise to all of you for his misdoings. Also I'm taking responsibility for protecting Sudou, so if anything goes wrong, you are free to place the blame on me."

Kiyotaka bowed in 'apology' to the entire class as they widened their eyes.

'Ever since the Study Groups, Sudou was with us the whole time, which was without a doubt noticed by certain people.'

'If I use myself as the scapegoat before they say anything, none of them would try to lower my credibility.'

'Just as some respectable people of the past have said, the power to accept your weakness is much better than ignoring it...'

'Just one apology and it has the chance to change the entire perspective of a person about you.'

Just as he predicted, Kiyotaka got his desired reaction.

"Don't worry about it, Ayanokouji-kun. You are not at fault here and neither is Sudou-kun, if he is saying the truth.

He is our classmate as well. So we would like to help to prove Sudou-kun innocent."

Hirata immediately stood up and looked towards Kiyotaka with a determined gaze.

"I don't believe Sudou's story. I think he's making it up to justify his own actions. During middle school, he kept talking about beating people up. He even lectured us about how it was fun to beat people up."

Yamauchi was the first student who retaliated, as he shamelessly snitched on one of his 'friends'.

'Is this even true? This guy really made up a story just to portray him as a villain.'

"I saw him cut in line at the cafeteria and get mad at someone who tried to warn him."

"Earlier, I saw him grab some kid from another class just because they bumped in the hallway."

'And here it comes, the thing that I knew would be annoying in the future. The Mob mentality. And just as I thought, Yamauchi is the person to start it...'

'It's alright with me though... He can do whatever he wants for some time. Death Row inmates get to have their favourite meal before their punishment after all.'

However, their rant over Sudou immediately stopped as Hirata slammed his book over the desk, to get their attention.

"I want to believe him. I can understand if a student of another

class doubts him. But I think it's wrong to doubt a friend, a fellow classmate. Isn't helping out someone in need what friends do?"

Hirata's words immediately touched some of the students' hearts who looked down guiltily.

"I think so too. If it's a false accusation, wouldn't it be a problem? In any case, it'd be sad if he was innocent."

Following her boyfriend's words, Karuizawa brushed her bangs aside and said those words, leading to most of the girls agreeing to her, because of her strong presence.

'I'm getting some surprising assists today, huh? First Hirata and now Karuizawa. Congratulations, me.'

"What about you, Kushida-chan? Do you believe in Sudou-kun as well?"

One glance from the Leader of Class-D and Kushida already knew what she had to say.

"Yes. I want to believe my classmate. I would like to help Sudou-kun, whichever way I can."

With her agreement, almost every single student was influenced by their words.

'It's a typical behavior of the Japanese people: following suit when one person does something assertively. Secretly, they were probably making fun of him, but at least they were pretending to help. For now, the criticism of Sudou takes a halt.'

"I'll ask my friends."

"Then I'll ask my seniors in the soccer club."

"I'll ask around as well."

With Hirata, Kushida and Karuizawa's help, the investigation to prove Sudou's innocence began.

'Wow....I didn't have to take too much of an initiative here...Is it a miracle? Can I truly enjoy some momentary peace?'

Almost as if contradicting his own thoughts, Kiyotaka walked out of the room and went towards the most troublesome destination a Class-D student can go during this period.

The room to **Class-C**.

He truly a peace loving student, isn't he? The way he plans to deal with everything 'peacefully' is enough to make Mr.Gandhi jealous.

End of Chapter 43

Words : 2463

Just as I said in my Conversation tab, Reaction fic would take some time to come out lol. Much respect to all the authors who write good

reaction fics, because let me tell you, it's difficult as fuck and is very time spending.

I would rather write five chapters of *Man on a Mission*, than spending that much time on 1 chapter of a reaction fic.

Hope you guys understand my perspective. However fret not...I would write one after completing this story and I already decided a name for it.

COTE : Multiverse of Madness

A lot of shenanigans with various Ayanokouji's and reacting to various stuff including canon as well as my fanfics...It would be pretty insane.

Anyways, I'm pretty excited for Episode 2... I feel like they might adapt 'Spread your Legs' this episode, however I wouldn't mind it being ep 3. At least we would experience some Koenji greatness.

Anyways that's all for this chapter. Hope you enjoyed it. Lmao, at this rate the author notes would be bigger than the chapters soon xD.

Chapter 44 : The Tyrants

Season 2 : Chapter 11

"Ayanokouji-kun?! Where are you going?"

While he was walking through the hallway, Kiyotaka was stopped by Horikita who was jogging towards him.

"I'm going to meet my buddy Ryuen. Want to tag along?"

"Ryuen? Who the hell is that? You never told me about a friend of yours."

"He is the person responsible for all the mess that is being created. I just want to congratulate him for making my life more troublesome than usual. Maybe a pat on the back is good for him. What do you think?"

Immediately her eyes widened for a second as she looked at him as if he was crazy.

"Is the name of the Leader of Class-C , Ryuen?"

"Yup. It's a pretty cool name right? What do you think will happen if I call him 'Dragon Boy' ?"

"You will most likely get punched, however since it's you we are talking about, he will have to go to the nurse."

"How sweet of you to complement my skills Horikita. But don't worry, I'm pretty sure he is smart enough to not lose his composure in front of CCTV cameras."

Horikita who was looking at Kiyotaka as if he was a wild specimen, sighed to herself before chuckling to herself.

"You are one crazy guy, you know?"

'Of course, I know.'

"Hmm? Why do you think so?"

"You always talk about how you want to lead the class and make theories all the time, and put it to use pretty effectively..."

However at the same time, you always preach about this so-called 'peaceful life' of yours and for some reason you look like you really enjoy yourself while doing basic stuff like watching TV, playing games or even to some extent doing daily chores.

And then out of nowhere you do some of the most chaotic and craziest things, a person can do.

Your actions and words are pretty contradictory is what I'm trying to say...."

Seeing Kiyotaka go silent all of a sudden, Horikita scratched her

cheeks feeling a little awkward.

"Umm did I trigger any bad memories? I didn't mean to do that."

"No, no...nothing of the sorts. It's just... your words gave me something to think about. You are not wrong per say....Who knows, maybe I am a walking example of Human Contradiction. "

Kiyotaka turned around and started walking away from her, however Horikita quickly grabbed the back of his uniform, stopping him in his tracks...

"....You are acting different from usual...."

"Hmm? How so?"

".....nevermind....Forget it. Just know that it's not a bad thing."

With that she released her grip over his uniform and showed him a small smile.

"Nii-san called me to have lunch in the Student Council Room, so unfortunately I can't join you in this adventure of yours."

"Ever the bro-con, aren't you?"

Seeing the amused stare he was giving her, Horikita scoffed before flicking his arm.

"S-shut up. I'm not a bro-con. I didn't see my brother for 2 years. Don't you think it's normal for me to want to spend time with him?"

"Of course it is...I also think it would be good for you to learn while being under the tutelage of your elder brother..."

Speaking of that...Horikita I've got a proposition for you."

"What?"

Kiyotaka leaned towards her and whispered the words in her ear.

"Why don't you join the Student Council?"

She immediately widened her eyes before taking a step back.

"Why do you think, I should join?"

"Hmm? You can spend more time with your dear nii-san and I might get an easy pass to enter and exit the Student Council Room whenever I want to, since both the Horikita's appear to like me."

The black haired maiden blushed at his words before twirling her bangs.

"I don't think it works like that...In that case, why don't you join the Student Council as well? If you join it, then I'm not opposed to write an application as well...."

"Me? Joining the Student Council? Hmm....That certainly sounds like a lot of work. Managing the Class as well as being a member of the Student Council....."

"That's what I want myself to think...The truth is, I just want to be lazy and enjoy basic things. But...."

"Joining the Student Council will give us some confidential information wouldn't it?"

Horikita gained a smug expression as she folded both of her arms

beneath her chest.

"Hmm, the last time I talked with nii-san, he said that the Student Council has some control over something called.... The Special Exams."

"I'm in."

"This quickly?"

However in contrast to her words, it didn't appear she was surprised.

"Of course. Getting intel on the Special Exams would certainly be advantageous for us..."

However I'm not pleased that you hid this information from me for so long."

"Well, I was waiting for the perfect opportunity to relay that information and I finally got it.

Anyways have fun with Class-C, I'm going to the Student Council Room."

With that Horikita ran away from Kiyotaka with an excited expression on her face, for some reason.

Kiyotaka, who looked confused, shrugged his shoulders before starting his conquest towards Class-C.

However on his way, he was once again interrupted, this time, because of someone texting him.

He looked at the text as released a deep sigh filled with annoyance.

[**Manabu Horikita (SCP)** : *I heard from Suzune that you want to join the Student Council. Don't worry, I already rejected 2 students, since I already had prepared positions for both of you. Both of you don't need to write any application later on. We'll officially appoint you as our Student Council Member after the Trial.]*

Seconds later, another text appeared.

[**Suzune Horikita (🐉Knight ➡👑to be promoted into Queen👑)** :

Mission Successful 🐉]

'Those damned siblings.... They set me up didn't they?'

However inspite of his words, Kiyotaka didn't feel any hints of annoyance as he smirked to himself.

'What a troublesome pair. They truly are related by blood.'

On the Other Side

"He really said he wanted to join on his own accord, didn't he?!"

With an excited smirk on his face, Horikita Manabu immediately started texting to Ayanokouji as if he was a high school girl proposing her crush while his younger sister was reading the text with a smile on her face as well.

"Yup!! The moment I said the word 'Special Exam' his eyes almost

gained stars as he immediately replied with 'I'm in.'

"Nice. Good job, Suzune!"

With that both the sibling high fived each other, lost in the excitement, while a confused Tachibana Akane was brewing them tea with a troubled smile on her face.

"I don't know what's going on...But hey, it's really comforting to see Horikita-kun smile like that. "

Back to the Main Side

Kiyotaka soon found himself in front of the room of Class-C and like how every single peaceful man does their work, he peacefully opened the door....

By loudly kicking it, nearly breaking it off his hinges, startling every single student especially their leader who was apparently trying to scare someone while standing just beside the door.

"Fuck. I nearly shat my pants kukuku."

The magenta haired leader then finally laid his eyes towards the brown haired boy as the thin smirk on his face grew into a small grin.

"Hey!!! Who do you think you are?! Huh?!"

A green haired delinquent looking boy with bandages all around him tried to intimidate Kiyotaka, who simply yawned right to his face, annoying the boy even further.

"That makeup is overkill my guy. Even a kid can tell it's fake..."

The Leader of Class-C then took the lead of the conversation by simply pushing away the green haired boy, as he stood in front of Kiyotaka.

"Well, well, if it isn't the bastard who gave me the Middle Finger that day. You got quite some balls nearly breaking our door and barging into our class huh?!"

Kiyotaka merely stared at him for a second before looking at the other students, who were watching their interaction with slight interest.

This seemed to hit a nerve of Ryuen who let out a small chuckle.

"Where are you looking at? I'm the one speaking to you."

"I'm just looking for the leader of Class-C. Would you mind enlightening me where he is, scrawny delinquent-kun?"

Every single student of Class-C, yet again widened their eyes as the green haired boy once again stood up shouting.

"Hey!! How dare you speak to Ryuen-san like that?"

Another Dark Skinned boy with a huge figure walked behind Ryuen with an intimidating posture.

"BOSS IS NOT SCRAWNY. BOSS IS STRONG."

I see....So, even by using complete terror, he still gained some useful allies here...However unfortunately a lot of them are still against

him...That's alright with me. I can make good use of it.'

Ryuuen merely laughed at Kiyotaka while his eyes were twitching.

"You think you got some jokes huh?! Well, I like me some jokes. So, I think both of us will get along just fine."

"That's certainly true. You are quite the funny individual, Ryuuen. I certainly am entertained by the way you carry yourself...Just like a complete fool."

"Kukukuku....What an interesting person you are....

Ibuki kick him."

"Huh?! No, I won't. Don't bother me."

The blue coloured short haired girl named Ibuki immediately rejected Ryuuen's orders while looking through her phone.

"That's not the way you order someone. You should say something like this :

Ibuki, I choose you. Use double kick."

Hearing Kiyotaka's words, Ryuuen looked at him with a mad grin.

"That certainly seems like a good idea. Let me put it to test .

Ibuki, I choose you kukuku. Use double kick."

"Fuck off. Don't bother me ."

"That was an order."

Immediately her phone was snatched from the big guy as Ryuuen slapped his own hand with an intimidating grin towards Ibuki, who clicked her tongue and walked towards Kiyotaka.

"Don't mind me. Just following his orders."

With that, with an incredible show of flexibility, she sent a quick kick right towards his head, with the intention of knocking him out, however Kiyotaka simply grabbed it, resulting in her widening her eyes.

"Your leader ordered a double kick, not a single."

"Tch."

With that, Kiyotaka immediately released her left leg as she threw her right, unfortunately getting the same result.

"Pink? How surprising. I thought a headstrong girl like you would wear something like black."

"Wha-"

Immediately with an embarrassed glare, she moved her legs back and threw a quick jab towards Kiyotaka, who simply grabbed her hand and flicked her forehead hard, causing her to step back from the impact of the strike.

"Kukukuku he saw your panties Ibuki. Now you will get pregnant Kukukuku. "

"S-shut up!!"

With an embarrassed face, the blue haired girl named Ibuki

showed Kiyotaka a middle finger with one hand while clutching her forehead with the other, while the other females of Class-C were trying to provoke him while showing their middle fingers as well.

'It seems like the students of Class-C really likes communicating with their middle fingers...Weird, but for some reason it's easier to communicate this way in comparison to Class-D.'

"Kukuku lunch break is about to end. Why don't we get to the main topic? What do you want?"

"Nothing much. I just want to congratulate you for making me work this quickly. That's a good ploy you created against my Classmate. "

Immediately Ryuuen understood his words as he started laughing to himself.

"Oh?! You mean the Red Dog? Well, that was not a ploy. We truly are the victims here.

That day those three came to my room, and all four of us cried together, as I couldn't bear watching them in pain kukuku."

The three 'injured' students including the green haired guy nodded to his words.

"I see. I just came here because I wanted to praise you for becoming the first person to start some chaos in this year. You certainly made this situation very entertaining. It was getting pretty boring, I must say."

"You are one crazy motherfucker aren't you?"

"That you can say I am. Be prepared for the trial, Ryuuen. I hope you can handle your first loss and not throw a temper tantrum like a little kid."

"We'll see what happens, Mr.'I don't know your name' ."

"My name is Ayanokouji Kiyotaka. Nice to meet you. "

"Be prepared Ayanokouji....After I expel that red dog of yours, I'll start destroying your class one by one."

"I'm looking forward for when that time comes."

With that Kiyotaka walked away from the room as Ryuuen observed him till he reached the hallway, not letting go of any slightest movements of him.

'Ryuuen....The Leader of Class-C...Compared to Ichinose, he is the complete opposite.

A tyrant who controls everything by force and by sheer cunningness.

Having Ibuki attack me while having the big guy and his other goons surround us from every direction was quite a good decision, since he took extra measures to not let that squabble be recorded, even though we were at such a position that it was impossible for the CCTV to see us.

I'm looking forward to what Ryuuen does next

Also who would've thought that I could provoke someone like the

Leader of Class-C? Internet truly does some magic.

This was certainly a fruitful encounter...

End of Chapter 44

Words : 3414

The perfect ship doesn't exi-

Writing in the Wattpad app for some reason is so much more comfortable than writing it in other applications.

When I use google doc, I can't write more than 500 words before getting tired, however here I was able to seamlessly write 3000 words within 2 hours. It's pretty weird lol

Lmao, writing this chapter and the interactions between Kiyoko and Ryuen gave me some Ayanokouji Doesn't Hold Back feels. I used to write dialogues very similar to this, albeit much worse.

Anyways, Want to see Student Council Kouji with Student Council Horikita?

Or would you want him to decline the offer and focus on his own class instead?

Joining the Student Council would be quite unique in my opinion with some pretty fun interactions.

Anyways, there goes the first ever interaction between Ryuen and Kiyotaka. Hope you guys enjoyed it.

Speaking of enjoyment, there is something I didn't enjoy at all...

Which was the shit they called Episode 2 of Classroom of the Elite.

Review of Episode 2

From my knowledge Lerche studios gave this episode to some no name studio just so they can save some budget for the important scenes, which in my opinion is a pretty good decision made by them...

However from the viewer's POV, it was absolutely shit. I feel really bad to say it, but it's the truth.

Everyone's face was messed up, they were walking like they were robots, the whole Kushoda scene was so unnecessary as well ffs. Since you are skipping important stuff, why don't you skip that useless bitch?! But no, they need some fanservice ffs

The whole Kei monologue of Vol.4 was cut down to a scene of 10 seconds where out of nowhere she just called herself a parasite, making the scene extremely random instead of something powerful and emotional.

And there are so many minute changes which annoyed the absolute living hell out of me.

However there were some positives though...

Kei being bullied was adapted pretty good and the Voice Acting for this episode was flawless, specially Kiyotaka's VA, for some reason his

voice was so chill this episode.

Anyways, MVP of the episode was either Kei or Kiyotaka, maybe Koenji idk to be honest. You guys tell me.

Overall rating : I would give it a 4 or a 3. It definitely brought my expectation for the other episodes down, however I still have hope.

Please don't disappoint me, Lerche Studios.

Once again, I don't want to come off as an ungrateful fan, but c'mon we didn't wait more than 5 years for potato animation.

What's your guy's thoughts on the episode? Were you disappointed or did you think it was fine?

Anyways that's all for this chapter. See ya.

Chapter 45 : Wave

Season 2 : Chapter 12

"So....did any of you guys find any evidence?"

Kiyotaka lazily looked down from his bed towards the ground where Kushida, Sudou, Ike and Hirata were sitting.

"Not at all."

"Man, it was really tiring. We walked around the entire school area, still not a single person."

"It's alright Ike, don't worry about it. Do any of you guys want anything to drink?"

"Yes please!! Man, it's hot outside."

"I feel you bro."

Sudou, even though was looking gloomier than usual, replied to Ike who just gave him a small slap in the back.

"Don't be sad, it doesn't fit you. Ayanokouji is helping us right? You'll be ok."

"That's correct. As long as I'm here, don't worry about a thing. Just trust me."

Hearing his reassuring words, Sudou's eyes immediately gleamed for a second as Horikita got out of the bed, before looking at Kiyotaka.

"You guys talk, I'll bring the drinks."

"No, it's alright. I'm goi-"

"I said I'm bringing the drinks. Don't worry Ayanokouji-kun. I insist."

".....right."

With that Horikita quickly walked out of the room, as Kiyotaka sighed to himself.

'She is still uncomfortable with Kushida's presence. I understand why, but this will be pretty annoying to deal with in the future.'

Speaking of Kushida, she was looking at the retreating figure of the black haired maiden with a forced smile on her face, all the while clutching both of her fists tightly.

"So Kushida, did you get any evidence or help?"

Her eyes immediately darted away from Horikita as she looked towards Kiyotaka.

"Hmm, I didn't get any evidence but we met up with Ichinose-san of Class-B. Apparently, they want to help Class-D and prove Sudou-

kun innocent. So, I accepted her help. Did I do anything wrong?"

Kushida looked at him with puppy eyes which caused Ike to blush while Kiyotaka sighed to himself.

'Ichinose huh.... I guess it makes sense for Class-B to help Class-D in this matter. As of this moment, they don't need to care for Class-D in their battle to reach Class-A, while Class-C would provide them with a tough challenge for that position, or might even overtake them.'

'It doesn't hurt to accept their help for now. If both our classes get on good terms with one another, it would be really useful. They will lower their guard against us and that would be the perfect moment to strike.'

"No, you didn't do anything wrong for now. However I expect you to let me know before you make any decision by yourself which may affect our class, got it?"

"Yes!!"

She immediately let out a cute, wide smile which immediately resulted in Ike fawning over her.

"Kushidaaaa-Chaaaan!!!!"

Kiyotaka looked away from the sight and released a small sigh.

'How annoying. This is the last time I'm calling her in my room. Just seeing her face for some reason infuriates me to no end. I wonder why?'

'Was it because she accused me if rape and tried to end my peaceful life? Or was it because of the Horikita incident?'

'She deliberately thought about ending my future as well as Horikita's life, just because we heard her vent to herself. If someone else like Ichinose or Hirata finds herself in that condition, I doubt they would be able to do anything against her.'

'That's the reason, Kushida is someone who should be gone. But, I'll make her suffer painfully and slowly, worse than what she did to Horikita.'

'You may ask why?'

'It's because.....'

'It's amusing.'

"What about you, Hirata?"

"Well, we didn't find anything useful, but after speaking to quite some students and our senpais, we heard quite some rumors about the Students of Class-C, where some of them were delinquents, while some of them have a history of **bullying** etc."

For some reason, Hirata's face darkened the moment he said the

word 'bullying'.

I see. Is this the reason why he always tries to maintain peace? I still need some more knowledge before inspecting his situation and connecting the dots.'

Horikita then walked inside the room while wearing Ayanokouji's favourite panda apron, all the while sending him a small smirk, causing him to look away from her.

'She will keep hold of that information to the grave, huh? How troublesome.'

"Here you go, your drinks."

"Thank you Horikita-san. "

"Thanks, Horikita-san."

Both Hirata and Ike received the glasses with smiles on their faces, while Sudou gave her a stiff nod before taking the glass.

Whereas for Kushida, Horikita didn't even spare a glance and placed the glass by the two faced girl's feet, to which Kushida sent her a glare filled with annoyance before picking it up by herself.

"Very well then, thank you guys for coming here this late and informing me. You guys may leave now. Good work today."

With that all of them finished their drinks, and bid him goodbye while Horikita stayed back and laid down on his bed with a sigh, after hanging the apron inside his closet.

After closing the door, Kiyotaka walked inside the room and sat on the bed beside her, while looking at her with an amused stare.

"What's up? Not gonna go to your room?"

"No. I was planning to sleep with you again, Ayanokouji-kun. "

"I didn't know you would be this bold Horikita. It seems I should be really scared of my chastity now. "

The black haired maiden sent a weak punch towards his shoulder with a playful smirk on her face.

"I'm joking. I thought that I needed to give you some information before parting my ways with you."

"What's up?"

With that, Horikita got up from the bed and sat while Kiyotaka tilted his head while looking at her curiously.

"I was in the Student Council Room today, as you already know.

There was this guy named Miyabi Nagumo, who seems to be the Vice President of The Student Council."

"Oh, I've met him already. "

"Really?! Did he do something?"

"Not really. He came up to me and asked me which class I was from...The moment I uttered the word Class-D, his excited gaze turned into that of a bored one as he told me that he has no further use of me. After that he left."

A small frown formed on Horikita's face as she nodded to his words.

"It's good that you were out of his radar now, however the moment we join the Student Council, it would be either join Nagumo or fight against him."

"Hehh, you make it sound like Nagumo is a pretty tough person to fight against..."

"From what I've heard from nii-san, he already has the whole control of the Second Years as well as some Third Years. He wants to, however, increase his reign and reach to those of the first years as well.

Nii-san told me that at first he thought Nagumo would be a good successor, although later on he realised how wrong his intuition was, that Nagumo was nothing other than a power hungry, selfish, corrupt individual whose main goal is to destroy anyone who is weak..."

"How surprising is that? The great Student Council President who is deemed to be one of the best students the institution ever had, made such a terrible mistake. I was not expecting that from him.

He could've chosen anyone, and he chose the only guy who could give him problems. So what does that have to do with me? Honestly, I don't really care what Nagumo does or thinks as long as he doesn't get in my way."

Horikita, who was looking mildly annoyed at Kiyotaka since he was insulting her brother, released a small sigh before picking up his pillow and resting it on her lap.

"That's the thing. The moment you join the Student Council, it will turn into 'join Nagumo or resist Nagumo.'"

"I think you forgot about one other option, Horikita."

"What is it?"

"Destroy this enigma that goes by the name of Nagumo Miyabi."

Horikita's eyes immediately widened as she sent him a mildly panicked gaze.

"Ayanokouji-kun, I know how strong you are, but think for a bit,

this is not just Nagumo Miyabi, this is the entire second year we are-"

"Do you honestly have any idea how strong I am, Horikita?"

Hearing his words, Horikita stilled for a second as she realised that she, in fact, had no idea about the limits that Ayanokouji Kiyotaka can reach.

"I-I don't know, but if we fight against Nagumo, it would not be just us against him, it would be us against him and the whole Second Year. It would be really dangerous to do this just all by yourself."

"Let me ask you something, Horikita. Please answer me after thinking it carefully, ok?"

"....Got it."

With that, Kiyotaka laid on the pillow which was placed on Horikita's lap and looked at her in the eye. Her face was blushing, but she didn't seem to let go of it.

"Your thighs are pretty comfortab-ow."

Immediately she flicked his forehead with an annoyed expression while looking away from him.

"Is that what you wanted to say?! Can't help but feel disappointed. "

"What? Can't someone compliment someone's physical attributes without being seemed as a pervert?"

"But, you are a pervert, Ayanokouji-kun. "

Horikita sent him a incredibly confident smile, as if she had 100% confidence that what she was saying was absolutely true.

"Says the girl who would glare at my chest muscles and my abs with full intensity the moment I take off my shir-ow."

This time his cheeks were pulled by Horikita, who was wearing an evil smirk.

"Do you have something to say? It seems you don't understand but I am the one who has control of you at the moment, so chose your words wisely."

"You seem to overestimate your thighs pretty high, Horikita. I can just get off your lap, and you'll be defenseless-"

He was brought out of his thoughts as Horikita, feeling a little daring, brought out her leg which was covered in her tight black stockings, and wiggled her toes in front of his face.

"You seem to have really high confidence in your physical features, huh?"

"I worked hard for it, so the least I can do is to show it off."

"Unfortunately for you, I don't have any feet or leg feti-"

His mind then brought up the sight of Horikita's stocking covered leg as Ayanokouji sighed to himself.

'Maybe..... I should stay like this for a little longer.'

"Ok, so what I was saying. I'm going to ask you a question, Horikita. Think before you answer it, ok?"

She looked down her lap towards the lying Kiyotaka with a serious gaze, while nodding to herself.

"Got it."

"Very well. Then tell me, what happens when a huge Tsunami wave attacks....let's say a big city. What should a human do in that situation?"

"Hmm, preferably go to a place with altitude higher than that of the Tsunami so that it doesn't strike them, preferably a mountain or a hill."

"That's correct. Then what about the people who can't go to a hill or mountain and are in fact, trapped in the city where the Tsunami strikes. What will they do to save themselves?"

Horikita racked her brain to think of an answer, however finding nothing credible, she just clicked her tongue and shook her head on both sides.

"I....have no idea."

"It's alright, because the answer is, you can't do anything at that moment. It's only then up to your luck whether you survive it or not."

"I see....Then what's the purpose of you asking me this question?"

"Tell me, in each Tsunami attack, about how many people lose their lives approximately?"

"Around 500-600 on a moderately weak one, whereas over 200,000 on an extremely strong wave."

"Once again, correct. So, even with that amount, can humanity resist the Tsunami?"

The most they can do is save themselves by fleeing away from the area, but can they fight the Tsunami?"

"....No."

"That's what this whole situation is. No matter how many students, whether it be Nagumo or his 2nd Year goons, in the end, quantity will not matter, once they meet a wave of destruction, destroying everything in his path..

All this power of the Students, their strength of numbers, nothing will matter as they will all be swept up in that wave of destruction, while being mixed with all the dirt and debris of the corruption and sins they have committed to get to that level.

And by the time if someone survives that wave, they will be washed off all the sins and rebirth as a new human being with new

morals and goals...."

End of Chapter 45

Words : 3009

I'm really sad at the moment... Like really really sad.

If you guys don't know, I uploaded the First Chapter of COTE Reacts : In the Multiverse of Madness.

However as I was writing a draft, by mistake I clicked on the delete button of the whole story...

And now all the drafts that I have written which includee around 8-12 chapters consisting of around 50,000 words...They are all gone.

I decided to write this fic on Wattpad, since copy pasting all those words would've been very troublesome, but in the end, I fucked up big time and I have no backups for the drafts....

Anyways, enough of me venting. Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.

Chapter 46 : Rejoice

Season 2 : Chapter 13

In front of the school building of ANHS, there were three roads, walking through which lead to three different destinations.

Kiyotaka took the one on the far right, following through which he soon walked inside the gym.

'Even if I'm out of the whiteroom, I still need to keep the body I worked so hard for in check, otherwise everything will go to waste. I need to prepare myself for the challenges that man might decide for me.'

The gym was extremely beautiful and modern in terms of looks and aesthetic. Unlike the gym in the White Room, the ANHS gym, although didn't have the gadgets as well developed as it, it still was much more appealing to the eyes.

Instead of all white, the whole room was covered in marble walls, with the help of which, one can see the reflection of themselves.

"Well well if it isn't Ayanokouji-boy, bonjour."

Kiyotaka looked towards the person who called him, only to find himself slightly gobsmacked at the sight in front of him, where a shirtless Koenji was running on the treadmill whose speed was set at 18 mph, without any hints of discomfort.

There was no raggedy breath or any symptoms of tiredness coming from him, as he was humming to himself.

"Good morning Koenji. Fancy seeing you here."

"Fu~ it's me who should be saying that to you. Ever since I joined this school, I always came to the gym daily in the morning to keep my perfect body in tip top form, however I never saw you once.

So, what's the sudden occasion, Ayanokouji-boy? Did you get jealous of my handsome body and want one of yours as well?"

Hearing him praising himself yet again, Kiyotaka sighed to himself before getting on the treadmill beside Koenji and setting the speed at 18 mph as well, to which Koenji let out a small smirk.

"Not really. I'm pretty satisfied with my body, however I need to keep it that way. So, I can't really slack off on my training. And as for your question, I usually prefer going to the gym at night."

"I see, I see. So you are the type of person who would rather work hard and then go to bed with a sore body, huh? Quite a good idea."

"Yup. Because of that, I don't need to feel tired during school. One good sleep and I'm all rejuvenated for a fresh new day."

"Hmph~ That's certainly a very flamboyant idea, Ayanokouji-boy. I'm inclined to follow your routine, however, I am a pretty busy man. I need to attend all of the dates with my beautiful senpais, of course not as beautiful as me, hahaha."

With that Koenji once again started his jog on the treadmill, as Kiyotaka wore his own earphone before starting his exercise .

'Even though the way Koenji talks is annoying, his presence however feels more relaxing and peaceful compared to most of the others...It's kind of weird...Well whatever, let's just go back to training.'

"You are Sakura-san, correct?"

As soon as the class ended, both Satou and Matsushita arrived in front of Sakura's desk , who immediately cowered in fear.

"Don't get too close. You guys are making her uncomfortable. Step back a little."

Kiyotaka and Horikita, who were standing in the back of the class, were giving their orders with the help of a transceiver.

Immediately both of them walked behind while giving her a small smile and an apologetic gaze.

"I'm really sorry, if we startled you. Actually we have a request for you."

"W-what is it?"

Sakura, who was at least comfortable enough to give a response, looked at them confusingly as Satou responded to her words.

"There is a new cafe named Wide Awake Cafe opened up, have you heard about it?"

"Y-yes. It's quite popular already r-right?"

"Yup, it always remain packed, that's why you need to make reservations to even get inside."

Matsushita's words caused Sakura to tilt her head in confusion.

"I-I see. B-but what does that have to do with m-me?"

"You see, we already had 3 reservation tickets, however Ayanokouji-kun and Horikita-san are both busy with proving Sudou-kun innocent, while Karuizawa-san and the others already have other plans."

"We didn't want to waste such an expensive ticket, so would you like to join us, Sakura-san?"

"Give her your best impression of puppy eyes. They always work on boys, I bet they work on girls as well."

Horikita slightly snickered at his words as Matsushita and Satou tried their best to replicate what Kiyotaka said to them.

"A-are you s-sure about that? T-there are m-many others who w-would be a better choice."

"Be a little rude. Say that she is always alone."

"We know that, however, no one wants to go with us. However, you are always alone and you have literally no friends, so we thought about taking you along with us. Of course if you don't want to go, then we'll take someone else, but we prefer someone quiet over someone rude. You don't mind right?"

Sakura weakly chuckled at Matsushita's harsh words before nodding to her.

"I-if you w-want me to just g-go with you guys, then I d-don't mind."

"Grab her hand. I need to check if she gets scared or just startled."

Following his words, Satou grabbed her hands as Sakura turned stiff for a second.

"Now say goodbye to her and leave. Wait for us in the hallway."

"Thank you so much, Sakura-san! Here's the ticket. Please meet us after an hour. See ya."

Both the girls then ran out of the class, leaving behind a confused yet nervous Sakura all alone.

Seeing this as their cue to leave, Kiyotaka and Horikita left the room, to find both the girls looking really lost and guilty as they were messing around with the earpods that Kiyotaka gave them.

"What's up?"

Satou and Matsushita both looked at the approaching figure of Kiyotaka and Horikita with a frown on their face.

"It just felt really wrong talking to someone like that. Tell me Ayanokouji-kun, was it really necessary?"

Matsushita's words resulted in Satou looking towards the brown haired boy with an expression mixed with curiosity and guilt.

Kiyotaka then released a small sigh before walking towards them. He then dropped each of his palms over both of their shoulders before giving them a small pat.

"Don't feel bad about it. Even if it felt rude, it was unfortunately necessary. From my understanding, Sakura is a very introverted and shy girl who most likely had a history of bullying, however I'm not sure."

Horikita immediately shuddered at the thought before looking towards the pink haired girl with sympathy.

"Are you sure she is someone who was bullied, Ayanokouji-kun?"

"That's why I asked Satou to grab her hand. And from that I found no symptoms of bullying. So Horikita, maybe she is not."

Her behaviour and manners are kind of similar to yours, but the difference is whereas you are strong, have brains and have a sharp tongue, Sakura however has none of that, and she is weak.

That's why I reached that conclusion, however I may be wrong, so who knows..."

"But...hypothetically if she has a history with bullying, is it not wrong to talk to her like that? Why did you instruct us to address her that way?"

"Think of the main reason you guys are inviting Sakura...That is to ask her about the Sudou matter. So, in a sense you are technically not hanging out with her.

If you act like angels in front of her, she will feel special and her hopes will be raised only to be shattered to pieces when she realises that she is only called for interrogation.

However if you talk to her with authority and power, she would be forced to look at you two as your 'superior' and would be ready for whatever you guys want.

And that's when Horikita will arrive at the scene and you guys will then apologize for your words and then ask her about Sudou's case.

Hearing two authoritative girls apologise and hearing that they are all doing it for the class will unconsciously get her to help you.

The only advice I would give at that time is, don't care about the Class matters that much. Even after Horikita explains to her, and she doesn't want to cooperate, then leave her. I would do something else by that moment."

"Ayanokouji-kun....the way you are speaking, it's like you are not planning to be there with us. It feels weird."

"In fact I'm not coming with you. Horikita will take control of the matters over there, so just follow her lead, got it?"

Horikita, then walked towards the three of them and stood beside Ayanokouji-kun with a thoughtful expression on her face.

"You see, If a person who gets bullied meets someone who is genuinely nice to them without any ulterior intention, they will unconsciously start to feel attached to that specific person. I can personally attest to that.

So, if someone who is a little similar to her and talks to her with empathy, then she would open up about herself quickly. That's why you want me to go instead of yourself, right Ayanokouji-kun?"

Horikita's eyes slightly darted towards Kiyotaka as she was saying those words, causing him to give her a short nod.

"Exactly. "

'However, I don't think you've realised yet, but you slipped up, Horikita, I bet Matsushita caught up to it as well.'

"Wait Horikita-san, you are speaking as if you have experience. Were you bullied before?"

And just as he expected, Matsushita immediately caught on and narrowed her eyes slightly as Horikita looked away from her, not knowing how to give her a response.

"Yes she was bullied. However it was not something physical. Most of her class isolated her and no one spoke to her for 3 whole years. This is why Horikita sometimes seems awkward and flustered around crowds."

Kiyotaka slightly sneaked his hands towards Horikita's and slightly tightened it into a comfortable grip, as the girl sighed in relief before sending a thankful gaze to Kiyotaka for covering her slip up.

"But, why did they isolate Horikita-san? She is so nice and beautiful? Wouldn't most guys fall in love with her?"

Horikita weakly chuckled at Satou's words before shaking her head on both sides.

"Well....A couple years back I was really rude and blunt. So, when guys proposed to me, I rejected them pretty badly. And my uncooperative nature made my classmates treat me like an empty shell, someone who was not worth to be looked upon.

I look back on the sight and curse to my younger self....Since the whole situation was my fault."

'Even though the story she is telling is a complete lie, all the feelings in her words are real and are coming deep from inside her. The actual anger and regret that she has on herself is dangerous....It is very self destructive..'

Horikita who was looking at the ground while clinching both of her fists then let out a surprised gasp as Matsushita and Satou both enveloped her in a small hug, causing her to widen her eyes and flail her hands awkwardly not knowing what to do...

"U-ummm-

"It's alright, Horikita-san. I know it must feel awful to be all alone for 3 whole years, not having anyone to speak to....

The pain you felt must be excruciating.....But don't worry, you now have us...Even if you sometimes talk rudely and bluntly, we would not leave your side. So, don't hate yourself and try to change into someone you are not. We will accept you, regardless of how you act.

No one deserves to get bullied...It's absolutely horrible."

"Some people do deserve to get bullied Matsushita, like bullies themselves, criminals."

'And Kushida....'

"Don't ruin the mood with your facts Ayanokouji-kun and join us

as well, Ayanokouji-kun. The hug feels incomplete without you."

"Nope I won't. If by mistake, I touch one of your breasts, I would be labelled as a pervert. I am someone who always plays the game safe. So, count me out."

Hearing the irony behind his words, all three of the girls chuckled as Kiyotaka started walking away from the scene.

"This is now the start....I broke the shackles of the past which was holding you back...and now you need to grab the perfect opportunity and be better all by your own efforts, without my help..However, you don't even need one for now, since you already are capable enough and you now have 2 allies who would be by your side, no matter what.

Rejoice Horikita Suzune, I wonder what your next step would be....'

End of Chapter 46

Words : 2972

We are finally making some signings ffs. Finally we got Eriksen and Malacia. Let's just hope Manchester United doesn't lose CR7 and we are getting a great season under Erik Ten Hag.

Hearing the salty Liverpool fans giving so many excuses is so entertaining. First losing the champions league final and now 4-0.... □□

□

Anyways hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. We are close to get 150k reads and 10k votes, so let's complete both of them at the same day.

That's all for this chapter. See ya.

Chapter 47 : Meritocracy

Season 2 : Chapter 14

After his conversation with Horikita and co. Kiyotaka was on his way towards a room that he would have to visit quite frequently in the coming future.

That is the Student Council Room.

He already made an appointment with the Elder Horikita that morning, who notified him that he can make some time after school ends.

Kiyotaka politely knocked on the door, which was soon opened by Tachibana Akane, the secretary of the Student Council.

"What do you want, guy who revolves around Suzune-chan?"

"How rude of you to speak to your future colleague like that. You wound my heart, Tachibana-Senpai."

"Whaa- future colleague?"

Her eyes immediately widened in confusion as Manabu Horikita took off his earphones before directing his gaze towards the door.

"Who is it, Tachibana?"

The purple haired secretary looked back and answered with a small hint of annoyance behind her words.

"The brown haired brat who always follows Suzune-chan is saying that he is our future colleague. What a rude student, can't even respect the dignity of the prestigious Student Council of such a dignified institution. "

"Did you really say all those things naturally, or was it something you wrote beforehand? You seemed to say all that way too quickly. Scary."

"Huh?!"

Manabu Horikita chuckled slightly as he recognized the monotone voice of the protagonist of the story.

"He is not lying Tachibana. Bring him inside, I asked for his presence."

She immediately looked back at him with shock.

"Are you serious?"

This time however, the lighter atmosphere around Horikita Manabu shifted to that of a cold and serious one as he looked at her coldly.

"Are you trying to imply that I'm lying?"

"N-no of course not."

"Then please bring him here."

"R-right Horikita-kun. I apologise. "

She gave him a small bow to which Manabu's eyes softened before he gave her a nod.

"It's alright. Mistakes happen. "

"Yo President. "

Before Tachibana could bring him, Ayanokouji however walked inside the room with a lazy expression on his face as he greeted the Student Council President with a small wave, immediately intensifying Tachibana's frustration, however she remained quiet to herself since Ayanokouji was Manabu's guest.

"You are 2 minutes and 27 seconds late from our scheduled time, Ayanokouji. Didn't take you as a tardy person."

"Well sorry for helping your awkward sister in making friends and trying to develop her further. Basically doing the job that you, her brother, should do."

Tachibana immediately gasped in shock at the rude way this first year boy of Class-D was addressing the Student Council President.

However what was even more shocking to her was that Manabu, instead of getting angry, just let out a small smirk, as if he was enjoying the situation.

"Have my gratitude for looking after my sister then. Should I give you some points as a monthly fee for babysitting her?"

"How sly of you to dump the whole responsibility on me, Horikita-Senpai. I'm not taking you up on your offer. Your sister, your responsibility. "

"You know when I first met you, I would've never thought you would give off this much sass."

"You can't judge a book by its cover, I guess. Also by spending time with your sister so much, I unconsciously developed a reflex of talking back."

"So, at least you are getting something out of it. That's all that matters then."

"How annoying. Both of you Horikitas are very stingy. Do you have any idea what she did? She had the audacity to get rid of all the chocolates I stored in the fridge and replacing them with her home cooked meal. And when I confronted her about it, all she gave me in response was a smug smile and instead of apologising, she demanded a thank you."

"Seems like a good decision to me. Suzune's cooking is quite good I must say, so you should feel proud that my sister is offering to cook for you."

"Wow. Now I can understand where Horikita gets her bro-con

behaviour from. There seems to be not much difference between the both of you, huh? A bro-con younger sister and her sis-con elder brother. And I have to deal with you both...How troublesome."

Trying to show his exasperation, Kiyotaka clicked his tongue while shaking his head dismissively.

"Horikita-kun's 'GUEST', do you want some tea?"

Tachibana Akane once again spawned out of nowhere and directed her gaze towards Kiyotaka with a very 'peaceful' smile.

"I'm good. Thank you for your humble offer though, I appreciate it, Tachibana-senpai."

Kiyotaka's overly respectful response elicited a small hmph from the purple haired loli, who then directed her gaze towards the elder Horikita, although with much less intensity in her eyes.

"What about you, Horikita-kun? Do you want some tea?"

"Not really. By the way, you can leave for now, Tachibana. Please come to the Student Council Room tomorrow early in the morning since we have the meeting about the Class-D matter. "

"Alright. I'll see you tomorrow then."

Slinging her bag over her shoulders, Tachibana Akane walked out of the Student Council Room as Kiyotaka sighed in relief.

'She is not really that troublesome or annoying, however I'm thankful that it's just me and Horikita-senpai who is having the conversation, instead of a third party joining in it.'

"So, what did you want to discuss Ayanokouji? I assume it's something serious."

"Not really. I was just curious about some matters for which I need to ask you some questions."

"I'll answer them to the best of my abilities then. Say, what question do you have in mind?"

"Why do you want me in the Student Council?"

"Who said that I wanted you? You are the one who wants to join the Student Council no?"

"The Student Council President Manabu Horikita rejected Ichinose Honami, Leader of Class-B as well as Katsuragi Kohei, Leader of Class-A only to give those spots to his own sister and her friend, both of whom are Class-D students. I want to know why is that?"

"Well, I deem both of you more worthy of the position instead of them. Also, it doesn't matter which class someone is if it's just the first few months. There are a lot of unpredictable things which happen in this school where a lot of Class ascend while a lot of them descend."

"Don't play ignorant with me, Senpai. I admit that I do want to join the Student Council. However if you don't tell me the reason

why you want me in it, then I wouldn't join it. I need to atleast have the information of the wild den I'm about to enter, don't I?"

Manabu Horikita sighed to himself before looking at Kiyotaka straight in his eyes.

"Very well, I'll tell you the reason. The main problem is Nagumo Miyabi, the Vice President of the Student Council. I need to give you a little context at first before telling you why I need you.

As you know he entered ANHS last year, he quickly dominated the competition, I thought he would be a worthy successor.

However, by the middle of the school year he had betrayed our ideals, he unified all students of his grade with a promise that the strong would rise to the upper classes.

But the problem is that this is impossible, he promised them an ultimate meritocracy, he even forged a lot of alliances in order to pay for a few selected students to go to class A.

What I believe is, class competition is the core of this school. It's what allowed me to grow a lot, even though our Class never dropped from the Class-A position."

"I see...So, Nagumo's ideal is making the whole institution turn to that of meritocracy...The strong rules while the weak has no place to stay...Which results in turning this whole situation from that of unity and teamwork to individuality and selfishness huh...."

"I don't disagree with what he is planning to do, Horikita-senpai."

"Huh?"

He immediately widened his eyes in shock as he couldn't believe the words, Kiyotaka uttered.

"What do you mean, Ayanokouji?! He is planning on destroying this whole school's legacy only because of what he thinks would be better."

"You are not seeing the big picture, Horikita-Senpai. You are way too close-minded about this school and your ideals, that you just can't seem to accept that someone wants to change it. Kind of hypocritical, coming from someone who wanted his own sister to chage."

Manabu's eyes narrowed in anger however he sighed to himself before composing himself.

"I'm sure you will explain to me why you think this school turning to that of Meritocracy is better. You are not someone to say whatever you want after all. So please explain."

"What you are more concerned about is the 3 years of this school, however you are not seeing the big picture, Horikita-Senpai. Imagine a completely weak and worthless Student, who got carried by his or her own class straight to A and got his desired job, without working hard.

Now he got the job, which was the reward he got from passing as a Class-A student. But do you really think, someone who never had to work hard for three years, by following the coattails of his Leader, would manage to keep such a high profiled job? No. He would soon be kicked out and I doubt by then any other company would accept him.

This school is just for 3 years Senpai. It is nothing but a stepping stone for our future. However you are giving it way too importance."

Manabu concentrated on everything Kiyotaka said, before slumping his head on the desk.

"I understand what you are saying...but still...."

"It's alright, I understand that this must be a hard pill for you to swallow, but this is real life, where the Strong and the cunning are the winners, while those who are weak or good hearted get pushed to the side. That's the harsh truth of reality, unlike anime or manga, here most of the time, the bad guy wins."

With that Kiyotaka stood up from his seat before walking towards Manabu Horikita, who was sitting quietly, lost in his thoughts.

"Although I don't disagree with his ideals, I still find Nagumo Miyabi pretty annoying. So, when I join the Student Council, I'll make sure to knock him down a peg and recreate him as the perfect successor of yours."

With that Kiyotaka gave his hand towards Manabu, who was hesitant for a second, before he shook it.

"Very well. I'll trust you on this matter, Ayanokouji. If you somehow manage to turn Nagumo into truly someone capable, then I would be grateful to you."

"You have my word."

With that Kiyotaka walked out of the room, while Manabu Horikita was sitting quietly in his seat, the brown haired boy's words still lingering in his mind.

'Miyabi Nagumo....Someone who wants the strong to be rewarded while the weak to be punished. Although his method is harsh, I don't disagree with it. Meritocracy is quite an interesting idea, which would make this school much more interesting than before...'

While Kiyotaka was lost in his thoughts, he suddenly spotted a certain someone walk towards the roof, all alone.

'What's she doing here? I thought she was looking for the witness.'

Kiyotaka silently followed her albeit from a distance so that the person he was following has no idea that she had someone stalking him.

'Wait, that sounds a little creepy. I'm not stalking her.....I'm just collecting information.'

Soon the person walked up the stairs and leaned on the closed door of the roof before sighing to herself.

"Once again, I couldn't do it...I thought I can atleast do one thing all by myself, yet I failed again...I truly am useless."

With that she started sobbing while cursing herself as Kiyotaka surveyed each of her actions curiously.

'So this is the mask Horikita was talking about, huh? When the mask is gone, she is nothing but a pitiful girl, drowning in her own self despair.'

Soon, Kiyotaka decided that he heard enough and soon walked up the stairs and sat beside the sobbing girl, who immediately looked up at shock and despair.

"A-ayanokouji ?!"

"Good evening, Karuiwaza. "

End of Chapter 47

Words : 3003

I'm trying something different this story..I've read a lot of stories with Clown Nagumo as well as Annoying Nagumo.... So, I thought why not try to make him better as well as more capable than canon.

And here, Kiyotaka is agreeing with Nagumo's policy since the main reason is he is here to win, unlike protecting his peaceful life like canon.

So expect some fun interaction between Kiyo and Nagumo. I'm already excited to write about those 2 together.

Anyways, we just reached 10k Votes and only 2k Reads away from 150K!!! It's insane tbh. This is my second story to reach the 10k marks and I'm damn proud of it..

Anyways hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.

Chapter 48 : Kei

Season 2 : Chapter 15

"Good evening Karuizawa."

"A-ayanokouji?! W-what are y-you doing h-here?!"

Karuizawa Kei, the girlfriend of the people's person of Class-D Hirata Yosuke, the so-called 'Leader' of the certain group of girls at the moment for some reason was a sobbing mess.

Immediately her eyes widened in shock at the sudden presence as she hurriedly tried to fix her dishevelled hair.

"I think that question should be asked by me. What are you doing here?"

Kiyotaka slightly narrowed his eyes at her as Karuizawa immediately looked away nervously.

Her expression turned from confused to alarmed within a second.

"M-me? I-I was just here to admire the v-view, y'know? T-the others said that from over here you can see the whole campus, b-but it seems that the door is closed. How d-disappointing, haha."

'That's a lie. Her eyes are moving all over the place. Not a single time did she make any eye contact with me. She is fidgeting everywhere.'

"Then what's with that red look in your eyes? You look like you've been crying."

Kiyotaka pointed towards her eyes as she immediately gasped to herself before forcefully rubbing her face to erase any trace of tears from it.

"I-I was n-not crying! W-what a-are you trying to say?! T-that I-I'm some sort of crybaby?! Before that, why are you here? A-are you stalking me? D-don't you h-have your g-girlfriend to spend time with?!"

Karuizawa once again tried to feign confidence by counterasking Kiyotaka a question, who just sighed at her actions.

'Her breathing is all over the place. She cannot say a single sentence without stuttering to herself. I guess I understand why she is so scared at the moment. Her secret being caught by none other than the person who forced himself as their leader. I need to calm her down first, before asking her some questions.'

Sighing to himself, Kiyotaka sat down beside her, Karuizawa immediately recoiled from his body in fear, an observation that Kiyotaka noted in his head.

He then took out a bottle of water from his bag before giving it to a confused Karuizawa.

"Drink the water. You are close to hyperventilating. I already have enough experience with those, I don't want to see you in the same state as well.

Also, I didn't drink the water by touching the mouth of it, so don't worry about any indirect kiss or something. "

"Heh?! That's what you are concerned about?! How gross."

Her retort made Kiyotaka hum to her words as she slowly but cautiously opened the lid of the bottle, before drinking it.

'At least she didn't stutter this time. Acceptable.'

Kiyotaka then took out 2 pieces of Sandwich and offered one to her.

"Want one? It's pretty good."

"N-no I'm fine."

Immediately her stomach growled as a pink blush of embarrassment adorned her cheeks, while she noticed Kiyotaka sending an amused stare at her, making her feel annoyed.

"D-don't stare at me."

"But you look funny. I never thought that I would see the ever strong Karuizawa Kei so embarrassed and shy. Still don't want one? I'm offering you the Limited Edition Sandwich made by none other than The Horikita Suzune. If you reject it, quiet frankly, you are missing out."

"Hnggg, you are annoying y'know? Fine then, give it to me!!"

She immediately snatched the sandwich from his hands, before taking a small bite from it.

Immediately her face was filled with euphoria as Kiyotaka could see imaginary cherry blossoms falling around her.

Her tearstained face then gained a small glow of excitement as she hungrily started munching at the sandwich he gave him.

'She must have been hungry for a while....I wonder why she is all alone here though..'

"It's pretty good isn't it?"

"Hmm."

As her mood got slightly better in comparison to a couple minutes ago, and she was at least comfortable enough to respond to him, Kiyotaka decided to ask the questions lingering in his mind.

"So, what are you doing here all alone? Also, I don't want any excuses this time."

"I told you didn't I? I was just here to admir-"

However her words stopped in her throat as Kiyotaka slightly glared at her, reminding her that he is the one who is having the control of the conversation, not her.

"I think I said no excuses Karuizawa."

"Tch, why do you care anyways? Mind your business."

Once again she tried to push him away while desperately hiding the fear and anxiety that was slowly approaching her mind.

Kiyotaka however didn't move from his place and only stared at her further, causing her to shift uncomfortably.

"Of course this is my business. As the Leader of Class-D, I can't stand to look at one of my classmates crying all by herself."

"That's a lie....I can see it in your face that you have no such compassion for me."

Karuizawa nervously grumbled to herself while holding both of her arms as Kiyotaka raised his eyebrows in surprise.

'Oh? That's....convenient. Very well then...'

"You are completely correct Karuizawa. I don't honestly care about any of you guys. The only thing I care about is reaching Class-A...and that is why I want to know why are you so stressed? Of course if you don't want to say it, then I don't care. Bask in your suffering, I guess."

Kiyotaka stood up and slowly started walking away as Karuizawa looked at his retreating figure confusingly, since she didn't expect him to let go so easily. However just before he was about to take a turn, Kiyotaka looked back and gave her one final word.

"However, let me give you a warning Karuizawa. The way you are acting with Shinohara and others, while subtly trying to bully the socially inept and weak students, stop it before it gets messy."

The blonde haired girl immediately widened her eyes before looking down at her lap in shame and frustration.

"You think I don't know about that? I know exactly what I am doing."

'Oh? She is talking now....Let's take a U-Turn.'

Kiyotaka immediately turned back and walked towards Karuizawa and once again sat beside her, as the girl was still looking frustrated.

"And? If you know exactly what you're doing, then why are you continuing it?"

"The strong rules over the weak, while the weak suffers....isn't that how society works?"

"Debatable...but not exactly wrong."

"I know that. I suffered from the other side of it, so I know what it feels to be oppressed."

'I see.....So, the same case as Horikita huh...'

"So, if you know what it feels on the other side, then why are you continuing on doing it?"

"It must be done for my survival. I must project myself as

someone strong. I'm doing this all for my gain. Because in the end, I'm nothing but a selfish fool. How disgusting of me, right?"

Karuizawa Kei at that moment didn't realise she made a grave mistake.....or maybe not, by unconsciously showing her real self to Kiyotaka, who looked like he didn't care for her story in the slightest.

'At that moment, Karuiwaza Kei slowly started opening up about her other side...The real self of her behind that shallow mask of a selfish,spoiled, pompous girl who always clinged on Hirata, was nothing but a pitiful, weak girl who suffered from bullying.'

"So, from what you are saying is, you suffered from bullying from all this time, and so, when you joined this school, you wanted to forget about the past,make yourself strong by 'Bullying the weak students' and basically try to be the Madonna of the class, only so that you don't get bullied huh?"

Her eyes widened in shock and fear as she couldn't believe what he said..

"H-how do you know that I was bullied?"

"I just made an assumption based on the words you said before, however you confirmed it by yourself. Thanks for that, Karuizawa."

She immediately clasped her mouth while her eyes started watering, not believing that she unconsciously ranted about her real self, to none other than the Tyrant of Class-D, who is known for toying with everyone.

'Out of all the people, why did it have to be him?!'

Her breath hitched yet again, as her eyes dilated. She clasped both side of her in shock and despair as the boy beside her only gave a knowing look.

At that moment, Karuizawa Kei started suffering from a nervous breakdown.

"Calm down, Karuizawa. I will not share your secret with anyone else."

'Of course, that was a lie. I have acquired quiet some knowledge that could literally ruin her life for these three years. However, it doesn't hurt to feign ignorance.'

Kiyotaka slowly put the palm of his hand over Karuizawa's shoulder who instantly tried to move away from him in reflex. However the grip over his shoulder gradually increased, as Karuizawa was soon not able to make any movement, causing her to look at him with teary eyes.

"W-what d-do you want with me?"

"I want the truth. I want to know why you are like this. I want to know the story which caused you to be like this."

Kiyotaka took hold of her hand and immediately pushed her over

the wall while surrounding her. Her horror-stricken eyes started filling up with tears as she tried her best to get out of his grip.

"You know this is useless right? After all, no matter how good you act, in the end you are nothing but a pitiful, naive, weak girl. Even though I don't care about you much, I can petty much expose you, don't you think so?"

"Huh?"

"One rumor that Karuizawa Kei, the girlfriend of Hirata Yosuke is nothing but a weak little girl who was bullied and you're entire school life is over. What will you do then?"

The other hand of Kiyotaka slowly went towards her throat as he gripped on it with a light force.

She immediately looked startled with his actions, however it didn't mean much to him, as this time Kiyotaka revealing his true self for the first time to someone as his eyes gained that same murderous look it had as when he nearly killed that 7 time-world champion.

"I'm going to count to 3, Karuizawa. If you don't say anything till then, I promise you, I'll make your life a living **hell**."

His grip over her throat slowly but surely increased overtime, as he was lose to nearly choking Karuizawa at this point.

This time, however, Karuizawa's bright blue orbs turned dull as she sorrowly chuckled to herself. Her mind was overshadowed with fear and helplessness as small drops of tears dropped from her eyes on Kiyotaka's hand. However she never took her eyes away from him and glared at him with full intensity.

"F-fine. I-I'll tell you. L-let me go before that. I-I c-cant breathe."

Obliging her request Kiyotaka slowly removed his grip from her neck as she slowly slumped on the wall, while taking deep breaths to inhale as much oxygen as she possibly can.

Kiyotaka this time further pushed himself onto Karuizawa and held both of her arms over her head, however Karuizawa, whose mind was only concerned with protecting herself, this time didn't care about his close proximity.

"I-I'll not bow down to someone like you. You think you can do whatever you want with me, just because you got hold of my weaknes...It's ok.....this is not the first time I succumbed to forces."

The frustration behind her words were not just directed at Kiyotaka, it was as if she was exposing her raw anger towards the whole world.

Kiyotaka's grip over her tightened as both of them were looking straight into each other's eyes.

"How did you suffer? What were the incidents and memories that tormented you?"

"What.....Of course every incident in my Junior High tormented me. My shoes had tacks put in them. My table drawer was filled with dead animal carcasses. When I go to washrooms I get splashed on with dirty water. My uniforms were written with words like 'prostitute' and 'whore'. My hair was dragged on and pulled.

Punches and kicks were so numerous they were not worth mentioning. Any kind of bullying that you can imagine, I've experienced it. What I said was just a selected sampling. They were so relatively 'gentle' I could laugh. So why don't you start laughing? Laugh at me who was continuously spit on and bullied. Do it, I dare you!!"

Her voice turned more violent and more violent as each second passed by. Slight snot started dribbling from her nose as her whole face was filled with tears.

However no matter her condition, Karuizawa Kei didn't budge at the slightest.

Even after all this, she still managed to muster up her courage and throw herself into battle again. That's commendable.....However, I don't think these are the only things she suffered.

I feel there is something critical that shattered her heart. The abnormal way of showing her terrors couldn't help but make me there is something else behind it. I'm getting the same intuition that I got when Horikita purposefully avoided Kushida. This situation feels similar to that. Karuizawa Kei is definitely hiding something....'

"What you said, were they the whole truth?"

"Huh?"

"What are you hiding?"

"What nothing at all?!"

However for one split second her gaze went towards the left side of her waist which didn't go unnoticed by Kiyotaka as he immediately reached his hand towards it, causing her to look alarmed.

"S-Stop!!!"

However the brown haired boy didn't stop inspite of her protests, as he grabbed her uniform and pulled it up.

And his suspicious were exactly spot on. On her beautiful pale skin, was an ugly scar. A scar that can only be caused by a sharp blade slicing through it.

"So this is it....huh? This is your darkness."

'This scar is not a product of mere kids tormenting each other. A scar this deep must have gravely endangered her life. Even if her past carries such baggage, she still chooses to stand up.

Karuizawa's darkness....Her pupils...They were overlapped with it.'

Kiyotaka released his grip as Karuizawa dropped on her knees as the boy sat in front of her.

"Stop this fake relationship with Hirata. It would be useless in the long run. He is a people's person, someone like him can't help you."

"W-what? H-how did you know—"

"It doesn't matter. As of now, you are nothing but a parasite...And my first job is to change your entire way of thinking."

"H-huh? W-what do you mean?"

"Stay under me. Work along with me. You will be under my protection until you are capable of protecting yourself. Your way of lifestyle will not only put you in danger but you will also drag down a lot of people along with you."

Karuizawa's dull eyes reflected a little bit of light while she clicked her tongue as she tried to express her annoyance however curiosity got the best of her as she looked towards Kiyotaka.

"What do you mean by 'protect yourself?'"

"It's simple. From today onwards you will be under my tutelage. I'll train you, so that you can be strong and have a big reputation all because of yourself, not because you are Hirata's girlfriend."

"Swear on your life you will help me then."

She rose her hands towards him as Kiyotaka gently grabbed it in return.

"You have my word."

End of Chapter 48

Words : 3894

Sigh.....My longest chapter yet...However I wanted to finish it all in one go instead of dividing it in 2 halves since I thought it would be annoying for you guys to wait for 2 days to read the whole thing.

Anyways, what a coincidence. The day the first KiyōKei moment happens in the anime, I wrote their first interaction between them.

Unfortunately no "Spread your Legs" here, since I thought it would be kind of unnecessary and cringe in this scenario.

However I hope the anime doesn't cut it out.

Anyways, I'll make Kei more a little more badass and sick, as compared to the light novels....None of her parasitic behaviour...Though it would take some time, it will be worth it.

Have some faith on the author who made you turn from haters to sims of Horikita ☐☐.

Lol, I'm joking but you know the way I do these things.

Anyways, we finally reached 150k as well as 10k Votes in the same day which was sick.

I thank you guys for taking your times off your day to read this humble story of mine. Each vote and comment of you guys is greatly appreciated by me.

Honestly, I would've quit Wattpad a long time ago, if I didn't have such a good community supporting me. So, I really appreciate every single one of you.

Anyways enough of my corny speech. Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.

Chapter 49 : Queen

Season 2 : Chapter 16

"Ayanokouji-kun?"

"Hmm?"

"I don't think you've noticed yet, but for some reason, Karuizawa-san seems to be staring at you, quite intently I must say. Did you do something to her?"

Hearing Horikita's words, Kiyotaka looked towards the blonde haired girl who immediately looked away from him and pointed towards her phone, gesturing him to check the messages.

Feeling that it would be unnecessary to lie to someone who hangs around most of the time in his room, Kiyotaka decided to give Horikita an honest reply.

So he tilted his head slightly at her, while opening his phone.

"Yes. I decided to train her in studying and self-defence. So, expect her to hang around us starting from now."

Immediately Horikita's eyes narrowed at him as she couldn't comprehend the reason behind this decision.

"Ayanokouji-kun, I'm sorry but I can't seem to find a reason as to why you are training her. Please explain."

However this time Kiyotaka didn't spare a glance at her as he slightly rose his hand gesturing her to wait.

"Wait a second. Someone texted me. I'll be back with you in a second. "

Horikita huffed at his words before slightly pouting at him.

"Fine."

¶ **Karuizawa** : *Where and when should I meet you for our training today?*

Ayanokouji :

Right after the school ends, finish all your goodbyes and formalities with your friends and meet me in my room. Also, just for your knowledge, Horikita will also be there with us.

Karuizawa : *Huh? Why?*

Ayanokouji :

Let's just say, both of you girls need to train. So, I'm not going to waste my time teaching both of you separately. Also, get along with Horikita. Just like you, she also suffered a lot in Junior High.

Karuizawa : *Huh? What do you mean? Explain properly.*

Ayanokouji :

It's her story. I have no right to share it with you. I'm just giving you a warning Karuizawa. Get along with her or you'll regret it.

Karuizawa : *Alright Alright. I got it. Jeez, you're acting like a crazy protective boyfriend y'know? I'll get along with her. Don't worry.*

Ayanokouji :

That's all I need to hear. By the way, don't you dare look at you phone during class.

Karuiwaza : *Yeah Yeah. Don't worry 'bout it*

♪

With that both Kiyotaka and Karuizawa shared one last eye contact as the blonde haired girl gave him a small nod before her eyes went towards Horikita, who immediately felt her gaze and sent an ice cold glare towards Karuizawa who immediately turned around with a small 'eep'.

'Well....There goes the first impressions.'

The black haired maiden then once again directed her gaze at Ayanokouji and looked at him with an extremely bewildered expression.

"Hey...Why is she staring at me now? What is going on? I'm really confused. Please explain me."

'Since they will train together, the least I can do is remove any sense of bad blood between them. First impressions be damned. It's the second impression that counts.'

Yeah.....Keep believing that....Anything to give you as much of a momentary peace.

Kiyotaka lightly leaned on his seat and gestured the black haired maiden to lean closer to him, to which she obliged.

"That girl...I'm not going to say too much, but her past is in a way a little similar to you. And as you've guessed before, under the mask of that rude, bratty high school girl is nothing but a weak, fragile individual."

Horikita's face immediately lost her initial edge as she released a deep sigh while rubbing her forehead.

"Are you serious?"

" Yes. That's why I decided to train her so that she can protect herself, and the reason I'm sparing my time for her is because I believe that her role in this class is quiet big.

Unlike you, who is still not comfortable with crowds, Karuizawa is...And I can use her to maintain the unity among the females in this class. Also, you will join her on the training as well."

"Huh?! Why me? I'm pretty good at Karate. So, I don't need any lesson on protecting myself."

"I don't care about that. I'm not training you to protect

yourself. Yours and her training will be different. I'll train and develop you into someone that most people would be scared to go against. Someone like your brother. What about it?

Also, in my training, I'll slowly develop your mind with lots of quizzes, riddles, theories, anything that can improve your brain. So how about it? Want to be recognized as the Horikita Suzune, instead of just the Student Council President's sister?"

And immediately as soon as she heard the last line, her eyes sparkled as she started nodding her head to his words with an excited and yet determined look in her eyes.

'Just as I expected. Even though she loves and respects her brother a lot, Horikita Suzune is growing tired of being in his shadow for her whole life and wants to make a legacy on her own, similar goals yet in a different way, compared to her brother.'

"Very well then. Acquiring knowledge from someone like you is definitely a very good opportunity for me to grow."

"You praise me way too much Horikita."

She effortlessly ignored his self depreciating comment and continued.

"And if what you are saying is not wrong, then I'll try to get along with Karuizawa-san. I don't know exactly how she feels since our experiences might be different, however the pain and suffering one faces should never be compared. I promise you, Ayanokouji-kun, I'll get along with her as much as I can."

'That's a good enough answer for me. I'm proud of how much you developed Horikita...'

Sometimes I feel jealous of this speedy growth of yours....

Can I develop like you as well?

'I've been here in this school for quite some time....Did I change at all in the slightest? I honestly have no idea...'

"Ayanokouji-kun?!"

Snapping out of his thoughts, he looked towards Horikita who looked at him with a resigned look on her face.

"What were you saying Horikita?"

"I was asking you that are you sure that Karuizawa-san wouldn't try to push me away?"

"Don't worry, she won't. "

"You sound quiet confident with her. For some reason, I'm feeling a little annoyed about it."

She furrowed her eyebrows in mild annoyance as Kiyotaka slightly poked her nose with his index finger.

"Don't be jealous, Horikita. Remember one thing, no matter what happens, you'll always be my queen."

'You are my main piece in this game after all.'

"Q-q-queen ?!"

For some reason unknown to Kiyotaka, Horikita's face bursted into a crimson blush as she covered her face with both of her hands, leaving a confused Ayanokouji.

'What's up with her, now? Why is she blushing?'

However their conversation came to an end as Chabashira-sensei entered the class and started teaching, while that blush on Horikita's face didn't fade away as she quietly muttered only one word in small intervals.

"Queen."

'Everything is so boring nowadays.....'

In the room of Class 2-A, slumping on his desk was found none other than the Vice President of the Student Council, Nagumo Miyabi.

"Oi Miyabi. Why so sad today? Did something happen?"

Breaking him from his thoughts, the blonde haired guy named Miyabi Nagumo raised his head only to find his first friend in this school, talking to him.

Her chocolate brown hair, her sunflower hairclip, her soft supple lips, her beautiful fa-

"Ow."

"You pervert. Were you checking me out once again?"

Immediately Nagumo's head was struck with her fist as she sent him a very 'peaceful' smile which meant hell.

Nagumo immediately raised both of his hands in surrender as he gave her a small smirk.

"Now now Nazuna, it's not called pervng. It's called admiring someones beauty. And that's what I am doing."

"Ughh~ you are so gross. I don't even know why I hang out with you."

"It's because you just can't seem to avoid my charisma. I'm just that awesome, aren't I?"

"You know, you sound just like that Mr. Narcissist who hangs around in the mall with all the third years on his lap."

"Oh? The Koenji guy Huh? He certainly is an interesting person, don't you think so?"

"I guess. But I find the way he talks extremely annoying. He once tried to flirt with me, however instead of praising me, you wanna know what he said?"

"Do tell me."

With an interested smile on his face, Nagumo looked at the chocolate brown haired girl named Nazuna Asahina, who was in her story telling mode at the moment.

She tried her best to mimic Koenji's voice, which made Nagumo chuckle at her hysterics.

"Hello pretty girl, you should thank me for even letting you experience the presence of a divine being like me. And if I get impressed with your words of gratitude, I might show you a fun time in bed....uggh~ how disgusting."

The blonde haired boy leaned his head on one of his hand before letting out a troubled smile.

"Imagine if I said those words to you."

"You don't have to imagine. By the time you utter the first word, you'd be six feet deep under the ground. Want me to show you a demonstration?"

With that she punched one of her fists with her other hand with an excited smile on her face as Nagumo immediately shuddered because of all the Trauma in his first year.

'Oh God....I don't want to remember those hellish times.'

"No, no, you don't have to...Anyways want to hear why I am sad?"

"Not really. I bet it's somehow related to your crush yet again?"

"My crush? Who are you talking about?"

Seeing his confused gaze, Asahina gave him a blank gaze as if saying *'Are you seriously asking me that?'*

"What do you mean 'who' ? You are talking about Horikita-Senpai aren't you?"

Immediately his eyes twitched in annoyance as Asahina let out a smug smile, basking in enjoyment of seeing such a rare expression of the usually smug bastard.

"Y-you!! I told you before he is not my crush. I just admire him which is the reason why I want to defeat Horikita-Senpai."

"Sure sure Mr.Notice me. Tell me something new."

"Don't call me that."

With that Asahina sat on the empty chair beside Nagumo's desk as the blonde haired boy rubbed his temples in annoyance.

"Horikita-Senpai is appointing 2 students of Class-D in the Student Council."

As soon as the words left his mouth, Asahina's mouth opened as she formed an 'O' of surprise.

"Hah?! Class-D?That's surprising. Who are they?"

"One of them is his sister....And before you say anything, don't worry I won't try to flirt with her since it would be weird..."

"I don't know man. You are one hell of a creepy weirdo. You have no limits to your creepiness."

"At this rate, you might make me cry one day."

"Yeah yeah.....so who's the other one."

"The other one.....is the guy who caught my attention."

"So now you are starting to swing 'that' way as well? You truly are an unexpected individual aren't you?"

"Goddamit Nazuna. I'm here trying to be civil and you are just bullying me. You might be the one I expel next time if you bully me like this."

"Oh shush. Without me, no one can keep you in check. So don't even think about expelling me, otherwise I might need to give you another lesson."

With a small smile on her face, Asahina playfully punched his shoulder.

"So, mind telling me about Mr. Hotshot who caught the attention of the Mighty Vice President of the Student Council?"

The sarcastic tone behind her words were quite noticeable as Nagumo released a resigned sigh, not even bothering with the cute abomination in front of him.

"The guy's name is Ayanokouji Kiyotaka. Surprisingly, I actually met him in front of the Student Council Room before he joined. At first glance, he seemed like a pretty dull, boring guy you can find anywhere, however when I checked his scores, you wanna know what I found?"

"Stop trying to create any suspense and just say it."

".....Fine. During the entrance exam, in every single test, he scored 50. Like literally, every single subject it's a perfect 50. And wanna know something even crazier? He dodged every single easy questions and answered all the hard questions with the most insane formulas that I never even knew existed before.....That guy....He is absolutely insane."

While he was saying those words, the competitive aura, which was the main reason behind Miyabi Nagumo's rise, started leaking as the boy let out an excited smile as Asahina just sighed to herself before smiling at the sight in front of her.

"This is so like you...."

"Seems like the hotshot got your attention huh? So, wanna meet him? After hearing your words, I'm pretty excited as well."

"Yeah. Let's go to Class-D and hopefully we can find him over there. I already know Suzune-chan, so let's introduce her to you as well. Not trying to be creepy but she is one hell of a beauty as well."

With that Nagumo walked towards the door with Asahina followed behind him.

"By the way Miyabi, I got a question."

"What is it?"

"Just out of curiosity. Do you think you can win against Mr.Hotshot?"

Hearing her words, Nagumo started chuckling to herself before

shrugging his shoulders.

"Who knows? Let's meet the guy first shall we? And who says he will become my enemy? He is the Student Horikita-Senpai chose. The least I can do is observe him first and then make a decision, isn't that right?"

"Guess so."

With that Asahina Nazuna followed an excited Vice President with a small smile plastered on her face.

End of Chapter 49

Words : 3393

We are only 1 Chapter away from the 50th Chapter!!! Absolutely insane.

Anyways before anything else, I'm actually quite disappointed with some of you guys...

Not pointing any fingers at anyone, however, it's just that...I was really proud of the chapter I wrote before this one...I like Karuizawa Kei and I wanted to include her in the story as well. However, a lot of you really disliked it, which is completely fine with me,since anyone can have their opinions...

However what really made me annoyed is a couple of you readers dm'ed me that I should remove Karuizawa as she is nothing but a waste of words, or you guys will boycott this fic.

First of all, fuck you. I don't care if there are some toxic mf's who don't touch grass get annoyed because of a fictional character.

I write stories mainly for myself to express my imagination and personal wants and I publish it because I want to share it with my readers.

Just because you guys are threatening me of not reading my shit, it won't change the outcome in the end.

So, keep crying.

I may sound incredibly aggressive, but it's just that

I'm just frustrated at both the Kei haters as well as the overprotective Kei simps.

Like guy seriously....don't you have anything better to do than insulting a fictional character.

Go outside and take a walk or find yourself a job ffs. You are annoyed with yourself but at the very least don't try to project that annoyance on other people.

In simple words, I wanna say one thing to toxic Kei haters as well as toxic Kei simps

Touch some grass. You are polluting this beautiful community with your negativity. We are some humble authors who want to write stories. We don't care who you want to be the main girl, which girl you want to see suffer.

To fulfill your sick and disgusting fantasies, write your own stories instead of polluting our comment section and dm's with hate filled comments.

Anyways enough of this. I hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya..

Chapter 50 : Is this Love?

Season 2 : Chapter 17

As soon as the class ended and the lunchbreak started, Kiyotaka gave his black haired seatmate a side glance which immediately caught her attention, resulting her to close the novel she was reading.

"Horikita...."

"Hmm?"

"You guys talked with Sakura yesterday right? What happened over there?"

She released a small sigh before rubbing her temples.

"It's a long story. "

"We have a lot of time."

"Sigh....Well, she is in fact, the witness and she caught a picture of the altercation between Sudou-kun and the Class-C students as well."

"That's a good news. However from the sigh you released, their is some sort of problem, isn't it?"

"Exactly. However her problem is that, inside the memory card of her camera, there are some private pictures of her that she doesn't want to share with anyone. I felt really annoyed with her, but in the end I can't fight back, since it's her own choice to help us or not. So, we persuaded her in helping us."

"I see...It must be something very important for her...So, in the end did you achieve any success in persuading her?"

"Yes we achieved success, which brings us to our next problem. While we were talking, someone bumped on Sakura-san resulting in her camera falling on the ground, causing it to get damaged. "

" It would at least take 3 to 4 days to get it repaired, whereas the trial is in 5 days...."

Kiyotaka leaned on his chair backwards while cracking his shoulder muscles.

"This is quite the troublesome situation, huh?"

"Yeah....but there is something else I'm quite worried about."

"What is it?"

"The person who is in charge of repairing Sakura-san's camera was surveying her with quite a perverted gaze and was pretty forceful in asking her address and phone number. However I put in

my number instead and with one glare of mine, he gave up on her."

"Good job...Did you do the job I asked you to?"

"Oh yeah. I already put a tracker inside Sakura-san's phone, let me share you the link."

"Yeah. After doing that, give me your phone . I'll put on a tracker on it as well."

His words elicited an incredulous gaze from Horikita, who couldn't understand the reason behind this sudden action.

"Huh? Why do you want that?"

"Try to understand this, Horikita. That guy has your phone number and if what you are saying is true, then creeps like him can easily hack someone's device and track them.

I know that you know self defence and you can protect yourself, however there always should a back-up plan, isn't that right? If you are in trouble, one call and I'll know your location."

Hearing his words, Horikita played all the possible calculations in her mind before nodding to his words.

"I understand from where you are coming from. Very well then Ayanokouji-kun, here's my device."

With that Kiyotaka snatched her device from her and started typing on it, as Horikita sent him a gaze filled with gratitude and happiness.

"You know? I'm actually quite glad that you care about my safety this much. It gives my stomach the flutters."

"I guess you are falling in love with me, Horikita. I read from the internet that this is how humans feel when they experience love for the first time."

Immediately her face bursted out in a blush as she huffed at him before looking away, trying to hide her red face.

"W-what are you even reading from the internet? You're just a pervert aren't you?"

"You can think whatever you like. I'm just a hormonal teenager, similar to you. So it's common for me to have those kind of thoughts."

".....Sometimes you are way too blunt with your words, Ayanokouji-kun."

"Sorry if that annoys you."

"N-no don't apologise...*it increases your charm after all.*"

Her light whisper however drowned amongst the chatter of the whole class, not reaching Kiyotaka's ears.

"Did you say something?"

"Nothing."

With that Horikita looked at him with one small smile before lingering in his thoughts...

Is that really what they call love? I have no idea about this phenomenon.....Am I really in love with Ayanokouji-kun? But...I'm not a very nice person to create a relationship with....I am very rude and a very weak, fragile human being who would be of no use in the futuree.....Does someone like me even deserve lo-

You are strong Horikita....You are really strong...Still moving forward and pushing yourself despite such a thing, I really respect that.

I wil not let Kushida touch even a single strand of your hair....I promise that... '

Horikita then clenched both of her fists...

"That's right.....

Don't make things complicated with your self-deprecating thoughts....Suzune. Remember what he said to you....That's why all you have to do is make yourself stronger and smarter so that you don't have to always rely on him.....

As for the matter of love, instead of your mind creating these ugly delusions.....Just let your instincts work on its own...Don't forget that it was your instincts that played the most important role behind your survival during your Junior High..

If I really love Ayanokouji-kun....Then so be it. I love him...But I'll earn that love...I'll be a person, whom Ayanokouji-kun would not be ashamed to call his partner. I'll be the person who will lessen Ayanokouji-kun's burden...I'll save him from the pain and suffering that he recieved..

Even though I have no idea of what he went through, I will still do my best to help him in every scenario just like he helped me.'

Releasing one last sigh, Horikita dropped her head on the desk.

.....You have a lot of work to do, Suzune. Prepare yourself.'

Soon, both Nagumo and Asahina found themselves infront of Class-D as the blonde haired boy gave her a small smirk.

"Ladies first."

Asahina rolled her eyes before walking infront of him and getting her hand on the door handle, as she gave the boy beside her a side glance.

"Why don't you show me this respect all the time? Otherwise my hand wouldn't get this sore from beating you all the time."

"Be careful with your words, Nazuna. We don't want our dear kouhais to hear that you are a domestic abuser, isn't that right?"

"To become a domestic abuser, I need to be your wife first. Are you trying to imply that you want to marry me?"

Asahina immediately narrowed her eyes at him and looked at his eyes with an almost predatory gaze, which screamed danger.

However Nagumo Miyabi isn't the Vice President of ANHS for nothing. He is not a scaredy cat. Despite the numerous times he recieved abuse from his brown haired acquaintance, the boy didn't forget his routes and stayed as the smug cocky bastard that he always was.

So just as expected from him without any inch of fear, the blonde gremlin let out another cocky smirk while shrugging his shoulders.

"I mean.....I'm not opposed to make you my wife as long as you follow my commands. What about you? Want to marry me?"

"Over my dead body. If we somehow get married in the future at first I'll strangle you to death to end my suffering and then I'll hang myself with a noose so that I'm not labelled as a criminal. Isn't that a good idea?"

While she was saying these words, the ever present smile on Asahina's face got more jolly as compared to usual, resulting in Nagumo getting chills across his whole body.

"H-hehehe Nazuna, you love making jokes don't you? Don't worry, I find them pretty funny, just tone down on the death threats please."

"....Who says that I am joking?"

'God.....somebody help me.'

Trying to get himself away from this ugly situation, Nagumo gestured her to open the door to which Asahina obliged as they immeidately started surveying among the students to find their desired target.

"Hey, how are we going to find the hotshot? Tell me about his physical features idiot."

"Brown hair, boring face. Try to look out for tha-oh there he is flirting with Suzune-chan. "

"Goddamit. I can already see you guys becoming friends.It seems like both of you have crushes on the respective Horikita's."

"Oh shut up."

With a huge show of confidence and authority, Nagumo then opened the door and walked inside Class-D with an almost regal aura that made all the students look towards him.

"Hey, who is that?"

"Isn't that the Vice President of Student Council?"

"What's someone like him doing here?"

"He is more handsome in comparison to the pictures isn't he?"

"I bet he is here to see me."

"Tch, disgusting. Fawning over me like I'm sort of god. This is why I hate these weaklings. They have no class and dignity at the slightest, and the best they can do is leech off of all the hardwork the actual talented students produce and then take all their credit for themselves. Bunch of

mindless sheeps.'

Nagumo snapped out of his thoughts when he noticed the curious gaze that the man of the hour, Ayanokouji Kiyotaka was sending him while sitting on his chair. Beside him, Horikita started glaring at Nagumo as if she was an angry cat who will attack anyone who interrupts them at that moment.

'Oh dear, I apologise for interrupting your flirting girlie but unfortunately I need to assess your boyfriend. So, please don't kill me, I already have one scary female who is ready to torture me to death. I don't need another one.'

Nagumo got shivers yet again as he felt that predatory gaze of Asahina, who was standing outside the classroom.

Ignoring her menacing presence and wearing his ever usual cocky smirk, Nagumo then walked towards the end corner of the room while trying to ignore the glare of Horikita-senpai's little sister which was gradually getting colder every second.

Soon, he stood in front of the brown haired boy, who looked at him with a clueless gaze.

"Is there something I can help you with?"

"You see, Ayanokouji-kun. It seems like we both started on a rough path. So why don't we introduce ourselves once again, and start a new path, filled with happiness and power."

Like a Messiah he spread both of arms, trying to look cool, however all he got in response was a disinterested look from Kiyotaka.

'Sheesh, tough crowd. '

"Excuse me, but who are you? I have no idea who you are."

Kiyotaka decided to feign ignorance as Horikita immediately covered her mouth to stop her incoming laughter, as both of Nagumo's eyebrows twitched in annoyance, however we released a small bit of air before smiling at him.

'Calm down Miyabi. He is just testing your patience....Don't give in to his wants.'

"It's alright. That's why I am here, to introduce myself so that both of us can get acquainted with each other. Would you like to join me and a friend of mine for lunch? Of course, your girlfriend is included as well."

Hearing his words, Kiyotaka immediately looked at Horikita, who widened her eyes before scoffing at him.

"Why are you looking at me?"

"Want to go with me alongside Mr.Vice President? I'm pretty sure he referred to you as my 'Girlfriend'."

"So....w-what? It's not like I actually am."

However as she said that, Kiyotaka looked at her with an empty

expression for a while, before sighing to himself.

"I see. It seems like you have a problem with being my girlfriend. I'm sorry for bothering you, Horikita. "

With that, Kiyotaka got up from his seat however his sleeves were tugged by the black haired maiden who was glaring at him with a small blush.

"Please don't jump to conclusions like that. I would also go with you."

As if he was never sad, his usual expression returned in a second as he radiated a smug aura, causing Nagumo to chuckle at the sight.

'What a dangerous bastard.... Tying with this girl's heart as if it was nothing...I can already feel that you are about to make this boring life of mine a lot more entertaining, Ayanokouji. '

"Let's go."

With that Nagumo sent them one last smirk before both of them went towards the cafeteria, readying themselves for a very interesting conversation, on basis of which their whole future in this school depends."

End of Chapter 50

Words : 3097

Finally we are now at Chapter 50....What better way to celebrate this achievement than adding some fluff, developing the romance a little bit as well as some Nagumo greatness.

Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. At first I thought about making a 50 chapter special but later refrained from it, since it would destroy the continuity of this fic.

And now for the thing some of you guys were excited about..

My review of Season 2 Episode 3

Before anything, I'll say it first. I'm reviewing it as anime only and not comparing it with the light novels unlike previous chapter since I realised that comparing all the time takes away the enjoyment.

So, as an episode I'll give it a solid 9.5 or even a 10/10

Easily the Second Best Episode of Classroom Of The Elite anime (S1 Ep12 still tops it).

The scene we were waiting for finally got animated and I was so glad that they didn't cut it out..

I felt genuine discomfort and chills during that whole sequence of Kei getting bullied and then Ayanokouji arriving and making the situation worse for her.

It made me want to give Kei a hug, however I'm pretty sure Kiyoon wouldn't like that.

The only negative are that they didn't reveal Hornykouji and didn't spend too much time on Ichinose sleeping. I wanted to see some thighs goddamit!! Scenes were cut ...But whatever.

Anyways as an anime arc, this was decent.

The downsides were they didn't put any focus of the Zodiac Exams as well as the Dragon Group, but the upsides were that, these 3 episodes had quite some good moments and they were really entertaining.

Anyways that's all for this chapter. See ya.

Chapter 51 : Failure

Season 2 : Chapter 18

"So....what do you want with me, Mr. Vice President?"

Kiyotaka quietly took a sip of the coffee he was drinking while addressing the boy who was sitting right in front of him. Nagumo however shrugged his shoulders with a sly smile on his face.

"Nothing too important to be honest. I just wanted to get acquainted with a fellow colleague of mine."

"That's a lie. Even though we only had one conversation, I already have the idea that all you can do is manipulate everyone you see."

Horikita immediately glared at him like an annoyed cat while shifting closer towards the sitting figure of Ayanokouji like a protective lioness protecting her cub.

Asahina immediately chuckled at Horikita's words before lightly slapping Nagumo's back.

"It seems like she immediately figured out your actions in just one conversation, Miyabi. Little sister already is impressing me more than her elder brother."

Although Horikita didn't like the brown haired senpai in front of her, she couldn't help but blush at the compliment she received.

Nagumo however frowned at Horikita for a second before looking at Asahina with an irritated smirk.

"Now now Nazuna, I don't think it's a good idea to compare Horikita-senpai with his cute little imouto.. After all, one of the two is the Student Council President, while the other is a student of Class-D. There are levels to this. So comparing Suzune-chan with the person whose shadow she is trying to chase is quite humiliating for Horikita-senpai isn't it?"

Horikita clicked her tongue in annoyance as Kiyotaka immediately glanced at the smug Vice President who was smugly smirking to himself, enjoying putting the little sister in her place.

"This guy.....He is trying to provoke and annoy Horikita, so that she loses her composure and shows him her weakness."

"I advise you to stop talking so rudely with my friend, Nagumo-Senpai. If you don't, then I'd be forced to leave this conversation and walk away."

"I was not trying to be rude to her, Ayanokouji. However if you get offended by my words, then I truly am sorry, Suzune-chan."

"Don't you dare call me by my first name. Hearing it come out of your mouth disgusts me."

Looking at Nagumo, as if he was nothing but a piece of dirt, Horikita took out her lunchbox and took out two pieces of Sandwich giving one of them to Kiyotaka, who graciously recieved her cooked meal.

Nagumo, however released a deep sigh to himself cursing himself mentally for messing up their second introduction yet again.

'Goddammit Miyabi....You just had one job.'

"You know you were doing good till your ego took over your sense of rationalism, Miyabi. I already warned you before to not take every single thing to heart."

Asahina whispered those words in his ears before getting back to her initial position while scrolling her phone.

"Keep quiet Nazuna. I know exactly what I am doing."

"Very well."

Rolling her eyes, Asahina once again concentrated on her phone, while Kiyotaka this time looked at Nagumo with a serious look in his eyes, causing the blonde haired boy to stiffen up for a second.

"I'm pretty sure you didn't call us just to be acquainted Nagumo-Senpai. Please tell me the real reason why you are wasting our time. We could have gotten acquainted in the Student Council Room as well."

"Very well....I just want to ask you one question....What's your goal in this school? What do you wish to achieve?"

"Why do you care about my goals? Don't you have something better to do?"

"I do....however I want to assess myself whether you are to be my enemy or my ally. So tell me, Ayanokouji, what do you wish to achieve in this school?"

Hearing the question, Horikita also looked towards the brown haired boy in curiosity while Asahina, who didn't care about a single thing, was playing some games in her mobile.

"My goal as of now is to reach and graduate as a member of Class-A."

"Hoh?! That sure is difficult. Do you truly believe that a student of Class-D like you would be able to graduate as a Class-A student?"

Horikita immediately grabbed Kiyotaka's hand and increased her force on it, trying to keep her frustration in check.

'I guess I should buy her a stress ball of her own, because even if this is not painful, it's certainly not a pleasant feeling, however holding hands with Horikita for some reason feels comforting.'

"This same Class-D student is becoming a member of the Student Council along with another Class-D student."

You can give an excuse that we got those place through the means of nepotism, however just by saying that, aren't you insulting the President that you so-called 'admire' ?"

Ayanokouji's words were as cold as ice since he was not a fan of someone destroying his peaceful time during lunch, only to be interrogated.

Hearing his words, Nagumo nodded for a second.

"That's true....So Ayanokouji, just for confirmation, do you truly believe that you are going to graduate from Class-A? "

'I want to know your resolve. Don't disappoint me.'

"As I said before, this is not a wish nor a prediction, this is a spoiler, Senpai. And want to know another spoiler? Soon, the Presidency spot that is now occupied by Horikita-Senpai will be mine....Have a good day."

Kiyotaka got up from his seat and gave his hand towards Horikita, who immediately grabbed it and stood up as well.

"Let's go Horikita."

"Yes. We wasted enough time on this stupid discussion. I would rather spend the remaining free time we are getting without seeing his ugly face."

'Oof, little sister is definitely harsher than her brother. I have to give it to you.'

With that the both of them didn't even spare a glance at their senpais and walked out of the cafeteria as Asahina took out her earphones and looked at the now tired out Nagumo with a smug expression on her face.

"Looks like you got a declaration from the first year, Miyabi. What will you do now?"

Nagumo, however, let out a tired smile before shrugging his shoulders.

"He is a Class-D student. His goal is to reach Class-A. However, as of now, his full potential and output is being limited because of the defectives and the idiots of his class, isn't that right?"

"So? What are you planning to do?"

"I'm going to help him if he ever requires it and acquire him as my ally. Just one conversation with him, and I realised that he is not someone that I could toy with and get rid of any time I want, like the others.

The only thing I want to do is to make him my ally for now.... In terms of being the President, there's no doubt that I would win since the whole 2nd Year and some 3rd Years are under my control.

If he agrees with the way I'm planning to change the ideals of this school, then I will appoint him as the Vice President and take him as my successor so that he can be the President in his third year.

Don't you think it's a good idea?"

"To be honest, I would've thought you would just destroy him and his class since he challenged you. I can't believe a competitive asshole like you is refraining from this challenge."

"It's alright....He is still in his first year, and has no influence as of now, except for his clingy girlfriend who flirts with him...If I truly want to compete with him, I want to fight him at his best..and then defeat him..."

"Wow....you truly are a stubborn bastard y'know?"

"That's why you love me. You just don't want to admit it."

"Oh shut up for fucks sake. I would rather slit my own throat and kill myself rather than being with you."

She uttered all those words with her ever pleasant smile on her face, which caused Nagumo to feel another shiver.

'Is this what they call a violent tsundere? Truly a terrifying creature.'

Nagumo yet released another small sigh before smiling at her.

"Let's just go back to the class, shall we? This incident was definitely a failure."

"Hey, look at the bright side. At least you didn't get your ass kicked in front of everyone. "

"I hate you, Nazuna."

"Fuck you too, Miyabi."

End of Chapter 51

Words : 2226

Kiyo and Nagumo's relationship status : Indifference/Interested

Horikita and Nagumo's relationship status :

Hates the latter/ Doesn't really care about the former

Kiyo and Asahina :

Indifference/Curious

Horikita and Asahina :

Acquaintances

Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. It was a small one in comparison to the previous ones however I didn't want to fit anything else since it would've been way too long.

Give me some ideas that you would like to be implemented in the future chapters.. I might add them if I like the idea.

Anyways, that's all for this chapter. See ya.

Chapter 52 : Flaws

Season 2 : Chapter 19

After their conversation with Nagumo and Asahina, a quiet Kiyotaka and a slightly irritated Horikita were walking back to their class, while an unusual veil of silence prevailed between them. However, Kiyotaka noticed the black haired maiden looking very absent minded for some reason.

In order to get her attention, he slightly poked her cheek, causing her to look towards him.

"Are you good? You are looking like you're in deep thought."

"Yeah....I'm alright, however I'm feeling quite confused, to be honest."

"Want to share your thoughts? I might find a solution for your worries."

"It's just that....I have literally no idea why nii-san thought that Nagumo-senpai out of everyone else could've been his successor.."

"I had a discussion with him regarding this matter. He said that, at that time, he was desperately looking for a successor who could carry on the torch of being a well reputable president. However instead of Nagumo-senpai, he didn't find anyone else worthy of that position, while some where not interested.

However Horikita-Senpai had no idea that Nagumo would betray their ideals and form a whole clique consisting of all the Second Years and some of the Third Years and implement his own ideal."

"But! That's not possible!!"

Horikita unconsciously raised her voice, before closing it and releasing a deep breath.

"What's not possible?"

"Nii-san can't make such a big mistake. He can literally feel if a person is capable or incapable within first glance. I can't believe that he couldn't figure out the underlying intentions of Nagumo-Senpai."

Hearing her words, Kiyotaka couldn't help himself but sigh.

'Even though she is developing at her own pace and wants to chase her own dream instead of her brother's shadow, this girl still thinks of her brother as an almighty, invincible being.'

"Then why didn't he figure out the true nature of Kushida and forced you to befriend her?"

Immediately Horikita's eyes widened as she stiffened up, however Kiyotaka had no intention to stop.

"If your elder brother is this capable, then why couldn't he force himself into breaking your 'friendship' with Kushida?"

"T-thats-"

"If he can see through people that easily, then why couldn't he notice all the pain that you hid deep beneath your heart when you first met?"

Unable to form a coherent response, Horikita chose to remain silent as she couldn't refute to his words. Thinking back to his words, she started losing herself in deep thought.

If what he really said is true....Then what's the point of my whole life until now? I promised myself that I won't follow and chase the shadow of nii-san, however that doesn't get rid of the fact that he is my biggest inspiration.

In my eyes he was perfect in every aspects without any flaws...For so many years I tried to nitpick any weakness of him, yet I couldn't find any...

So, why does he have flaws now?

No...he can't make a mistake...There has to be some underlying reason behind it...The brother I know will never make such mist-'

Horikita snapped out of her thoughts when Kiyotaka grabbed her hand and softly squeezed on it, wanting her attention.

"Your brother is not as flawless as you think he is, Horikita. He has a lot of flaws and he makes a lot of mistakes as well...."

And that's exactly the reason he doesn't want you to chase his shadow. That's why he was happy when he heard that you are here for your own future...not because you want to catch up to him..."

One of his hands went to her head as he slowly started patting it, trying to comfort the girl whose whole world seemed to turn upside down.

"Your brother believes that your potential is much higher than his....He knows that once you have developed enough, you would be much more perceptible and won't make the same mistakes he did...."

That's why I am here to help you...Help you become that person that your brother wants you to be. For that you need to trust me....But the most important thing you need to do is trust yourself...Can you do that for me?"

Kiyotaka made his empty voice sound as soft and empathetic as it is humanly possible for someone like him, however that seemed to do the trick, since Horikita nodded to his words silently.

"Good. Now, as for your first assignment, let's go to the special building behind the school today, after class."

"Why?"

"I want to survey the place where the fight took place, and there may be a trick or two that could give us a huge advantage in the trial."

Her eyes immediately wore a dangerous glint as she narrowed them at him.

"And you want me to come up with those tricks by myself, correct?"

"Exactly. I'll just give you some tips. All you need to do is use all the advice you get in your arsenal and come up with a suitable answer. Is that fine with you?"

"I'm fine with whatever you decide. You're ultimately doing this for my own good, so you don't have to considerate of my feelings everytime."

'This makes it easy for me, then.'

"Very well. Let's go back to class, for now. We have around 5 minutes left, I assume."

"Tch, that annoying guy wasted all of our free time because of some stupid conversations. How vexing."

As Horikita grumbled to herself, Kiyotaka give her a side glance filled with mild amusement.

'Yup. She definitely needs a stress ball of her own.'

"Let's go, Horikita. "

"Alright."

As soon as class ended, both of them stood up from their seats and were walking out of the class, however-

"Ayanokouji-kun! Horikita-san!"

Both of them looked back only to find Satou and Matsushita walking towards them.

"What's up?"

"Where are you two going so secretly without telling anyone? Is it a date?"

Matsushita immediately started the conversation with a sly expression on her face, to which Horikita lightly blushed despite keeping her behaviour composed.

"It's not a date. We are infact going to the special building behind the school grounds to do some activities...all alone."

Immediately all three of the girl's eyes widened as they looked at the nonchalant figure of Ayanokouji with shock and disbelief.

Horikita immediately grabbed Kiyotaka's hand to save herself from any further embarrassment this emotionless bastard was bringing upon her, however the other two girls had other intentions.

Both of them grabbed his other hand instead creating a situation where Kiyotaka was standing like a rope in a game of tug of war where all three of the girls were pulling him from both sides.

'Is this the effect of being popular and assertive? Its.....not a pleasant feeling at all. I now understand your pain, Hirata Yosuke, my fellow companion.'

As if realising that Kiyotaka was speaking about him in his mind, Hirata's eyes went towards the brown haired boy as he let out a weak smile filled with sympathy, as if he was conveying the words *"I've been there my friend....All the best."*

Karuizawa, however smugly smiled seeing Kiyotaka suffer to which the boy sighed to himself.

"Instead of trying to play Tug of War using me, can you please tell me why the both of you are pulling me, Satou and Matsushita. "

"No no no, you are not getting out of this Kouji-kun. The way you worded previously made the both of you seem really sus."

"Exactly....I thought we had some special connection, Kiyotaka-kun...Now here you are cheating on me with Horikita-san...How could you?!"

Matsushita raised her voice intentionally to which all the students looked at them....Some of them with jealousy, Indifference, while some of them in amusement.

"Die Ikemen."

"Tch."

"Ssh, don't raise you voice if you dont want to get punched, Haruki."

"Fu~ Ayanokouji-boy, it seems like you are in quite a pickle. Would you like my help in getting these two beautiful girls away from you, so that you can go on a date freely?"

"W-we are not dati-"

"I would really appreciate your help, Koenji."

"Feel grateful that a perfect existence like me is helping you. However since you are someone who is worthy of my praise, I don't mind. Now come over here pretty girls, let me show you a fun time."

"No!!!! Get out you narcissist!!!"

"Someone help!! I'm being kidnapped!!!"

"Hohoho I have no intention of kidnapping you Matsushita girl, in fact you should feel indebted to me for even letting you experience my personal greatness."

"We dont want to experience you crazy bastard!!!"

"Someone help!!!"

However it seemed none of their pleas for help didn't work, as Koenji carried the both of them on each of his shoulders and walked outlike an absolute gigachad.

'This guy truly is random.'

Both Kiyotaka and Horikita looked at one another as let out a troubled smile.

"W-well, at least we didn't experience that much trouble, courtesy of Koenji-kun. Should we go, then?"

"Yep, let's not waste any more time."

'Let's see if Ryuuken can handle the first of the many losses he is about to receive, well enough...'

End of Chapter 52

Words : 2325

Horikita's views on everything related to her life is finally starting to change as she is finally opening her eyes and seeing the reality instead of the facade she created all this time within her mind....

A lot more development will be coming soon, not just her, but plenty of other characters...

Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.

Chapter 53 : Hints

Season 2 : Chapter 20

"It's pretty hot, don't you think?:

"I agree. It was a good decision to bring some popsicles on the way, thanks to that, I'm barely surviving."

Horikita's face was filled with sweat while some pieces of her hair were sticking on her face, although Kiyotaka was not safe from the humidity...His entire back was drenched in sweat and he felt sticky all over his body.

"This weather is pretty abnormal. I guess this is how summer should usually feel, but I didn't think it'd be this hot and humid inside the building. Well.....this is the effect of getting used to air conditioning every day. It feels even hotter because I got so used to the cold air of the A/C. How troublesome."

"What about you, Ayanokouji-kun?"

"I'm already regretting my decision of biting the popsicle this quickly..."

"I warned you not to do it, but whenever you are in front of ice creams and sorts, it feels like you lose all sense of your rationalism."

"Well forgive me for acting like a child, Miss Horikita."

"I would've been more pleased if you actually sounded genuine while saying that."

"Please, I am always genuine. I'm the most honest and truthful, a person can be."

"It's like saying Sakura-san and Koenji-kun's personalities have changed. Absolute bullshit."

He gave her an amused stare to which Horikita just grumbled to herself.

Kiyotaka loosened his tie and opened the top button of his shirt, while Horikita was quietly sucking on her food while surveying every nook and cranny of the area with an inquisitive gaze.

Soon, both of them started walking aimlessly while looking at every single direction of the building trying to find some hints or clues.

"Tell me Horikita....What do you think of this area?"

"It's....pretty isolated and humid. The Home Economic Room and the Audiovisual rooms are rarely used. So, I'd say it's a perfect place to set Sudou-kun up."

"That's not all is it? There is something missing....Why do you think they brought Sudou specifically 'here' of all the places to create such a commotion."

Hearing his words, Horikita put on a thinking expression for a second before giving him a reply.

"Hmm, it's usually extremely hot because of the season. And judging by the heat we are experiencing, I assume that this area has no vents or any open space through which this warm air can leave and cold fresh air can come inside.

And even if there are windows, they are always closed. I guess, since they already knew of Sudou-kun's anger problems, The three Class-C boys brought him here intentionally, riling him up and making him more frustrated because of the heat, because of which Sudou-kun ultimately couldn't contain himself and punched them....."

'Good deduction, however you are still missing something.'

"You are correct about their motives. But is it all?"

His words caused Horikita to raise her eyebrows in confusion.

"What do you mean?"

"Do you really think that was all their motive behind telling Sudou to come here? Think with your brain carefully and look around the whole area for yourself if you want to."

She nodded her head at his words and walked towards each corner and door before she suddenly stopped for a second, before walking back towards the direction, where Kiyotaka was standing.

"There aren't any here."

'There we go.'

"Clarify. What isn't here?"

"The cameras. They are present literally everywhere except the bathrooms and the dorm rooms. It's pretty surprising to see this place of all places not having a single camera...So this is the reason they brought Sudou-kun here, huh?"

"Yeah. It would've been so much easier to prove Sudou innocent if there were in fact some cameras here, am I right?"

".....Yes."

Horikita leaned on the window and looked outside of it, while appearing to be in deep thought, as Kiyotaka was looking at her with an almost expectant gaze.

'I laid all the foundations and hints for you, Horikita. Don't mess it up now and use your brain.'

As if gods answered his prayers, like a sudden lightbulb turning inside her head, Horikita snapped her fingers with an excited glint within those gradient eyes of hers.

Seeing her face, Kiyotaka couldn't help but unconsciously form a

small smirk as he slightly leaned towards her.

"Looks like you got a plan. Wanna share?"

She immediately yanked the boy down towards her level and whispered in his ear.

"I think I understand what you were trying to lead me to, Ayanokouji-kun. "

"And? What do you think should be our next step, Horikita?"

The black haired maiden took a step back and released a small smirk.

"Let's check the price of some CCTV Cameras, shall we?"

"There we go. Good going, Horikita."

"Yes. Let's do that."

With that both of them started walking towards the door, with their next destination in mind, however-

"Hey, you guys. What are you doing here?"

Both Kiyotaka and Horikita turned around towards the source of the voice, not expecting someone to stroll around this area. And the person was none other than the Leader of Class-B, Ichinose Honami. She walked toward their standing figure while Horikita as someone who never met her once, looked on edge.

"Sorry to call you out so suddenly. Do you have some time? Oh, but if you're here on a date, please get out quickly."

Before Horikita could even deny their dating accusations, Kiyotaka spoke up on behalf of her while looking at the strawberry blonde haired girl curiously.

"Or what?"

"Hmm?"

"Why should we get out quickly? Is there any rules stating that we shouldn't be here or that we are trespassing?"

"Well...not exactly, but this is the place where the incident took place right? So, I don't think it's good for you guys to stay here this late."

Horikita immediately released a sigh of annoyance, as Kiyotaka stuffed his hands within the pockets of his uniform.

"If there are not any rules that states that we are trespassing then I don't think you have any right to tell us what to do, Ichinose. After all, you are not the member of Student Council, neither the member of any authorities. You're just the Leader of your class, much like either of us."

"Exactly. So please don't order us around like that."

Hearing Kiyotaka's and Horikita's harsh words, Ichinose couldn't help but let out a troubled chuckle.

"It was never my intention to try to order you both. I apologise if I sounded that way."

"So...what 'business' do you have with us?"

"Business... well, something like 'what are you doing here?'"

"I don't see how it's any of your concerns Ichinose-san. I think it's our personal business and we aren't comfortable to share it with any outsiders, right, Ayanokouji-kun?"

"Exactly. We are here for some matters regarding our class. So, I agree with what Horikita said. I hope you don't mind, Ichinose."

'Not like I care if you do.'

"Hehe well...Since I talked with Ayanokouji-kun before, both of you are from Class-D, correct?"

"And what does that have to do with anything?"

Not wanting to waste any of her time, Horikita acted hostile with Ichinose, who just looked away from her and darted her gaze towards Ayanokouji.

"I thought that there would be something here that would be related to the fight. When I wasn't at school yesterday, it seems like some information about the witness had reached class B. I only heard later that the students of class D were trying to prove him innocent."

"If we're doing investigating here because of the incident, then how does that affect you?"

"Hmm, how does it affect me? ...well, it doesn't. But, I had a few doubts when I heard about the story, and so I decided to come here to check things out. If it's fine with you, would you tell me about the circumstances?"

Horikita immediately got suspicious by her words and narrowed her eyes at her while sending her a cold glare, to which Ichinose rose both of her hands in a surrendering position while quietly chuckling to herself.

"Hehe~ both of you don't have to be so wary of me. I'm just a little curious. When I asked Kushida-san and her friends, I couldn't get the information since Sudou-kun was constantly yelling 'I am innocent.'"

'This is going nowhere.'

Horikita facepalmed with a disappointed look in her eyes.

"I can't believe we wasted this much time just to sate her curiosity. Let's go, Ayanokouji-kun. "

With that Horikita started walking away not even sparing a glance at the confused Ichinose as Kiyotaka turned towards her.

"We have some work to do. So, you can just talk to Kushida alone for the information, Ichinose. Have a good day."

"Wait, Ayanokouji-kun. Us Class-B want to assist Class-D in proving Sudou-kun innocent. Is it fine if I help? I tried already but if

we set up a banner or a poster, we can find more people."

'It would've been a decent idea, however we already have a plan, so it's not needed. However, why does she want to help us? What's her ulterior motive?'

"You don't have to do anything Ichinose. Focus on your own class instead of poking your nose in ours. We may be nothing but defectives but we don't need the pity of 'upper' classes. We are quite capable."

Her face looked alarmed and shocked as she heard his words.

"That was never my intention in the first place, Ayanokouji-kun."

"To be honest, I don't really care what your intention is, but we would rather not accept any help from other classes and be in their debt. Have a good day, Ichinose."

Not sparing her one last glance, Kiyotaka walked away from her towards the standing figure of Horikita who was waiting for him in front of the door, impatiently tapping her foot on the concrete floor constantly.

'It's not like we don't want to align ourselves with any class and just work on our own....I just think that aligning ourselves with Class-B will bring more disadvantages than advantages in the future.

If they don't change their ideals and have the same mentality throughout the year, I have no doubt that they would fall to Class-C and even to some extent Class-D.

Ichinose Honami is a good-hearted and a charismatic person, whom anyone would want to make an ally, however, I have no use for someone like her...

Hopefully this is not a wrong decision of mine.'

End of Chapter 53

Words : 2674

Thanks for all the birthday wishes!! I really appreciate it.

Anyways for this chape we got some Ichinose slander lol. Well, lets not say slander, its just that unlike canon, there's no need for Class-D to align with Class-B here. So, Kiyotaka already ended all the chances of any future alignment between them this quickly.

It doesn't mean that Ichinose and Kiyo's 'friendship' just ended or whatever.

It just means that now Class-B will also be in competition with Class-D. So Ichinose will also challenge Kiyotaka from now on and be extremely competitive.

Anyways as for episode 5 of Classroom of thr Elite

It was pretty good, I guess. Nothing too crazy however not bad. The Start of The Sports Festival was boring for me, so it was nothing too exciting.

However the anime adapted the LN pretty well this chapter, so that's a

plus. Animation was weird but not as worse as episode 2. It was acceptable.

For rating, I'll give it a 6.5- 7/10.

Anyways hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.

Chapter 54 : Embrace

Season 2 : Chapter 21

After checking the prices of the CCTV cameras, both Horikita and Kiyotaka took a break and went inside a cafe, ordering a large parfait.....only for Kiyotaka himself who was partaking himself in completing his food with quite a satisfied look in his face.

Horikita, however just sweatdropped at his actions before drinking her coffee with a small smile.

"So....Ayanokouji-kun how should we pay the price for the CCTV? 30,000 points is quite expensive, don't you think?"

Dropping his spoon on the parfait, Kiyotaka wiped his mouth with a handkerchief before looking at Horikita, who was idly staring at him.

"Hm....We will enlighten Sudou about our plan and take all the remaining points he has to buy the cameras. It's either pay or get expelled . There's not much option left for him."

"But do you really think, someone like Sudou-kun actually has some private points left?"

"He must have some. He took my advice and started conserving points early, adding to that, he is a member of the first team of the basketball club.

I heard that by being a member of the first team, you get around 50k points a month. So he should have enough."

"I see. So, we are not requiring Sakura-san's help for this matter, correct?"

"Yes it's not needed. She seems like she does not want to include herself in this situation because of her own personal reasons, so there's no need for her.

Also, in the trial, even if she serves as a witness, it would have no effect since there won't be much credibility if the witness is from Class-D themselves."

The black haired maiden tapped her fingers on the table with a thoughtful expression before she looked back at him.

"So, we are going to put an end to this matter before the day of the trial, which is the day after after tomorrow, correct?"

"Yes. Let's call the three Class-C boys in the special building by tomorrow evening, before that I'll set up the camera. "

"But how will you call them without appearing suspicious?"

"Who says that I will do all the work?"

Kiyotaka immediately took out his phone and showed it to Horikita who immediately frowned in annoyance looking at the text.

¶ **Ayanokouji** : *Hey slave, do your job and text Ishizaki and the other 2 irrelevant guys who accused Sudou, and tell them that you have something to say to them.*

Duration : After school ends

Location : Special Building

Kushida :

And why should I listen to you? You piece of shit. Why don't you go and suck that bitch Horikita's tits instead of bothering me.

Ayanokouji : *Well, if you don't then I'll show this text to everyone in the class. The angel of Class-D saying such crude words will definitely ruin a little bit of your reputation.*

And I already took a screenshot of our text, so there's no point in deleting the text, Kushida.

Kushida :

Fuck!!!!

Ayanokouji : *Have a good day, my slave.*

Kushida :

I hope you kill yourself. Fuck you Ayanokouji.

Ayanokouji : *As I said before, I won't. I'm not into 2 faced whores who blackmail others of raping them.*

Kushida :

.....

Kushida left the chat

After looking at the 'colorful' conversation of her attempted murderer and the boy she admires, Horikita slapped her head over her forehead.

"Why?.....Just why?"

"What do you mean why?"

"Why are you involving her in this matter? I want nothing to do with her."

"Well....It doesn't matter whether you like her or not, unfortunately. For this situation, Kushida fits the perfect role. Her 'pure' impression definitely won't make the Class-C boys suspicious. Beggars can't be choosers Horikita."

"I get what you mean....It's just that I'm not comfortable seeing the person who tried to kill me interact with the person whom I respect and love."

She lightly whispered her last word, to which Kiyotaka cocked his head at her confusingly.

"What did you say at the end? I didn't hear it."

"N-nothing. Nothing at all."

Horikita lightly blushed, realising her slip up and internally felt panicked, however much to her surprise, Kiyotaka didn't say anything about that and moved on to the next topic.

"Well....as for your concerns you don't have to worry about anything, Horikita. I don't really want to interact or try to make Kushida a better human being, because I have neither any time for her, nor do I really care about her.

She is just like one of those use and throw pens, the ones who go right into the trash after their use is done.

In my eyes, Kushida is nothing more than that. She thinks of herself as someone capable or powerful, however she is nothing but a delusional fraud. And with this action, a little bit of ink has already depleted from Kushida's refill."

His words led to Horikita widen her eyes at shock as she placed the coffee cup on the table.

"W-what do you mean by use and throw? What are you planning to do with Kushida?"

"Why are you asking me that? It's pretty simple isn't it? Once I feel that she has no further use left, I'll expose her true self and get rid of her from this school."

"B-but her expulsion would lead to a huge decrease of Private Points."

"Does it look like I care?"

"Huh?"

"I think I would rather lose 50,100 or 200, I don't know exactly how many points by expelling her early, instead of her betraying us behind our backs and costing us more points."

His harsh and cold words, lapped with nothing but truth, caused Horikita to go silent for a second, before her once shocked and eyes turned into that of bloodlust which surprised Kiyotaka a little bit, causing him to slightly widen his eyes.

I see.... So this is a slight hint of darkness present in the darkest pits of Horikita's heart, huh?"

"Ayanokouji-kun....I have no problems if you expel or get rid of that criminal....I just have one request, will you please say 'Yes'?"

"I will accept, if it's within my capabilities. "

"Then before you expel her, please let me get some sweet revenge on Kushida and let me make her **suffer** by my own hands."

*Now this is the sort of things I wanted to hear about. That's right...Horikita. There's no point in hiding your inner darkness...Instead of trying to forget it, **Embrace** it.'*

The brown haired boy slowly crept his hand towards her cheek

to which Horikita slightly leaned her face on it unconsciously.

"Of course. Have fun with her and do whatever you please with her. If you require some assistance, don't hesitate to ask me."

He finished his words by playing with her silky smooth black hair, to which she provided no resistance, instead kind of enjoying the feeling of his hands twirling her braids.

"Yes, I will. Let's go to your room then. I think Karuizawa-san might be waiting for us."

"Right. I forgot about her."

Releasing a small sigh, Horikita smirked at him before walking away out of the door, while one small moment lingered in Kiyotaka's mind.

"I get what you mean....It's just that I'm not comfortable seeing the person who tried to kill me interact with the person whom I respect and love."

'.....So Horikita loves me huh?..... I see.'

Once the both of them entered the corridor, they saw one Karuizawa Kei sitting in front of Kiyotaka's door with a frown on her face.

Hearing their footsteps, Karuizawa looked at their direction and immediately grumbled in annoyance.

"If you wanted to go on a date with your girlfriend, then you should've at least notified me, Ayanokouji. I was waiting for you for more than 40 minutes in this extreme heat."

"Have my praise I guess. However, taking this chance as an advantage, you could have jogged around the corridor. This would have resulted in diminishing of your body fats."

Karuizawa immediately turned red in anger and embarrassment as she immediately hid her stomach with both of her hands.

"Are you implying that I'm fat?!"

"Of course not. However it does not hurt to get rid of the excessive fats, it will have quite an impact on your body. Isn't that right, Horikita?"

"Yup. I see no lies."

"Oh god...Both of you are going to team up and make me brutally suffer, I can already feel it."

Horikita chuckled at his words before walking in front of her.

"It's nice to meet you Karuizawa-san. Although we had our fair share of differences and problems, I hope we can share a wonderful time together."

Horikita approaching her with the sophisticated, nice girl approach immediately caused the blonde haired girl to look at her with a surprising gaze, before she took the hand present to her.

"Y-yeah. I share the same feeling. Let's look out for one another okay?"

"Definitely. "

With that both the girls shared a rare smile while Kiyotaka opened the door of his dorm, letting them in.

Inspite of preparing herself in breaking up with Hirata Yosuke, Karuizawa's parasitic tendency will not change this quickly. What she requires is self-confidence... it's alright. No one changes in a day..

The Great Colloseum took a whole decade to be brought into shape...Everything requires time and dedication.'

"Come inside."

Both the girls walked inside as Karuizawa surveyed the entire room with a gaze similar to that of a curious child.

"Whoa....The whole room is so empty. It's like I'm in a ghost town."

"That's because I spent my points only on valuable necessities and daily stuff unlike a certain person who spent all of her points from buying millions of clothes and make-ups items."

"I'm trying to change that and create a budget for me, ok?! Jeez."

"You can't create a budget if you don't have any points left."

Immediately Karuizawa grabbed Kiyotaka's pillow and threw it at him, which the boy easily grabbed and threw it back at her with even more force, causing her fall on the ground.

"Ow."

"That's what you get for trying to harm me. Don't try to think that just because you're a female, I'll spare you."

Sighing to herself, Karuizawa dropped her bag and set beside Kiyotaka below his bed, while the boy looked towards Horikita, who was rummaging through his closet.

"What do you need Horikita?"

"Where do you keep your towels Ayanokouji-kun? I need to take a shower however I don't want to go back to my own room just for that reason. It'll be a hassle."

"It's on the left bottom corner. Also, did you bring some light clothes as I instructed you?"

"Yup."

"Then go and change into it. We can't have you throwing kicks and punches while wearing that tight uniform and short skirt, can we?"

His words Immediately caused Karuizawa to grimace.

"Dude, the way you say everything so straightforward is gross. Tell me honestly, are you really not a pervert?"

Immediately her forehead was lightly flicked in response.

"Get your mind out of the gutter and solve the problems I gave

you."

".....Yes."

Slumping to herself, Karuizawa aimlessly "tried" to attempt the problems as Horikita took out a black and white towel with an entertained smirk.

"Is this black and white towel also panda themed just like your apron? Never thought of you as a giant panda advocate."

".....Shut up and go to the bathroom."

'They are cute, Okay?! Don't judge me.'

She chuckled at his response and went inside as Kiyotaka looked towards the notebook of Karuizawa which was filled with scribbles and drawings.

He swiftly picked up the notebook causing her to whine in annoyance.

"Oi I was still trying. Give it back."

"If by trying, you mean adding 78 with 78 when you are asked to write it's square.....Then, just stop."

"Hehe is it wrong? I thought that's what Sakagami-Sensei taught us."

All she got in response was a deadpanned look to which she laughed in nervousness.

".....Just observe carefully what I'm doing and try to attempt it, got it?"

"Okay...."

"Ayanokouji-kun, I'm done. Do you need to go to the bathroom?"

"I'm fine. If you're done then sit down beside us. I'm already done teaching her 2 chapters. So we might as well begin."

As Horikita walked out of the room, however, Karuizawa's face immediately formed an "o" of surprise as pink blush adorned her cheeks looking at the slightly wet figure of Horikita.

Feeling Karuizawa's intense gaze on her body, Horikita tilted her head at her and narrowed her eyes in confusion.

"What?"

"N-nothing."

Immediately the blonde teen leaned towards Ayanokouji and started whispering in his ear.

"Dude you're girlfriend is smoking hot!! How could I not notice it before?!"

All she got on response from him was an empty stare, followed by

another flick on her forehead.

"Please refrain from casting your perverted gaze on my Horikita, thank you very much."

"Jeez, never took you as someone possessive."

End of Chapter 54

Words : 3068

I'm on a roll lmao!! I've never updated any of my stories this frequently ever□□. It's crazy how one small idea in the head can lead you to write 3k words this quickly.

Also, Ayanokouji Doesn't Hold Back is about to reach 400k reads. Although I'm not proud of that book, it's still really satisfying to see one of my work do that well.

And at this point, I'm just blessing you with all the godly fanarts I can find lmao. And I'm planning to bless all of you with some more in the future.

Anyways...Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.

Chapter 55 : Save Yourself

Season 2 : Chapter 22

Next day, right after class ended, Horikita and Ayanokouji immediately met each other's eyes and shared a small nod while the brown haired boy gave Sudo a reassuring nod, trying to calm his nerves. Seeing his gesture, Sudo gave him a small thumbs up as they walked towards the door.

"Going to continue your alone activities again huh?"

Satou leaned on her hand while giving them a mischievous smile.

"Poor Matsushita-san. She lost the race before she even joined in the first place."

Before Kiyotaka could blurt out sus things like yesterday, Horikita immediately pinched his arm while giving him a cold glare as if saying 'Don't you dare speak'.

'Ooh so scary •_•'

Kiyotaka complied to her words and kept quiet, eliciting a small hum of satisfaction from the raven haired maiden who then glared at Satou, trying to intimidate her.

However, Satou just shrugged her shoulders, her ever present smirk still present on her face.

"Tch tch tch, that won't do Horikita-san. Such a scary look does not suit your beautiful face and your maidenly charms. You can't swoon Ayanokouji-kun this way."

However her teasing seemed to struck a chord in Horikita's heart as she sneakily sent a side glance towards Ayanokouji who met her glance with an amused stare, resulting her to look away.

"Don't listen to what the dumb fox says, Horikita."

"Oi don't call me dumb."

"But you are. Anyways as I was saying, don't pay any attention to her words, Horikita. You're fine just the way you are. In my honest opinion, your ice cold behaviour adds more to your charm."

Hearing his words, Horikita sent Satou a smug stare trying to provoke her.

"Heh~ Ayanokouji-kun likes cold girls who always glare. Does this mean Ayanokouji-kun wants to get dominated in bed?"

'Such crude words in front of the whole class...She really has little to no shame. Or maybe she doesn't care. That's commendable I guess...'

Now how should I reply to her question. If I answer specifically, I then

have to answer more, however if I stay discreet, then- wait why is Horikita looking at me so seriously? Don't tell me she is interested in hearing my answer as well.'

Kiyotaka sighed to himself before shrugging his shoulders at Satou.

'When all plan fails, never forget the trump card that you always keep for the back-ups of the back-up. The ultimate rescuer in all the conversations. The legendary two words-'

"Who knows?"

Satou dropped her head on the table as Horikita clicked her tongue in annoyance, dissatisfied to here one of the most annoying phrase she ever heard, courtesy of the man she unfortunately has a crush on.

"Anyways, enough about me. Where's Matsushita?"

"Hmm? Oh yeah, she seems to be a little sick. Must be because of Koenji-kun. That guy forced us in his room and undressed himself in front of us, flexing his muscles for 2 hours. Ever since then, Matsushita-san puked for about 3 times straight."

She immediately shuddered while remembering such a scary memory yet again.

"Why do you look so disgusted by it? I've noticed Koenji's figure, and he has quite a nice body, I must say."

"Well, for some of us girls, it's not about how much muscle you have, it's about the right density and the amount of muscle which suits your body structure the most.

For example, I prefer the body of someone like you over someone like Koenji-kun."

Immediately Horikita inched closer towards Kiyotaka while glowering at Satou like an angry cat marking her territory making Kiyotaka roll his eyes and Satou chuckle at her antics.

'There are so many sides to this girl.... Icekita, Shykita, Scaredkita, Scarykita, Tsun-tsunkita and now joining the roster is none other than Jealouskita.'

"You girls sure have a lot of demands regarding the physical structure of a boy, don't you?"

"Hush you. You are speaking as if you guys don't inspect our breasts, thighs, face as well as our posterior."

"I mean sure, I guess. I'm someone who rates personality over those however I'll be lying if I deny that Horikita's thighs are magnificent. "

Immediately his head was smacked by her with an embarrassed blush and an angry glare.

"Shut that idiotic mouth of yours, before you suffer in despair, Ayanodead-kun."

"Sure..."

Satou however was laughing her ass off to which Horikita sighed in annoyance.

"Can we just go? We don't have much time right?"

"Right. Go ahead. I'm coming."

With that both the students shared one last pleasantry with Satou before they went on with their mission.

♣◇♥♣♣♥◇♣

Soon, after setting up the camera in the specific location, Kiyotaka and Horikita were leaning on the window panel waiting for the three boys to appear in their designated location.

However since they were 2 minutes late, Horikita couldn't help but feel a little suspicious about the situation.

"Ayanokouji-kun are you sure that Kushida sent them the text? I can't help but doubt her judgement."

"Don't worry about that. She is bound to send them the text. At the moment her secret is within the palm of my hands and she can't do anything but follow my orders in order to keep her secret."

"How cruel of you."

She let out a small chuckle as they heard 3 pairs of footsteps walking up the stairs. Soon they met eyes with the 3 Class-C students who looked at them with a confused gaze.

"Hey?! Kushida-san called us here. Where is she? And why are 'you' of all people here?"

The green haired boy immediately pointed his finger towards Kiyotaka, who just tilted his head at them and scanned each of their faces, his empty expression making them feel a little creeped out.

"She won't be coming, since we were the one who called you guys in the first place."

"Huh?! Why? What do you want?!"

Horikita immediately took the reign of the conversation as she mimicked a slight mocking tone behind her voice.

"Nothing much. We are here to make a deal.

Whether you accept or reject it is your decision. We just want you to hear us out."

The green haired boy, named Ishizaki immediately narrowed his eyes, suspicious of this sudden situation.

The other 2 Class-C students behind him remained silent, letting Ishizaki take all the responsibility of the conversation.

"And what is this 'deal' you are talking about?"

Both Kiyotaka and Horikita then walked down the stairs and stood face to face with the 3 Class-C boys.

"Take away the complaint against Sudou or be prepared to face

hell. Choose whichever poison is less painful for you."

His hand then went towards Ishizaki's shoulder as Kiyotaka put a small amount of force behind it, causing him to let out grunts of pain.

"Ishizaki-san are you okay?!"

"Let me beat this punk!!"

"Do it then. I dare you."

One provocation from Kiyotaka and immediately the both of them took a fighting stance ready to attack him.

"Stop it assholes. He is intentionally trying to make us beat him. That black haired chick must be recording this incident."

In spite of being in pain, Ishizaki somehow kept his rationalism. On his orders, immediately the both of them released their stances, however still glared at Kiyotaka who didn't seem to care about Irrelevant-kun 1 and Irrelevant-kun 2.

Horikita however mockingly laughed at Ishizaki's warning before pointing her hand towards a specific direction.

"You were not wrong that you are being recorded, however who said that it was me recording?"

The three boys darted their eyes towards the direction and immediately widened their eyes in shock.

"I-Ishizaki-san, w-why i-is there a camera?!"

"B-boss told us that there was n-nothing of the sorts."

Ishizaki however looked even worse in comparison to the other two. His face looked pale as if he was in disbelief.

"Was the camera always there?! I swear to god there was no camera before!!"

"That's a stupid saying. The Home Economic Room is right over there.

Although it's empty for now, do you really think they would get rid of a CCTV Camera, just because a room which was frequently used before is not open for now?"

"So....which option do you guys choose? Get rid of the complaint or get severe punishment? Falsely accusing someone is a very heinous crime, don't you think so?

Sudou beat you guys up. There's nothing else to it. So he will definitely get punished.

However don't you think when once what you did before Sudou punched you gets revealed, the punishment you'll get for falsely accusing him with fake injuries would be even more severe? It could even result to expulsion...."

Now all three of them were scared hearing Ayanokouji's words.

'Of course they won't get expelled for this, since the trial didn't even take place. That was just a small lie in order to increase their fear. And

the hot and humid atmosphere that they used to trap Sudou is now working against them, making them lose their sense of rationalism.

In reality the most they would get might be a 2-3 week suspension, which would result in a huge downgrade of Class-points, so it's still a huge L for Class-C anyways.'

"You see if you let go of this complaint, Class-D will forget about what Class-C did to them and we will start anew. Whereas if you don't, then there will be a lot of consequences for your actions."

Kiyotaka looked straight into Ishizaki's eyes while saying all of these, putting more pressure on him while the other two were looking at their green haired friend with nervousness.

"I-I l-let me talk with my B-boss first!!!"

He immediately dialled the number of someone, most probably Ryuuen, however just before the phone starts ringing, Horikita snatched it away from his hand and cut the call.

"Yeah...no"

"You Bitch!!! Give me my phone back."

Ishizaki grabbed her collars and readied a punch, to which, Horikita didn't even move an inch and instead glared at him with her signature ice cold eyes.

"So a false accusation was not enough, so you want to double your trouble by punching someone as well?! Sure then go ahead. **I dare you.**"

He released his grip from her collars while clenching both of his fists in frustration, having no way out of the situation.

"So...?"

"We'll take the complaint back. Let's go you two."

With that all three of them turned away from the two Class-D figures as Horikita was patting her now wrinkled uniform.

"While you're on your way, tell Ryuuen to come up with a better plan next time, Ryuuen's dogs."

Not even bothering to release their frustration, they just left the area with resigned look on their faces as Horikita gave him a small smile.

"Good job, Ayanokouji-kun. That was quite easy if I'm being honest."

She rose her hands infront of him, showing him her palm to which he looked at her confusingly, causing her to sigh at him.

"It's called a High Five. If someone does pretty well as a team, they celebrate it by smacking their palms together. Give me your hand."

Before letting him respond, she grabbed his hand as it soon came in contact with her own.

"I see. Thanks for letting me know."

She shook her head in resignation, a small smirk adorning her face.

However the peaceful atmosphere that was created between them was immediately destroyed as Horikita's phone rang, causing her to take it out and look at the number confusingly.

"Sakura-san? Why is she calling?"

"Pick it up."

"Yeah."

As soon as she accepted the call, both of their ears met the horrific cries of the girl in question, causing both of their eyes to widen in sync.

"Horikita-san HELP!!!!!!

SOMEONE HELP!!!

Aahhhhhh!!! PLEASE HELP ME!!!!"

"Who are you talking with Shizuku-chan? Your boyfriend? You should know that it's not acceptable for someone like you to have a boyfriend right? Now come over here."

"LEAVE ME PLEASE!!!!!! SOMEONE HELP!!"

The call was then cut off as both of them shared one last look with one another before sprinting towards the door of the Special Building.

"Horikita, tell the police about the situation and come towards the location with them. I'll go towards Sakura's location."

"Got it. Go quickly."

Kiyotaka immediately started sprinting towards the location where the tracker was marking with his speed comparable to the records he set in the White Room, all the while only one single thought was lingering within his mind.

'Please resist him for 1 more minute....Don't let him to do this to you...Resist him for at least 23 seconds....That's all I will need to save you. All you have to do now is to Save Yourself, Sakura....'

End of Chapter 55

Words : 2911

Sheesh....Quite an intense chapter if I must say so...

So, will Sakura be able to resist the creepy salesperson before Kiyo arrives or did she already met her fate?

Who knows.....

Anyways hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See Ya.

Chapter 56 : Facade

Season 2 : Chapter 23

Sakura Airi....a student of Class-D with a small secret of her own.

Ever since she joined the school, she thought of starting anew and making new acquaintances, new friends and trying to be a little more social.

However she was unsuccessful in the end, the main reason for that being her socially inept nature, which made her a target for a certain clique of Class-D.

Karuizawa and her friends, who sat near Sakura in the class, completely isolated her and whenever they got the chance they would snicker and chuckle while glancing at her nervous self.

Sakura noticed it all..... There were a lot of instances where their mind didn't catch up to their actions, but they in fact were subtly bullying Sakura, causing her self confidence to plummet even lower than before.

She failed to change herself as a person....

She tried to be better, however it was all fruitless...

She can't change...She can't smile...Can't laugh....Hell, she can't even speak her mind freely....

In the end, she was still the useless Sakura, whom everyone avoided in Junior High.

Sakura always knew that her body was more developed than her peers, however because of that she also has been targeted by some jealous girls who knew quite well on how to put her down.

That's why unknown to everyone else...She put on a facade....A mask that at the moment she didn't know that it actually was her 'real self' — free from any bullying, any social anxiety, any stuttering....

The only thing she had in her arsenal was a camera and her humble self...

That's right...It's because during that small amount of tranquillity....

She was not Sakura Airi.

She was **Shizuku**.

But if that really was the case, then why is she in this situation?

How could someone figure out that she was in fact Shizuku,

instead of Sakura. In her opinion, she hid that facade really well...

So why is she being stalked?

Why did she get 1000s of letters with creepy messages this past week?

Why is she being forced in this dark alleyway by this certain person?

'Why?

Why is this happening to me?

I joined this school because I wanted to start anew, however I was too scared in the end to even interact with someone...

I made no friends...had no one to talk to....

And now I am paying the price for that. I have no one whom I could ask for help. And I am not strong enough to do anything....There's no one who can help m-'

Immediately her mind went towards that 'one' conversation with someone whom she found to be one of her closest peers in this institution.

Although they didn't talk that much.. Just one sentence of her—

"Just tell me whenever you are in trouble. Although I don't think I'm capable enough to get rid of all your troubles, I'll try my best, Sakura-san.."

Unknowingly to that person, these words almost made Sakura tear up that night, as she couldn't believe the fact that someone actually had the intention to help her without any ulterior motives.

As soon as Sakura Airi entered the dark alley, the man who had been stalking her for all this time finally showed his appearance, as a horrified Sakura immediately started dialling the number.

It was none other than the electronics store employee who was surveying her that day with that disgusting look in his eyes.

"Who are you calling Shizuku-chan? Your boyfriend? Don't you know how sad that makes me?"

"D-don't y-you c-come close to me."

The creepy smile which was adorning his face turned into that of a sinister one as he inched even closer than before.

"How can you say that stuff? Don't you realise that your words hurt my poor soul?"

"Please pick up the call. I beg you please!!! Please! PLEASE! PLEASE!!!!"

Immediately the man pounced on her as the now horrified Sakura started yelling, trying to call anyone who was near their proximity.

At that moment, the number she was calling also picked up that phone as Sakura started yelling as loud as possible, so that every single word of hers were crystal clear through that device.

"Horikita-san HELP!!!!!!"

SOMEONE HELP!!!

Aahhhhhh!!! PLEASE HELP ME!!!!"

The man in front of her immediately clicked his tongue before forcefully grabbing the device out of her hand.

"Who are you talking with, Shizuku-chan? Your boyfriend? You should know that it's not acceptable for someone like you to have a boyfriend right? Now come over here."

"LEAVE ME PLEASE!!!!!! SOMEONE HELP!!"

Unfortunately for her, he immediately cut off the call and covered her mouth with his left hand, muffling her cries, while his other hand, together with his left hips, pinned Sakura to the wall.

"Shh keep it down."

"Mpph—"

Immediately the man slapped her face harshly causing her eyes to widen at the sudden pain.

"I told you to keep your voice down. If you don't then just like this time, I'll once again have to **punish** you~"

An insanely creepy grin formed on his face, to which all the now scared Sakura could do was give him a small nod, making him giggle in response.

"D-Did you ... Did you read my letters? Y-You see how I feel now, right? Right? Wh-Why'd you keep avoiding me? Y-You're so precious to me ... You know that, don't you? "

He unpinned Sakura, resulting in her to drop to her knees.

However, what happened next made Sakura feel scared like never before.

She heard the noise of him buckling his belt.

"Just tell me whenever you are in trouble. Although I don't think I'm capable enough to get rid of all your troubles, I'll try my best, Sakura-san.."

Sakura tried to get away from him and and get her phone back but she felt another force putting her phone down.

" Let me go! "

" Cut it out! Damn it! "

In the end, he was successful in taking Sakura's phone from her and slapping her with an intense force behind it, forcefully throwing her to the ground with a thud.

Now all that laid on the ground was the lifeless figure of Sakura, filled with sorrow and despair.

Seeing that look on her face, made the perverted man widely grin to himself while blushing.

He pounced on her lifeless figure and laid on top of her, completely pinning her on the ground.

"Now, listen well. If you don't do what I say, I'll put the real you

on the net for all to see."

However the only thing he got in response was a lifeless gaze from the pink haired girl, seeing which made him feel a little confused.

" What's wrong? Why're you looking at me like that? D-Don't look at me like that! "

" No! Let me go! "

Using one last burst of energy, Sakura tried to push away that man, however she failed with no avail.

" I'm gonna show you how much I love you. Th-Then you'll u-u-understand me, Shizuku-chan..."

With a spine chilling grin from ear to ear, his hands unbuttoned her outer coat covering her breasts.

"Let's have a fun time together, Shizuku-cha —"

Click

As soon as he was about to touch her body, a camera flash went off stopping him from his next move.

Both of them looked back only to find Ayanokouji surveying the whole situation with his phone in hand, recording the whole situation.

" An electronics store employee assaulting a female student. You'll be a celebrity on TV tomorrow. "

The perverted man quickly gets off Sakura as he nervously declines the accusations made against him.

" Th-That's not it! I-I'm ... "

" What is it, then? The security cameras caught everything. Even if it's only "*attempted*," you still assaulted an underage girl. With a criminal complaint lodged against you, you'll lose your job. The press might even go after your family. "

Kiyotaka pointed behind the man where there were 2 cameras already present prior to Kiyotaka's appearance.

The man started shaking in fear and nervousness as realisation dawned upon him.

The entire situation was recorded.

Everything was seen on camera.

He is going to prison.

There's no way out of it.

What will happen to his wife and children?

He was brought out of his thoughts when he felt a small tap on his shoulders from behind and saw the empty gaze of the brown haired boy.

"Your life is over. However fret not, I'm sure your wife would be glad to know that you are finally going to prison. I'm honestly shocked how someone like you was even married and had children

in the first place."

I said those things out loud?!'

Hearing his words, the pervert looked enraged and immediately threw a punch towards the boy, who dodged his attacks with ease and threw three roundhouse kicks towards his stomach, chest and ultimately his face, knocking him out cold.

[Click on the gif to see it properly]

Blood started dribbling out of the nose of his unconscious body, as Kiyotaka slowly but steadily walked towards the lifeless Sakura who was watching the spectacle in front of her with shock.

"Sakura...."

He got no response as she was too shook to even make her brain work properly.

"Sakura..."

'The sudden trauma and shock caused her brain receptors to not work properly, making her fall into a state of sudden daze.'

Kiyotaka threw his red coat on her, finally snapping her out of her shock as she looked at the new piece of clothing confusingly, before looking at Kiyotaka.

"Huh?!"

"That guy ripped apart pieces of your uniform while forcing himself on you. Cover yourself with my uniform for now."

She immediately nodded to his words with teary eyes as Kiyotaka sat next to her, not too close to make her feel uncomfortable but just enough to make her not feel alone.

"So....Did he actually do something heinous to you before my arrival?"

"N-no. Y-you saved me just before he was a-about to r-r—"

"Shh don't think about that now. You are safe now, correct? That's all that matters. Horikita has already called the police and they are most probably coming here really soon. So there's nothing left for you to worry about, got it?"

He gave her a side glance only to find her look apprehensive and scared. Her entire body was shivering while her lips were quivering in fear.

"Come over here, Sakura."

"Huh?"

Kiyotaka gently grabbed her hand and made her head fall on his shoulder before softly patting it, trying to comfort her.

"I know that we haven't talked to each other that much...And at first glance you may find me scary.

However I can promise you one thing, if you are in any trouble in the future, come to me, got it? Me, Horikita, Matsushita, Satou we all will be there for you."

Sakura looked at his eyes only to find two brown eyes, as empty and dark as the abyss....

However she couldn't find any malicious intent behind them. His words felt genuine to which she just gave him a small smile and leaned further into his shoulders, seeking comfort under his rough but protective hands..

At that time, the now bloodied camera man gained back his consciousness as he frantically started running away from the 2 towards the other direction, while Kiyotaka just looked at his feeble attempt with a bored gaze in his eyes.

'It's now your time, Horikita.'

On his other hand, he looked at the phone which was tracking Horikita's location, which now reached their spot.

Immediately his path was blocked by her and 3 other police behind her, causing the pervert to widen his eyes.

"You really thought you would get away after sexually assaulting my classmate?!"

Her narrowed eyes and her ice cold glare immediately froze him on the spot for a second, taking advantage of which the other 3 police officers grabbed hold of him.

He frantically tried to get himself free.

"L-Let me go! Y-You have no right to interfere! We're connected by destiny! I-I'm Shizuku-chan's fan! Shizuku-chan knows that, too!

We write each other letters everyday! She updates her blog just to show me her pictures! Don't you see that?! She even came to this school because I work here – "

"Shut up!!!"

Unable to hear any more bullshit come out of his mouth, Sakura stood up and glared at the man in front of him. Gone was her meek behaviour, which was now replaced with that of rage.

"I've never considered someone as disgusting as you as my fan. Never show your face to me again. I hope you rot in hell!!"

She released all her internal frustration behind her words, as the man looked visibly attacked.

However before he could say something else, Kiyotaka spoke up on his behalf.

"Mr. Officers, this is not a soap opera that you're watching. Why have not taken the man and are idly standing over here? Do your job properly."

The sense of authority behind his words unconsciously made the 2 officers bow at him to which Kiyotaka rolled his eyes.

"O-of course Sir. But may I ask why the criminal is bleeding from his nose?"

"He tried to attack me, so I fought back in self defence. This girl

witnessed it. You can ask her if you want."

Sakura immediately let out a nod to which the officers gave the three of them a salute.

"Thank you for assisting us in catching this criminal. We are leaving then."

With that those three went out of the sight, with tears streaming down her face, Sakura removed those fake glasses of her's from her face, looking at them like they were nothing but a piece of trash.

"There's nothing but trouble for me in keeping up with this lie."

She then threw her glasses on the ground and stomped them with her feet as she muttered to herself."

"There's no need to hide anymore. This is a new start right? Then I need to act like it."

She then looked at both Kiyotaka and Horikita with her beautiful eyes.

"I'm sorry for not telling you about it..I just never thought someone would accept me like the way I am."

Horikita just gave her a small smile as Kiyotaka just patted her shoulders.

"If anything's ever weighing on your mind in future, feel free to ask us for advice."

With that Sakura looked at them in a new light, filled with amazement and respect...

"Both of them.....are amazing."

End of Chapter 56

Words : 3433

End of Season 2

This marks the end of Season 2.....sigh...it was quite eventful wasn't it?

While the main premise was Sudou's case, it was irrelevant in comparison to the numerous things which happened in the background.

The reveal of Horikita's past....The relationship between Horikita and Kiyotaka deepening further... Both of them soon joining the Student Council...Kiyotaka meeting Ryuen... The reveal of Karuizawa's secret and now ending it with Sakura turning a new leaf....

I must say I enjoyed writing this season a lot. After all I nearly dropped a chapter every single day lmao.

As for Season 3, I'm incredibly hyped to start writing it. I already made a cover for it, which would replace this current one which I used for Season 2. Give me your opinion on it.

It took quite some time to make this one, and after many attempts, I'm happy with the way it turned out to be.

Season 3 is about to be crazy, so I hope you guys are excited.

Anyways that's all for this chapter. See ya

Chapter 57 : Sensei's Advice

Season 3 : Chapter 1

Sakura picked up the broken pieces of her glasses and looked at them with an empty expression before coming to a realisation that she was in the presence of two other people.

"I-I'm extremely sorry for my outburst!!!"

She frantically bowed at them to which Kiyotaka looked towards Horikita, asking her to take the initiative to calm the poor girl.

The black haired maiden just looked at the pink haired girl in sympathy before walking towards her.

"Sakura-san, you don't have to bow so much. We understand your situation, so don't worry."

"After such an incident, there's no doubt that you are feeling pent up rage. Feel free to let it all out and don't mind us."

"N-no...I'm okay for now....There's no need for anger and rage...All they bring in the end is pain and destruction...I-I need to calm myself down first."

"That's a good way of thinking. However it's unrealistic, no matter how one tries to change themselves, there will always be pain, destruction and suffering."

"That's the way the world works. It moves in a cycle. War and destruction never stops no matter how much one tries to attain peace."

Horikita took out her water bottle and gave it to Sakura, who was inhaling and exhaling oxygen, following some breathing technique trying to calm herself down.

"Here drink the water first. Your throat must be sore from all the yelling."

"T-thanks."

She started gulping the water down as Kiyotaka's eyes went towards her phone, which was on the ground, and a specific picture of her's was now out in the open.

"Is this the reason that guy was calling her Shizuku over and over, threatening her that he will expose her secret? I think I now understand the reason she didn't want to come out as the witness. Who knows what kind of photos she has in her camera."

Kiyotaka took her phone in his hands and walked towards both of the girls, before showing the picture to the both of them.

"This is you, isn't it Sakura?"

"Huh?!"

Immediately her eyes widened in shock as she snatched her phone from his hands, while Horikita looked at it in surprise.

"Uhhh I'm sorry for snatching it like that. It's just-"

"Don't worry about it Sakura-san, we understand your hesitation. However if you wouldn't mind, would you share with us about your situation, so we can help you?"

As she gave a small nod filled with apprehension, Horikita smiled at her, trying to relieve her worries as Kiyotaka suddenly took out his phone, as he received a text from a certain someone.

『 **Miss Chabashira** : *Ayanokouji, are you free right now? I was wishing to have a conversation with you.* 』

Kiyotaka looked up from his device and addressed both the girls.

"This is not a good place to talk. Horikita... Take her to your room and *try to make her as comfortable as possible*."

He finished his words by whispering into her ear, as the black haired maiden huffed in response.

"Like I didn't already know that. However the way you are saying your words, it's like you are not joining us."

Her words led to Sakura look at Kiyotaka curiously as the boy just decided to show her the text he received from their Homeroom Teacher.

"I see... I guess it's an important matter since Chabashira-sensei herself is calling you after school hours."

"Yeah. I might join you guys later, okay? So prepare some tea as a means of hospitality."

He received a playful punch from Horikita as a response to his words as Sakura chuckled at him.

"Very well...See you then, Ayanokouji-kun."

"Yes. Bye Bye Ayanokouji-kun. Also t-thanks for saving me. Both of you."

Kiyotaka just gave her a small pat on the head, making her blush in embarrassment.

"Don't worry about it. As your classmate, it's our job to look out for you. So don't think too much about it. Goodbye then both of you."

Both the girls waved at him as he walked away from them before responding to the text of his Homeroom Teacher.

『 **Ayanokouji** :

Sorry for the late response. I was busy with a small matter. However it seems that I'm free now.

Miss Chabashira : *Good then meet me at the school rooftop. Also don't forget to bring an umbrella for yourself, since it looks like it's about to rain. I don't want my favourite student to get ill after all.*

Ayanokouji :

How considerate of you. Very well, wait for about 5 minutes. I will be there by then. ♪

Kiyotaka put his mobile in his pocket before making his way towards the closest departmental store, planning to buy a cheap umbrella.

I mean I could just go to my dorm to get the umbrella, however it would take way too long and the umbrellas are pretty cheap. So private points....Sayonara.'

♠♥◇♣♣◇♥♠

Chabashira Sae, who was quietly smoking on the rooftop while enjoying the beautiful view of the whole campus, soon heard the noise of the door opening, where the brown haired boy she was waiting for entered the rooftop carrying a black umbrella in his hand.

She turned around and released one last smoke before throwing her used cigarette and stomping on it with her heels.

"You did quite a good job today, Ayanokouji. Sensei is quite happy with this outcome."

All she got in response was the tilting of his head, as if he had no idea what he just did, making her sigh to herself.

"Don't try to play ignorant with me. An hour ago, the news came that Class-C took back their complaints against Sudou, before the Trial even took place."

"I see. So the Sudou matter is already over, huh... Good to know."

"However this sudden situation made me feel a little curious and I already knew that you were the one behind the incident."

So, what better way than to know about the whole situation as well as trying to understand what's going on inside that head of yours. Two birds with one stone."

The boy however stuffed both of his hands in his pocket, and looked at her with Indifference.

"Curiosity kills the cat Sensei. Are you sure about trying to get in my head? You may regret it."

His words elicited a small laugh from her as she gave him an indifferent stare in return.

"Indeed curiosity kills the cat. However Curiosity is the fuel for discovery, inquiry and learning."

I already have enough regrets in my life. If involving myself in the matters of my student adds one more, then frankly it doesn't matter to me."

Her words were filled with sorrow as she let out a small smile, seeing which Kiyotaka couldn't help but sigh to himself.

"Very well then. The trap was rather simple,so be prepared for

disappointment."

"Success is never a disappointment in my eyes. In my opinion I rather prefer a simple yet effective plan instead of an extremely complex one. So feel free to explain everything to me, Ayanokouji."

Kiyotaka then started explaining the whole situation and the way they convinced the Class-C boys to take back their complaint as Chabashira listened to his words with concentration while taking out another cigarette from his box.

After he was done with his explaining, she threw her half used cigarette before directing her eyes towards him.

"I see....It was rather simple yet very effective. I expected better from the Class-C boys. Who knew that they would be this simple-minded?"

However I must say that I'm quite satisfied with the way you are indirectly developing a lot of students into better."

"I don't think I did anything worthy to deserve your praise."

"Deny it however you want, but that doesn't change the fact that it's because of your contribution that students like Horikita Suzune and Sudou Ken have developed this quickly.

Frankly I was quite shocked the first time when I saw Sudou deal with this whole complaint with a level head. It was impressive, not going to lie.

Never thought that I would say this, but I'm truly glad to have a student like you."

She ended her words with a rare smile as Kiyotaka suddenly felt a very small amount of pain in his heart, the reason for which he had no idea of.

"You don't have to praise me this much, Sensei. After all I'm doing this all for my own selfish needs....

For the betterment of my future, so that my future self faces no problem at all. I'm not that nice of a guy that you think I am.

.....Everything I do is for my own gain. Because as long as I win in the end.... That's all that matters."

There was a small veil of silence as both the teacher and the student surveyed one another with a neutral gaze.

Kiyotaka's eyes then went towards the scenery of the whole campus as he was mesmerised with how peaceful and free the whole view looked.

Seeing his usually dull eyes gleam like a curious child made Chabashira smirk to herself before her eyes went towards the direction he was looking at.

She walked towards his direction and soon leaned on the railing beside him.

"The view....it's quite nice, don't you think?"

"It is... I never saw something like this before.. Everything looks so....small from up here. It looks.....free."

Both of them remained silent as they quietly enjoyed the view while small droplets of rain started falling from the sky.

However Chabashira's mind lingered to the words Ayanokouji said prior to this.

"Everything I do is for my own gain. Because as long as I win in the end.... That's all that matters..."

Even though her only ambition was to reach Class-A, she couldn't help but feel that his words were incredibly uncanny and unsettling.

So, despite her brain telling her not to indulge herself further in this matter, she couldn't help but blurt out her next words.

".....Ayanokouji, the words that you said before...Do you truly believe them?"

It didn't even took a second before Ayanokouji responded to her words as if he was on Autopilot.

"Yes. I believe it. That's how I was brought up. This is my philosophy in life."

His words made Chabashira shake her head in dismissal before she addressed him with a wry smile.

"Scratch that question. What I want to ask you is.....do you **want** to believe it?"

"....."

"....."

This caused both of them to fall silent , as Kiyotaka's mind contemplated her words...unknown to himself, the pain within his heart slowly started heavier and heavier.

Taking the deafening silence as her cue, The Homeroom Teacher of Class-D started explaining her thoughts more elaborately.

"The way I see it, that's the way you're brought up with this way of thinking...But do you really want to believe this from the deepest pits of your heart?"

Ever since you joined this school, I always observed you much closer than everyone else.

I had the first hand experience of you looking like an emotionless husk on the first day, to the person you've become now... All in the span of around 3 months....

What you try to believe is that everything that happens in your life is because of yourself.

However, answer me this one question, Ayanokouji. If Horikita is in danger, but saving her will lead to your defeat....What would you do?"

Her words led to the boy sigh to himself.

"Isn't that obvious? If Horikita stands in my way of victory, I

wouldn't hesitate to get ri-"

"I know that I may be weak and your problems may be way bigger than what I can comprehend, but please at least let me share that 1% of the burden, so that you can feel a little light."

Ayanokouji's words stopped in his throat as he, for some reason, couldn't bring himself to complete his own sentence.

This led to Chabashira smiling at the sight as she gently laid her left hand on the boy's shoulder.

"You see it now, don't you? Just like your presence made everyone around you change and improve....Their presence also had the same effect on you.

The Ayanokouji I see now is vastly different from the Ayanokouji who wanted to ask whether one could exchange points to kill someone."

She mirthfully laughed while remembering that incident before softly ruffling the brown boy's hair.

"It doesn't matter if you don't heed my advice or not. Just remember one thing, us humans, we always change as time goes. What we need to do is not fight the change but instead embrace it and accept it. That is what we call maturity, not this

'Winning is Everything' mindset of yours.....

It's a very dangerous way of thinking, which will later destroy you from inside and out."

With that she turned away from the boy and started walking towards the door, before she looked back for a second at his empty face, which looked to be in deep thought.

Chabashira ruffled through her pockets and took out the key she was looking for, before handing it to Kiyotaka, who looked at her confusingly.

"This key is only accessible for teachers only, however you can have it. Whenever you need some inner peace, just come over here."

"But what about you?"

"Did you forget? We can buy anything we want with points. Don't worry about me. It looks like it's about to rain soon. Go home, Ayanokouji."

Kiyotaka took one look at his key, before looking back towards the retreating figure of his teacher.

'Chabashira Sae....The Homeroom Teacher of my class.... Someone whom I always found to be obsessed with reaching Class-A.....

However today, I experienced a different side of her today...

She was the first person who ever challenged my ideals, and I am glad about it.

I'm glad that other think that my way of thinking is toxic because... I always wanted to change myself as well...'

The small droplets falling from the sky increased in intensity as it now started raining heavily.

Kiyotaka opened his umbrella trying to take shelter from it, not wanting to get ill.

'Whenever a challenge comes my way....I always forget that I'm not in the White Room, but instead in the real world. Here, just winning doesn't mean everything... There are a lot of other things one needs to take into consideration as well.

I'm glad we had that conversation, Chabashira-sensei. It was truly fruitful.'

End of Chapter 57

Words : 3394

The First Chapter of Season 3!!!!

And what better way to start it than having a nice one on one chat with Chabashira-sensei herself.

Unlike Canon, Kiyotaka's ideals and way of thinking is finally getting challenged early on, however he has no idea on what to do regarding the matter.

Also, as for Sakura, although she wouldn't be too important for Special Exams and sorts, I want to use her to make Ayanokouji develop into someone more human like. Kind of make her like his little sister while giving her a decent amount of development, so that she does not stay irrelevant like the canon.

Anyways, 22 Chapters in around 26 days!!!! I wonder when this motivation will end lmao. I'm writing way too much at the moment☐☐

Anyways...I hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.

Chapter 58 : The Girl With The Cane

Season 3 : Chapter 2

"It doesn't matter if you don't heed my advice or not. Just remember one thing, us humans, we always change as time goes. What we need to do is not fight the change but instead embrace it and accept it. That is what we call maturity, not this

'Winning is Everything' mindset of yours.....

It's a very dangerous way of thinking, which will later destroy you from inside and out."

'Is that really true? All this time, ever since I was young, all I ever believed was in winning flawlessly at everything...I wanted to be defeated but at the same time my competitive self never let anyone surpass me...That's exactly how I survived the hellhole known as the White Room.

.....But....Can someone like me really change?

Can I act like an ordinary human just like the others?

Before I thought, that the only way I would change is when I finally get defeated by someone, which would result to the ultimate loss of that man's ideals

But is it really that important?

If my evolution is ultimately depended whether that man loses or not.....

Can someone truly call that Freedom?'

As the intensity of the rain increased even more, we can see a certain brown haired boy walking through the uninhabited road with a void look in his eyes, however for the first time his eyes expressed an expression he never thought someone like him would be possible of showing....

It was **uncertainty**.

'I, Ayanokouji Kiyotaka am nothing but a living example of Human Contradiction.'

♠♥♦♣♠♥♦♠

Because of the outpouring of the Summer-Monsoon rain, the entire road was filled with water, occupying every single creeks and crevasse.

Kiyotaka decided to move slowly and cautiously since he didn't want his pants to be wet, since the right side of his shirt was already drenched from the torrent of rain.

'Sigh....Thank god Chabashira-sensei notified me about bringing an umbrella or I would've been screwed.'

While he was walking through the uninhabited road, however, Kiyotaka stopped in his place when he noticed a group of students staring at him with an intimidating posture, glaring at him, causing the brown haired boy to roll his eyes at the peculiar sight in front of him.

'Here we go, then. I was expecting him to confront me sometime but to think that he is crazy enough to annoy me in the midst of this weather....Truly a pest.'

Soon Kiyotaka walked towards the group of three with a nonchalant expression on his face, seeing which, Ryuuen's manic smirk grew wider while Ibuki's eyes twitched in annoyance as she directed him a cold glare.

'Still embarrassed about me commenting on your panty choice? Learn to take a joke girl. •_•'

The dark skinned guy standing on Ryuuen's right gave Kiyotaka a small nod as a greeting to which he reciprocated his actions before looking at Ryuuen.

"Where's your other bodyguard? What's his name again? Ishizaki correct? Did you beat him up that bad that he can't even walk, Ryuuen?"

"Damn right, I did. What are you going to do about it?"

"Nothing exactly. It's just kind of funny to me that you thought that was a good enough idea to bring our class down. After all, your plan was way too simple and was filled with loopholes left, right and center."

His words led to Ryuuen chuckling to himself before both of their eyes met each other once again.

"Fret not, Ayanokouji. It was never my intention to bring your class down, since it's in the bottom of the barrel anyways.

I just wanted to test some theories of mine and that red dog was the perfect guinea pig for it. Sucks that I was not successful kukuku."

Ryuuen then stepped forwards even closer than before nearly touching heads with Kiyotaka while showing a manic grin. He then moved one of his fingers and pointed it directly to Kiyotaka's chest.

"It was quite a smart plan to install a fake Camera, I must say. When I first heard about it, I was quite frustrated at not thinking of that myself.

Be grateful, Ayanokouji. You are my next target. This ego, that you always show off, I'll bring it down and turn it to dust after annihilating your class and destroying your feeble reputation kukuku."

As he was saying those words, the eyes of Ryuen started showing off a dangerous glint, contrary to the smile on his face which was getting wider and wider every second.

'He is quite pissed with the results isn't he? Not a single sarcastic remark or a funny insult. Even if he doesn't want to reveal it to anyone else, I can feel the rage seeping from his body.'

"That's good. I am pleased to know that you are not a sore loser and can accept defeat well. Then be prepared to experience a lot more in the future. Goodbye to you three."

However just before Kiyotaka could leave, all four of them heard the clacking sound of a cane coming in contact with the water.

Kiyotaka turned his head towards the new guests and raised his eyebrows.

'I've never seen these four students...

I already know most of the students from Class-B and C...So these are the students of Class-A huh...The so called Elites...'

There was a royal, composed and confident aura coming from them, depicting that of the Class-A students.

Kiyotaka's eyes surveyed every single one of the Class-A members trying to find each and every single oddity of them.

'None of those three bodyguards seem to be that remarkable...However that girl...'

His eyes then lingered on the lilac haired girl with the cane who was standing as if she was the queen followed by her entourage.

*'In spite of having such a disadvantage in life, there's not a single hint of uncertainty behind those eyes of her's. It's like she is provoking everyone with that smile by saying **Lay a Hand on me if you dare**. Out of these four, she is the only interesting one in first glance.'*

However what was surprising to Kiyotaka was that, as soon as his eyes met with the violet eyes of her's, it was as if the composed air around her completely shattered for a second, as her nonchalant eyes suddenly started gleaming in recognition and excitement as a very thin smile formed on her lips.

Such a reaction of her's caused Kiyotaka to look confused for a second.

'The way she is looking at me...It's as if I am an old friend of hers...Is she confusing me with someone else? Or does she somehow know me?..... No, there's no chance that she knows about the existence of the White Room.'

However all the doubts that Kiyotaka had about her was removed when Ryuen started speaking, his eyes directly landing on the Class-A girl.

"Sakayanagi huh....."

Kiyotaka's eyes immediately narrowed in recognition of the name

as he came to a conclusion.

I see....So, she is the daughter of the Chairman..Since that man allowed me to join this school, I guess the Chairman was also somehow related to the White Room. So her, seeing me there is within the realm of possibility.'

"It seems like you were thwarted by brilliance, Ryuuen-kun. All that talk and absolutely no result. How disappointing. "

Without any hint of fear and nervousness, Sakayanagi tilted her head and said those words to Ryuuen who kept smirking at her.

"It's alright. No one can win every single time. This was just the start. Us Class-C will destroy Class-D at first and treat them like an appetizer, then Class-B as our main course and then we will enjoy destroying Class-A nice and slow as a dessert."

"All this talk but you can't back it up at all. I have no interest in you. You may leave."

"Kukuku who do you think you are to order me around? Big talk for someone who couldn't even manage to get the Leadership position from a discount Johnny Sinns kukuku."

"No matter how much you try to provoke me, it would have no effect Ryuuen-kun. I already found someone who will make this school much more enjoyable. I have no interest in you anymore."

Sakayanagi's eyes were directed towards Ayanokouji as she said all those words, while Ryuuen just chuckled at the situation.

"Let's go you two. There's no further use of staying here."

With that Ryuuen walked away with Albert and Ibuki following him, as now Kiyotaka was face to face with the four Class-A students, who were staring at him.

"Masumi-chan please follow me and keep the umbrella above my head."

"Tch whatever."

The purple haired girl clicked her tongue in annoyance before following the lilac haired girl who was slowly walking towards Kiyotaka with the help of her cane.

"Fufu pleasure to make your acquaintance, Ayanokouji Kiyotaka-kun."

"You seem to know me. How surprising."

"Fufufu it's an honour to meet someone like you. I've never expected to see someone like you in this institution."

"Coincidences can be freaky, I guess."

Seeing their discrete way of conversation the other 3 students looked at them confused, while Sakayanagi giggled to herself.

'The way she laughs is quite unique yet kind of endearing. It gives a sense of comfort as well as danger at the same time.....How eccentric.'

Sakayanagi then took out a card from her pocket before gently

offering to the boy in front of her.

"As you can see, we are in the presence of some unwanted people at the moment, as a result of which, we cannot freely chat with one another. So if you wouldn't mind, would you please share your number with me?"

She ended her words with a polite bow, while awaiting for his response with her curious eyes, as Kiyotaka took the card from her small, delicate hands.

'Someone who knows my past... The daughter of the chairman himself...And judging by the way she moves and talks and the amount of confidence she radiates....There's no doubt about it...'

Sakayanagi Arisu is one of the strongest, idiosyncratic talents of Advanced Nurturing High School.

'She has the potential to be one of my fierce competitors in the future....However, it seems like she wants to be on friendly terms with me for now.'

"Very well. Where should I type my number?"

"Fufu don't worry about it. Masumi-san if you would please."

The purple haired girl with the ponytail, known as Masumi handed Kiyotaka her phone as he typed his number in it, before giving it back to her.

Sakayanagi then gestured for a handshake, as he responded to it by gently grabbing her hand, causing her to form a genuine smile on her face for the first time.

"You might be confused by all of this, but I'm genuinely happy and excited to see you in this institution Ayanokouji Kiyotaka-kun. I hope you enjoy your time in this school. If you have any problems please tell me. I'll let my dear father know."

"Don't worry about it. I'm enjoying myself here. And I appreciate your concerns. However I don't know much about you, whereas you seem to know a lot about me."

Sakayanagi's smile widened as she looked at him with a thrilled gaze, anticipating his words.

"So what do you propose we should do? Fufu"..

"I would like to get to know you more. So, I hope that you can prepare an arrangement so that we can talk freely by ourselves."

'I need as much information about her as possible.'

Her smug face glowed up in elation, as if she was going to jump if her legs actually worked...

Like a child finding his favourite toy, she started giggling to herself in contentment, causing a certain blonde haired guy in the group to look at the sight in mild excitement, feeling curious at the sudden change in his leader.

"Fufufufu very well, Ayanokouji-kun. I will prepare an

arrangement soon. It seems like it's our time to part for now. Have a good day."

"Yeah."

With that the Class-A group walked away as well, leaving Kiyotaka all alone in the middle of the rain, just like how the situation started in the first place.

'What an eventful day....'

End of Chapter 58

Words : 2837

Finally the arrival of my favourite female character of the series : The Smug Loli.

Unlike the canon, instead of the Sports Festival, here, they already met before the Island Exam...

So, maybe Kiyotaka will also play a role in the destruction of Katsuragi-reigned Class-A or maybe not ...

Who knows?

Anyways that's all for this chapter. See ya

♠♥♦♣♣♦♥♠

Chapter 59 : Live However You Want

Season 3 : Chapter 3

After quite the 'interesting' conversation with the leader of Class-C, Ryuen Kakeru and Sakayanagi Arisu of Class-A, Kiyotaka soon found himself in front of the dorm.

'Sakayanagi Arisu....Even though she is not the leader of Class-A at the moment, there is not a single doubt in my mind that she will overthrow the person who is the leader of Class-A at the moment.

What was his name again? I think Ryuen said it...

Right...Johnny Sinns ...

Kind of a unique name, I must say. I guess he is a foreigner, since Japanese people usually don't have names such as this.....

Anyways, back to the main topic...

Sakayanagi is not a threat to me in present but, definitely in the future. I need as much information about her as soon as possible. Her strengths, her weaknesses... Everything. For which, I need a mole for the future.

But before that...'

Releasing a small sigh, Kiyotaka took out his cellphone before sending a text to his raven haired friend.

Ayanokouji : *Is Sakura still there in your room?*

(6:32 p.m.)

(seen)

horikita is typing

Horikita :

Yes she is still with my room. I'm making dinner for ourselves. Your share is already prepared. You're coming right?

(6.33 p.m.)

Ayanokouji : *That's why I called you. What's your dorm room number?*

(6.33 p.m.)

(seen)

horikita is typing.....

Horikita :

I've never told you, huh? What a silly blunder. I apologise. My dorm number is 1304.

(6.36 p.m.)

Kiyotaka looked at her text with a slightly amused stare as he

started typing a response.

Ayanokouji : *It took you around 3 minutes just to type that? Were you feeling that embarrassed of your blunder that your hands stopped working as well?*

(6.36 p.m.)

(seen)

horikita is typing.....

Horikita :

Please refrain from trying to make fun of me, or I will throw your food in the dustbin . 🤢🤢

(6.36 p.m.)

Ayanokouji : *Please forgive me, Horikita-sama. This insolent being will not make fun of you anymore.*

(6.37 p.m.)

Horikita :

Hmph

(6.37 p.m.)

Closing his device, Kiyotaka walked towards the elevator and typed the button of the 13th Floor.

'Since Sakura is still here with Horikita and has agreed to eat dinner with her, then she is comfortable with Horikita, I guess. That's good.'

♡♥◇♣♣◇♡♣

Soon Kiyotaka found himself in front of Horikita's room as he pushed the door bell.

Instantly he heard the sounds of footsteps coming towards the door as he soon found himself staring impassively at the black haired demon who was glaring at him.

"Yo."

Her eyebrows scrunched even more at his odd greeting.

"Don't Yo me. What kind of weird greeting is that?"

"That's how Sudou and Ike greet each other. It sounded kind of cool."

Horikita slapped her forehead before moving to the side.

"Whatever. Come inside."

"Thanks for having me."

With that, Kiyotaka walked inside a new battlefield where most of the boys never leave unscathed.....

The sacred warzone in which boys either gets butterfly in their stomach or a slap mark on their cheek.

A Female's room.

However, unlike other boys, instead of looking ecstatic or excited about entering a girl's room, Kiyotaka walked inside with a bored deadpan gaze as he surveyed her room with a scrutinising gaze.

"Huh?! That's odd."

"What's odd?"

Horikita, who followed him looked at him with a confused expression.

"I thought that I would find a portrait of your brother's face hanging on the wall. But it's surprising that there is nothing like that."

Immediately his cheeks were pulled by an annoyed Horikita who was glaring at him in annoyance.

"You should be weary of the situation you're in, Ayanokouji-kun. This is not your room, but mine. You're in my control now."

"What are you going to do? Trap me in a Domain Expansion or something?"

"No...But who knows, maybe I've created a set up within my room where hundreds of compass can attack you with just 1 click of a button."

"Wake up to reality, Horikita. This is neither the 22nd Century, nor are you some insane scientist that you are creating such advanced technology."

"You should not underestimate the power of mine, Ayanokouji-kun. I got the blessing of the Heavenly Compass by my side."

"I see I see. By the way, where is Sakura?"

"Uhhh I'm here."

A small voice could be heard from inside the room as both the students walked inside.

Kiyotaka's usually empty, bored eyes immediately flared in envy, surprise and slight jealousy as he couldn't believe the sight in front of him.

The room of Horikita Suzune, the Ice Queen of Class-D was filled with soft toys, here, there and everywhere.

There were 2 massive teddy bears on the bed, one which Sakura was laying on, using it as a pillow while the thing on her lap was what made Kiyotaka feel the most envy.

"That's quite a nice and cute Panda soft toy... I'm not going to lie I'm quite jealous of Horikita's collection. Not one but three pandas? And she never even notified me about it...I'm feeling a little betrayed •_•"

However what the most surprising thing about Sakura was that, she let her hair flow freely and was not covering her eyes with her fake glasses.

As soon as Sakura's eyes met Kiyotaka's, she let out a small smile.

"Good evening, Ayanokouji-kun."

"Good evening Sakura. How are you doing?"

"I'm fine now. Still a little shaken from the incident before, but I can manage. Talking to Horikita-san helped me a lot."

Kiyotaka looked back towards a smug Horikita who walked towards the kitchen with a newfound confidence as he sat down below her bed on the ground as his eyes went towards Sakura, who was fiddling with her phone.

"Say....Would you mind if I ask you some questions?"

"Uhhh sure, go ahead. I'll try to answer as many as I can."

"Very well....Then would you mind explaining me about the whole thing that took place this afternoon?"

Why was the guy stalking you and forcing himself on you?

Why was he calling you Shizuku-chan?

And why was he threatening to expose your real self, Sakura?"

"Uhhmm-"

Sakura's face immediately morphed into that of bewilderment as she was not expecting this question, right of the bat.

Seeing her indecisive expression, the brown haired boy sighed to himself before directing his gaze towards her.

"You don't have to respond to my questions if you don't want to, Sakura. After all, I was just curi-"

"I am a Model, Ayanokouji-kun."

Before Kiyotaka could finish his words, Sakura cut him off with her own response. Her usually shy face was replaced with that of seriousness as she looked at him with an empty expression, resembling that of himself.

'Model huh? I see.'

"I-I cosplay a lot of anime, manga and movie characters as well as professional modelling in various magazines.

However, I don't want anyone to know about my real personality....That's why I chose a different name...

Which is Shizuku."

'Shizuku....This name brings back memories...'

Kiyotaka nodded to her words and focused all of his concentration on his words, allowing her to continue.

"Ever since I was in middle school, I didn't have much confidence and I couldn't talk very well. I was the gloomy kid whom everyone seemed to ignore....My only good qualities were my looks and my figure, which gave me the littlest of self-confidence possible."

"And that's the reason why you started posting pictures of yourself in social media as well as model for different magazines correct?"

"Exactly..."

She smiled at him for a second before continuing.

"When I heard the news that someone like me was accepted in the Advanced Nurturing High School, I was very shocked and surprised..."

However at that moment, I made the resolve that I wouldn't hide anymore.

I wanted to join the school, neither as the gloomy girl, whom everyone seemed to ignore, nor as the internet personality Shizuku whom everyone would seem to fawn over....

I just wanted to be myself....I just wanted to have fun without any worries and without having to overthink about every situation."

She looked at the ground in frustration while clenching both of her fists as Kiyotaka nodded in understanding..

"And just before you were about to arrive in the school, your sense of anxiety and your drive to protect yourself took over your choice of freedom, making you live like the person you never wanted to be, huh?"

"...Yes."

Horikita, who was done with her cooking, didn't walk inside the room, as she thought that her appearance would disrupt their peace, and instead chose to lean on her wall while eavesdropping on their conversation.

"But....When my camera broke, I just wanted it to be fixed as soon as possible and didn't think of photos like these to be present there."

She took out her camera from the bag and showed Kiyotaka a picture of her.

Kiyotaka's eyes concentrated on both the pictures before he looked at the pink haired girl for a second.

"These pictures....They are taken inside your dorm room correct?"

"Yes they are. I'm still in contract under a couple agencies, so I still have to post pictures of myself and send it to the agency. "

"But how does that work? While you are in this school, you are not getting any money correct? So, are you working for free?"

Sakura shook her head with a small smile.

"I, in fact, am not getting paid for my work now . However the moment I walk out of the walls of this school, I will have to post a certain amount of pictures, in exchange of which, the entire money will be deposited in my bank account. So, don't worry about that."

"I see. That certainly makes sense. Getting back to the main topic, before he assaulted you, did he ever do something else?"

His words Immediately Sakura's face to form a frown.

"H-he was constantly harassing me by sending me hundreds of letters everyday and calling me all day long..."

She gritted her teeth in frustration as small trickles of tears started falling from her face.

"No matter *sob* how many times I rejected it *sob* he never stopped."

Small trickles turned into waterfalls as she finally let go of all the

repressing emotions kept within her for this long and started bawling to herself.

Kiyotaka stood up from the ground and sat beside the sobbing Sakura, and wrapped one of his arms over her shoulders bringing her in a hug.

"That guy....won't be able to do anything to you, anymore. His life is over....

And anyone who tries to even touch a strand of your hair with ill intentions, will now have to go through us first.

You don't have to worry about a single thing, Sakura... You are not alone anymore. Unlike before, you have me, Horikita, Matsushita as well as Satou on your side. So, whenever you are troubled with something we will always be there for you."

He started to pat her hair, just the way she liked earlier, and it kind of did the trick, judging by the way the girl leaned back into the palm of his hands.

"You can live just the way you want Sakura. Anytime you want to be with us, we will happily welcome you. You don't have to worry about not being able to talk, not being awkward or anything else...

You don't have to overthink every single situation which may result to your depression and anxiety.

The fact that you want to hang out is enough for us to accept you. You don't have to continue with this lie anymore, got it? Live how you truly want."

"Mhmm."

"And want to know a fun fact?"

"W-what?"

"You certainly look a lot more cute and beautiful when you are not wearing those glasses and covering your beautiful eyes. So, don't do that anymore, got it?"

Her face immediately burst up with a small blush, as she lightly giggled to his words.

On the other side, Horikita walked inside a room with a big smile on her face, with a huge tray in her hand.

"Now now...Enough crying...Enough sad moments. Sakura-san needs to replenish her energy..So let's just take a break and have our dinner, shall we?"

The pinkhead smiled at Horikita to which Horikita reciprocated her gesture with a kind smile of her own.

Horikita.....Sudou... Matsushita.. Satou....Sakura...Sotomura

Every single one of them are changing and developing everyday into their best versions right in front of my eyes... Are Chabashira Sensei's words actually true?

Just like your presence made everyone around you change

and improve....Their presence also had the same effect on you.

Those words are going to haunt me every single day, huh?

End of Chapter 59

Words : 3042

Goddamit...Broke my streak of updating chapters every single day for around 12 days....Unfortunately classes has started, because of which I didn't get enough time to write it yesterday. However I will still try to update as frequently as possible.

Anyways, we are soon about to reach 200k!!

We reached the 100k milestone in around 35 Chapters....So getting near the 200k mark in about 24 chapters is insane!!!

Anyways I'll the drop chapter 60 only when I reach 200k so let's do it quickly lol.

Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.

Chapter 60 : Student Council

Season 3 : Chapter 4

'So today is the day huh?'

Kiyotaka thought to himself while looking at the text, a certain someone sent him a couple minutes ago.

Horikita Manabu : *Please meet me in the Student Council room, within an hour.*

Getting up from his bed, Kiyotaka took out his black and white towel and wrapped it around his neck, readying himself to go to the shower, before his cell phone started ringing, making him pick up the device, bringing him near his ears.

"Good morning, Horikita."

The girl on the other side let out a small yawn as if she wasn't fully awake yet.

"Hnn~ Good morning Ayanokouji-kun... Did you get a nice sleep?"

Her voice was still drowsy as she was slurring on her words a little.

"Yeah I woke up a couple of minutes ago, however judging from the way you are talking, it seems like you are high on drugs."

"It's nothing like that...I cough think I just got a small fever, because of which I couldn't sleep that well at night cough."

"I see. Is your condition a little better now?"

"My arms and legs are a little sore, and my head is aching, however I'll manage. I'm taking medicine, so don't worry about it."

"You know, you don't have to come to school if you don't want to...One should always prioritise their own health before thinking about others."

"No....I can't do that. My absence will result in the loss of Class Points by the end of the month...I don't want to be the person to be held accountable for any causality ."

Hearing her words, Kiyotaka couldn't help but sigh to himself.

'Her stubbornness is admirable yet annoying at times. I need to find a perfect balance for her.'

"What do you think is worse? You skipping one day of school to get fully fit for the next day, or in spite of your illness, you attending the class, which may result to either your condition getting even worse, or spreading it to our classmates."

"....."

On the other side of the call, Horikita remained silent as she couldn't comprehend to herself what she would give as a response.

On one hand, she already realised that everything her brown haired friend said was completely sound and logical, however on the other hand, her stubborn self is making her feel like she can push through it.

"Th-That's the problem. I can't be absent today. Nii-san has sent me a text, calling me in the Student Council Room, which was the reason I called you in the first place."

"He already sent a text to me as well. And as for attending the meeting, I'll let you attend just that. You will not attend any class and take a rest in the nurse's room, got it?"

Horikita couldn't help but frown to herself while clenching her fist in frustration.

"Please cough Ayanokouji-kun, I'm telling you that I can manage. Trust me for God's sake."

"....."

"....."

"Very well then. Do as you wish. However, I see your condition getting worse, you will immediately have to go to the nurse's office. Deal?"

Kiyotaka heard a relieved sigh on the other side of the call as Horikita responded to his warning.

"Fine. I accept your conditions. By the way, please wait for me on the ground floor. Let's walk to the school together."

"That's completely fine with me. Anyways I'm going to go to the shower, so I'm ending the call."

"It's alright. I already told you what I needed to say. I'll also get myself ready. See you in around 20 minutes then, Ayanokouji-kun."

"Yeah."

Ending the call, Kiyotaka placed his phone on his bed before walking inside the shower and getting ready for school.

●♥◇♣♠♠♣◇♥●

'She is 3 minutes late...'

Kiyotaka leaned on the marble pillar in the hallways of the ground floor while his eyes were locked onto the elevators, awaiting for Horikita Suzune.

Soon, he noticed one of them reach the floor, and once it was opened....much to his disappointment,

Instead of Horikita, Kiyotaka found Sudou coming out of it.

As soon as their eyes met, Sudou immediately let out a big smile before walking towards the leader of Class-D, who lazily waved at him.

"Good morning, Sudou."

"There you are. I was looking for you last night. I even went in front of your dorm room and called for you so many times, but you never responded. Your phone was switched off as well."

"My bad for that. We got into a little incident, because of which I was quite busy last night. Anyways, for what reason did you call me?"

"I just wanted to thank you for saving my ass, man. I truly thought that I was a goner, but the moment I received the call from Chabashira-sensei and she said that the complaint has been revoked, I nearly jumped from joy."

There was an excited grin on the redhead's face who was patting Kiyotaka's shoulder in recognition.

"You don't have to be grateful towards me. After all, you had to part with 30,000 private points in the end. So, in a way, you saved yourself. All I did was to make work of the points you used."

"It's alright. Being a member of the first team, I'm getting enough Private Points. Other than that, I don't really care about having too many of them."

All I do is play basketball. As long as I have enough money to buy my essentials and the foods required, I'm good. Still, I'm grateful that you still trusted me till the end. Thanks a lot man."

"Don't give me all the credit...Horikita also helped a lot."

Sudou vigorously nodded to his words, the smile ever present on his face.

"I'll thank her as well. Anyways, what are you doing here all alone? Not going to classes?"

"Can't you see I'm wearing the uniform genius? I'm just waiting for someone. By the way, why are you up so early? Classes will start around One and a half hour later, right?"

"Oh..Our coach called us early today, since he wanted to give some important pointers for our practice game today."

"I see."

As if right on cue, Horikita walked out of the elevator, wearing a mask on her face. On the outside, she looked absolutely calm and elegant, but if one surveyed her properly, they could feel her breathing heavier than usual. And her face was even redder than normal.

Seeing her condition, Sudou immediately panicked before walking towards her.

"Horikita?! Are you okay? You look.....shit to be honest."

Immediately he was met with the glare of the black haired maiden, who still seems to not forget her routine despite the fever... That is scaring everyone with her eyes.

"Thank you so *cough* much for your *cough* compliment, Sudou-

kun. As a reward *cough* want to face the wrath of my deadly compass?"

In Spite of coughing a lot, Horikita seems to not lose her touch of threatening people and acting like a menace to the society.

'I should call this version of her MenaceKita.'

Sudou nervously chuckled to her words before immediately walking away from her, and standing behind Kiyotaka who lazily waved towards Horikita, receiving a small nod in response.

"Hahaha I'm good, don't worry. I think I understand why Ayanokouji was standing here all alone, as if he was waiting for someone. So I'm not going to disrupt your time alone. See you in class."

With that Sudou walked away as the mask wearing Horikita ambled towards Ayanokouji with slow, shallow steps, all the while her body was subtly moving in every direction, as if she was drunk.

Kiyotaka immediately walked towards her and grabbed hold of her hand, side eyeing her.

"I told you this was a bad idea. Your condition is worse than I expected."

All she could do was huff in response like a kid who got scolded.

"I'm *cough* fine. I already took my medicine and I'm wearing a mask so that I don't spread my fever to others *cough*."

Sighing to himself, Kiyotaka slung his bag over his back, before grabbing Horikita and carrying her in his hands, immediately making her let out a gasp.

"A-ayanokouji-kun?! What are *cough* you doing?!"

"You are wobbling everywhere. At any point you are just going to fall on the ground and hurt yourself."

His response filled with calm, calculated logic however didn't help the situation at all, making her feel even more embarrassed.

"B-but this is *cough* embarrassing."

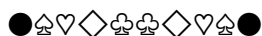
"Choose your poison then. Either go to school on my arms while I'm princess carrying you, or stay at home resting."

All Horikita could do in response is pull her mask even tighter to her face, trying to swallow herself within it.

"F-fine then. Let's go."

The brown haired boy looked at the blushing Tsunderekita with an amused expression, before booping her mask-covered nose.

"Good decision."



Soon, both Kiyotaka and Horikita found themselves in front of the Student Council Room as Kiyotaka could see her eyes gleaming in excitement, in spite of her condition.

"Excited to become your brother's colleague?"

His words led to her smile at him, the outline of which he could see through her mask.

"Kind of."

"Good. Then, let's go, I guess."

Without even knocking, Kiyotaka opened the door as all the eyes in the room went in their direction.

"Ayanokouji-kun!! What are you doing?!"

Horikita immediately pulled his ears trying to admonish him, however what's done is done.

Tachibana Akane immediately frowned at him, finding his actions disrespectful, while the Vice-President of the Student Council Nagumo Miyabi, waved at the two.

"Hello Ayanokouji. Hello Suzune-chan!!"

Horikita immediately glared at the smug blonde haired boy, who just looked away.

"I told you to not call me by my *cough* first name. Thank you very *cough* much."

"Are you ill, Suzune?"

Both of them looked behind to find The Student Council President, Horikita Manabu walking inside with a can of coffee.

"Unfortunately yes."

"I see. That's rather unfortunate. Do you require some help?"

"Not at the moment. Ayanokouji-kun is already doing enough for me, which makes me feel guilty, I don't want to burden you as well."

She looked down at the ground while saying this as her older brother couldn't help but sigh to himself.

He then moved one of his hands on top of his little sister's head while sending her a gentle gaze.

"I told you before....Suzune. You can't always do everything by yourself, didn't I?"

"Yes.. you did, but I don't want to burden others with my own problem."

"I don't think you're burdening any of us, Horikita."

Not letting her finish her words, Kiyotaka spoke up to which both the siblings looked at him.

"You are a strong, independent woman... However not everyone can do everything by themselves...You already know this.

I understand where you are coming from. But this is just all in your head. I don't mind helping you at all and I'm sure that your own brother doesn't mind as well."

Horikita Manabu softly smiled at Kiyotaka before patting his little sister's head.

"Exactly as Ayanokouji said. I am your brother. It's my job to help

you in every scenario, something which I failed in the past. So let me redeem myself to you and become a responsible brother, on whom you can rely on."

"Nii-cough san-"

With teary eyes Horikita looked up at her brother, but couldn't continue her words as she once again found herself in between a coughing fit.

Manabu Horikita immediately looked towards his secretary who seemed to understand his needs.

"Don't worry Horikita-kun, I got it."

"Thanks for always being so reliable, Tachibana."

With that the Elder Horikita gently placed Suzune on the sofa like chair where he usually sits and took out a small stool for himself.

Kiyotaka sat beside Nagumo who grinned at him before patting his shoulders.

"Despite your dull expression, you can actually speak quite well, Ayanokouji. Colour me impressed. Say, would you accept a small request of mine?"

"I would like to hear it first before giving my judgement."

"I see, I see. So you prefer to play cautious huh? Smart choice. However my request is pretty simple. Please talk to Asahina like this and convince her to stop beating me everytime, pretty please."

His voice was filled with amusement as if he was going to burst out laughing at any given moment. Kiyotaka decided to play along with his act, as he released an overactive sigh from the deepest pits of his heart.

"Unfortunately I can't do that, Nagumo-Senpai. No matter how good I am with my words, having a sound argument with a woman?.....please, I'd rather take my leave."

"Hahaha it seems like you know the drill, Ayanokouji. Us boys just can't go against our significant other, no matter how powerful and strong we are huh?"

Kiyotaka gave him a short nod, as Nagumo leaned back towards his seat, all the while smiling at the brown haired boy beside him.

Kiyotaka then looked towards the Elder Horikita who was handing his younger sister a bottle of water.

"So, what's the occasion, Horikita-senpai? Is this the day?"

Manabu Horikita nodded at him with a small smile on his face while patting his ill sister's head who was looking like she would burst out of excitement.

Her usually stern expression was nowhere to be seen, which was replaced with an expression resembling that of an excited baby....The sight of which made Nagumo Miyabi chuckle to himself.

"Yes, it is the day. From today onwards, I welcome Ayanokouji

Kiyotaka and Horikita Suzune of Class-D to be the newest members of the **Student Council**."

Nagumo then patted his shoulders with a small grin on his face.

"I hope we share some wonderful memories and create some impossible feats together, my new colleague."

"Together huh? So you already realised that you don't want to go against me? Smart Choice."

"Please take care of me."

End of Chapter 60

Words : 3167

By the time, this chapter is up....We may have already reached 200k reads which is insane!!!

Anyways, I've been delaying a lot on my COTE Episode 5 review, so here it is....

Lmao!!!! No other comments....

.....I'll just stick to the LN.....

Still want a rating : Just out of sympathy 2/10.

Skipped every fucking thing and had potato animation the whole episode xD.

I'm not even going to watch the rest of the episodes...I'll only watch the rooftop fight and I'm done.

Anyways hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.

●♠♥◇♣♣◇♥♠●

Chapter 61 : Positions

Season 3 : Chapter 5

Impression is an idea, feeling, or opinion about something or someone, especially one formed without conscious thought or on the basis of little evidence.

Impression is quite an important thing in this society, which either makes or breaks a human being....

However, no matter how useful of a thing Impression is... There are in fact a lot of downsides to it....

For example : There are some human beings in the world who only want to create an impression or facade of a happy, good hearted person with no flaws towards the outside world, failing to realise the fact, that because of this creation of false facade and using it everywhere, they are in fact, neglecting their real self and are becoming less happy with their own life day by day...

They are forgetting their own existence while this 'Alien' version of themselves which was never meant to exist in the first place, envelopes their heart and soul and forms into a shell of it's former self.....

That's why most of the people in this world who are portraying their fake selves to everyone, are the most problematic... Because they are the most unhappy any person could be....

And just because they are unhappy, they burn in agony and jealousy when they see people who are living their life comfortably and happily...

*The first word that comes to their mind is **DESTROY.....RUIN....FINISH.***

But in the end....They can't do anything but be a hindrance to everyone but themselves and create a lot of disturbance to everyone.

There is a reason, there are pesticides and insecticides in this world...

That is to get rid of those useless things, whose only job is to ruin everything.

That's why before they even get a chance to do anything....They meet the wrath of these chemicals, leading to their demise.

Similarly....from today onwards, I Ayanokouji Kiyotaka am also starting my movement in slowly but surely getting rid of the pest known as Kushida Kikyou, all the while making her suffer.

Because out of all the knowledge in White Room, if there is one which stuck with me for all this time is....

Never give your enemy even a chance to breathe. Strike them

when their guards are low and destroy them in whatever pace you want.



"So, what positions are we exactly getting?"

Hearing his question, Horikita Manabu looked back at Kiyotaka for a second, wearing a small smirk before adjusting his glasses.

"As of now, both you, Ayanokouji Kiyotaka as well as Horikita Suzune will share the position of the Treasurers of the Student Council.

Usually there is only one treasurer in the Student Council, however both you and Suzune are in your first years, where the Class Competition is at it's peak.

So in order to give the both of you enough time to create a foundation of your class, I thought it would be a good idea to have you both share the same position and divide the work equally, so that none of you receive the strain."

"By the way, I agreed with the decision Horikita-senpai made. Also with appointing two treasurers, it would be difficult for one of them to steal some points since the other would keep the budget in check, unlike what happened with our previous treasurer, isn't that right, Horikita-senpai?"

Nagumo grinned wildly at the Elder Horikita, who glared at him for a miniscule second before releasing a tired sigh to himself.

'From what it seems to me, somehow Nagumo-Senpai was related to the previous treasurer's removal, and judging by Horikita-Senpai's reaction, it seems that somehow the treasurer was set up by Nagumo in such a way, that he couldn't be proven innocent.'

Horikita, who was being fed chicken stew by Tachibana Akane, looked back at her Older Brother before her eyes met Kiyotaka's, who gave her a small nod of approval.

"Umm nii-san, what exactly will be our work as the Treasurer?"

"Managing the Economy of the Student Council. As you know, most of the clubs of this institution are being funded by the Student Council, so in a way, if we deem that the funds that we are donating to a certain club is being put to waste, resulting in our loss, you two, the treasurers have the right to show that report to either me, or Nagumo, in my absence, and we will make a judgement."

"Is that all?"

Kiyotaka's nonchalant words and his bored expression led to Tachibana frown towards his direction, sensing which Horikita immediately tapped her hand and opened her mouth to which the Secretary of the Student Council changed her attention from the brown haired boy towards her and continued feeding her.

"That's just the main boring work of the Treasurers, Ayanokouji. Want me to tell you about the fun part?"

Nagumo immediately took the reign of the conversation from The Elder Horikita and smugly grinned towards a now curious Ayanokouji.

"Please, do tell."

"Treasurers have the utmost control of all the Private Points of the Student Council, and they can do whatever they want with it, as long as it's for the betterment of the school and creates profit.

For example : They can pitch in some new ideas for special exams, they can install whatever they want inside the school as long as it's not against the President's words, and they can even borrow Private Points from the Council, as long as they pay the full amount within 6 months. There are a couple of other interesting features as well, but it's better for you guys to figure it out yourselves, since I don't want to ruin the fun, after all."

While Nagumo said the words '**as long as they pay the full amount within 6 months**', his eyes were directed straight towards the Elder Horikita who was clenching his fists in annoyance and mild anger.

I see....So from what I'm assuming, the previous Treasurer was somehow coerced by Nagumo-senpai to borrow a massive amount of Private Points, behind the President's back and in the end, he couldn't repay the debt, leading him to be kicked out.'

Horikita, who seemed to regain some of her energy, raised her hands, to which all eyes went towards her direction.

"I have some questions, which I would like to be answered."

"What is it, Suzune?"

"Nagumo-Senpai said that the Treasurers will get kicked out if they can't repay the debt, correct?"

"That I did."

"So, what happens to the debt of Private Points that they fail to pay? Will it not lead to a massive amount of loss to the Student Council?"

'That's a good question which was lingering in my mind as well.'

Apparently Manabu shared the same sentiment as well, as he let out a thin smile filled with pride.

"Good question, however I think the answer will disappoint the both of you. In simple terms, the huge amount of debt in the end goes to waste, while the Board of Directors as well as the Advisers fund a huge sum of Points, to compensate for that loss."

"But, wouldn't that amount to a loss for them, as well? Spending this much money on some irresponsible students seems a little stupid to me."

Nagumo then looked at him with a serious gaze as he took the responsibility of explaining the matter.

"Look at it from their perspective, Ayanokouji. When a student, who graduates from ANHS and starts a flourishing company, firm or be a person with a good reputation in the future, who will receive the credit for it?

Father, mother? Of course. But during these three most important years of a human's life which helps them establish their purpose, it was this school who nourished them. There is a reason, so many students apply for this school after all."

Nagumo's words led to both of the Treasurers nod to themselves.

"I have one other question, as well."

"Go ahead, Ayanokouji."

"The school is giving us a 2 week vacation on a Cruise Ship which will start in 3 days, correct?"

As soon as he brought out the topic, Manabu and Tachibana stiffened for a second as a wild grin formed on Nagumo's face.

"Yes, that is correct Ayanokouji. What about it?"

"I just think it's quite irrational for them to give us such a long vacation, and couldn't help but think that....there is something behind it...."

Manabu and Tachibana immediately looked away from his calculative eyes, while Nagumo, who looked like he was having the time of his life, further instigated him on the matter.

"Like what?"

"Our First Special Exam."

"....."

"....."

"Hahahahahahhha."

Nagumo immediately started laughing to himself, while clutching his stomach, lost in his amusement. Then his eyes went towards Ayanokouji as he smirked at him, while continuing to laugh further.

"Good question, Ayanokouji. I'm kind of curious about it as well, would you please enlighten us poor souls, Horikita-senpai?"

Pin drop silence formed in the Student Council Room, as Tachibana was looking at the brown haired boy with a shocked expression, while Manabu let out a small smirk before adjusting his glasses.

Horikita put on a thinking expression before nodding to his words.

"To be honest, now that you mention it, it does feel rather suspicious."

Ignoring Nagumo's previous taunt, Manabu Horikita directed all his attention towards both of his new colleagues.

"Both of you can think whatever you want. Just keep in mind the phrase that works here the best.

Be careful at all costs.

However let me give one piece of advice to you, try to overcome this fever of yours in these three days, Suzune. If it's necessary, then rest here in the Student Council Room, instead of going to your class."

"B-but-"

"He is right, Horikita. Take care of yourself for now. It's more important than a loss of 2 or 3 Class Points.

Anyways, Class is soon about to start. I think I should leave now."

Manabu gave a small nod in response as Kiyotaka stood up from his chair before giving Nagumo a nod of farewell, who just waved at him.

"Have a good day, Ayanokouji."

"You as well, Nagumo-Senpai."

He then walked towards Horikita before putting his hands on her forehead as he sighed to himself.

"100.8°F. Take a good rest, Horikita."

The black haired maiden let out a weirded out expression while scrunching her face.

"How can you tell my temperature? Are you a human thermometer?"

"Who knows?"

The other three chuckled at their 'unique' conversation as Horikita rolled her eyes at him, before showing him a faint smile.

"Have a good day, Ayanokouji-kun."

"Hmm. You, as well. I'll check up on you, right after the classes end."

"I'll be waiting for you then."

With that Kiyotaka went out of the room followed by Nagumo after a few minutes, as Horikita Manabu seemed like he was in deep thought. Both of his hands were clenched together as if he was trying to crack the code of Area 51. However the thing which was lingering in his mind was....

"It seems like I already got myself a potential brother-in law. Now all I have to do is play the perfect wingman and soon help the both of them to get into a relationship.

In my opinion, both of their presences compliment one another, and they both brought out some good effective changes on one another.

Very well then, this time I'll bear the responsibility of an Elder brother and help my little sister achieve her love.'

End of Chapter 61

Words : 2889

Dense Cupid Manabu is here....as the man focuses on his own sister's relationship and plans on helping them, completely having no idea about his own love life, like a true Horikita.

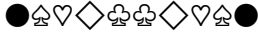
Sed Tachibana Noises intensify.

Anyways the polls this week is wild fr fr Lmao.

HAHAHAHHAAAAHA, THIS IS ACTUALLY FUNNY AF.

Anyways hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya..

Have another meme before I end this chapter lmao. This one is actually hilarious.



Chapter 62 : Idol

Season 3 : Chapter 6

Ayanokouji POV

After our enrollment in the Student Council, I walked out of the room giving Horikita one last glance, who just sent me a peace sign, trying to ease my worries.

If my suspicions are correct, and this vacation in fact will lead to the start of our First Special Exam, then the sickness of a capable student like Horikita Suzune would be quite detrimental for the class.

So, I hope she gets well as quickly as possible within tomorrow, or the situation would be a little problematic.

Speaking of problematic, I noticed a certain purple haired girl, sometimes following me, trying to take note of my actions.

Although a normal person would find it quite annoying and offensive when they find out the fact that each of their actions are being surveyed, I, fortunately, had the liberty to get used to it my whole life. So one more insignificant eye didn't matter much.

One thing is for certain though...Arisu Sakayanagi, although seems to be not doing much in any conflicts, is still making some swift, quick movements behind the scenes.

How ironic is that? Sakayanagi and quick movements truly don't go along in one sentence.

In my mind, that joke sounded quite funny, however I doubt that anyone would laugh if I said this out loud. I imagined Horikita's reaction to this and internally grimaced to myself.

"Are you serious Ayanokouji-kun?! At this point I would not be mad if she infact beat you up with her cane."

But you seemed to forget one thing, Horikita. If Sakayanagi in fact did attack me with her cane, she would immediately fall on the ground, not finding any balance, which would result in my victory.

While I was engaging myself in a conversation with an imaginary Horikita, I noticed two people walking towards my direction, one of whom had a small smile on her face.

She immediately waved at me with a smile, as I couldn't help but almost smile at her contagious nature as well.

"Hello Ayanokouji-kun."

"Hello Hasebe....And Miyake correct? Good morning."

"Good morning to you!!"

"Good morning."

The boy beside Hasebe flashed me a small smile with a small nod.

Miyake Akito....one of the boys of Class-D who was neither cooperative nor uncooperative for the class. From what I've seen he usually has a laid back attitude and is the type of guy to just go with the flow. He never created any problems in the class, so he is in my good books for now.

"So, this is the boy Hasebe usually hangs out with, huh? I must say, it's quite a good catch indeed."

I tried to close the gap between us by teasing both of them, like what Satou and Matsushita usually do, however for some reason, both of them widened their eyes at my statement, as Miyake looked at me in horror, before walking behind Hasebe.

I didn't do something wrong, did I?

As if she almost sensed by inner confusion, Hasebe let out a troubled chuckle before patting my shoulders in reassurance.

"Hehe don't worry Ayanokouji-kun. It's just the way you said those words, it sounded a little strange."

"Haha Y-yeah dude, you're fine, don't worry."

It's during times like these, I truly want to curse out that man for making me study tons of meaningless books written by some irrelevant author, instead of educating me on social interactions.

I've improved a lot on it, ever since I joined this school, however as one can clearly see, I definitely said something out of pocket, however what's more painful is that I have no idea about the words which I said were wrong.

"A-anyways, I guys it's our first time talking isn't it?"

After the incredibly awkward first impression, Miyake tried to go past it and tried to continue the conversation, something which I was thankful about.

"Yes. Although you sit right in front of me, we've never even had the chance to be acquainted with one another. It's a weird situation indeed."

My words led to Miyake letting out a small chuckle.

"Well....most of the time, your focus usually lingers on the ice demon who sits beside you, so I can understand why you didn't get the chance."

"Ice demon?"

I clearly understood that the person he referred to was Horikita, however I had no idea on why she is being called an Ice Demon. In my eyes, Horikita is nothing but a grumpy cat, who only feels comfortable when they are near person they are the closest to....Which is Horikita-senpai and yours truly.

Hasebe then stepped in front of me while responding to my confusion.

"You don't know the reason we call her that, do you? This nickname of her's got popular after she slapped Shinohara-san that day and made Karuizawa-san shiver in fear with her glare. After that, there was a mutual agreement among all the students, which was to never piss off Horikita-san hehe."

I see. So this nickname has been stuck with her for quite some time now. Should I instigate some drama and let her know about this nickname that everyone gave her?

Although it may cause some problems, however a grumpy Horikita attacking every single student seems to be quite an amusing sight.

"I see, I see. Anyways, would you two like to join me during lunch time? I would like to get acquainted more with the both of you, since Miyake and I technically just met, and I want to hang out more with you, Hasebe."

Even though I did want to hang out with them and have a good time together, I was aiming to create this situation in the first place for the sake of a certain someone.

"Oh?! Sure. I don't mind at all, what about you Haruka?"

"I agree with Miyacchi. Unlike the other boys, I only feel comfortable with Miyacchi and you, so I don't have any problems with that."

Your words definitely made me really happy Hasebe, however curiosity got the better of me as I blurted out another question.

"What about Hirata? He seems to be quite nice and reliable."

"Yeah. Hirata-kun is nice, but we never really had a conversation, so I'm different towards him, if it makes any sense."

I understood what she was trying to say, since I shared the same sentiment as her as well.

There are too many students in our class, with whom I still didn't have any liberty of having a conversation, which I am aiming to change in this 'Vacation' of ours.

"Anyways, I enjoyed our conversation very much. Thank you both for sparing me your valuable time. I really appreciate it."

"Don't worry about it. It was great to chat with you as well, Ayanokouji. You seem quite different normally in comparison to what you portray yourself in the class."

"I don't know whether it's a compliment or a criticism but I appreciate it, nevertheless."

"Haha it was a compliment, Ayanokouji-kun. Don't worry."

Hasebe playfully slapped my shoulders with a sly smile on her face as I couldn't help but find myself enjoying this small

conversation with these two.

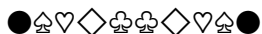
The atmosphere surrounding these two was quite different from the ones I usually surround myself with.

While around Matsushita and Satou, I need to keep in check every single word, or they might use it as ammo against me. These two, however, are rather laid back and know when to change the topics and when to have fun. I guess this is what we call the telepathic power of the Inteoverts.

Both the dynamics are fun to experience, I must say.

As someone who had no one to talk to a year back, I can't help but find myself incredibly grateful that I'm getting the opportunity to actually experience the small joys of life, like everyone else.

This momentary joy is something I wish to always cherish and protect, for which I need to create a foundation so strong that not even 'that man' has the ability to destroy.



Today, the atmosphere in the class was quite different than usual.

Because of Sudou's innocence being proven, a lot of his 'friends' came up to him to apologise for doubting him and snitching him out, to which Sudou just waved them off like it wasn't that big of a deal.

However, no matter how hard he tried to hide it, I could clearly notice that he was starting to feel extremely uncomfortable around the presence of Yamauchi, Hondou, Miyamoto and the other boys who immediately turned their backs on him, the moment he was questioned.

I would rather not make a comment about it out loud, but I'm rather satisfied that Sudou is starting to see the true colours of his 'friends' and hopefully learns his lesson.

Another change, which was something Class-D didn't expect was about a certain shy girl of Class-D, who went by the name of Sakura Airi.

She was neither wearing her fake glasses nor was keeping her hair down, instead kept in a high ponytail with the help of a silver ribbon. However the biggest change about her was the change in her behaviour as well as her difference in posture in comparison to usual.

Even if she was shy and was feeling embarrassed, by the reactions she was getting, she kept a small smile and tried to deal with the situation calmly.

Most of the students remained indifferent to this change of hers however some of the boys who only remembered her because of her massive breasts, till this day, had a new reason to remember her even more, from today.

Their eyes constantly drawing from her curves to her breasts, then her waist and then finally lingering in her breast, yet again...it made me feel a little weird, I'm not going to lie.

It's not like I don't understand them. As a perfectly hormonal teenager myself, I also find myself attracted to certain features of the female body *cough* thighs *cough* but if someone looks at it from the point of view of a girl, then it would be clear how much of a hellish feeling that is.

Sakura's only source of confidence was her looks... Not only did she have no acquaintances, she didn't have the charisma like Kushida or Ichinose to go and talk to people of her own accord.

That's why all I am going to do is set up a stage for her to shine, from where she has to take responsibility for the rest of her performance.

It may seem harsh of me to throw Sakura into the den of wilderness all by herself, but I have faith that she can carry out her performance against her comfort zone, swimmingly, albeit some difficulties at first...

Because in the end, she is the Idol Shizuku after all...

While I was talking to myself as my eyes went towards the figure of Sakura, she immediately looked back at me with a small smile and a wave, to which I gave her a short nod, as a means of greeting.

'Prove it to me Sakura... Show me that you are someone who is worth investing for...'

End of Chapter 62

Words : 2822

It's been a while since I wrote a chapter in a First Person POV. However, I was pretty influenced after reading an incredibly good story named "Checkmate" by Kiku_6037 that I also wanted to write a first person POV as well.

It's one of the best COTE stories I've read, so be sure to give it a shot.

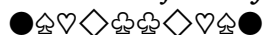
Anyways....We are finally introducing Akibro and Haruka, albeit was introduced in the early chapters, will be getting more importance, starting from now...

Anyways...I hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. I tried something different than usual which I hope was to your liking.

See ya.

Meme of the day :

Got this one from my buddy Kawaii_Aether on discord.



Chapter 63 : 'Vacation'

Season 3 : Chapter 7

The everlasting summer sea. The boundless blue sky. Perfectly clear air. The rustling of the salty sea breeze that gently wraps around the body.

Here, in the heart of the Pacific Ocean without feeling the sweltering midsummer heat.

Yes, this is really a Sea Paradise.'

"This truly is the best!!!!"

Ike, who was standing on the deck of a luxury liner shouted in ecstasy while raising both of his arms in the air, lost in his excitement.

Unlike the other times, where he gets told to "Shut up" or "Fuck off", this time none of those words flied to his way, as the other students were also mesmerized with the beautiful view they were getting from the deck in the reserved seats.

"The view truly is beautiful isn't it?"

"You are absolutely correct, Kushida-chan."

Kushida, along with her clique were giggling to themselves while looking at the outside sceneries with dreamy eyes, as Kiyotaka was quietly sipping on his pina-colada while sitting on a sunlounger, enjoying the relaxing atmosphere.

'After a lot of hardships, and overcoming them, like the Midterms, and the sorts, the school has gifted the first years with the Summer Vacation.

At first, this seems like an ordinary vacation, where the school is rewarding the students for their hard work.

However if all they wanted was to give us a vacation, then why are there only us first years in such a huge ship? Judging by the size of it, it can easily accommodate the other two years.

And before even coming here, when I engaged in conversations with Elder Horikita, Tachibana and even Nagumo-senpai, all I got in response were some vague words shrouded in mystery....'

Having finished with his drink, Kiyotaka placed his empty glass on the table beside the chair before getting up.

His eyes immediately met the blue eyes of a certain girl, who gestured to him to meet her in secret.

Complying to her wishes, Kiyotaka followed her towards an empty shade, devoid of many students.

"How is her condition, Karuizawa?"

"Much better in comparison to before. From what she is saying, her nose still has the sniffles, but other than that, I don't think she is that sick, to the point that she can't enjoy this vacation."

Karuizawa's words were filled with a sense of relief as she was fiddling with her blonde hair.

"Who are her roommates by the way?"

"Why? Are you planning to meet her?"

"Yeah. But unfortunately I can't just barge into a room filled with girls who might not feel comfortable with the presence of a boy."

"Hmm...You are acquaintances with Hasebe-san, correct?"

"Yeah. Although we didn't talk too much in the past, we got pretty good friends with these last couple of days and unlike other boys, she seems to be comfortable around me."

Karuizawa who was looking at her phone while listening to his words at the same time just nodded to him in response.

"That's good then. Don't worry. Horikita-san's roommates are Hasebe-san and Sakura-san. Since you and the former are comfortable around each other, and you act like an older brother of Sakura-san, I don't think they will mind your presence."

"Good to know that. By the way, you and your group are not messing with Sakura anymore, correct?"

His words led to Karuizawa nodding her head yet again, while feeling shameful of her past actions.

"No...I already apologised to her once, and she accepted. However, as a former victim myself, I understand how she feels. So I'll try to help her as much as possible. There's no way, I'll call my actions a mistake or use any excuse to tone it down, since I had the full intention of putting her down, that's why I'll also try to redeem myself, even if it's an impossible task.

'When we compare the mask that Karuizawa put up when the semester started and her real self, which she is slowly starting to project now, there's a clear night and day difference.'

Her pale, blue eyes were gleaming in determination as all Kiyotaka could do was nod in satisfaction.

"Very well. Are you coming with me or are you planning to hang out with your friends?"

"I'm fine over here. I doubt Hasebe-san and Sakura-san would be comfortable around my presence."

"Don't worry about that. I can attest."

"You are already helping me a lot. You don't want me to be dependent on anyone correct? Then let me do things my way as well. If I'm in a pinch or trouble, then please help me since I'm kind of dumb and unlike you or your girlfriend, I don't have solutions to

every single problem of mine."

"She is not my-"

"Yeah yeah shoo shoo. Go to your girlfriend, she is missing you."

With a sly smile on her face, Karuizawa shoo'd him off as if he was a dog, to which he released a small sigh, before carrying on his endeavour.

Karuizawa on the other hand just looked at her phone, reading the text she just sent to a certain someone, with an apprehensive smile on her face.

Karuizawa Kei : We don't have to continue this farce anymore, Hirata-kun. I'm sorry for burdening you for all this time. I realised that just clinging on to you wouldn't make me safe in the future...So I have to change myself. Still, thank you for helping me so much these last few months. You may not realise it, but I enjoyed all of our moments together...

[11. 04 a.m.]

She let out a troubled sigh while rubbing her temples in nervousness.

*"This was the correct decision, right? I just can't steal his freedom only for my sake. And even if I try to ignore it, my *relationship* with Hirata-kun indirectly hurted a lot of my friends...So if something does happen to me..."*

Can I trust on Ayanokouji?"

●♠♥♦♣♠♦♥♠●

"Excuse me? Is anyone there?"

Kiyotaka slowly knocked on the room, the three girls were accomodating, as he heard a muffled noise from the inside.

"Wait Airi, I think I heard Kiyotaka-kun's voice."

"Kiyotaka-kun? Wait...I'll go open the door."

Immediately he heard small, hurried footsteps coming towards his direction as the door opened revealing a peaking Airi Sakura, who softly smiled at the boy's presence.

"Good morning, Kiyotaka-kun."

"Good morning Airi. Can I come inside?"

"Oh yeah sure."

The pink haired girl moved to the side, as Kiyotaka walked inside the room meeting with the sight of Horikita drying her nose with a tissue paper.

Her hair was disheveled while her nose seemed red. But apart from that, her condition seemed to be much better than it was in comparison to 2 days ago.

As both of their eyes met one another, Horikita let out a small smile.

"Good morning, Ayanokouji-kun."

"Good morning, Horikita. Did you sleep well?"

"Mhmm."

Kiyotaka walked towards her bed and took a seat on the small stool beside it, as he touched her forehead with the back of his hand.

"Hmm, 99.7°F, looks like you're condition is improving."

"I think I said it before, but how can you precisely measure my temperature just by touching it? Don't tell me your father taught you that as well..."

She sarcastically rolled her eyes while Kiyotaka looked at her with an emotionless gaze.

"I mean, you're not wrong."

"I knew it..."

"Hehe~ Kiyotaka-kun is quite the anomaly, isn't he?"

Haruka Hasebe, who wrapped a towel around her neck, preparing to go to the shower grinned at the boy, who just shrugged his shoulders.

"As I told you before Haruka, I'm just a person with skills a little more than an ordinary human being. I'm not an anomaly or special."

"Yeah... 'Ordinary'...As if I believe that."

Horikita scoffed to his words, as the brown haired boy looked at her with slight amusement in his eyes.

"Umm, I'm sorry if it's not my place to say, but why do the both of you still call each other by your last names?"

Airi meekly raised her voice and directed the question towards both the students who looked at her with a confused gaze. Her words Immediately led to Haruka tapping her chin, as if she was in deep thought.

"Now that you say it, it is in fact very weird. Weren't you friends with one another way before us? Then why do you refer to each other with last names?"

"Wait....Is it really an unwritten law for friends to call each other by their first names? Is that why Haruka advised us to start this tradition?"

I swear to god, I've searched all the websites about friendships and romance, but I've never saw this as one of the important points.'

As Kiyotaka looked like his entire viewpoint of life has been changed, the black haired maiden on the other hand, didn't fare that well either.

"They do? But....Nii-san doesn't call Tachibana-Senpai by her first name and neither does she...Karuizawa-san and Hirata-kun do not refer each other like that as well...."

But I'll be lying if I say that I'm opposed to call Ayanokouji-kun by his first name.'

While Kiyotaka was still cursing out Internet-sensei in his mind, Horikita Suzune once again proved the worth of her bloodline as she boldly took the initiative with a smirk on her face, trying to mask the inner embarrassment bubbling inside of her.

"I-if he doesn't mind, then I'll gladly call him Kiyotaka-kun. Are you alright with that Kiyotaka-kun?"

'She said it twice in 4 seconds...'

"I'm fine with it. I presume you don't mind me calling you Suzune as well?"

"....."

"Suzune as well.... "

"Suzune as we-"

"Suzune...."

As soon as he called her by her first name, both of her eyes widened in surprise as she immediately felt butterflies in her stomach.

At that moment, her mind immediately recollected to the words Satou said after the Midterm exams.

"She used the sacred first name!! Holy shit."

'Is this what Satou-san meant when she said sacred? Because hearing my name coming out of his mouth makes me feel like I'm in heaven.'

[Goddamit.. Why do I write such unfunny jokes..This made me cringe so much□□]

"Yes I'm absolutely fine with it Kiyotaka-kun. By the way if I may ask, what are you planning to do after this Kiyotaka-kun?"

Would you mind if I join you in your endeavour Kiyotaka-kun? As you can see, my condition is a lot better than before, so I presume you have no problems with me joining, right Kiyotaka-kun? Why are you not saying anything, Kiyotaka-kun? Are you ok Kiyotaka-kun? Am I troubling you with anything Kiyotaka-kun?"

As if she was a malfunctioned robot, Horikita started rambling about random things while emphasising Kiyotaka's first name at every sentence.

Both Haruka and Airi looked at her with troubled expressions while chuckling to themselves.

"Hehe~ you're at fault for making the dormant volcano wake up Airi-chan."

"Sorry~"

Kiyotaka's forehead started to sweat a little as he experienced first hand, the craziest version of Horikita he has ever seen.

'Is this Suzune's final form? Yanderekitas?'

However unknown to Kiyotaka himself, he would soon come to find the knowledge that Horikita's final form is so powerful that it would even pose a challenge to his Ultimate form : Hornykouji

"Calm down...Suzune (*It feels weird to call her that*) You are not leaving this room, got it? Take rest so that you can produce 100% results when the time comes."

Horikita nodded to his words with a displeased expression on her face.

"As much as I want to disagree with you, I understand your reasonings. So I shall take my rest."

"Wait...what do you mean by results, Kiyotaka-kun? This is a vacation right? What does results have to do with any of this?"

Unable to contain her curiosity, Haruka asked him the question, while Airi directed her gaze at him curiously, anticipating her answer.

"Both of you will soon know about it. It's an information only confidential to the Student Council, so both of us can't reveal it."

"Bummer~ By the way, if I may ask, are you two going to get monthly private points, since you joined the Student Council?"

"Yes, in fact, we will. Since we are officially are the members of the Student Council, we are going to receive 200,000 private points every month."

"I see I see. Will the amount increase when you get promoted to a better position, or if your class is better? Or would it remain fixed?"

"Didn't take you as someone to ask such questions."

"I'm quite curious and intrigued about it. If you don't want to answer my question, then you don't have to."

Hori-Suzune took the reign of the conversation as her gaze was directed towards the blue haired girl.

"From what I heard after conversing with Nagumo-Senpai, our salary does in fact, increase every year. So, while us first years are receiving the lowest amount, the third years are receiving the highest."

"I see I see. That certainly makes a lot of sense. Thank you for answering my questions. I'll go to the shower now."

With that Haruka went inside the shower....However a couple of seconds later she peeked through the walls with a mischievous grin directed towards the Leader of Class-D.

"Don't try to sneak a peek on me, kay~"

However her teasing seemed to not work on him, as he smoothly turned the tables on her.

"Now that you said it, I will, just to infuriate you."

Haruka's face immediately lit up in a blush as she quickly slammed the door close. Horikita on the other hand immediately grabbed Kiyotaka's hand with both of her own, placing them in between the valleys of her breasts and started pulling him with all her might.

"You aren't doing anything at all, Kiyotaka-kun!! I won't let you!!"

"H-horikita-san, you might hurt him, please let him go."

"No I won't. Otherwise he might do as he says. He is way too dangerous, Sakura-san."

All the while this whole chaos was going on, a message popped up in Kiyotaka's notifications.

Chabashira-sensei : Good morning Ayanokouji. I hope you are having a great time in this 'Vacation'.

Since you want to win everything in the end, heed my advice and watch the beautiful 'scenery'. Who knows, it might be useful in the end.

[11 : 15 a.m.]

End of Chapter 63

Words : 3345

Had this chapter in my drafts....so all I needed to do was proof read it and just make small edits here and there.

I still can't get past a certain limit of 600-700 words everyday, which I used to overtake easily....

Anyways the chapters in the future will update in a slower pace in comparison to Season 2...I hope you guys don't mind, but I'm not getting free time anymore, which I had ample of it these past couple weeks.

Anyways that's all for this chapter. See ya.

●♠◇♥♣♣◇♥♠●

Chapter 64 : Altercation

Season 3 : Chapter 8

While his hands were being smothered between the medium but premium breasts of his black haired friend Horikita Suzune, Kiyotaka couldn't help but marvel at the situation he found himself in.

'Is this the reward fate had bestowed upon me for working so hard for the last fifteen years?

This is not bad... at all. I wonder what would go through that man's mind if he sees his "Masterpiece" surrounded by beautiful girls all day long.....

Now that I think about it...Other than Miyake, Sudou and Professor I don't really have any male acquaintances huh?.....How troublesome....

Is this what Hirata feels like? Well, I'm taking away one of the girls from his group, so he should owe me for lessening his load. I might have him treat me to the strawberry flavoured pancake which I saw in the Pallet Cafe ■□■□'

Kiyotaka snapped out of his thoughts, when he suddenly heard the noise of his notifications going off.

Reluctantly, he pulled out his hands from Horikita's bust....who seemed kind of disappointed? Yeah fever is definitely making her mind process her actions slowly.

"Don't worry Suzune, I won't peek on Haruka. Someone texted me, so hold on for a second."

Horikita huffed in response while looking away, while her face was tinted red in embarrassment as her mind finally caught up with her actions.

As Kiyotaka looked at the text, he couldn't help but raise his eyebrows slightly.

Chabashira-sensei : *Since you want to be win everything in the end, heed my advice and watch the beautiful 'scenery' from the cruise ship. Who knows, it might be useful in the end.*

{ 11.34 a.m. }

'The emphasis on the word Scenery definitely makes her speech sus. I guess I might get an advantage in this special exam, thanks to my dear Sensei.'

With that he started typing a reply, while Horikita went back to her usual grumpy mood as she started re-reading 'Crime and

Punishment' for how many times now?

Ayanokouji Kiyotaka :

Thanks for letting me know Sensei. I appreciate it....

[11.35 a.m.]

chabashira sae is typing....

Chabashira-sensei : *You don't have to thank me. I hope you are a man of your words and can indeed be the winner.*

[11.36 a.m.]

Ayanokouji Kiyotaka :

You don't have to worry about it. Even if I don't give my 100%, there's no one in this world who can beat me.

[11.36 a.m.]

●♠♥♦♣♠♦♥♠●

"Attention to all the students! Please gather on the deck. You'll be able to see the island soon. For a while, you will be able to see a very meaningful and splendid scenery".

This curious announcement suddenly reverberated throughout the ship. Kushida and the others paid attention to it and calmly seemed to be looking forward to what was to come.

Just like them, Kiyotaka also leaned on the deck as his face met the cold breeze of the ocean which resulted in his hair swirling a little because of the wind, a feeling which he found to be somewhat comfortable and pleasing.

Chabashira-sensei's text still lingered in his mind as he registered every single landmark or view his eyes could lay it's sight on. Those golden brown orbs of his betrayed its usual nonchalance and was replaced with a calm and calculated gaze, much like a hunter looking after his prey.

Soon as the cruise ship finally started slowly revolving around the island, Kiyotaka seemed to realise what his dear Sensei wanted him to see.

' There is not a single concrete evidence behind what I'm thinking , but I think I understand the situation...Just as Chabashira-sensei said....This scenery truly is beautiful..'

Ike let out a whoop of joy. The students noticed it and they began to cluster on the deck all at once. When a whole mass of people crowded the place, some bossy students came to push us Class-D students so that they could take our place on the deck.

"Ah so bothersome...Hey, get out of the way! You rejects!"

In a fit of rage, one certain green haired guy walked behind Kiyotaka and suddenly tried to push him away and take his spot.

Keyword 'Tried' since the bully failed to even move him an inch despite using all his might to make the Class-D student look stupid.

Now, instead of showing the 'defect' his place, his own pathetic

display was being seen by all the other classes as they rolled their eyes at his typical bully behaviour. The green haired guys eyes widened as Kiyotaka slowly turned towards him with a calm expression on my face.

"You tried to push me for no reason, why is that?"

His voice, however seemed to take the boy aback for some reason, that Kiyotaka himself was not aware of. He looked towards the other students and they looked equally horrified while Sudou, Akito and Ike looked at their scuffle with an almost satisfied and proud gaze.

The green haired guy, however masked his inner fear with a fake bravado of confidence and started further rambling his useless mouth.

"You should understand this school's system. It's a school based on merit. There are no human rights in class D. 'Defectives' have to behave obediently and submissively, like the rejects they are. This side, we're all class A".

I see....So this guy is an elitist huh? Somehow he got put in Class-A and this gives him the leverage of looking down on everyone else using the Class-A pass, even if he is an inconsiderate insect in comparison to them.

Now this puts into perspective what Nagumo-Senpai wishes to do. He wants to purge these stupid elitists with no use from the top classes and force them into the bottom, where they truly belong.'

Sudou looked extremely frustrated at his words and was coming towards the both of them with an annoyed expression, an action which the Leader of Class-D was not a fan of.

So Kiyotaka's gaze immediately was directed towards the redhead, as he gave the boy a reassuring nod, trying to convey the message *'Leave Everything to me.'*

Sudou appeared to understand his gesture and walked back towards his initial position inspite of being extremely frustrated, as Ike, Akito and the newly arrived Sotomura were calming him down.

Kiyotaka then looked back towards the annoying pest in front of him who was still glaring, trying to intimidate him.

'Sigh....This is annoying.'

However his farce of confidence immediately disappeared as soon as a bald headed student entered through the crowd of terrified students. Although he looked somewhat uncomfortable under the brown haired boy's cold and impassive gaze, he still approached the two students with an almost calm and mild expression on his face.

"Yahiko....I saw everything you were doing all this time. Do you think your actions depict that of a Class-A student? Ayanokouji-kun is a member of the Student Council. He can easily report you

for your actions if he wants."

Hearing those words, the green haired boy named Yahiko widened his eyes, his sense of realisation kicking in as Kiyotaka felt a little satisfied with his expression.

"B-but how is a defect like him a member of the Student Council instead of you who is the leader of Class-A?"

"I see.....So he is the leader of Class-A huh?"

"I had enough of this!!"

Sudou freed himself from the three boys and grabbed Yahiko's collars while glaring at him, as all the green haired dog could do was look towards his master with fear in his eyes.

"How dare you insult Ayanokouji as well as us hah?! We were trying to be civil but you're acting worse than a defect yourself!!"

"H-how d-dare y-you compare-"

"Leave him Sudou. The dog has rabies, you might contaminate yourself if you touch him any longer."

Kiyotaka's small quip lightened the tension around the Class-D students as they used Yahiko as a scapegoat and started laughing at him.

The boy in question turned red in anger. However the Leader of Class-A walked in front of Yahiko and towered over Kiyotaka who looked at him with an inscrutable stare.

Not wanting to escalate the situation any further, he bowed a little sincerely, trying to appease the hostile atmosphere.

"I apologise for the actions of my classmate. I hope that there will be no other hostility between our classes because of today's incident.

However I hope that your classmates also don't attack mine."

"W-why are you a-apologising to this defe-"

"Please keep your mouth shut, Yahiko. I don't want to hear a single word come out of your mouth."

Yahiko clenched both of his fists in frustration as Kiyotaka looked straight at Katsuragi's eyes with his usual empty gaze before shrugging his shoulders.

"Keep your dog under a leash before he bites more than he chews or he would have to get euthanized.

Unlike your pathetic attempts of being a leader, I already have the ability of controlling my classmates, so that they act like a human being, unlike that rabid dog over there. I hope you keep this in mind, Mr. Johnny Sins."

"Johnny Sins?"

The bald headed guy cocked his head in confusion while Kiyotaka walked past him, gesturing the Class-D boys to follow him, who were for some reason snickering to themselves.

"He called him Johnny, Ken ppft"

"That one there was a violation, personally I wouldn't have it."

"Stop it you two. Let's follow Kiyotaka ppft."

Unable to control himself, Akito started laughing as well, while Katsuragi stood still in a state of confusion.

"Why did he call me Johnny Sins? Who is he? And why are they laughing at that name?"

From a small distance from the commotion, an amused laugh can be heard from a certain Class Leader.

"Kukukukuku he really called him Johnny Sins in front of everyone. What an insane guy kukukuku, isn't that correct Ibuki?"

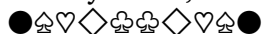
"Fuck off."

"Still mad that he got you pregnant?"

The short blue haired girl just sighed at her situation while rubbing her temples in annoyance.

"I hate the both of you."

"Love you too, kukuku."



After his confrontation with the leader of Class-A, Johnny Sins, Kiyotaka walked out of that area in order to look around the ship one last time before they boarded in the island.

This time as well, he felt as if he was being followed....however unlike the beautiful purple haired girl who stalks him, the presence seemed to be different.

"Isn't that the guy who was there with Sakayanagi as well....He is not even trying to hide his presence as if saying "look at me, I'm following you. Give me attention."

Just how troublesome can these people be?"

Kiyotaka gave the boy a small glance before gesturing him to follow behind, to which the follower nodded with a smirk on his face.

Soon both the students passed through the hoards of the students without appearing to be suspicious, as this time, Sakayanagi's bodyguard was in fact hiding himself quite well, something which impressed Kiyotaka a little bit.

After 3 minutes of further walking, they seemed to arrive at their destination...in the boiler room of the cruise ship. The whole area was empty and quite, as if it was deserted not a long time ago, something both the boys were grateful to.

"So.....who are you and for what purpose you were following me for?"

Kiyotaka immediately passed the ball towards the Class-A boy's court and took reign of the conversation as all he could do was shrug his shoulders while his ever present smirk was still present on

his face.

"Don't mind me, I am just following Princesses orders. As for my name, I am Hashimoto Masayoshi. Nice to meet you, Ayanokouji Kiyotaka, Leader of Class-D."

The blonde ponytail haired boy sent one of his hand towards Kiyotaka wanting to shake his hands as the leader of Class-D, just rolled his eyes at the sight before continuing his confrontation.

"And? What was your purpose for confronting me? I doubt that a Class-A student has that much free time to follow a mere 'defect'..."

All Kiyotaka received from his words were hearty laughs from Hashimoto who looked like he heard one of the best jokes in a long time.

"-hahah oh my god that's funny. Please pardon my rudeness-pffthahahah."

As the Class-A boy soon came to a stop with his laughter, his usual nonchalant face turned into that of a serious one, a change that Kiyotaka took notice of.

"Princess said that you are an interesting student and are miles above the defects of Class-D in terms of abilities. And the reason I was following you is because of princesses orders as well. Please take the phone."

Hashimoto handed Kiyotaka his phone without a second thought, as the brown haired boy heard a certain maiden giggling through the device.

"Fufufufufufufufufu."

"Sakayanagi huh....Good morning."

"Good morning to you as well, Ayanokouji-kun. How well are you faring in the cruise ship? Any difficulties?"

"Not really. However I'm confused about a matter."

"What is it?"

"If I recall correctly, both of us shared numbers...then why are you talking to me through Hashimoto's phone?"

"....."

"....."

"....."

"....."

"Why not?"

"....."

"....."

"....."

"Fair enough."

Kiyotaka rubbed his temples at the weird actions of the main student of Class-A while Hashimoto, who was standing at the side was chuckling at their interaction.

"Alright, so what was the reason for you calling me, Sakayanagi?"

"....My faction is planning to sabotage Katsuragi-kun's faction and destroy the class as much as we can, under his name. But for that, we need a person from other class who will associate with us, who will be the person who is 'destroying' Class-A.

And after hearing your interaction with Katsuragi-kun and his lapdog...I realised that there was no one else more suited for that position, other than you.

So, what do you say, Ayanokouji-kun? If you accept the offer, our actions behind the curtain will go swimmingly, whereas you will be able to get Class-A even weaker and weaker....2 Birds with one stone...

Fair deal correct? fufufufu."

End of Chapter 64

Words : 3279

Sakayanagi and Kiyotaka's unusual alliance?

Johnny Sins finally getting dominated at something? xD.

A lot of questions and only one answer for it...Keep continuing to read the story.

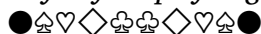
I already made a rough draft of my Island Exam and shared it to a couple of my friends, who are big authors of this community

**cough* *cough* Kawaii_Lumine and Shiorimondesu and both of them liked it..*

Can't forget my boy Nayan507 as well.

So, I'm fairly confident and got back my motivation 👍.

Anyways hope you guys enjoyed the chapter...See ya.



Chapter 65 : The Den of Hell

Season 3 : Chapter 9

Soon, after encircling the island for about six times, the cruise ship finally started directing towards its destination as the joy and excitement of each and every student reached its peak. Gasps of joy could be heard as their enthusiasm increased greatly as the Island was now visible to the naked eye and the distance shortened more and more.

Kiyotaka who somehow camouflaged himself among one of the groups mentally noted to himself about the Student who was actually scrutinising the Island instead of just enjoying the view. It was none other than the leader of Class-A, Johnny Sins.

'If what my theory is indeed correct, then we can't waste too much time. The moment we step foot on the island, we have to make a move.'

While he was lost in his thoughts, his eyes were slowly drawn towards one certain classmate of his, who was also scrutinising every nook and cranny of the island.

As soon as their eyes met one another, Kiyotaka received a small nod and a thin smirk, to which Kiyotaka nodded as well as a means of greeting.

'Good to know that he is taking this seriously as well. I guess he took my promise to him very seriously. Good to know.'

Soon Kushida approached Kiyotaka with a big and excited smile on her face

"It's a very mysterious sight... I'm impressed. Don't you think so, Ayanokoji-kun?"

"Oh? hmm yeah true. This indeed is quite a mysterious sight. Are you excited of sharing some more secrets with your 'friends' Kushida?"

His sarcastic monotone voice immediately resulted in Kushida's smile to falter as she masked it with her cute expression yet again.

"You shouldn't say all these things in front of others, Ayanokouji-kun. We are in an Island after all, it would be pretty sad for the Class-D students to hear the news that their Leader passed away after all."

"Are you trying to threaten me, Kushida? It seems like you still don't know your own place, miss *'I will tell everyone you raped me.'*"

"Hehehe it was a fun talking to you, Ayanokouji-kun. I'll be going

to my friends now, ok?"

"Do whatever you please."

'Enjoy these last couple tranquil moments... After all what awaits you is nothing but pain and despair.'



"From here, we will land on an uninhabited island owned by the school. Students should change into their jerseys, check their prescribed bags and luggage properly and don't forget to bring out their mobile phone. After that, please assemble on the deck. Please keep all your personal belongings in your rooms. Since there's a possibility that you won't be able to go to the toilet for some time, please settle it properly now."

As this announcement rolled around, all the students walked into their changing rooms with high spirits and excitement. Similarly to them, Kiyotaka also followed them into the group room and changed into the journey which he wears during his Physical Education Class, before returning back to the deck.

"From this point onward, starting from the students of class A, we'll begin to descend in order. Moreover, it's forbidden to bring mobile phones on the island. So please, hand them over individually to your homeroom teacher and go down the ship".

With the teacher's voice on the loudspeaker, the students went down the stairs of the ship in order.

"Whew, please hurry up! Even though we're thinly dressed, we're all sweating here".

The deck of the anchored ship was too exposed to the sun, resulting in a lot of complaints. As Class-D was standing on the ship while ready to go down, enduring the heat, Horikita walked towards the group with small, elegant steps.

"Did you finish re-reading your favourite book again?"

"Yes I did. After that I started reading a new book as well, but because of the announcement, I had to stop it."

"What's the name of the book? If I may ask."

"It's called *'From Whom The Bell Tolls'*. Ever heard of it?"

'Of course I've heard about it. It was one of Ernest Hemingway's representative works, wasn't it? An unparalleled masterpiece, no doubts about it. I thought about it for a long time, but Horikita's hobby of reading these kind of books is amazing...'

"Of course I've heard about it. I really liked the character of Robert Jordan and how the genre changes from peasants to philosophical, psychological, political and self analytical.

It is simply a wonderful clydescope of different prose, plots and characters who all seem to be present and through reading the

novel."

Horikita looked at him with an impressed gaze and a thin smirk.

"One of the quotes from the book resonates with me a lot..."

"Which one, Suzune? There are a lot."

"I am speaking much...But it is so we may understand one another."

I never thought that one day I would find this quote relatable but here I am."

She let out a remorseful chuckle and looked in front of their direction, where the Class-D students started walking down.

Chiaki Matsushita soon joined the both of them with a suspicious gaze.

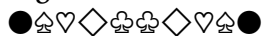
"Hey, strangely aren't they being too guarded or, how should I say, careful? They should confiscate mobile phones during a test, not now. It looks like it's even forbidden bringing too many personal items. Doesn't it feel a little suspicious?"

Both Kiyotaka and Horikita looked at each other for a second, before the raven haired maiden took lead of the conversation.

"Definitely. If people are only playing in the ocean, I also feel like they don't really have to go to the extent of doing that."

"I'd say be prepared for anything drastic. I doubt an institution like this will give us a free vacation without taking anything in return."

"I guess..."



"From now on I will be calling the roll for class D. Students who have been called, please reply firmly."

Chabashira-sensei loudly clapped both of her hands to get the attention of the students of Class-D.

The students were instructed to form a line as their teacher started checking for the attendance for their class, simultaneously holding a surfboard? on the other hand....which was quite a funny sight....as her actions was betraying her stone like face.

"Oh c'mon, give us free time already. The sea is stretching in front of me, you know."

Ike, who was standing behind Kiyotaka annoyingly muttered to himself, however nobody really cared about his words. Poor him, falling into irrelevancy.

After Chabashira-sensei was done with her work, shortly after Mashima-Sensei, the homeroom teacher of Class-A came forward, stepping on the white platform.

"First of all, I'm happy that you arrived safely to this place today. However, it's unfortunate that one student couldn't take part due to sickness."

"Ah, there's one sick guy who couldn't join this trip, poor thing."

"Thank you for repeating exactly what he said genius. I'm so grateful for your help."

"O-oh?! My bad for that Aya."

"Yeah yeah I know. Just keep quiet, ok? It's already a pretty hot weather, I don't need you rambling behind my ear 24/7."

His words led to Ike quieting down as Mashima-Sensei's eyes started surveying every student with a serious expression on his face.

"H-hehehe~ it seems less like a summer vacation and more like a summer trial, don't you think so?"

Satou's harmless comment however didn't fruit so well, as Mashima-Sensei uttered his next words which caused all the students to fall into a state of chaos.

"So, Let's go ahead with this academic year's first trial."

"Eh? Trial? What do you mean?!"

All the students widened their eyes as a couple of Class-D 'defects' were ready to throw some more questions, however in the end refrained themselves, when they felt Kiyotaka glancing at them from the front.

"The duration period will be of one week. It ends at noon on August 7. From now on, you are going to live on this deserted island for one week. It is a test to see if you can live all together as a group. Furthermore, this special trial has been designed in reference to real life corporate training. Even before we start I am going to give you hints about what it takes to win this special test."

Almost every student stood dumbfounded as they looked like they almost grew a second head.

"Till just now, no, even now, the students thought that it was just a class trip. They were gathering like they had been attacked unexpectedly. Our vacation in the summer holiday depended on the benevolence of the school. But this was, as I thought, just an illusion. So, I guess I understand their confusion."

"Since this island is deserted, there are no ships or boats, what will we do about accommodations?"

One of the Class-B students with purple-violet hair, who appeared calm in comparison to other students, posed this question, as Mashima-Sensei nodded to him before giving his response.

"That's right! Boarding a ship is not allowed without a justifiable reason. Living on this island requires you to consider everything, from sleeping place to meal preparation. The moment the test starts, each class will separately receive 2 tents and 2 flashlights. You will be provided with one box of

matches. There is no restriction in supply of sunscreen cream. Each person will receive one toothbrush. As an exception, sanitary good are allowed without restriction only for girls. You can ask anything to your homeroom teacher. That's all. What's left now is to distribute the provisions."

"Whaaaat? So to win this deserted island trial, I have to turn into a survivor? Now, it's not the time to talk nonsense! This is not an anime or a cartoon!"

"We can't sleep all together in just 2 tents! And what are we going to do about food? I can't do this!"

Ike once again started throwing a tantrum as the other classes looked at him with an annoyed gaze, although deep down inside their hearts, they found his behaviour relatable. They were also not happy with this outcome.

"No..... way!!!! So ... This is not just some special operation. The island itself plays an important role in this whole thing. This is why it exists, being a test ground."

"No way!! This can't be happening!"

"So what Mr. Mashima told us about this island, only a part of it was true. In this world, there are many other forms of enterprises like our school that exist, and the training course can be changed suddenly.

Your place in work is not just your chair on the office but also your ability to move forward by the cast of your dice, just like when your salary is decided. The world is much wider and deeper than you know."

With a calm and collected voice, Chabashira-sensei took the reign of the conversation while directing it towards Ike, who was still frustrated of this sudden outcome.

"In other words...you get to draw the thin line between reality and unreality."

Most of the Class-D students had glum look on their faces, unable to grasp the realisation of the situation.

"What is the meaning of this test... I bet you guys are thinking like this, now. Or you may doubt the very existence of this training program, but, students who are thinking like this will become adults with no possibilities in the future.

You may think... Is this the basis to criticise with words like '*You're impossible*', '*You're ridiculous*'?

But you guys are just students. You are still nobodies and your worthlessness is equal among yourselves. Are you going to criticise the methods of a top class corporation? That would be ridiculous.

To give you an example. In order to control a corporation, you have to rise to the top as the manager. If you were the president

who runs a higher-ranking company than the one I cited, you may have the right to deny it. However, there shouldn't exist a basis that seeks to deny lesser human beings, in the first place."

"Sensei?! I have a question that I would like to get answered."

"Sure go ahead, Katsuragi."

Class-A's Leader, Johnny Sins, whom for some reason, their homeroom teacher called Katsuragi, posed a question.

"We were brought here under the pretext of going on a relaxing trip. After all, this was supposed to be our summer vacation. Don't you think that springing this corporate training on us out of nowhere can be considered unfair?"

"Now that you say it...it certainly is.....However, please do not worry. It would make sense for you to have complaints if you were being forced into a harsh situation.

Even though we're calling it a special test, there's no need to think about it in such unhappy terms. In the coming week, you can go swimming, or hold a barbecue party. It wouldn't be a bad time for you to occasionally have a campfire and with your friends, either. The theme of this special exam is 'freedom', after all."

His words, instead of sating their curiosity increased it ten folds.

"Huh?"

"A test... An exam... But we can have barbecue parties?"

"I don't get it. I'm so confused."

"As a major part of this test, we've decided to distribute 300 points to each class. By using your points well, you might be able to enjoy this week's special test just as you would a normal trip. We've also prepared a manual just for that purpose."

Saying this, Mashima-Sensei took out a booklet which was handed to him by another member of the staff before further continuing.

"This manual lists all of the ways you can obtain points. It also explains where to get food, drinking water, and other necessities. If you want to have a barbecue, it explains how to prepare the equipment and ingredients. We also have numerous tools for you to be able to enjoy playing in the ocean to the fullest."

As Mashima-sensei finished his explanation, the students' grim expressions gradually faded.

"The way we use those 300 points will be at our own discretion? Is my understanding correct, Sensei?"

The leader of Class B, Ichinose Honami, asked.

"That's right. It's possible to arrange for anything using your

points. Of course, you must use them in a systematic approach with a solid plan. That way, you can spend your week without any difficulties."

"Sensei, is there a catch to this special test? In the end, it's still some sort of exam. Is there something difficult that we need to overcome?"

"No, there's nothing difficult. Not only that, this exam won't have any adverse effects on your second semester. As your grade's coordinator, I can guarantee that."

"S-Sensei... You're saying that having fun for a week is also an option?"

"That's right. You're all free to do what you want. Of course, there are some bare minimum rules that you need to abide by as a group, but there shouldn't be anything difficult about that."

His words caused all of the previous depressed and bewildered aura to disappear as the students started looking like they were excited for this journey.

However all of this energy dissipated when the Homeroom Teacher of Class-A uttered his next words.

"When this special test period is over, each class's remaining points will be added to their total class points. Your point totals will reflect this change once summer vacation is over."

'And boom.'

All the students froze in shock as they couldn't believe their ears. Class-D students weren't faring any well, as most of them looked betrayed and annoyed...but still they refrained them from speaking further...

"Each class will receive one copy of the manual. If the manual is lost, you may have another copy. However, it will consume points, so please be very careful. Also, the student who was marked absent from this trip was from Class A. According to the rules of this special test, should any student have to leave due to illness, there will be a 30-point penalty to the class as a whole. Therefore, Class A will be starting with 270 points."

"How cruel....Did Sakayanagi also knew that something like this was taking place and intentionally didn't come here? That certainly seems like what she can do."

Most of the students of Class-A looked really upset and frustrated with this revelation, however there was nothing they could do.

"You may now disperse."

Mashima-sensei's final words rang inside the ears of the students as they mindlessly started walking towards their designated

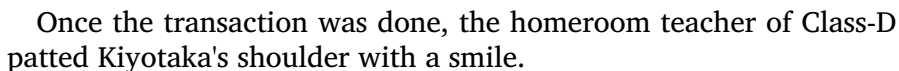
"Please proceed towards your respective class advisers to receive supplementary instructions." Another teacher's voice could be heard from the loudspeaker.

"I'm going to execute my plan, now. Are you ready to control the class by yourself, 'Leader'?"

"Good to know. Also, come near the riverside. That would be our first spot. Got it?"

"What is it, Ayanokouji?"

"Sure, go ahead with your demands."



"All the best, and don't overexert yourself, got it?"

Not wanting to continue the conversation further, Kiyotaka walked away from her, ignoring the slight chest pain which occurred once again...and walked towards his next target.

"Let's go. I bought the stuff, now we need to capture the spots as soon as possible."

"Don't worry about it, Ayanokouji-boy...I was ready for this from the moment we had that conversation...My question is..Can you keep up with me?"

"I guess we have to see, Koenji."

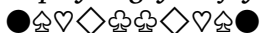
With that, while Horikita and Hirata were taking control of all the students of Class-D and were creating their base in the riverside...Koenji Rokusuke and Kiyotaka Ayanokouji of Class-D jumped through the branches of the trees of the jungle while capturing the spots quickly, before other classes could appear.

End of Chapter 65

Words : 4031

Just a simple canon retelling chapter....mentioning the details of the exam before the fun starts...

Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter nevertheless. See ya.



Chapter 66 : Wildcard

Season 3 : Chapter 10

In the middle of the woods, two students of Class-D, namely Kiyotaka Ayanokouji and Koenji Rokusuke were at the moment jumping through the trees with the help of the branches at quite a fast pace.

"Ayanokouji-boy, it seems that Baldy head and his class are targeting the Cave as their spot. Should we capture it before them or leave it alone?"

Even though Koenji still had his usual smirk on his face, there was a different air around him this time. It was a face filled with confidence and ascertainment, as if he was saying **"Let's get this done as quickly as possible."**

"No...Let's not target it. The cave, even though it is quite a protected place, has only one exit, unlike the other spots. So we would have no use for that. Also, we need to atleast keep one spot free for the other classes, otherwise my plan wouldn't go this smoothly."

"That's just some measly excuse on my part. The cave would've been a wonderful spot as our base camp, but the problem is, it's quite isolated from the other spots..So it would be more tiring to register spots three times each day for a whole week."

As Class-A soon entered the cave in groups, Kiyotaka's eyes met with those of Hashimoto's who just gave him a small nod and a smirk trying to convey the message **"Leave this to me."**

With that, both the Class-D students changed their targets and captured the rest of the three out of the spots before the other classes managed to get their hands on it.

Being done with their work, Koenji brushed his hair with his fingers before picking up two bananas from the tree beside them. He threw one of the bananas towards the leader of Class-D with a smirk, who accepted it with gratitude.

"Good work Koenji. But we have to follow this method everyday for the next six days, three times each day. Are you ready for that?"

"My my Kiyo boy, you shouldn't underestimate the calibre of a perfect existence like me. Doing this small work is as easy as carrying those two beautiful ladies on my shoulders and flexing my godly body in front of them Hahahahaaha."

Poor Matsushita and Satou....or lucky them..I don't know which one and I refrain from thinking about it anymore.'

With that Koenji started boisterously laughing to himself, as all Kiyotaka could do was release a small sigh to himself.

"Let's go to our camps then...Hopefully the others can fare themselves well."

"Your voice betrays your words Kiyo-boy."

"That's just how I was born, I guess."

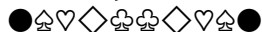
"I see, I see."

Koenji, for some reason narrowed his eyes at Kiyotaka for a second before masking it with his usual smirk.

"Very well then, let's go back to our camp Kiyo-boy. Who knows what kind of atrocities our defective classmates have committed."

"Yeah."

With that both the boys ventured back in comfortable silence towards the camp they occupied first and decided for their classmates, which was by the riverside.



Once they made their way back to their camp, Kiyotaka noticed that surprisingly most of the preparations were being done pretty comfortably and in an organising method.

Once the students of Class-D noticed their presence, they were met with smiles and nods from their classmates. Hirata, who looked like he was setting up the tents for the girls, approached them with a small smile on his face.

"Good work Ayanokouji-kun, Koenji-kun. Thank you for your hard work."

"Hahahaha don't worry about it pretty boy. Such a puny job of capturing spots is nothing in comparison to the embodiment of perfection, such as I."

It was as if imaginary golden sparkles surrounded Koenji as all Hirata could do was let out a weak chuckle at his self-praising words. His eyes then directed towards Kiyotaka who was being handed a bottle of water by Matsushita.

"Thank you for your hard work Ayanokouji-kun, although if I may ask, how did you know about the spots this quickly?"

"While we were on the cruise ship, do you remember when the announcement came of experiencing a splendid and beautiful scenery?"

Hirata nodded to his words, while Sudou and Akito immediately burst out into chuckles.

"Yeah, after which you called the Leader of Class-A, Johnny Sins pfft-"

"....."

"....."

"Pfft-"

"Hehehehehe-"

"....."

"Hahahahahahahahah"

The entire camp was filled with laughter as the students who were not present came to know of the situation, while the students who were present, laughed along with them recalling the hilarious situation once again, while Kiyotaka stood still in confusion.

'What is so funny about his name? Am I missing some inner joke that I should know about? Curse you Whiteroom for not giving me real world knowledge and instead making me read hundreds of useless books.'

Almost as if sensing his confusion, Matsushita smirked to herself as she leaned near his shoulders gesturing him to move closer. As he complied with her wishes, the brown haired girl pulled his ear and started whispering to hi.

"Ayanokouji-kun..Johnny Sins is"

"....."

"....."

With that Matsushita explained to Ayanokouji about the other side of the internet that he hadn't touched yet.

'I see...That's certainly quite some interesting information. I'll keep it in my mind for research purposes.'

"Anyways, we are breaching from the topic. Can someone give me the report of what's going on? As there any problems that need supervision?"

Horikita, who was standing at the back, took this as her cue and approached the Leader with a notepad in her hand.

"As of right now, everything is going swimmingly. Ike-kun appears to be experienced in camping, so he is taking a lot of responsibilities regarding this."

Ike, who seemed to be collecting water from the river, slightly raised his hand as a means of greeting.

"Don't worry about it, Ayanokouji. This is my comfort zone...I'll try to help as much as I can."

'Incredible Ike... It seems like you finally met your calling. Having someone experienced in this stuff will definitely be useful for someone like me, who has no experience with camping.'

"We'll count on you, Ike. Good job....What about the other things? Did you spend any S-Points?"

"Yes, we did. Chabashira-sensei showed us a method to create a handcraft toilet, however in my opinion, it's too unhygienic and might make us sick in the long run. So we spent around 40 S-Points to install 2 toilets for both the boys and girls."

Yukimura, who was observing the entire situation, looked towards Ayanokouji and Horikita with an annoyed expression.

"Us boys told her that we wouldn't need a toilet, but she didn't listen to us. We lost 40 S-Points because of this."

A couple of boys nodded to him as all Horikita could do was click her tongue in annoyance.

However instead of any response, all the boys received was a confused gaze from their leader.

"And? What is the problem with that?"

Kiyotaka's question only adhered to their confusion as Yukimura frowned at him.

"Don't you understand? We are just wast-"

"Stop it, Yukimura. Even though these points are going to turn into our Class Points after this exam, don't forget that we got these points mainly for this exam first.

If you use that manual toilet, and get sick because of it, we are going to lose 30 S-Points anyway...and who says that others wouldn't get sick as well? Who will take responsibility for the loss then? You?"

"Exactly. You boys seem to forget that the main idea of the exam is to not save points for the future, but instead, use it effectively. And sanitation is very important for our survival this whole week."

Horikita narrowed her eyes at the direction of the protesters but also tried to make her voice as soft as possible, to not appear hostile towards them.

Even though Yukimura and the boys wanted to retort to his words, they couldn't find a suitable response and just kept quiet.

The other girls also nodded to his words, while sending the boys an annoyed glare for some reason.

"Why are they glaring at the boys, Suzune?"

"It's because the boys protested the idea of the toilets at first and both sides were engaged in a heated argument."

"I see.. Got it. So, in terms of shelter and food, we do not have to worry, right?"

Ike, who was carrying 2 buckets filled with river water, walked inside the camp and dumped the 2 accessories before addressing Kiyotaka.

"No...Within a couple of minutes, we were planning to assign separate groups to get some fruits from the trees and to catch fish from the riverside. Although we need a lot more, it's at least a good start. So we don't have to worry about food."

"Good. What about the water situation? I assume it won't be a problem, since there's a river right beside our camp."

"Well.... river indeed is a fresh water source, but the girls seem to

have a problem with drinking it, with the fear of being contaminated."

"I mean...Swimming in the river is fine..But drinking it..."

"It's kind of gross, don't you think?"

Kiyotaka slightly glanced towards the murmuring girls who looked away in nervousness as his eyes darted towards Ike once again.

"I see...That's an understandable concern. But I think you girls should not be worried about it. However...just in case you're still not convinced, all we can do is boil the water for 5 to 10 minutes, which will get rid of the lingering bacteria. and we'll be fine."

Shinohara, who appeared to be the student who was mostly against drinking and using river water, just huffed in response, not finding a suitable reply.

"Th-That's alright, I guess. I have no problems with that."

"That's good. Horikita, Matsushita and Satou...would you please find the source of the river? If it's a spring, then we would have no problems."

"Got it."

"Also Ijuuin and Okitani...would you mind accompanying them?"

Kiyotaka looked towards the two socially awkward and shy boys of Class-D who were standing there, as if they had no purpose. So, finally getting a task, both of them nodded, slightly feeling nervous yet glad at the same time.

"Kiyosuka Okitani, Wataru Ijuuin...Even though I won't have much use of these two guys in comparison to the others, I need them to participate with the whole class for the means of unity. And since they are socially awkward and quiet, I doubt that the three girls will have any problems with them."

And just as he thought, the three girls observed the two boys for a couple of seconds, before nodding to each other and walking towards their designated location, having Ijuuin and Okitani follow their retreating self.

"Ike, Yamauchi, Hondou...Would you mind catching some more fishes?"

"Leave it to me, Ayanokouji."

With that, Ike dragged along the lazy pair of Yamauchi and Hondou who groaned in annoyance.

"No time to slack off guys, let's go to work."

"Yes yes."

'Since he is finally playing an important role and is taking a small amount of leadership, Ike seems to be much more excited and enthusiastic about this exam in comparison to before. And his participation and excitement is contagious enough to make the other

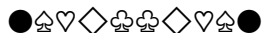
boys work as hard as him...

It seems like my initial calculation was wrong, and now I acquired an extremely strong Wildcard for this exam.

Have my praise Ike....I'm expecting a lot more from you.'

End of Chapter 66

Words : 2761



Chapter 67 : Retirement?

Season 3 : Episode 11

It was around 8:23 P.M. in the night, where most of the class except Kiyotaka and Koenji were sitting around the fireplace Ike built, with the help of the boys of Class-D. At first glance, it didn't seem like there was any change between them, however if one looks closely, they could notice the presence of a certain student of Class-C, grumbling to herself.

Horikita and Matsushita were always keeping an eye on her, so that she wouldn't do any funny business.

I know that Hirata-kun is kind....But inviting an enemy and giving them shelter just because they're hurt? There is definitely something suspicious here...

*Hopefully Kiyotaka-kun comes back as soon as possible. It's not like I'm not confident in myself....But seeing his abilities and feats, I can't help but think to myself, **What if I can't do it the way he does and mess it all up in the end.** My abilities are incomparable in comparison with him....*

No...Suzune. You shouldn't downplay yourself. Confidence is one of the main catalyst behind the soul of a human being. If you're not confident in yourself, then it's as if you are giving up before the fight even begins. It shouldn't matter to me how superior the skill of Kiyotaka-kun is....What I need to do is be better than my past self everyday. Instead of competing with others, compete with yourself first.'

Seemingly as if she made up her mind, Horikita slapped both of her cheeks with her hands, while the girls around her looked at her confusingly.

"Horikita-san, are you okay?"

Nene Mori, a beautiful girl with shoulder length light brown hair approached Horikita with a slightly worried expression.

"Yes, I'm fine Mori-san. I was just in a mental dilemma, but I made my mind up, so you don't have to worry."

"Alright~"

Seemingly satisfied with the response she got, Mori went back to her seat beside Matsushita and engaged in light conversations with her and Satou, as Horikita couldn't help but stare at the dark, empty woods, the place from where Ayanokouji and Koenji made their move with the intention of collecting the spots.

'It's been around 21 minutes already....In the morning it only took them around 17 minutes to come back... I guess it's understandable that it would be difficult to navigate through the woods at night...But still, they should be back by now.'

And as if god answered her prayers, the student of Class-D saw a small gleaming light, which appeared to be from a flashlight, approaching their camp from inside the woods.

"I guess they are done with their work."

Hirata let out a small smile, while the Class-C student couldn't help but narrow her eyes at the incoming figure of the Leader of Class-D.

However what was confusing to everyone was that....there was no sign of Koenji, and it was only Ayanokouji who was walking towards the camp. And for some reason, his face and body were filled with bruises and mud.

His friends immediately ran towards him in worry as Kiyotaka couldn't help but sigh, readying himself for the millions of questions he would be subjected to.

"Kiyotaka-kun!! What the hell happened?! Why are you injured?!"

"Why are you alone as well?!"

"Didn't Koenji-kun go with you?"

"Where is he?"

Seemingly lost in the concerns, Horikita, Satou and Matsushita immediately invaded his private space and started throwing questions at him at a quick pace.

'I should've expected this....How troublesome.'

"Now, now girls...We are just as curious as you...But as you can see, Ayanokouji-kun is pretty injured at the moment. So why don't we save the confrontation for later and treat him first?"

Apparently sensing his discomfort, Hirata immediately tried to end the conversation with logic, kindness and empathy behind every single word of his.

'My lord and saviour Hirata-sama...I'm truly grateful for your help.'

"O-oh yeah."

"Sorry about that, Kouji-kun. We were just too worried."

"Don't worry about it. I understand your concern, but would you please give me some space to breathe?"

"Y-yeah. My bad."

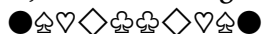
"Hehe~"

Matsushita and Satou awkwardly chuckled to themselves before walking away from him, their eyes still lingering on his wounded figure.

Horikita Suzune, however, who didn't say a word till now, was staring at the bruises of Kiyotaka as if she was studying it. After

looking at it for a couple more seconds, her eyes drew towards the Leader of Class-D as she looked at him confusingly.

However, all she got in response was a **keep quiet** gesture from him, to which she gave a short nod, filled with assurance.



"Dammit!!"

Sudou punched the bark of the tree with an irritated expression on his face, while the other students of Class-D were not faring well with the information they just received from their Leader.

"So what you're trying to say is, apparently someone laid a trap in front of one of the spots?"

Kushida posed the question wearing a 'concerned' look as Kiyotaka nodded at her words, before releasing another helpless sigh.

"Yeah...and since it was night and we were moving quickly, both me and Koenji didn't notice the trap and in the end fell for it. Because of which both of us got injured. While most of my injuries are bruises and a strained leg, Koenji took the brunt of it and broke his hand, because of which he had to return to the ship."

While Airi was cleaning his injuries with a worried look on her face, Horikita went inside her tent and brought out the first aid kit which the school bestowed upon them.

"Tch...Another 30 S-Points down the drain. This is unbelievable."

Yukimura clicked his tongue in annoyance and grumbled to himself, as some of the boys nodded to his words, frustration present on their face as well.

"Ayanokouji-kun...Will Koenji-kun's arm take a long time to fix?"

"It's just a small fracture, don't worry. It would take around 6-8 weeks to repair fully, but Koenji can go through it...since he is very strong mentally."

"I see. That's good to hear."

Hearing that his classmate was not too severely injured, Hirata smiled in relief, while the boys still kept grumbling to themselves. However their 'opinion' was ignored by everyone else, who were listening to Kiyotaka's words attentively.

"Speaking of injuries....What should we do with her?"

With a slightly hostile tone behind her voice, Horikita pointed her finger towards the Class-C Student, who gave her an annoyed scowl, while Kiyotaka looked at her in confusion.

"What is Ibuki doing here?"

Hirata immediately gave him a guilty look and spoke in a slightly serious tone.

"It seems like you already know her. You see, when our group was out there, we stumbled upon Ibuki-san of Class C. Her face was

swollen and it was already sundown. We couldn't just leave her alone.

His harem nodded along with him, while giving Kiyotaka pleading stare, while some were even going to the point of looking at him with puppy eyes as if wanting to say : **please comply with Hirata-kun's wishes.**

'Doing all this, just to save his integrity? Your harem sure is loyal, Hirata.'

"I assume that you left a mark on the location you found her?"

"Yes, we did."

"Alright then. I have no problems with her staying here."

His words Immediately caused Hirata to smile brightly while Horikita narrowed her eyes in suspicion.

"B-but Kiyotaka-kun?! She might be a spy from Class-C. Just because you seem to know her, it doesn't change the fact that she is our enemy at the moment."

"Your arguments are valid and make sense Suzune. However, you don't need to worry. I have everything in my control."

"B-but-"

"I said, don't worry Suzune."

As if it was a final decision, Kiyotaka spoke with authority and sent her an empty stare, as a result of which, Horikita couldn't help but look away and rub her arms, feeling uncomfortable.

"Very well...If you say so."

"Alright...Is everyone onboard with Ibuki staying with us for the rest of the week?"

"Most of our classmates already agreed. We were willing to have a discussion if you happen to be against it, however it seems like you don't mind as well. You are really kind, Ayanokouji-kun."

"I'm just showing basic human decency, you don't have to praise me like that."

By the way, thank you for the help Airi."

"Don't worry about it. Horikita-san, I sanitised all the cuts and bruises, would you please put the band aids on them now?"

"Yes. I'm coming."

Soon, Horikita sat by his knees and started putting on the band aids while sending him a cold glare, to which Kiyotaka looked at her in confusion.

"What's up?"

"You are hiding something from me, and I don't like to be kept in the dark. However I wouldn't interfere with your plans, if you don't wish to tell me so. Are you planning on revealing everything to me? Or are you planning to do this all alone?"

'All alone.....That's not uncommon for me, so you don't have to worry...Is what I'd like to say, but-'

"I will reveal everything to you as time comes, since your presence will be integral in my plan, so don't worry."

"If you say so."

With a seemingly satisfied look, Horikita stood up and dusted away the mud from her clothes.

"Onodera, Mei...is the dinner ready?"

"Yup leader-kun/Yes."

Both the girls nodded with a smile as they handed him a plate of a roasted fish and a piece of apple.

'Quite an odd combination if I'm being honest...But hey, beggars can't be choosers, I guess.'

Taking the plate from them, Kiyotaka approached Ibuki, who was observing a race of some ants with a curious expression on her face.

'Without her ever present scowl, I must say she is certainly pretty. Too bad, she looks like she is always on her period.'

"Ibuki, did you eat anything?"

"....."

"I asked you a question."

However all he got in response was a scowl and a scoff coming out of her.

'There's her usual persona back once again.'

"You didn't, right?"

"What does that have to do with you? Leave me alone, jackass."

"That bruise on your face certainly looks painful."

"You have no right to talk about bruises while you yourself look like a walking mummy right now."

"Did Ryuuen do this to you?"

"That's none of your business."

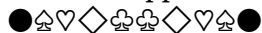
Both of their eyes met each other, as Kiyotaka's empty gaze pierced through Ibuki who was looking at him with narrowed eyes.

"I hope you accomplish your mission, Ibuki. Or Ryuuen will be mad."

"Tch. I don't need your advice. Leave me alone."

Nodding to her words, Kiyotaka placed the bowl of food by her side before walking away from her.

"Don't disappoint me."



It was midnight, during which all the students of Class-D were fast asleep. The fireplace was already extinguished, as a result of which the whole area was clouded in darkness.

Ibuki, who, because of the generosity of the Leader of Class-D, got the empty tent of the retired Koenji, walked out of it and went

towards the girl's location...Before calling out a certain someone.

"I know that you're not asleep. So please come out, I need to discuss something with you."

Ibuki whispered and made her voice as low as possible so that she doesn't wake anyone else up.

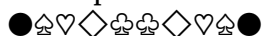
And just as she wanted, the tent soon opened revealing a worried Kushida who looked at her with a concerned gaze.

"Is there any problem, Ibuki-san? Are you feeling uncomfortable for some reason?"

"Drop the act and follow me. We don't have much time."

Kushida's face immediately stiffened before she masked it with a strained smile.

"Umm I don't know what you're talking about, but if you require some help then sure."



"So...What do you want, Ibuki-san?"

"Ryuuen knows about your other self."

Another blow straight to her heart as Kushida's eyes widened in shock, seeing which Ibuki let out a sadistic smirk before humming in satisfaction.

"Um-mm w-what're you talking about? I have no idea."

Trying to portray her sadness, Kushida looked down at her feet, the sight of which made Ibuki scoff in annoyance.

"No need to play innocent. In fact, Ryuen wants to help you and protect that secret of yours, only under one condition : **Sabotage Ayanokouji Kiyotaka at all costs so that Class-D suffers the most humiliating defeat.** What do you say?"

Realising that she has no way out, Kushida sighed to herself as her usual cheery voice got replaced by a cold husky voice. Her eyes lost it's warmth as she looked at the blue haired spy of Class-C as if a hunter is looking at it's prey.

"This is not a farce or a lie, right? Cause if it is, then I'll make sure both you and Ryuen regret it."

This time however, unlike before, Ibuki looked straight into her eyes, her smirk still present in her face.

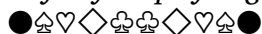
"Don't worry, we don't have any ulterior motives. **You have my word.**"

End of Chapter 67

Words : 3087

Laid a couple of seeds for the future chapters about what's to come...I'm excited to read you guys' theories about how you think the Exam will go.. So feel free to share your opinions.

Anyways hope you guys enjoyed the chapter...see ya.



Chapter 68 : Worst-Case Scenario

Season 3 : Chapter 12

Second Day of the Exam,

Time : 3 : 58 a.m.

While most of the students of Class-D were asleep, one certain brown haired boy quietly stood up from his mattress and walked out of the tent. He arched his back and cracked his joints while experiencing the calm, cold breeze of the woods while releasing a relaxed sigh.

'The early dawn atmosphere truly is nice. Perfect for stretching and getting rid of the cobwebs of the night... Too bad, that I have some work to do.'

Kiyotaka Ayanokouji, The Leader of Class-D, then approached the now retired Koenji's tent with slow, sneaky steps not wanting to create any commotion. The reason for approaching an empty tent?

Well...It's because it was not empty at all. Like the generous man he was, Kiyotaka decided to 'lend' Ibuki, Koenji's tent, so that the Class-C girl doesn't get sick. At first she was reluctant of accepting such a gracious gift and wanting to use the tent of the 'Perfect Existence', however with further insistence from Hirata and Kushida, she finally resigned to their wishes and accepted.

Which led to the current situation. He quietly pulled the zipper down, only to find the Class-C girl snoring cutely while sleeping on one side of the corner.

'She looks like she is in such tranquility and peace...Her harmless and docile figure will fool so many people into believing that this girl is the biggest and the most important tool of her leader.'

Wanting to end this as quickly as possible, Kiyotaka sneakily took her bag from the other corner of her tent, completely opposite of her, and started rummaging through it, hoping to find something useful in it.

'Let's hope that I won't find any black panties.'

After three seconds however, he got exactly what he was looking for as Kiyotaka mentally congratulated himself.

'A digital camera, huh? I wonder how many S-Points it took for Ryuen to buy this...I hope he doesn't mind if I take this camera. I mean he shouldn't right? Since I am giving shelter to one of his classmates, the least he can give me is his camera as a means of gratitude. Fair trade in

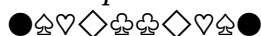
my opinion.'

With that, Kiyotaka shamelessly took Ibuki's camera for himself, before carefully closing her bag and walking out of the tent.

*'What an excellent find. Even if Ibuki gets suspicious that someone stole her camera now, it's not like she can raise her voice and yell at us **Why did you steal my Camera?** If she does that, she will be revealed as the spy and whatever plan she has will be foiled...*

The only way, she can further progress in her plan is by contacting with Ryuuen by person, which would be difficult in itself, since she is under the monitor of most of the Class... So in a way, she is stuck in all directions...

Now, all I need to do is go and renew my spots, I guess...since it's already 4:04 a.m. Moving with all these bruises all around my body would be quite troublesome...'



Time : 8:00 a.m.

All the students of Class-D assembled in front of their camps for their daily roll call, however just in one night, there was a stark difference in their mentality and behaviour as compared to before.

It seemed like the retirement of a powerhouse like Koenji and the news that other classes laid a trap to make them fail, and kind of succeeding in weakening two of the strongest students of the class, made Class-D realise the fact that this was not just a simple camping trip, but rather an exam, where all the classes will try to sabotage one another.

And that is why, from the moment the sun arose, aside from a couple of students, every single one of them looked rather cautious of their surroundings and refrained from doing anything ludicrous or reckless.

"Hideo Sotomura."

"Present Please."

"Hirata Yosuke."

"Present Sensei."

"Horikita Suzune."

"Present."

"....."

Like usual, the roll calls were taken by Chabashira-sensei, who was wearing a red and white tracksuit, similar to the students, however this tight outfit made some certain assets of her look more enticing, which certainly caught the attention of the perverts. Kiyotaka himself couldn't help but look at her for a brief second, before he mentally cursed himself for this action of his.

'No...Don't be swayed by your hormones...'

Remember that this woman is someone who gained a little amount of

your respect. You should not look at her with perverted intent.

But that body is majestic...You can't deny it can you?

While the angel Kiyotaka and the devil Kiyotaka were arguing about the morals of sexuality and other stuff in his mind, Chabashira-sensei called out the next student for the Roll Call.

"Koenji Rokusuke."

"....."

"Koenji Rokusuke."

"....."

As she didn't get any response, Chabashira-sensei looked up from her register towards the crowd, who were also bewildered and confused at this situation that dawned upon them.

"Umm Sensei? Didn't Koenji-kun retire from the exam since his arm broke last night?"

Hirata broke the silence and rose his hand with a confused expression as Horikita and Matsushita immediately glanced at Kiyotaka who shrugged his shoulders in indifference.

"What?! When did that happen?"

This question asked by the homeroom teacher of Class-D herself fueled the confusion among the students even more as this time everyone looked towards the direction of Kiyotaka with bewilderment in their eyes.

"B-but Ayanokouji-kun said that both of them fell into a trap, because of which Koenji-kun retired."

Chabashira-sensei narrowed her eyes at Ayanokouji, who for some reason was cracking his head towards his left continuously, which made the girls look at him weirdly.

"What's wrong with your neck, Kiyotaka-kun?"

"My neck is just sore from my awkward sleeping position. It's my first time sleeping inside a tent, so it was a little uncomfortable. By doing this, it's reducing the pain a little bit. Don't mind me Suzune. Do you want to ask me something, Chabashira-Sensei?"

Kiyotaka still continued to crack his neck while responding to Suzune as Chabashira's narrowed eyes widened for a second, before she gained back her usual stoic look.

"At what time did Koenji retire, Ayanokouji?"

"It was around 8:18 p.m."

"Oh....I see. I was in the bathroom at that moment. Who was the teacher who supervised the retirement of Koenji from the exam?"

"Hoshinomiya-Sensei."

"Tch, that Chie. How dare she not let me know of this. Irresponsibility at it's finest."

With a small click on tongue, Chabashira-Sensei started scribbling on the register, as the other students just meekly chuckled at her

words, already experiencing the small glimpse of the complicated 'relationship' between the Homeroom Teachers of Class-D and Class-B.

Once she was done, Chabashira once again locked her eyes with Kiyotaka before walking away from the camp...An interaction which certainly didn't go unnoticed by a couple of students, however they made no comments about it.

"So...Ayanokouji-kun, what's the plan for today?"

Hirata approached him with a relaxed expression as Kiyotaka subtly glanced towards Kushida, who was speaking with her friends with a gleeful smile on her face.

"I was thinking of scouting the camps of the other classes, while you guys take care of the camp."

"I see. But do you know the locations of the spots?"

"Yeah, you don't have to worry about it. Does anyone want to join me?"

"I'll join./ Me Me."

Horikita and Matsushita immediately rose their hands, before looking at each other with faint annoyance.

However both of their hearts crumbled in pieces as Kiyotaka shook his head, declining their request.

"Nope. Not now."

"Why?!"

Matsushita wailed in fake sadness while Horikita frowned at Kiyotaka, who approached both of them before faintly whispering in their ears.

"Ibuki might make a move, so I need the both of you to monitor her. Also, keep a careful eye on Kushida, got it?"

Horikita nodded to his words as Matsushita looked at him in confusion.

"Why Kushida-san, Kiyotaka-kun? Am I missing something important?"

"Yes you are, but it's not compulsory for you to know everything right now. Just heed my orders correctly and do your job efficiently, kay?"

"Hmph~ how rude of you to not letting me in on your secrets and making me work as your slave. I want a reward for my work."

Matsushita pouted in mock annoyance while looking away from him, as Kiyotaka sighed to himself.

"Very well. After we finish our vacation, how does a 2nd date sound, Chiak-"

"Yippeeeeeee!!!"

Not even letting him finish, Matsushita balled her fists together

and started celebrating to herself while Horikita looked at him, the sense of betrayal flashing in her eyes.

"What about me....."

Before Horikita could start singing the song and drown in self angst , Kiyotaka cut her off and brought colour upon her grey life as well.

"Once the exam ends, let's go on a date in the ship, okay?"

Both of her eyes started gleaming in excitement and happiness as she started nodding like a small child, while still keeping her calm, composed aura...Quite a weird combination of expression which only an ice queen of her calibre was able to achieve.

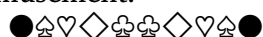
"Hey?! Why is she getting her reward this early?"

Matsushita immediately tried to protest, however Horikita was having none of that, as no one could take away this massive W away from her.

"Because, not trying to brag, but I've been a little more useful to Kiyotaka-kun in comparison to you, Chiaki-san. And I am already behind you by one date. I guess it makes perfect sense."

"Touche."

It seemed like a mutual agreement was decided amongst the two girls, while Kiyotaka just watched the two of them in mild amusement.



Right before the Leader of Class-D could separate himself from his classmates, two unwanted students walked inside the camp premises.

"Huh?! What the hell are you two doing here?!"

Sudou immediately raised his voice and shouted in annoyance which brought all the attention towards them, as the two students he was yelling at just let out small grins.

It was none other than Komiya and Kondou of Class-C, the 'Victims' of Sudou's savage attack.

"Why are Class-C students here?! Is Ryuen also coming?"

Yamauchi, who apparently listened to a lot of rumours about the tyrant of Class-C started shivering in fear, which led to their grins widen even more.

The other students of Class-D also sent the unwanted visitors displeased looks, while murmuring to themselves.

"Aren't they the two who accused Sudou-kun?"

"They are from Class-C correct?"

"What are they doing here?"

All of them seemed to be on edge...They were in fact annoyed by their obvious prodding but at the same time were a little anxious about what they were scheming.

Hirata, Kushida, Karuizawa walked towards them to check the commotion as Kiyotaka noticed a certain oddity among Komiya and Kondou.

'Those two are stuffing their faces with Chips? And are those Soda bottles in their hands? What is Ryuuen planning on doing? I need the full information by the end of today.'

Before the other guys could snap at them, Hirata walked towards the two disturbances with a small smile on his face.

"Did Ryuuen-kun send you here?"

"Obviously. He also has a message for all of you idiots. He said that, if you want to enjoy your vacation to the fullest, come to the beach right now. Don't hang back or resist your urges. If you're sick of living like cavemen, then we're happy to share our luxuries."

Ryuuen's *invitation* made most of them confused however none of them bothered to say anything except Horikita who just clicked her tongue.

"As if we would get provoked by such a simple tactic. Tell your master to do better next time, dogs."

Her words caused the whole camp to chuckle, using Komiya and Kondou as their scapegoat, whose expression darkened at the situation in front of them, before they shrugged it off.

Soon, both of them started walking around the premises of Class-D's camp, all the while chuckling at the 'defects' hard work and munching on their chips. It seemed like Ryuuen had not much ulterior motive and only sent his two idiotic goons there to create a disturbance and act as a hindrance to the students.

Most of the students felt uncomfortable with their presence but refrained from wasting further time and energy by engaging in an argument with them. However it seemed like Komiya and Kondou's mild harassment got under the skin of Ike's group, who glared at them in annoyance.

"Why are you two still here?"

"Yeah. Get out of here."

Despite being on the receiving end of such open hostility, the two dogs seemed to keep their smirk present while trying to get under their skin even more.

"What? We're not doing anything to disturb you guys. We're just scouting out the place, no?"

"Yeah, it's not like we're restricting you from doing the same thing with us. Any of you are welcome to our place."

Before Ike and Yamauchi could get provoked any further and say something stupid, Kiyotaka walked towards their direction and soon stood in front of the two smug Class-C students who appeared not-so-smug now.

"Komiya and Kondou...I advice you both to leave the premises immediately. I think ten minutes is enough for you guys to scout our open area, and I find your presence as a hindrance and disturbance."

Despite his words having the same meaning as Ike's, the reactions were vastly different this time.. As both the boys experienced first hand how disturbing and scary the Leader of Class-D can be.

"....W-we didn't cause any disturbance according to the rules though..."

"That you are not wrong. But the fact is you are at the moment, standing in the spot of Class-D, which is our property. You two are nothing but some unwanted guests. So, I suggest we resolve this situation peacefully and you two quietly walk back towards your leader or be prepared to face the consequences. Pick your poison."

"H-haha where's the poison in going back to our incredible spot where we are enjoying vacation to our fullest?"

"I wonder about that. Bringing the news that not only you failed in creating any chaos but also fled from the Class-D camp....I'm quite confident that Ryuuen won't give you a cake as a reward for that."

Both of their faces slightly paled before they masked it with a nervous laugh..

"Haha....I guess it's our time to leave. Our offer still stands though. You guys are welcome to visit us whenever you want."

With that both of them walked away as Ike and Sudou grumbled in annoyance and the others sent a thankful look towards Kiyotaka for getting rid of them.

Ibuki, who sat in under the bark of one of the trees experienced the whole situation with slightly narrowed eyes.

"I don't think they were looking for me."

"Seems like it. I guess their only objective was to harass us."

It truly was a strange and peculiar behaviour if I'm being honest. They had chips and soda in hand when they arrived. It also takes around 30 minutes for a common person to reach here from the sudden beach. This calculation leads to them missing their morning roll call as well...

What is Ryuuen doing? Is he planning on using all the S-Points and just focusing on guessing the other leaders? I guess this will led to him showing his class that he can let them have fun sometimes and thus further progressing their unity..Also, no one would have to worry about the lack of points if there are no points in the first place...Even if this is a strange way of doing so, I must say it kind of fits Ryuuen. How amusing.'

"Komiya and Kondou said something about sharing 'luxuries'. Any

idea what they are talking about?"

"Who knows... But with their words alone, things might just be heading towards the worst-case scenario that I imagined..."

With that Ibuki walked away and went inside her tent, while Kiyotaka looked at her retreating figure with a bored look in his eyes.

'Worst-case scenario for whom Ibuki? Your Class or the Other Classes..... I guess I got the first Class I need to scout now.'

End of Chapter 68

Words : 3648

Last night was so troublesome 🤔🤔 .

Curse You Kawaii_Lumine for starting all this shit. All my notifications were filled with that bullshit 💀💀💀💀

And the 'apology' of his is even worse ☐☐...Getting spammed by tens of messages written "Be my Cumdumpster" surely is troublesome.....

Anyways hope you guys enjoyed the chapter...See Ya.

●♠♥◇♣♣◇♥♠●

Chapter 69 : Rat

Season 3 : Chapter 13

"Are you sure we are going in the right direction?"

"Don't worry about a thing. Everything is under control. The only thing I need for you to do is keep a close eye on everything around you, got it?"

"Alright. I'll do my best to not let you down."

Both Kiyotaka and Suzune were walking through the middle of the woods with the intention of going to the Class-C camp, located in the southern beach of the island, 30 minutes away from the Class-D camp.

"How're you feeling right now?"

Kiyotaka put his hand over Horikita's forehead measuring her temperature, as all she could do was sigh in annoyance

"Is there any point in asking this question when we're already in the middle of the forest?"

"In fact there is. I was wondering if I need to carry you on my back and walk through the forest. I don't want your condition to be worse, after all. "

"I sense lies. I bet the only reason you want to carry me on your back is because you want to feel my body on yours, isn't it correct Pervertkouji-kun?"

Her narrowed eyes pierced through Kiyotaka's soul as all he could do is nervously look away from her while shrugging his shoulders.

"I mean.....I wouldn't comment on that matter. You are free to think whatever you want."

"Thought so..."

Horikita sighed to herself before raising both of her arms like a child, resulting in Kiyotaka look at her confusingly.

"What? You wanted to carry me on your back, correct? Then please do so. I am not the type of person to let go of such free service. I'll gladly use you if you want me to."

'That last sentence of yours sure sounds menacing Suzune.'

Her words led to Kiyotaka sighing to himself before he dropped on his knees in front of her, unknowing to him, resulting in his black haired friend to smile at the sight as she quickly climbed on his back and wrapped her arms around his neck.

"This ride of mine sure is comfortable. I wouldn't mind using it

while enjoying their time on the beach.

'This truly is a vacation.'

Horikita, who was still on Kiyotaka's back, sighed to herself before dropping her head on his shoulders.

"This is ridiculous...What in the world is Ryuuken-kun thinking?"

"Yup. It is indeed ridiculous and insane."

"All this stuff....is it even possible? Do you think they're up to something?"

"I don't know....But it seems that all the students of Class-C are enjoying themselves. Ryuuken somehow is using this situation in his favour and is unifying his class."

"But that's not all, is it? I doubt that he would sacrifice the entire exam just to increase his class reputation."

"Ryuuken is a clever guy, he wouldn't do so. Let's just look around the area, shall we?"

"Yeah. But first, drop me on the ground."

"Hmm? And why should I do that?"

"You already know the answer, don't you? Stop playing around."

A small blush of embarrassment sprung up on Horikita's face as she was most likely embarrassed at the thought of meeting the tyrant of Class-C for the first time, all the while being carried by the Leader of Class-D.

Before Kiyotaka could respond however, a certain green haired Class-C student who goes by the name of Ishizaki Daichi approached the two Class-D students with a stern expression.

"Ryuuken-san requests your presence."

Kiyotaka looked towards Suzune who gave him a short nod before getting off his back.

"I'm certainly interested in knowing his intentions."

"Very well...Then lead the way."

With that both of them headed towards Ryuuken's place under the guidance of Ishizaki. The smell of deliciously cooked meat wafted by their noses, resulting in Horikita clicking her tongue in annoyance.

'I guess it makes sense for her to be frustrated to even come across the smell of such exotic meat, all the while she has to eat burned fish and fruits. However, it's not like she can do much in this situation.'

As the three of them tread across the sand of the beach and approached the ocean, their eyes finally landed on the man responsible for this beautiful paradise, the Leader of Class-C, Ryuuken Kakeru.

His face immediately formed a small smirk as he further leaned on his sunlounger and spread both of his arms like a relaxed king.

"Quite a small group...I was expecting to see more of you not

gonna lie."

"You sure are enjoying yourself, Ryuuen."

Apparently in spite of Kiyotaka's words, Ryuuen's attention was taken by the black haired maiden who was glaring at him with full intensity while standing behind the brown haired boy.

"Who's that cute girl behind you Ayanokouji? Isn't she the one who apparently threatened my lacky to punch her? Why is she hiding behind you so shyly now? Don't tell me....you are embarrassed to see me in my swimwear, isn't it kukuku?"

Ryuuen tried to provoke Horikita, who just didn't care much about his words and narrowed both of her eyes at him.

"Don't flatter yourself. I don't care about seeing you shirtless."

"So you're fiesty huh? I can see why your Leader has taken an interest on you. Conquering such cold girls and make them melt within the palm of your hands sure is quite hot, isn't is Ayanokouji?"

"It's as if you're speaking from experience."

"Of course I am. Before I joined this school, I met a lot of girls who resembled her types. Wanna know one common thing I noticed in every single one of them?

The only thing they can possibly do is cover their real self with a cold exterior mask, which hides all their pathetic weaknesses and insecurities. They can't overcome their past self and instead mask their fragility with that frosty veil of nothingness.

And the moment someone goes past that weak, pathetic mask of theirs, that's when they turn into nothing but a mindless plaything to them.

That's what the end result of every single one of those events. No deviation, no change....It's almost boring, like those anime chiches. Now tell me Ayanokouji's puppet, are you any different from them? Or are you the same?"

Despite not meeting Horikita even once in his life, such a close and precise analysis coming from Ryuuen's mouth immediately made the raven haired girl shudder slightly to herself, before she concealed it with her usual mask of indifference.

"If I was the same as those girls, I doubt I would've joined this institution. Unlike them, I know my flaws, weaknesses and instead of ignoring them, I'm trying to improve myself every single day. So, you won't have to worry about me, Ryuuen-kun. **I indeed am different from everyone else.** "

"Kukuku, I'm impressed by the amount of confidence you're showing. However, unfortunately whether you are someone valuable or not....That's not for you to decide. Does your master think the same about you?"

Ryuuen's eyes went towards Kiyotaka as a smirk formed on his face, while Horikita bit her lips in frustration when she heard Ryuuen calling Kiyotaka her master.

"I'm not her master, Ryuuen. Horikita Suzune doesn't work under me. She works with me. There's a stark difference between those two prepositions and I hope you don't mix them up in the future."

Ryuuen nodded his head while chuckling at his words, while Horikita's initial frustration mellowed down a little as a little smirk crept up on her face.

"Sure Sure.... So, did the both of you guys come to enjoy our exotic vacation as well? Or do you have any ulterior motives?"

"Not really. I just want to ask you about....this."

Kiyotaka's eyes darted around the beach indicating the subject of the conversation.

"Hoho~ Willing to exchange information?"

"Not really. If you want something in return, then we will just go ahead and leave."

"Kukuku, don't be like that Ayanokouji. I have no problems answering your questions, you know? After all, even if you decided to say anything, it would be kind of useless to me. So it doesn't really matter to me either way if you open your mouth or not."

"I would love to not tell you anything. I would gladly take a one-sided conversation."

All Ryuuen could do was chuckle at his words, before gesturing towards the empty sunlounge beside him.

"Sit down first. Let's at least enjoy the fruitful conversation we are about to have, shall we? Oi Ishizaki!!"

Ryuuen called out to his green haired lackey, who immediately sprinted towards their location with a slightly nervous yet anticipated expression on his face.

"What is it, Ryuuen-san?"

"Go bring two glasses of drinks for our guests. We can't let them leave without some hospitality, can we?"

Horikita immediately shook her head in denial while narrowing both of her eyes at The Leader of Class-C.

"I would have to reject your offer. Who knows what kind of things you are planning to mix in our drinks....You're not someone who is trustworthy."

"Your words make me want to cry, Suzune. I can classify this as verbal bullying and get you expelled, you know?"

"Don't you dare call me by my first name. I've never given you the permission to address me that way."

"Kukukuku, I apologise for my actions then, Suzune. I'll never address you as Suzune again, alright Suzune? So don't worry at all

and sit beside me and let's have a fun together Suzune...All three of us, together."

Horikita looked disgusted at his implications while at the same time was very angered at the fact that the Class-C leader kept spamming her first name relentlessly.

Kiyotaka took a seat on the sunlounger beside Ryuen, while Horikita slowly crept up on his lap, all the while trying to mask her inner embarrassment with her annoyed glare.

"You wanna know about this place, right?"

"Yes."

"Kukuku, as you can see we are enjoying a vacation."

"Well done Mr.Genius. Thank you for stating the obvious fact. It's as if god didn't bless us with eyes, unlike you."

"Kukuku, you are quite the comedian Suzune. Wanna hook up with me? I'll show you quite a fun time."

Horikita rolled her eyes in annoyance while Kiyotaka's grip over her waist, unconsciously tightened a little, hearing Ryuen's provocation.

"I would rather kill myself than even imagine doing something with you. Please don't speak about such vulgar topics so openly. It's disgusting."

"So cold. I wonder what you will look like if I break past that wall of yours."

Ryuen narrowed his eyes at him, like a predator stalking his prey, however this time Horikita maintained an eye contact with him and didn't budge at the slightest, resulting in the leader of Class-C to let out an impressed smirk.

Kiyotaka who was silent all this time and was just observing the fiasco between Ryuen and Horikita, decided to speak up.

"How many points did you spend in all of this, Ryuen?"

"Hmm...I don't know honestly. I got lazy, so I can't remember the exact number. Although it doesn't matter in the first place."

"It seems like you're certainly taking a different approach than the other classes during this test?"

"Of course I do. Oh, are you one of those too? Those Class-B idiots, I mean...Kukuku."

"So that's why he was not surprised with our arrival. It seems that he already had an encounter with the Shounen Protagonists."

"Maybe our thought processes are similar. I don't know. Why do you ask?"

"Tch. They blabbered about some pretty boring stuff about how this test is about perseverance, ingenuity and co-operation."

Horikita nodded to his words, since she wholeheartedly agreed with the preachings of Class-B.

"I guess you can look at it that way as well."

"Cut the bullshit, Ayanokouji. My guys just visited your base. You're pretty much the same as those power of friendship clowns."

'I see...So along with just being an annoying disturbance, they were also tasked with the responsibility of observing our base as well.'

"It's not like we have a choice. If anyone suggested a plan like yours, the class would erupt into chaos."

"That just goes to show how shitty the other classes' leaders are. They can't even get everyone in line. Look at how happy my class is. They're getting the summer vacation they deserve because of my plan."

His words resulted in Horikita staring at him in disbelief before she shook her head in denial.

"You're a fool. As Class-C, your position at the moment is not of security at the slightest. If you keep doing it this way, then you would be easily overtaken by our class in the future. This so-called plan will hurt you in the long run."

"When you say the word fool, are you referring to me, Suzune? Because in my opinion the people who are unable to think outside the box are the real fools."

"....."

"I can't handle this anymore. This conversation was never fruitful from the start. Let's not waste our time and leave, Kiyotaka-kun."

"You start walking...I'll soon catch up with you. I have some things I would like to discuss with Ryuuen."

Horikita's eyes slightly narrowed in suspicion as Ryuuen just further leaned on his sunlounger, his ever present smirk still lingering on his face.

"Very well. Do whatever you please."

With that the raven haired maiden started walking away from the Class-C camp, as Kiyotaka's eyes found itself being drawn towards the beautiful blue sea.

"Ibuki is staying with us. Apparently she is injured. You did that to her, correct?"

"So she wound up in your place? What a pathetic girl. Listen Ayanokouji, A ruler has no need for subordinates who disobey orders. We determined that I would use the class's points to my liking. Once I said the word, it became an undeniable fact. Revolting against the ruler is pointless."

"So, she had a difference of opinion with you, regarding the usage of S-Points, huh?"

"You could say that. That's why I gave her a light punishment, you know?"

With a menacing smirk on his face, Ryuuen slapped his palm

with his other arm.

"Another boy defied me as well. So just like Ibuki, I kicked him away from our camp as well. I initially thought they would have to survive on grass and vermin, however now that I'm hearing about Ibuki's case, it seems like it isn't an issue anymore. You guys truly are generous kukuku."

"Seeing how indifferent you are, I assume you spent all of your S-Points?"

"That's correct. I spent all of them. Down to the very last point."

"....."

"Did you watch the episode of Tom and Jerry last night, Ryuuen?"

Immediately a small grin formed on Ryuuen's face.

"Nope. Even though I didn't watch it, I still heard about what happened. It seems like Tom had already made it's move in catching Jerry huh?"

"You're not wrong about that. Even though Jerry was a little suspicious at first, it seems like both of them formed a little alliance with the intention of taking down Spike."

"Kukukuku, poor Jerry. Even though being so smart, in the end his genetics couldn't divert him from becoming the Rat he is...."

"Truly a sad situation indeed. Once a rat, always a rat."

End of Chapter 69

Words : 3825

Finally reaching the holy number 69 lmao. At first I thought I would make a lemon to celebrate reaching such a big checkpoint, however I decided against it, since it would ruin the continuity of the story. Hopefully you guys are not too mad about it.

Sike, I know that some of you guys are livid HAHHAHAHAH.

Well, as a Chapter 69 Special, Here's a Screenshot of a certain Wattpad author being downbad af.

Guess who this down bad guy is. Winner gets a 🍷.

Anyways hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.

●♠♥♦♣♠♦♥♠●

Chapter 70 : Unity

Season 3 : Chapter 14

"You sure took quite some time huh?"

Kiyotaka's eyes went towards a frowning Suzune Horikita, who was sitting on one of the log of a broken tree under the shade of another tree, enjoying the shade from the canopy of leaves of the trees. Her face was a little sweaty and red as small strands of hair appeared to stick to her forehead.

Kiyotaka immediately took out some wet wipes and handed one to Horikita while using the other on himself. Horikita took the wet wipe from his hand and looked at it with a confused gaze for a second before using it on herself.

"When did you get the wet wipes, Kiyotaka-kun?"

"Bought 3 boxes of them for 3 S-Points. They were one of the cheapest items and are extremely useful to battle this intense heat of the day. So I thought to myself, why not?"

"I see. Good decision on your part. Speaking of decision, why did it take so long for you to come back? I was sweating bullets, standing and waiting for you, y'know?"

Horikita slightly narrowed her eyes at Kiyotaka, however there was no sense of hostility behind her words. It was just her usual way of conversing with someone. Truly a scary woman, indeed.

"I apologise for causing any sort of disturbance. We just had some things we needed to talk about."

"Don't apologise. I was the one who voluntarily joined you. So there's no obligation for you to cater to my needs. However, will I ever get to know the whole idea of what's going on? Or will I be kept in the dark again till the right time comes?"

I am not forcing you to tell me anything but I want to let you know that the fact that I haven't been doing anything and have been sitting around, it's been kind of eating me from the inside."

"I see. I guess I should have expected some sort of resistance from someone during the exam. Never thought that Suzune would be the one to do it though...Life is unpredictable, I guess."

Horikita nervously started rubbing one of her elbows with her other arm, all the while glaring at poor ground-kun, as the Leader of Class-D looked at her with an impassive gaze, before turning away from her figure.

"I told you before, right Suzune? I have a special job assigned for you in the future. It's just the second day of the exam. What's the rush about?"

"B-but Kiyotaka-kun-"

"Don't overstep your boundaries, Suzune."

She immediately fell silent as soon as she felt his calm and serene eyes look back towards her with a small sense of aggression and an expression which resembled that of a person who was not ready to accept any argument against him.

"This is a marathon, not a race, Suzune. Once you start the run at a fast pace, you have to keep it going and you can't stumble or fall. You can't afford to look back or slow down, since a sprinter's mentality is that he can never be left behind.

But what if the race is so long that you will eventually burn out and all your stamina will be gone, no matter the tenacity and the mentality. What will be the end result of it, Suzune? Tell me."

".....The one who sprinted early will eventually fall behind, but those who started slowly but picked up the pace later on, will be crowned as the winner."

The raven haired maiden breathed out the words with a whisper, as Kiyotaka nodded to her words, his initial aggression disappearing from his face in a second.

"Exactly. That's why there is no reason to take any action this quickly. Just like I told you before, I have everything in control. All you have to do is follow my lead and we will get the necessary victory, which is required."

Although Horikita nodded to his words, her expression of discomfort was still present on her face as she looked rather hesitant about saying something, a look which Kiyotaka saw many times on her face.

"What do you want to say, Suzune? Please say so. I don't want any miscommunication among one another. So tell me the problems you have with me leading this exam, since I can clearly see the look of apprehension on your face."

"I-I don't have any problems with you leading the exam, Kiyotaka-kun. In fact, I believe that you are the perfect person to lead us to the top. However I believe that if I always work under your lead, then I wouldn't be able to improve myself. I'm sorry if I sound selfish, since you are helping us.....But I hope you understand my circumstances as well."

It seems like she got extremely self-conscious and anxious after hearing Ryuuen's words and wants to take part in the matters by herself without my instructions...

It is not a favourable scenario for me if I look at it from one way...but

if I look at it as a big picture, in the end, this would lead to further improvement of Suzune's mindset as well as her intuition. But, for now....'

"I understand where you're coming from...."

You know what? You want to do something on your own without my help, correct?"

His sudden words resulted in Horikita tilting her head in confusion, not expecting to hear such a question coming from the mouth of her friend.

"Yes? But why does it matter?"

"Here's the plan. Listen to every single word of mine carefully, ok?"

"Ok?"

Kiyotaka slightly leaned towards Horikita, and pulled the black haired raven closer towards him, something that Horikita herself didn't care at this point. She was way too used to his antics that their close proximity didn't seem to bother her anymore.

"We are going to go to the Class-B base. And while I engage myself in a nice and enjoyable conversation with their leader, Ichinose Honami, you will be having fun with them, got it?"

"But how...."

Horikita's eyes immediately started sparkling in curiosity and excitement as Kiyotaka couldn't help but pat the head of such a cute creature. Although Horikita was embarrassed with such actions, she didn't move his hands off her, or drift the topic away from her question, since she was way too excited to do something productive.

Kiyotaka complied with her wishes and soon started to whisper his plan in Horikita's ears, whose stoic face soon had a small smirk forming on it, as she apparently came to like his idea.

"Although it feels kind of douchey to do this and I don't know your whole plan, I know that you are not someone reckless and that you put heavy thought behind every single one of your actions. So, I'm trusting you this time, Kiyotaka-kun."

'You are not wrong about that. Even before entering the island, I had to think quite a lot to myself whether mixing Chocolate Ice Cream with Strawberry was a good idea. Unfortunately, I did comply with my curiosity and I regret it a lot not gonna lie. It wasn't bad per say, but I was a little disappointed with how the combination of such good flavours turned out.'

"Do you know the location of the Class-B camp? Oh wait...Why am I asking? Of course you know."

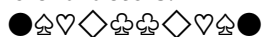
Her words led to Kiyotaka staring at her with mild amusement, flashing in his usually dull eyes, before the boy once again dropped

to his knees in front of her, and picked up the ice queen of Class-D on his back, who immediately attached herself tightly to his body with a smile on her face.

"Since it's the first day of Ayanokouji Travels, I'm giving you a free service. You better be grateful woman."

"Of course. I'll give you a tip of 1000 private points for such good service as well."

With that both Kiyotaka and Suzune walked towards the Class-B camp, with the intention of 'scouting' the camp of the bootleg fairy tale characters.



Soon, Kiyotaka and Horikita made their way through the forest and walked into the Class-B camp, only to be met with a slightly energised Ichinose, who seemed to be assigning some groups among her classmates with the intention of doing something group related.

As soon as their eyes met, her face immediately lit up in a small smile as the beautiful pink haired girl greeted him with a small wave.

"Hello Ayanokouji-kun~ Hello Horikita-san~ Good morning."

Horikita, who didn't end her conversation with Ichinose on a positive note, felt quite weirded out by her contagious jolly behaviour, but refrained from commenting anything.

"You guys seem to be doing pretty well. Colour me impressed."

"Ahaha, I guess so. It was all thanks to my classmates' efforts. It was really hard at first, but we made it work somehow."

Ichinose's classmates soon came behind her and greeted the two with smiles on their faces as well. Among them, a certain violet haired boy looked at the two Class-D students suspiciously for a second, before he shrugged it off and introduced himself with a professional look on his face.

"Hello. I'm Kanzaki Ryuuji of Class-B. Nice to meet you both."

"Ayanokouji Kiyotaka."

"Horikita Suzune."

All three of them shook hands as the brown haired boy subtly looked towards his black haired partner, gesturing to her to be prepared.

"Horikita, can you discuss our class's point usage with Kanzaki? In the meantime, I'll discuss some things with Ichinose regarding the other classes. I got quite some good information, if you guys want to know that is. Are you okay with that, Ichinose?"

"Oh, absolutely. Kanzaki-kun, please guide Horikita-san around the camp and discuss with her about whatever question she has."

"You are free to ask her anything you would like to know as well. Of course we would like to exchange information, not hoard

everything to ourselves."

His words led to Kanzaki slowly nodding to himself, before he gestured to the Co-Leader of Class-D to follow him.

"Very well. Please follow me, Horikita-san."

"I'm trusting you, Suzune. Make me proud."

Kiyotaka slightly whispered in Horikita's ears, causing her ears to go slightly red, as she gave him a smile of reassurance in return, before she followed Kanzaki inside the Class-B camp.

Ichinose, who saw the sight but didn't hear their words, just looked at them with a small mischievous look in her eyes.

"Say Ayanokouji-kun, are you and Horikita-san dating?"

"Hmm? Why the sudden question?"

"Just asking. You and Horikita-san looked very close. And by very I mean 'Very' close. Not that I mind anything. I'm just curious."

"Well, you can say that she was my first friend in my entire life. So I feel quite attached to her, I guess."

Hearing his words, Ichinose's eyes immediately widened for a second in disbelief.

"Pardon me if I'm intruding in your private life but what do you mean by first friend Ayanokouji-kun? You don't have to answer if you don't want to."

She let out a reassuring smile, as if trying to convey the message ***I wouldn't be hurt if you reject my advances.***

"No no, don't worry. You are fine, Ichinose. It's just that, my father is quite a strict man, because of which, I was basically 'homeschooled' my entire life. So unlike others, I never had the liberty to make any friends, I guess."

Kiyotaka slightly looked down at his feet while Ichinose's face immediately morphed into a sad frown as she bit her lips in frustration.

"I see. I'm sorry if I brought up any bad memories. It was never my intention in the first place. Say Ayanokouji-kun, why don't you follow me for a second? I would like to show you something cool."

Realising that she might have brought up some bad memories, like an expert, Ichinose changed the topic without any trouble as blue eyes started glistening in excitement as Kiyotaka couldn't help but accept her offer.

"Sure, I guess. Please lead the way."

"Okie~"

With that both Kiyotaka and Ichinose walked inside the forest, all the while engaging in small talk among themselves.

"You guys popped out from an unexpected part of the forest. Let me guess; you came from the beach, didn't you?"

A sly grin formed on Ichinose's face as Kiyotaka nodded to her

words.

"Yeah, specifically, from Ryuuken's camp."

"Ahh, I thought so. They're pretty crazy, aren't they?"

"Without a doubt. Although I must say, the way Ryuuken leads his class is quite....intriguing."

"As much as I hate to agree with you on this point, you're not wrong. Ryuuken-kun sure is unpredictable."

The two of them approached an outlying hammock suspended between two trees as Kiyotaka couldn't help but resign to his curiosity.

"This place is out of the camp. Why are there a couple of hammocks set up?"

"Yonezu-kun and Shibata-kun are staying here. They said something about guarding this pathway against possible intruders."

"I see."

"This is quite a nice place to stand guard, if I'm being honest. The atmosphere isn't too hot, and the trees are easy to climb. And apart from people, they must also be wary of animals."

"Wanna sit?"

"Are you sure? I don't think it can fit more than one person."

"If you try hard enough, two people can sit here, you know?"

Ichinose inched sideward as if to free up some space. She patted the small area beside her while looking at the brown haired boy, who was staring at her with an apathetic gaze.

"We'll be squeezed together if I sit with you. Don't you think people would find that to be a bit inappropriate if they see us?"

"Hehe~ I was just joking. Don't worry."

"Even if you say that and try to save yourself, the pink blush on your cheeks is not helping you win this case, Ichinose. You didn't even think of the implication of your previous words before I pointed them out...You sure took quite an L. I wonder if I should start calling you Lichinose Lonami from today onwards..."

"So, what did you think about Ryuuken's actions?"

Ichinose's bubbly and shy behaviour immediately disappeared within a second as her eyes slightly narrowed and a serious look adorned her face.

"So this is her Leader mode huh?"

"To be honest, I can't really say anything else. I wasn't there, so I would base my opinion on my classmates' descriptions. From what I can tell, it seems like they spent most of their points on the first day."

"They most likely did. I don't know how much we can trust Ryuuken's words, but he told us that they've spent all of their points as of earlier."

"Everything?"

Ichinose winced in confusion, being unable to comprehend the logic behind the actions of the Leader of Class-C.

"Yeah."

"What will they do after that?"

"I guess once all their supplies are over, they will retire from the exam."

"Eh? How can they retire of their own volition?"

"Well...One of my classmates Koenji unfortunately broke his arm as well as two of our classmates ate some wild berries, which made them sick. So, all three of them had to retire from the exam, with the reason being 'sickness' and injury."

"Oh no!! Is their condition too serious?! Are they okay?!"

Ichinose's eyes widened in worry, however Kiyotaka just gestured her to stop her rambling by raising his hand.

"Yup. They are fine, but do you understand what I'm trying to say?"

"So you think Ryuuken-kun will do the same after their beach party is over, right?"

"Exactly. They're pretty much out of the race now. If Class C doesn't retire, none of them will last until the final day."

Ichinose nodded to him as she fell silent, his words still lingering within her mind. While she was quietly thinking to herself, Kiyotaka looked around the camp and couldn't help but feel slightly impressed with her preparations.

'Although their base camp looks fundamentally different than ours, it still has that same homey, cosy feeling.'

"You've been leading your class well, Ichinose."

"For now, I guess. I considered everyone's opinions and thankfully, some of the kids in our class are familiar with the outdoors. They were lifesavers, to be honest. I can't simply take the credit."

"But they managed to get their thoughts out properly because you rallied everyone together."

"Isn't that the same with Class D then? You're their leader, right?"

".....No comments 🤔 🤔 🤔"

"Hehe~ You don't have to worry too much, Ayanokouji-kun."

While both the leaders of the class were engaged in a small, chill conversation, their peace was soon disturbed by a certain boy who looked like he didn't belong in Class-B's camp.

"Pardon me, Ichinose-san? I'm sorry to interrupt. Do you know where Shibata-kun is?"

"Ah, Kaneda-kun. I think Shibata-kun headed down to the northern shore. Why do you ask?"

"I thought I'd offer help. Is that unnecessary?"

"Oh no, not at all. I'm really happy that you feel that way. Can you head over and follow Chihiro-chan's group then? If you tell them I told you to do so, it'll be okay."

"Okay, thank you very much."

With that, he soon walked away with a reserved expression on his face, not before making one small eye contact with the leader of Class-D himself, who stared back at him with an empty gaze.

'So not only you are playing games with Class-D but also Class-B huh? I see what you are trying to do, Ryuen. Very well. Come at me with everything you've got. I'm well prepared.'

End of Chapter 70

Words : 3922

Most of the foundations of the Exam are now done. Now we are going to get into the exciting parts starting the next chapter or the chapter after that. My mind is quite unpredictable, so who knows I might add some unnecessary shit lol.

Anyways, did you guys watch the DAZN event? It yes, then what did you think of it?

For me, I was so happy that Deji won man. It made my day. It was such a great moment.

King Kenny's win was rigged without a doubt. Faze Sensei clearly won.

And sheesh, Slim is too op like damn.

Swarmz put more of a fight than the so-called 'pro boxer' □□□□

Anyways hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.

●♠♥♦♣♣♦♥♠●

Chapter 71 : 'I Love You'

Season 3 : Chapter 15

After their 'small talk' with Ichinose and some other members of Class-B, Horikita and Kiyotaka soon were on their way back to their camps, as the boy couldn't help but slightly glance at his raven haired friend, who was radiating a smug aura for some reason. Unlike usual, her posture was straighter than usual as her gleaming red eyes were looking more beautiful than usual.

From Kiyotaka's point of view, she looked...Majestic, Confident and Beautiful.

'Confidence truly is a source of beauty huh? Once a person realises that they are worth something, that self belief and the confidence in themselves, increases to such a degree that, they finally realise the fact that, they don't have to live and abide by how society rules them...They can do whatever they please, whenever they please and however they please....'

That's one kind of freedom that every human being should strive for.'

"Looking at you, it seems like everything went just as planned, huh? You look quite thrilled."

"I guess you're not wrong. I planted some seeds for the students of Class-B. Now we have to just wait and see whether they will capitalise on the hints or if they would just let it be as it is, like a real loser. By the way, their Leader is someone who goes by the name of Chihiro Shiranami."

As soon as she said those words, Kiyotaka stopped on his tracks and slightly narrowed his eyes.

"Are you 100% sure about that?"

"I am. You can check it later by yourself if you want. Unfortunately, other than Kanzaki-kun, everyone else in Class-B thinks of this test as just a simple class camp instead of an actual exam. So, they were quite open with their stuff."

At first, they were indeed a little worried about my presence, but I acted oblivious and acted like I was listening to what Kanzaki-kun was saying, which made them continue their discussion in the open. Such simpletons, I am telling you."

Horikita uttered those words with a thin smile on her face, as Kiyotaka nodded in approval, before he slightly inched closer towards the figure of Horikita, who immediately inched closer in

reflex unconsciously, having no slightest reason about the cause of this action.

Kiyotaka, who took note of this subtle action, mentally smirked to himself before letting out his warm breath on Horikita's ears, while whispering in her ears.

"Since you did a very good job, a reward is pending, don't you think? *What would you like, Suzune?* "

As soon as he uttered her name in such a smooth, husky tone, completely foreign to his usual self, Horikita's face immediately turned red as her pupils imaginarily started swirling in shock.

"A-ayanokouji-kun?!"

"What is it?"

Despite Kiyotaka's face looking just like it usually does, for some reason there was a glint of something different in his eyes at that moment. They were not as dull as they usually were.

'A sense of need? Maybe a sense of want?

Nobody looked at me, ever with that kind of gaze...

It's something.....different.

I, Horikita Suzune was a girl who never received 'that' sort of affection her whole life. Of course my parents and her brother loved me, but we were family after all...Who doesn't love their own family?

But, what about my peers?

I had friends in Kindergarten and Primary School...But were we really friends? Since none of them are in touch with me after we were not classmates anymore. So, as for the answer to the question? In the end, were we friends? No. They were just classmates who enjoyed each other's as well as my presence and vice versa.

And when we had to switch schools, these small moments we created with one another, instantly became forgettable as we went on our venture to make more new memories. Nothing more, nothing less.

As for Junior High...Yeah...it is best to not touch that matter. It's a time of my life, which should be kept within the doors of the deepest pits within my heart and that door should never open again.

So, if someone looks at it in that way, in terms of people of her own age, I, Horikita Suzune, was always alone...without anyone by my side. For some time, I had one Kushida Kikyou by my side, but everyone knows what happened between us. So it's better to leave it like that.

But everything about my surroundings and my social life changed when I joined Advanced Nurturing High School. When I came to hear the knowledge of me being eligible to study in the same school as nii-san, I was just happy with that fact and prepared myself for another three years without any social interaction with my colleagues and just planned to live a mundane life, with the sole purpose of improving and taking care of myself...

But fortunately for me....Ayanokouji-kun happened.

Just one out of character "Good Morning" greeting which I never did with anyone else, changed my entire social life as well as my mental health.

Surprisingly, I have friends now...I have people on whom I can rely upon without feeling weak or guilty.. Nii-san is proud of me and treats me way better than I could ever imagine...

And...it all happened because of this man, in front of me...

Everything that he did for me...How could I ever repay it? How could I be of help to him? Every night before I go to sleep, I think of these questions to myself and I could never find any answers...

Because in the end, Ayanokouji-kun doesn't need any help. He is the best at everything. So, how can someone like me, who is inferior to him, in every single way....have even the right to think about helping him?'

Kiyotaka, who still had Horikita's figure leaning close towards his body, looked at the now silent raven haired girl in confusion, only to find her spacing out, while small trickles of tears adorned her eyelids.

Although he wanted to snap her out of her thoughts and continue the conversation, he refrained from doing such a thing, since for some reason, he felt like he shouldn't do it.

On the other hand, Horikita who was still in her deep thought, was trying to find any possible answer to her questions, widened her eyes in realisation for a second, before she finally appeared to snap out of her thoughts, and turn towards her brown haired friend, who was looking at her with a confused gaze.

"You....Do you have the ability to give anything I'd want as my reward?"

'Woah miss, you sound really greedy right now.'

Although Kiyotaka wanted to comment this just to tease her, he stopped from doing so, as he could feel that her gaze was extremely sincere and serious, as if she was meaning everything she wanted to say.

"As long as it's within my capabilities, then yes. I'll give you anything you want as a reward, since you passed such a big self-hurdle today. You deserve it, Suzune."

All she gave in response was a close-eyed smile as the small trickles of tears adorning her eyelids, fell on her cheeks.

"Very well...Then would you please accept my request...And give me the liberty of sharing a part of each other from now on?"

"Huh?!"

Kiyotaka's usually dull and monotone eyes slightly widened in surprise and shock, as he was not expecting such words coming out of her mouth.

I knew that Suzune had a crush on me...But is she really confessing to me?'

Unable to keep his curiosity to himself, Kiyotaka blurted out his next words with an inquiring look on his face.

"But why? Why do you feel such a way towards me? I've never done anything important to you, but in a way, you were hurt numerous times because of me. So, why are you confessing to someone like me?"

Such simple words of curiosity....Kiyotaka had no other intention of saying them, all he wanted was to know the reason. But he didn't realise the amount of pain such words caused inside the heart of Horikita Suzune.

Whenever I would feel lonely or scared, just thinking about you calmed me down. Whenever I felt like I was going through depression or was hyperventilating, your advice and remembering the fun times we experienced together, always managed to calm me down.

I was always able to pull through difficult situation, since in the back of my head, I always knew that you were there for me. You would always support me, help me...**Save me.** It's thanks to you that I was able to move on.

So...How dare you say that you didn't do anything to me..
Ayanokouji Kiyotaka-kun?!"

Horikita glared at the person in front of her with quite the intensity in her eyes, all the while clenching her fists in frustration.

"Don't you realise how disrespectful your words are towards me. You literally changed my life, I don't know whether it was your intention or not. Even so, you helped me through everything.

But now, you are speaking as if nothing of those meant anything to you?! Say Ayanokouji-kun, what am I to you? Please be honest with me. What do you think of me as?"

Horikita immediately grabbed both of his shoulders with a longing expression on her face, as Kiyotaka couldn't help but sigh to himself.

"I.....don't know."

His vague response made Horikita frown in frustration, however the girl didn't stop her pursuit.

"I can't accept that answer, Kiyotaka-kun. You yourself told me that we should always communicate with one another to not create any misunderstandings. But do you think bottling up your real emotions like this is fair to me? I am asking you once again, Kiyotaka-kun...What am I to you?"

"....."

"Ever since I was young..Because of the amount of torture my

father put me through, in the name of 'lessons', I slowly but surely gave up on expressing my emotions, since I thought they were nothing but a hindrance.

Even when I joined this school, I never wanted to make friends or memories in the first place. My father gave me a condition that he would let me taste 'freedom' if I graduate as a Class-A student. That's why I never thought of you, Matsushita, Satou, Sudou, Sotomura as my friends. I only saw you guys as future assets that I would use for my own benefit."

For the first time in his life, Kiyotaka's voice did not resemble his usual self. His words were slightly wavering as if he was ashamed of himself. Horikita, who never had the liberty to get inside the thought process of her 'crush' widened her eyes at what he was saying. Her eyes once again started watering as she uttered her next words with much disbelief.

"So, you thought of us as nothing but your tools?"

"Yes. All of you were my tools for survival and freedom."

Horikita released a small gasp of shock and disbelief however before she could run away or do something drastic, Kiyotaka grabbed both of her hands, before forcing them on his chest.

"Or that's what I thought."

"The way I see it, that's the way you're brought up with this way of thinking...But do you really want to believe this from the deepest pits of your heart?"

"You see it now, don't you? Just like your presence made everyone around you change and improve....Their presence also had the same effect on you."

"It doesn't matter if you don't heed my advice or not. Just remember one thing, us humans, we always change as time goes. What we need to do is not fight the change but instead embrace it and accept it. That is what we call maturity, not this 'Winning is Everything' mindset of yours....."

All these words of Chabashira-sensei lingered in Kiyotaka's mind as he uttered his next words, all the while staring into Horikita's gradient eyes.

"Or that's what I thought...I don't want to just get my freedom back, Suzune. I want to feel. I want to experience what everyone else experiences. I want to be happy. I want to be sad. I want to be excited. I want to be disappointed. I don't want to be always unaffected by my surroundings, because I don't feel like I'm a human being."

All of Horikita's previous resentment disappeared within a second, as tears started falling from her eyes, as she couldn't prevent it no matter how much she could. Her hands, which were

forced upon his chest, slowly crawled up towards his cheek, as Kiyotaka himself inched closer towards her.

"Say Suzune...Can you help me feel like a normal human again?"

"....."

"....."

"I-I'll die trying. But I'll never give up on you, Kiyotaka-kun. I love you."

She stood on her toes, as Kiyotaka leaned down a little, as both of their eyes met one another, both of their foreheads connecting together, as Horikita released a weak smile.

"And it took me a while to get here, but I think that maybe I've always loved you, from the moment we engaged in a conversation, with each other. But you wanna know the other thing that I know for sure? Besides the fact that I love you?"

"....."

"That I'll always love you. No matter what. Do you understand?"

Kiyotaka couldn't give out a response as both sides of cheeks were still tightly gripped by Horikita's hands, however he still gave her a 'yes' in response to which, the raven haired girl let out a cute chuckle.

"It doesn't matter if you don't feel any sort of attraction towards me now. But will you promise me one thing? Like you always say, Place your trust on me and I'll help you gain all the things in your life that you're deprived off. I'll make you smile one day, Kiyotaka-kun. It doesn't matter how many years it will take, I'll never give up on you. But will you trust me and not give up on me as well?"

"....."

"You are the first person whom I considered as my friend, Suzune. I trust you a lot, and I'll never give up on you."

"I'm glad to hear it."

Releasing one last smile with tears streaming down her face, Horikita Suzune tightened her grip over Kiyotaka's face and quickly dragged him towards her as they soon found themselves engaged in a euphoric feeling, they never experienced before in their entire life.

Both of them experienced their first kiss of their life.

" I love you."

"The three words I Love You are so simple, yet at the same time so effective. Even though those words didn't pierce my heart now...I know for a fact that one day I'll look back towards this moment, and be glad that I experienced something like this."

I don't want to remain unaffected by my surroundings. In my personal belief, I like to think that humans change as they grow . But....I feel as though I've grown and yet to change.....or perhaps, I've changed.....but

yet to grow.'

End of Chapter 71

Words : 3562

Finally....We reached the moment everyone was waiting for...To be completely honest, I was at this point delaying the inevitable, since I was not confident in my skill to write a confession among such complex characters.

However I guess it's been too long and they are practically inseparable, so I was like fuck it and made it happen.

I tried to make it as uncringey as possible, but a meaningful romance with Kiyotaka is bound to be cringey, so it's against my hands lmao.

Anyways hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.



Chapter 72 : Revelation

Season 3 : Chapter 16

"Say, what took the both of you this long to do? We were waiting for you to have lunch together, you know?"

As soon as Kiyotaka and Horikita walked inside the Class-D camp, Satou who was sitting on one of the logs of a tree, directed this question to them with slightly narrowed eyes. There was no sense of malice or any suspicion behind her gaze, it was just a gaze filled with mild curiosity.

Horikita immediately narrowed her eyes in return and spoke in a cold tone, trying to not slip up about anything that happened inside the woods.

"We were scouting the Class-B camp, and were discussing with them about the usage of points and different ways we can use the resources we got to make our camp more efficient. So it took quite a bit of our time. I apologise for making you wait, although you didn't need to, in the first place."

Even though her words were radiating an aura of confidence and authority, the faint blush around her cheeks were noticeable to everyone else around her, to which they raised some eyebrows in curiosity. However they decided to keep their mouth shut and not comment on such oddity coming from their raven haired classmate, since it was not their business in the first place.

"You know, ever since the exam started, all you guys have been doing is work, work and work. I mean I understand that you guys are weary and want to increase the Class Points as much as possible, but I think the both of you should take better care of yourselves, since in the end it would be detrimental for the class in case one of you gets sick.....Not to mention, Horikita-san already was sick in the first place. Do you really think that you should walk around in the hot afternoon when you recovered just a couple of days ago?"

Matsushita, who was discussing something with Hirata and Karuizawa in the middle of the campsite, walked towards the two and started lecturing them with a slightly scolding tone as if she was a disappointed mother, seeing which Satou giggled to herself as Kiyotaka and Horikita nodded in understanding. Karuizawa, who was weakly smiling at the sight in front of her, soon walked

towards them and tapped the Leader of Class-D on his shoulder, trying to get his attention.

"Ayanokouji-kun, may I have some of your time?"

Immediately Satou and Matsushita looked at their blonde haired friend in confusion , not expecting 'The Karuizawa Kei' to speak in such an unhostile tone with the person whom she apparently couldn't stand. Similarly, the other girls of the class also looked quite interested in such a sudden development.

"Oh? Sure, I guess. Is it something serious?"

"Kind of. However I'm not comfortable sharing this publicly, so do you mind if we talk somewhere privately?"

As soon as she said that, the blonde haired girl subtly glanced towards the smiling Kushida, who appeared to be happily chatting with her clique of friends. As if she sensed the lingering gaze of Karuizawa towards her direction, the beige haired 'idol' of Class-D turned around and waved at her in greeting, her ever present 'angelic' smile present on her face.

Karuizawa smiled at her in response before starting to walk inside the woods away from the camp, not before sending one last glance at Kiyotaka, gesturing him to follow her, as the boy complied to her request, his sense of curiosity flowing through his veins.

Horikita sent a small lingering gaze towards the retreating figure of her 'Boyfriend' before shrugging it off and sitting next to her two friends who were looking at her with sly smiles and teasing grins on their faces.

"Aww~ is Horikita-san jealous that her crush is going to a secluded area with another girl all by himself?"

"Say Horikita-san, wanna go spy on them? Who knows what in the hell they are going to do in the middle of the woods?"

Both Matsushita and Satou tried to rile up their raven haired classmate and bring out her cute jealous side, which she doesn't show much however much to their disappointment, all they received was a smug stare in return from Horikita herself, who just shook her head in dismissal.

"I have no reason to feel jealous of such feeble matters."

'Since he already is my boyfriend now~'

●♡◇♣◇♡●

"So, what happened, Karuizawa? I'll be honest, I never expected you to call out to me in front of everyone. You gained quite some unnecessary attention, you know?"

Soon, Kiyotaka and Karuizawa arrived in the middle of the woods, devoid of the presence of any of their classmates as the brown haired boy looked at the girl in front of him, his eyes filled

with curiosity about the reason behind Karuizawa taking such a rash action, and publicly calling the person she apparently 'hates' in front of everyone's sight.

"You don't have to worry about that, we have something important to discuss about instead. I don't care what others think of my sudden allegiance with you. You said that you will help me and so my first priority is helping you in return."

There was a serious aura surrounding the usually lax Karuizawa as she kind of looked like she was on edge the whole time, sky rocketing Kiyotaka's lingering curiosity even more than before.

"This is the first time I saw her so sure and confident. It's as if she cracked a certain code and she is quite confident about her success. The funny and surprising part being the fact that this confidence is not a facade of the fake headstrong 'Karuizawa Kei' who needs to show herself as someone strong and capable, but of the real Karuizawa Kei, whose main motive is her survival."

"You look like you witnessed a crime, Karuizawa. Explain to me what exactly happened, in full details. I don't want any information to be left out."

"That's why I called you here in the first place, didn't I?"

Karuizawa took one last deep breath, before composing herself and continuing from where she left off.

"Ayanokouji-kun, I know what I'm about to say is crazy, but I slightly feel suspicious about a certain someone."

"Who is it ? And what did you witness which made you utter such a bold statement? And how confident are you behind your claims?"

"Jeez~ Calm down, will you? I'm here trying to have a serious conversation and here you are, throwing rapid fire questions at me making me perplexed."

Throwing a light punch on his shoulder, the blonde haired girl released a tired sigh to herself as Kiyotaka nodded in apology.

"My bad. I forgot that I wasn't talking with Horikita Suzune but Karuizawa Kei. It's my fault for not taking into consideration of the difference of intellect between the both of you. I sincerely apologise."

Immediately he felt another weak punch on his shoulders, as the blonde haired girl sent a very 'peaceful' smile towards his way with twitching eyebrows.

"Ha ha ha, so funny. Now, would you please let me talk?!"

"Sure sure, go ahead."

"Sigh...You are so annoying y'know?"

"....."

"So, as I was saying...For context, I'm a pretty light sleeper, because of certain 'reasons' that you might understand, given the

fact that I told you everything about my past."

"Yes I understand. Don't dwell on those unnecessary horrible memories and continue what you were saying. We don't have much time."

His words resulted in her sending him a small smile, as she was happy that Kiyotaka wanted to move on from the uncomfortable topic as soon as possible, before she continued her words.

"So, my sleep was suddenly disturbed when I heard the sound of footsteps in front of my camp. I initially felt really scared that someone who might hold a grudge against me wanted to off me in the darkness of the night. However I soon heard the voices of two people."

"To really fear that much for your survival that the thought that someone might kill you at any moment lingers in her mind 24/7.....the situation of Karuizawa Kei is far more serious than I initially thought."

"When I peeked from my tent, It was none other than the Ibuki girl of Class-C and Kushida-san."

"I see. So they already got in contact with one another huh? Both of them sure work fast."

"Huh? Wait a minute. What do you mean by that?! Does that mean you already knew that Kushida-san was kind of suspicious?"

Her expression of concern and betrayal immediately shattered as both of her eye widened at the fact that not only Kiyotaka looked shocked at the revelation, but also by the fact that it was as if he was expecting this betrayal from Kushida Kikyuu.

"I don't want to reveal too much information, since it might put you in danger. Just know one thing...I have everything in control. Also, thanks for letting me know about this. As for Kushida, her main motive is expelling me and Horikita."

"Huh?!!! Why the hell does she want to expel you two?!"

"You don't have to worry about that. I only let you know of this fact, since I want to warn you to not ever lose your guard against Kushida..She is someone who is extremely dangerous and selfish, and she will not hesitate to get rid of you, if she feels like your presence is a threat to her."

A veil of uncomfortable silence prevailed among them, as Karuizawa's face turned paler than usual, as she began to start feeling anxious about this whole situation...

"I-I understand. I won't be giving anything away too much. This situation is pretty crazy, huh?! I never thought that someone like Kushida-san harbors another side to her as well."

"You don't seem that surprised...I thought you would be more shocked by this revelation."

Kiyotaka's words resulted in Karuizawa letting out a small self-

deprecating chuckle, as she started twirling her blonde hair with her fingers.

"I'm way too accustomed to people turning on me whenever their favor is done. So in a way, you are not wrong. I'm way too habituated with this at this point."

'Once again, I definitely underestimated the emotional scars borne by this girl standing in front of me. Now that I think about it, it's pretty insane and empowering at the same time how both Karuizawa and Suzune still somehow had the courage and the emotional strength to come back after such hideous and scary incidents happened to the both of them.'

Not wanting to engage himself any further in this conversation and make Karuizawa feel more uncomfortable, Kiyotaka released a small sigh to himself starting to walk back towards the camp, gesturing his blonde-haired acquaintance to follow him.

"So? Is there anything else you wanted to talk about? or was it just about the Kushida incident?"

"No...There's one more thing I wanted to let you know. I'm planning to break up with Hirata-kun, once this exam ends."

Hearing such a sudden declaration coming out of Karuizawa's mouth, Kiyotaka raised his eyebrows in curiosity while directing his gaze towards the girl, who was walking side by side with him.

"How surprising. What led you to this sudden decision?"

"Don't play dumb with me. You were the one who told me to do it in the first place. At first I was not convinced by your 'promise' and was planning to keep up my 'relationship' with Hirata-kun, but I soon realised that this facade of mine is not just bothering Hirata-kun but is also hurting a lot of people, who actually like him for who he is and are not just using him for their own selfish purposes."

Karuizawa lowered her head in shame, however there was no sense of remorse or regret behind her words.

'She knew it beforehand, that this 'selfish' action of her will cause troubles to other people, and yet she went along with it, since she had no other way. But after meeting me and witnessing a fraction of my abilities, the moment she heard that I can help her further develop and make her stronger physically as well as emotionally, that helpless heart of her finally found a small spark as she now changed her targets to a now stronger and more reliable person, who can help her in a much more efficient way than her former 'ally'. And now that she is free from this dilemma of fully relying on the popularity of one person, and capitalising on it as soon as possible, her entire game plan changed as she now wants to free her former 'host' and wants him to be free of her wrath.'

"I don't think Hirata is the kind of person who would be bothered

to help somebody.... He is one of the nicest person I've met so far without any malicious intent behind their kindness."

"And that is exactly why I want him to be free. I bothered him way too much these last couple of months..."

"You should buy him a small gift as a compensation for all the troubles. I could only imagine the headache he had to experience when a certain person clinged on to him 24/7 and was squealing everywhere like a dying pig."

Karuizawa immediately pinched Kiyotaka's face as the boy let out a small, unbothered 'Ow' in response, further increasing her annoyance.

"You don't hold back your words, do you? I wonder how you managed to get someone like Horikita-san to get attracted to you with this attitude of yours."

"I'm just too cool for your liking, I guess."

"Keep your self-praise within yourself, Koenji 2.0..... Who knows, you might break your arm as well if you keep acting like him."

"How rude of you to compare 2 Perfect Existence such as us. I can't stand this blasphemy coming out of your mouth."

Karuizawa rolled her eyes at the over-dramatic words coming out of his mouth with his ever present stoic tone, however soon a very small amused smile appeared on her face as she subtly glanced at the boy beside him.

"My bad, my bad... I apologise for my cruel words, Mr. Genius. Please spare poor old me."

"You should be. I forgive you this one last time. I hope you do not forget this last warning, Miss Karuizawa Kei."

"Hehehe."

With that, she let out a small giggle followed by fits of laughter and giggles as both of them soon reached their base.

End of Chapter 72

Words : 3412

Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. There was a lack of Karuizawa in this whole arc, so I decided why not add her in...especially after Horikita and Kiyotaka just got together. Anyways, it was my first time writing a chapter on a Laptop so it might feel a little different than usual. As for my phone with which I usually wrote.....

This is it's condition now :

□□□□ *As for context for how this happened... I went to the mall to buy some clothes...But because of how stupid I am, like an idiot I tripped on one of the stairs and fell down from the top, all the while the phone was in my pocket xD. And now my phone which costed around Rs 20,000 is all gone because of my stupidity 🐼🐼🐼.*

Anyways that's all for this chapter. See ya.



Chapter 73 : Baby Steps

Season 3 : Chapter 17

Three days have passed in normalcy among the Class-D camp....In these three days, nothing too significant took place for the "Defective" class. Ibuki Mio, the spy of Class-C, looked disappointed and bummed at first, after losing her camera but she kept her displeasure to herself and kept herself isolated from the entire class.

Even if she wanted to create a commotion inside the camp in order to get a chance of figuring out the leader, or even stealing the card, unfortunately for the blue haired girl of Class-C, she was being surveyed 24/7 under the narrowed gazes of Karuizawa, Shinohara as well as Satou who did not give the girl any leeway to do anything suspicious.

One thing which was quite different in comparison to the past was the presence of one Kushida Kikyou in this entire scenario.

After the third day of the exam, it was as if she completely ditched her group of 'friends' and continuously flocked around Kiyotaka and Suzune with her ever present 'angelic' smile.

This decision of hers, made her friends sad, lonely and even to some point, a few of them felt 'betrayed', but that's how Kushida's friendship unfortunately worked. It was all about Quantity but never about Quality.

However what was more surprising was the fact that, despite finding her presence annoying and bothersome, both the Leader and Co-Leader of Class-D didn't go out of their way to reprimand the beige haired girl for being a nuisance or even tell her to not disturb them.

Both of them just stayed.....silent, completely ignoring Kushida's presence, as if she was a fly on the wall.

Day 6, Time : 8.04 P.M.

It was the Final day of the The 1st Special Exam of this school. Most of the students of Class-D looked bored, exhausted and tired as they couldn't wait to go back to their ship and take a well deserved rest after all this hassle.

Their initial excitement of camping together and having fun appeared to deplete as it kind of became their regular routine for this last week.

Chabashira-Sensei, who just finished the final roll call of the exam started walking back to the teacher's area, not before sending one last glance to the Leader of Class-D, who looked back at her with an unreadable, emotionless expression, refusing to let out anything which is on his mind.

Sighing to herself, Chabashira weakly smiled at her student before walking away from the camp.

As soon as she was gone, Hirata Yosuke walked towards the direction of Kiyotaka, with his harem following every single step of his, like loyal puppies.

"Ayanokouji-kun, tonight is your duty to take the night shift. However all of us agree that you have worked way too hard for us these last couple of days. So, you can take a rest and I can guard the camp for you."

Before Kiyotaka could respond to his words, Shinohara walked in front of him with a slightly annoyed look on her face, all the while crossing her arms over her breasts.

"Although, I don't like the fact that Hirata-kun will have to stay overnight instead of getting his beauty sleep, I have to agree that you need a well deserved rest, Ayanokouji-kun."

Hirata's harem nodded along with her words as Kiyotaka couldn't help but slightly widen his eyes in surprise at the sight in front of him.

'How surprising is this? Someone like Shinohara who seemed to cannot stand me all this time is suddenly feeling considerate of my health? What universe am I living in?'

"And since Hirata-kun would be all alone and bored in the night, I wouldn't mind staying awake with him and giving him company."

'Nevermind...She doesn't care about my health. She just wants to simp for Hirata.'

Her previous scowl immediately turned into a dreamy smile as the girls of Hirata's harem, who were previously agreeing with Shinohara immediately started glaring at her with betrayal and annoyance, flaring through their eyes.

"NO!!! WHY SHOULD IT BE YOU, SHINOHARA-SAN?!"

"First come, first served. I laid my claim first, girls."

"NO!! WE CAN'T ACCEPT THIS."

"IT SHOULD'VE BEEN ME!!!!"

"YOU CHEATED, SHINOHARA-SAN!!!!"

"WHO SAYS THAT?! I JUST TOOK MY CHANCES BEFORE YOU ALL."

While Shinohara was basking in her self glory, chaos ensued around the whole camp, as girls were fighting for the liberty of spending time with the so-called 'Pretty Boy' of Class-D, while the

boys were cursing him to death, out of sheer jealousy.

Meanwhile Hirata? He was just smiling peacefully and gracefully at the sight in front of him, in spite of being worried about the war that is taking place in front of his eyes.

'Hirata....You truly are a madlad.'

In order to stop the commotion from escalating any further, Kiyotaka coughed out loud trying to get their attention...however much to his disappointment, none of them seemed to hear or care about his call, resulting in him releasing a small sigh as his seatmate now girlfriend, Horikita gave him a pitiful look.

Seeing the failure of Kiyotaka, Sudou and Akito gave each other a small smirk before loudly punching at one of the logs of the tree, the sound and vibration of which, immediately resulted in most of the Class-D students flinch in reflex as their eyes fell towards Kiyotaka, who sent a grateful gaze towards both of his friends.

"Thank you Akito and Sudou. I really appreciate the help. Anyways, if you girls are done with your childish quarrels, I hate to break your deluded fantasies but I'll be the one to guard the camp at night. And before anyone protests, there is no need for worrying about my health. I am the one who will guard the camp, so go to sleep."

Immediately all the girls in Hirata's harem slumped in despair as if their hearts shattered to pieces while Hirata, although looked guilty, sent Kiyotaka a thankful look for saving him from this chaos.

"B-but Ayanokouji-kun..."

"You can't do this to us!!!"

"Shut up. No buts. Now go to sleep everyone. And Shinohara, I can see you eyeing Hirata's tent. Don't you dare try to sneak inside his tent. I'll be watching you."

Shinohara's eyes immediately widened in shock as she couldn't believe someone saw through her plans this easily, meanwhile Hirata, even with his pleasant smile, sneaked behind Kiyotaka's back feeling fear for his chastity.

'Don't worry Hirata. As your leader as well as your classmate, I'll help you protect your virginity.'

While the other girls were giving Shinohara the stink eye, while the boys were enjoying seeing the blue haired girl who always accused them for no reason, being put in her place, sent their Leader a thumbs up to which he gave one back in return.

The person guilty for this situation slumped inside her tent with a depressed expression while Hirata's harem immediately surrounded her tent with a defensive formation with the intention of not letting Shinohara get out of her tent.

"You idiots as well....Go to your tents and sleep. I'll keep an eye

on Shinohara. You guys don't have to worry at all."

The others reluctantly nodded to his words and soon walked inside their own tent while Hirata sent him another thankful smile.

"Thank you for controlling the chaos, Ayanokouji-kun. I don't think I could've handled it with the way it was escalating."

"Don't worry about that. You should go to sleep as well. Tomorrow will be quite important."

"Yeah.. Hopefully we did well on this exam, even with Koenji-kun retiring because of his injury. Let's hope for the best, shall we?"

"Yup."

"If you feel sleepy at all or feel tired even to a slightest, don't hesitate to call me Ayanokouji-kun. Alright?"

"Thanks for letting me know. If I require any help, you will be the person I'll go to."

With that Hirata sent him one last smile before walking inside his tent while the other students of Class-D bid him goodnight.



Ayanokouji POV

Soon, the others bid their farewell and walked inside their tents. Sudou must be having a field day today since he would have more space to sleep today.

These past 5 days, I could clearly notice that he was uncomfortable in the small, tight space of the tents but oh well....

I'm not the kind of person to sacrifice my comfort for the sake of others. Hopefully Sudou gets a well deserved sleep though. He worked quite hard this week voluntarily.

Speaking of voluntarily, I wonder when will Kushida and Ibuki finally make their move? It's the final day already..Maybe they are going to wait for me when I will be going to renew the spots and catch me on the way...It wouldn't hurt to play along.

I looked around and the whole area was pitch black, except for the fireplace which was igniting a small flame, giving me at least some sort of vision.

Sighing to myself, I laid my head on one of the logs of the trees and started playing a small game of chess with myself all within my mind. I have to get rid of this boredom in at least some way...

.....

.....

.....

.....

Nevermind...I'm bored.

How ironic is that? If it was me from even a year ago...I don't think I would've even noticed that I was bored.

After being surrounded by so many different people with such

different character traits and personalities....surprisingly I'm starting to feel a little lonely all by myself without their shenanigans. Whenever I'm all alone by myself, I just couldn't help but think and marvel at how I was able to withstand that isolation for more than fifteen years, all alone by myself.

I know that this development of mine has the potential to be a massive weakness of mine in the coming future...And there may even be a chance that after these three years, maybe I would not meet these guys again and will be brought back to the White Room to spend who knows how many years in self isolation again...

But, truth be told...I don't want this to be the end. I want to experience a lot of things which I have been deprived off. And there is no better opportunity to experience all this than now...As they say, no matter the past or the future, one should always make the most of their present...

And maybe, someone like me also can experience these things...Like love, friendship, having meaningless chats just for the sake of it without any ulterior motive, and just enjoying life in general.

That man gave me these three years to prove my worth to him...But I'll make the most of these three years and fulfill everything I ever wanted in my life...Because one never knows what their future may bring upon them. I don't want to live with any regrets. I want to live a fulfilled life, no matter how short the time span is. There is only one thing which I aspire in my life.

I don't want to go back to the Whiteroom.

While I was in my inner monologue, a small gust of wind blew throughout the area, blowing the small flame out, as I got up from the log, with the intention of taking out the box of matchsticks which was present in one of the bags of our essential stuff.

While I was on my way, I suddenly heard rustling around one of the girl's tents as I couldn't help but sigh to myself.

'I swear to god, it better not be Shinohara.'

However, all of my worries disappeared when I suddenly saw a small head peeking out of the tent with her glowing red eyes and a beautiful smile on her face.

It was none other than my *girlfriend* Horikita Suzune...

It still feels a little weird to call her that, but I'm sure that I'll soon be comfortable over time.

"Feeling bored?"

She walked towards me with slow, quiet steps, not wanting to wake up any of our classmates as I gave her a short nod while using one of the matchsticks to light up a small flame on the fireplace.

"Kind of. I have nothing to do, and who knows if Shinohara or

Kushida creates a madness by chance if I fall asleep. That would lead to quite a troublesome scenario and all of our hard work of making them feel comfortable under our leadership... It will all go down the drain."

My words led Suzune to slightly chuckle to herself as she sat beside me on the log as she leaned over my shoulders, giving me access to the beautiful smell of her freshly bathed body which felt kind of refreshing, after sharing my tent with sweaty buff dudes 24/7.

However while I was marvelling at the fact of how this girl beside me, still can smell so nice in spite of showering around 2 hours ago... Another part of my mind found itself in another dilemma.

What do I do now?

Suzune now fully leaned herself on my shoulders releasing all of her body weight on mine, while my hands were awkwardly wiggling around above her shoulders, as I was unsure on whether I should grab hold of them or should I just keep it suspended in the air as it is....

Hey, don't judge me. The white room never taught me about what to do and what not to do if I'm in a relationship with someone.

As if she sensed my inner turmoil, with a sigh of content, Suzune grabbed hold of both of my arms and wrapped it around her waist as she now leaned her back on my chest with a satisfied expression on her face.

"You can hold me, you know? There is no need for you to overthink about such things."

"Easy for you to say, Ice Queen. This is my first relationship and quite frankly I have no idea on what to do."

"Well, Mr.I Can Do Everything, just like you this is my first relationship as well. So, I don't see any reason for you to complain. I'm as much a novice in this area as you are.."

"But your case and my case are different. You attended school while I wa-"

"Yeah yeah you were homeschooled throughout your whole childhood because of which you didn't interact with anyone else. Isn't that what you were going to say?"

She looked up at me with a smug look on her face as I couldn't help but find myself shocked at her response.

'How did she know that I was going to say this word by word? This is supposed to be my cheat code to find a way out of every awkward situation...'

"The only reason I guessed it correctly is because this excuse of yours, no matter how correct it is, is getting kind of overused,

Kiyotaka-kun. You need some slight variations to it, or for better results, you should stop spamming this excuse in every single situation."

Wait, how did she know what I was thinking? Did she read my mind?

"No, I am not reading your mind since it's impossible to do so. It's because no matter how unchangeable your expressions are, I am slightly finding himself to observe your small change of expressions correctly and right now you're thoughts are leaking out of your face."

Wow....Her observational skills are...quite accurate and impressive, I must say. She never fails to surprise me.

"Kiyotaka-kun, I'll tell you one thing for one last time. I hope you remember it well, okay?"

Her voice turned a little more serious than before, even though her tone was still soft and mellow, as I slightly placed my head on her shoulders, making her release a smile.

"What is it?"

"I'm new to this whole thing just as you are. So, there are bound to be some awkward situations where we both have no idea on what to do, right?"

"I mean, you are not wrong."

"That's why I am telling you one thing. You don't have to feel awkward around me. If you feel awkward, I'll feel awkward as well. If you want to grab a hold of me, then do so. If you want to hold my hand then do so. If you want to kiss, hug, cuddle with me, then you don't have to worry if I'm uncomfortable or not. If I indeed feel a little scared, I'll be the first person to let you know. As you said, communication is the key."

'Easy for you to say...Although I don't mind taking a lead, I can't just do whatever I please, whenever I want with you.'

However, her next actions made me feel a little surprised. As Suzune quickly turned from my chest and grabbed hold of both of my cheeks as she softly kissed me on the lips with a smirk on her face, after which she licked her lips with a satisfied look.

"You see? Just like how I took the initiative and you didn't mind, you are free to do so as well."

"I'll....keep that in mind."

"Let's just take baby steps and progress in this relationship at whatever pace suits us, shall we? We have all the time in this world."

Without waiting for a response, Suzune immediately grabbed the back of my head and mashed our lips together once again, as I couldn't help but slightly widen my eyes at this sudden change of

demeanour.

'So she is the type of person who likes to take charge when she is in the relationship, huh? That's kind of surprising.....and hot.'

"Say Suzune, is all the preparation ready for tonight's action?"

"Yep. But are you 100% sure that they will do it?"

"I mean if not today, when will they? This is literally the final day of the exam. Are you feeling sleepy?"

"A little. But don't worry, I won't have any problem staying up tonight. I already slept in the afternoon, so I'm not feeling tired in the slightest."

"I see. Say, how should we spend the night without feeling bored? Any ideas?"

"Hmmm....."

Suzune got silent all of a sudden as she appeared to be in deep thought, thinking of a solution to our new problem.

Mission : Cure The Boredom

However after a couple of seconds, a small mischievous smirk seemed to appear on her face as she looked up at me from my chest with a smug expression.

"Wanna play some games?"

'Oh boy...If that doesn't sound menacing, I don't know what does...'

End of Chapter 73

Words : 4197

A couple more chapters left for the end of the Island Exam...At first I thought that I should've just fast forwarded into the plot and finish it as soon as possible, however it seems like I have the tendency to milk everything till it's dry...Wait..That sounds actually kinda sus, nevermind.

If you guys did notice, my upload schedule changed a lot in comparison to when I was writing Season 2 of Man on a Mission. I'm no longer updating daily or once every other day. For which I apologise, but if you look clearly, then you would understand the reason.

1. The Chapters in Season 3 are a lot longer than Season 2. Whereas in S2 most of the chapters were 2500-2800 words, here most of the chapters are around 3500-4000 words. So more words require more time, which slows down my update.

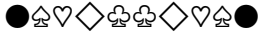
2. I'm 18 Years old. So as one can imagine, I have a lot of pressure with tuitions and all that stuff. And soon my college will start as well, because of which I wouldn't have much free time anymore.

So, if I don't update for a couple days, don't think that I forgot about

this fic or spam 'Update?' on my Dm's or Conversation Board xD.

Anyways, decided to add some fluff before the action, because why not? One could never go wrong with fluff after all.

Anyways hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.



Chapter 74 : Dying

Season 3 : Chapter 18

Time : 4 : 07 a.m.

While most of the students of Class-D were sleeping inside their tents and taking their final rest before knowing the results of the exam, a certain beige haired girl who was the 'lifeline' of the class, quietly got out of her tent with her narrowed eyes surveying every nook and cranny of the now empty camp.

Since it was now dawn, and the sun was slowly rising, a small amount of light illuminated through the canopy of the woods, making the area appear more visible to the eyes without the use of any external sources like fire or torch.

'Seems like he is already gone in his adventure, huh? Perfect timing.'

Kushida Kikyou, the traitor of Class-D smiled to herself before taking quiet, slow steps towards the tent of Koenji Rokusuke, which was being occupied by the spy of Class-C, Ibuki Mio.

'Now all I have to do is wake that Class-C bitch up, and we can start our plan. We can't miss this final chance at any costs.'

However much to her happiness, it seemed that she didn't have to put the extra effort of waking the Class-C girl up as she got out of her tent with a small yawn, before her eyes fell on the now smirking Kushida.

"Let's go meet with Ryuuen. It seems like Ayanokouji is already gone."

"Yeah. We can't miss this chance in the slightest."

"Do you have any idea where he might be when we find him?"

"It's nothing exact, but from Ryuuen's prediction, he would most likely be by the cliff when we catch him. Why do you ask?"

"No...I just wanted to know if this plan is even worth it in the first place."

A slightly nervous look formed on Kushida's face as she started to remember the last incident when she went against her leader.

"Well....you did try to frame me of raping you correct? And I have nothing to gain, but everything to lose. So I thought, if I'm getting in trouble either way, wouldn't it be better if I atleast get something out of it?"

She immediately shuddered at remembering that scene, while Ibuki sensing her nervousness, immediately grabbed both of

Kushida's shoulders in order to snap her out of this state.

"Don't worry about it, Kushida-san. There are multiple hypotheses behind the reason we assessed that Ayanokouji will be on the cliff the last...since he is already injured. He wouldn't want to take any risks, if by chance he gets injured again and fails to renew the other spots, can he?

That's why when he is done with renewing the other spots and goes to the cliff, we will target him and beat him up."

A mad, competitive grin formed on Ibuki's face as the idea of beating the man who saw her panties lingered in her mind.

However it seemed like the only person who found this situation enjoyable was Ibuki herself as Kushida couldn't help but shudder, imagining herself trying to fight the person who threatened to rape her as well as beat her up without breaking a sweat.

"Do you think it's a good idea to engage in a fight with that bastard? I hate to admit it, but I don't want to fight him. He is really scary when he wants to be."

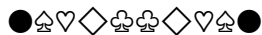
"Don't be too worried. Don't forget the fact that our enemy is not a healthy Ayanokouji. It is an injured Ayanokouji, who is limping on his feet 24/7. That guy even though is very good in combat, he can't defeat all three of us if we hound him together, all with an injured and battered body."

Ibuki looked straight into Kushida's eyes as she was saying all these words, their direct eye contact in the end, made Kushida believe Ibuki's conviction as she now started feeling slightly more confident about this situation.

With a cute hop, Kushida let out a giddy smile as she cupped both of her cheeks with her hands, feeling excited and confident about this endeavour.

"Very well then. Shall we go then?"

"Yes. Let's not waste any more time and meet up with Ryuen."



'....I feel like something is wrong. There was no presence of Kushida or Ibuki in the camp. Did they ditch their plan of stealing my card, this exam?'

Kiyotaka Ayanokouji couldn't help but wonder this to himself, as he was slightly limping around the woods with the goal of renewing the last spot of the exam, which was the cliff.

'This whole thing went way easier than I thought it would. Where was the challenge? Did Ryuen really give up on this exam and went back to the ship along with his other classmates on the third day?'

The leader of Class-D then walked towards the spot of the cliff and renewed it for the final time, as his key card let out a small green glow, indicating the completion of the exchange.

'There we go. It seems like my work is done. If all the special exams are this easy, I would reach Class-A in no time if I'm being honest. I'm quite disappointed that someone like Ryuuen didn't pose a challenge despite all his tough words.'

Kiyotaka then climbed up one of the rocks and set his foot on one of the plateaus of the cliff, before looking down at the ground, covered in complete darkness.

However, immediately he sensed danger as something seemed to be tugging his legs..

'Wait, wha-'

Immediately the thing which was tugging Kiyotaka's legs was pulled with a huge force, causing the Class-D boy to crash on the ground with a huge force.

"Kukukukukukukukukukuku."

The strange laughter of a certain person echoed around the cliff as Kiyotaka couldn't help but release a tired sigh at his current situation.

'I should've never counted someone like Ryuuen out of the equation. Poor judgement on my part.'

Ryuuen's echoed laughter stopped for a second as the leader of Class-D heard three pairs of footsteps walking towards him in the midst of darkness.

'I see....So Kushida came along with the other two....How surprising.'

Soon, all the three students stood in front of the downed Kiyotaka as Ryuuen couldn't help but let out a small smirk of victory.

"Kukuku, where is your usual confidence, Ayanokouji? You look like a scared cat right now...Not gonna fight back?"

Kushida and Ibuki, who were standing behind the tyrant of Class-C, let out chuckles (which were mostly fake) in order to provoke the copper haired boy.

However all they got in response was his usual dull, hollow gaze as Kiyotaka's right hand went towards his left foot, which was being tied by a thick rope.

"Is there any reason to fight back, when one already knows that they are in a losing position? I have no card up against my sleeve."

With a 'painful' wince, he started massaging his left foot in a slow pace all the while maintaining eye contact with his three foes, who were smirking to themselves.

"Why are you here Kushida? Why did you think it is a good idea for you to join hands with Ryuuen of all people?"

Kiyotaka's usual monotone voice sounded a little different than usual as he was saying those words. He sounded a little more annoyed, betrayed as well as sad because of this sudden treachery.

His sudden change of expression apparently added fuel to

Kushida's entertainment as a cruel thin smirk formed on her face as she gave him a reply with her usual cheery voice.

"Why do you sound so annoyed with it, Ayanokouji-kun? Shouldn't a genius like you anticipated this move of mine? After all, in order to get rid of my biggest mortal enemy, I need to seek the help of the devil."

Her hands sneaked up on Ryuen's shoulders as she ended her words, as if she was feeling him up, which resulted in Ryuen chuckling to himself before one of his hands sneaked towards Kushida's waist as he tightened his grip over her, making her let out a small "-eep".

"Kukukuku it seems like your game is over for now, Ayanokouji. Hand over the key card now."

"Why do you think that I am the leader? I could've been baiting everyone all this time around, you know?"

"Well, that indeed was a possibility. But unfortunately for you, all three of us clearly saw the key card glow when you renewed the spot. So all of our doubts washed away. Now, tell me the location of the key card, Ayanokouji."

"You can find it on your own. What's the point of asking me th-"

Kiyotaka couldn't finish his sentence as he let out a hiss of pain as the Tyrant of Class immediately stepped on his injured left foot with quite some force.

"Oh? It looks like you were indeed not lying about your injury. Good to know. Now let's have some fun, shall we?"

Without waiting for any response, Ryuen started repeatedly stomping on the injured foot of the Leader of Class-D who, despite being under incredible pain, seemed to somehow keep his composure.

"Kukukukuku there is no need of keeping your voice down, Ayanokouji. Let it all out for us. We would like to hear your wails of despair and pain."

However in spite of his words, it seemed like Kiyotaka would not budge from his place, which made Ryuen release a small sigh of displeasure as he moved his foot away from Kiyotaka with a bored look in his eyes.

"How disappointing. The usual high and almighty Ayanokouji Kiyotaka turned into a puny ant who is getting bullied. Kukuku. Ibuki, please entertain our guest, while I continue my job."

"Alright 'boss'."

"Kukukukuku."

With that Ryuen once again started stomping on Kiyotaka's legs as Ibuki walked in front of the copper haired boy and pulled his hair to make them come face to face to each other, as the blue

haired girl looked right into his eyes, with a competitive smirk on her face.

"No hard feelings alright. I'm just following the boss's orders."

"Your breath stinks. Go brush your teeth, black panties."

"You son of a bitch."

Immediately her smirk disappeared as Ibuki stood up and kicked Kiyotaka's chest with quite a big force, causing a loud sound to reverberate through the woods.

Without letting him respond, this time her kick impacted on his head instead of his chest, immediately resulting in Kiyotaka falling down on the ground, as Ibuki now started stomping all over his downed body, while Ryuuen was now hitting his already injured knee with a small log with a maniacal grin on his face.

"How was that, bitch? "

Ibuki immediately turned Kiyotaka around from his sideways position and laid him on his back, before she stood over his face. Ibuki immediately jumped up and crashed both of her feet on Kiyotaka's face with quite a bit of force, as the face of the leader of Class-D now turned muddy with scars and wounds all over it.

"Kukukuku none of this would've happened if you gave up on the key card by yourself, Ayanokouji. But alas, you were being way too stubborn for your own good. Everything could've been settled much more peacefully, if it weren't for you, Ayanokouji. You are the cause for your own demise."

"There is nothing more I can do than accept the situation I'm in right now. This whole situation stems from me underestimating these three students and because of my callousness, now it's not only just me but also Class-D who are paying the consequences."

"Kukukuuku cat got your tongue, Ayanokouji? You've been way too quiet this whole time. Oh wait, I know the perfect way to make you talk. You get it too as well, right Ibuki?"

Both Ryuuen and Ibuki's eyes went towards Kiyotaka's beige haired classmate, who was observing Kiyotaka's injured and immobile body with quite the sadistic and satisfied look on her face. The contrast in her expression than usual made the Class-C girl stare at Kushida uncomfortably, while Ryuuen was laughing madly at the sight in front of him, finding the entire situation hilarious, before he walked towards the beige haired girl and tapped her on the shoulder to snap her out of her momentary amusement.

"Kukuku, Kushida....."

"Huh?!"

"It's your turn now. Do whatever you please with that bastard in order to make him surrender and make him give us the key-card by

his own volition."

"But...you guys can just take the card from him by yourselves right now, can't you? What's the point of involving me in your mess?"

Clicking his tongue in annoyance, Ryueen grabbed Kushida by the waist, yet again, and started whispering his reasons in her ear with a 'cruel' smile on his face.

"You don't get it, do you? Our main point was never to get the key card from Ayanokouji. I just want to see his unlimited pride shattered to pieces and make him accept his defeat. Don't you think that resigned, surrendered and submissive look on his usual haughty and unbothered face would look quite sexy? Kukukuku."

And just like that, as if a switch had been turned on, Kushida's initial 'concerned' and 'worried' expression disappeared from her face as she started taking slow and steady steps towards the injured Ayanokouji, who just looked at her with a tired look on his face.

Ibuki immediately moved away from Kiyotaka's body, not before kicking him on his face one last time, as she lightly grabbed Kushida's shoulder with her left hand as both the girls made direct eye contact with one another.

"He has no fight in him left. Do whatever you please with him, Kushida-san."

"Of course, I will take good care of Ayanokouji-kun....Don't worry about it, Ibuki-san."

Once again, her cheerful high pitched voice which was masking her inner intentions and desires behind these sweet nothings of her words, which made Ibuki Mio once again a little more uncomfortable, staying close to the beige haired girl. So she gave her a small nod and stood beside Ryueen, who was looking at the sight in front of him with an anticipated and excited grin.

"You look quite excited for this, Ryueen. Didn't you get your fair share of amusement beating Ayanokouji up?"

"Kukukuukuku that was just the starters Ibuki, now we will get to the main course. So of course, I'm feeling way too excited about this."

While the two Class-C students engaged themselves in a small conversation, Kushida stood right in front of Kiyotaka with a 'worried' look on her face, as she sat on her knees and cupped the brown haired boy's face with a saddened expression.

"Are you alright, Ayanokouji-kun?"

"....."

However in spite of her 'caring' words, the wide grin that she was on her face, made Kiyotaka sigh to himself as he decided to not give her a response.

"Hmm, not going to respond to me as well? Well, I got a solution for that then."

The beige haired girl immediately yanked Kiyotaka's head by the hair and started pulling him towards the cliff of the plateau, making Ibuki's eyes widen in fear as she couldn't believe what she was seeing.

"Hey?! What the hell is that crazy bitch doing?! This was never in our plan!!"

"Kukuku, are you feeling scared for Ayanokouji?! Are you finally accepting the fact that you have a crush on him?"

"Shut the fuck up, Ryuen. There is a time and place for everything. I wouldn't have joined you guys if I knew that this bitch is planning to murder Ayanokouji."

'It doesn't matter if I find him annoying or not...This was not in our plan. I have to save Ayanokouji.'

However, just before she could run towards Kushida and Ayanokouji, Ryueen grabbed hold of Ibuki's body making her click her tongue in annoyance.

"Hold it, Ibuki. Everything is still in control. Don't be impulsive and waste all our effort now."

"Tch."

While the blue haired girl was forcefully kept in her place by Ryuen, Kushida on the other hand made Kiyotaka forcefully look at the dark abyss from the cliff of the plateau.

"I don't know if that Horikita bitch informed you this, but she also had to face this kind of situation once, by yours truly. So, if you don't want to slip from the top of the cliff, I want you to not only give me the key card by yourself but also resign from this institution the moment we finish our vacation. What do you say, Ayanokouji-kun? quite a good deal, right?"

"Go fuck yourself, Kushida. I would rather kill myself than follow the orders of a two-faced bitch like you."

Immediately Kiyotaka's face was harshly slapped by the beige haired girl who stared back at him with dull, hollow eyes and a stoic look on her face.

"You got quite some nerve for still trying to antagonise me, Ayanokouji-kun. Although I respect your guts, don't you think there is a time and place for everything?"

Kushida stood behind Kiyotaka, one hand still grabbing hold of his hair while the other hand tightened her hold on his shirt as she was looking at his back with a dead expression on her face.

"So....why don't you be a good boy and follow my orders, Kiyotaka-kun? You do understand that, one push from me and you're dead, right?!"

"Try your worst, bitch. I'm not scared of a clown like you."

Kushida's face turned red in anger as she for one last time smiled cheerfully at Kiyotaka before grabbing hold of both of his shoulders, readying herself to push the boy to his death.

"Then rest in peace, Ayanokouji-ku-----"

Not even letting her finish her sentence, Kiyotaka grabbed both the hands of Kushida and threw her from the cliff instead, making the beige haired girl widen her eyes.

"....."

'Wait what?'

This was not planned to happen....

I'm gonna die? B-but he was the person who was meant to die...How did he get his strength back? Ibuki-san said that he was fully weakened.....

Will this truly be the end?.....just like this?'

However much to her surprise, just before she could fall into the dark abyss, her hand was forcefully grabbed by none other than the person she was trying to murder, Ayanokouji Kiyotaka... himself..

However what was shocking to Kushida was...the initial tired and resigned look in Kiyotaka's eyes was nowhere to be seen as it was now replaced by a cold and calculated glare.

"Kukukukukukukukukukukukukuku."

From the other side, the laughter of Ryuen reverberated throughout the woods as he looked way too excited at this sudden change of situation.

Kushida...who was way too scared for her own life, tried to crack a small smile while both of her eyes were filled with tears.

"A-ayano---"

"Kushida."

"Y-yes?!"

"Are you scared of dying?"

In spite of Kiyotaka's cold voice, Kushida still didn't budge in fear only for her survival.

"Y-yes p-please save me Ayanokouji-kun?! I p-promise I would never try to do anything to you again...So please... I don't want to die yet..."

It seemed like Kushida's pleadings seemed to connect with Kiyotaka as he nodded to himself all the while his grip over Kushida's grip tightened, giving the beige haired girl a small array of hope.

"I see....And?"

"H-huh?!"

Kiyotaka's hands slowly started to lose its grip as Kushida looked at the boy who was sending her a cold glare with a horrified

expression on her face.

"And why should I care if you die or not?"

End of Chapter 74

Words : 4324

I bet it was quite painful to go through the whole chapter seeing Ayanokouji 'suffer' like that...However don't worry, the reward will be much bigger in comparison to the suffering lmao. To be honest, I felt very entertained making Kiyotaka get attacked like that...although I'm not planning to do it again, anytime soon xD.

Shoutout to my boi GiKaRa_ for helping me in proof reading the chapter...I was not confident in it at first, but with his assurance, here it is. So, let's get our boy to 500 followers, since he is quite close. 🤗

Anyways....500K on Ayanokouji Doesn't Hold Back.....

A huge achievement not gonna lie, since it's my first time getting such a huge number of reads, but I still appreciate it.

Though not gonna lie, it feels kind of undeserved, since the book is not even that good...

But, hey I'll take any W that comes my way xD.

Anyways hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya..

○♣♥◇♣♣◇♥♠○

Chapter 75 : Two Birds With One Stone

Season 3 : Chapter 19

Ayanokouji POV

It's been around 6 minutes, ever since I started taking the beating from Ryuen and Ibuki. Thankfully Ryuen noticed my gesture that time and shoved the big rock inside my pants, through my legs, before he smacked the covered area with the log.

I was conflicted on whether he would notice it amidst the darkness or not...But I felt a little glad that despite there being clear animosity between us two, we were able to work together without much complications, this one time.

After Ibuki was done with her 'beating' , I heard the footsteps of Kushida slowly approaching my downed figure, as I looked back at her with a 'tired' and 'resigned' gaze, as my eyes started looking a bit more droopy than usual.

Ibuki walked towards my fellow beige haired classmate and said something in her ears, which made Kushida grin ear to ear as she soon got on her knees making direct eye contact with me, trying to sweet talk me into agreeing to her words.

The contrast in her sweet, mellow tone in which she was speaking and the clear malicious intentions lying behind her words, and that evil grin on her face made me feel a little annoyed if I'm being honest, however that gesture of hers made me reminisce my time back to the Whiteroom where hundreds of 'subjects' tried to do the exact same thing to me, in order to either sneakily 'stab me in the back' or take advantage of my weakness. However unfortunately for them, every single one of them had to face the same result every single time.

Failure.

Misfiring.

Frustration.

Loss.

Destruction of their Self-Esteem.

Being deemed Worthless.

Collapsing.

Punishment.

Death.

This was the exact reason why I didn't feel shocked when I came

to know about this other side of Kushida...

Since I met people who are exactly like her but are 100 times more dangerous and strong and unassailable, in comparison to someone like Kushida, whose only redeeming qualities were her looks, her body and her acting skills, which gave her the popularity she wanted.

Anyways, I was lost in my monologue, I let Kushida drag me towards the cliff of the plateau, as I couldn't help but congratulate myself. I was aware of Kushida's obsession with heights ever since I met her on the rooftop.

Even if she used the excuse that she couldn't vent in any other place because of the presence of other people, this doesn't change the fact that she could easily vent to herself inside her own dorm room, since they are soundproof.

And there are many other times I noticed Kushida looking from the top of a structure down the abyss with eyes filled with curiosity, fascination and mild excitement.

The fact that she threw Suzune from the window and looked down at her falling figure with a satisfied look on her face, gave me enough evidence that if by chance Kushida wants to get rid of me, she would rather throw me off a cliff or a window and watch my body get obliterated and pulverized from the impact, instead of using mild and sneaky tactics like killing me in my sleep or putting poison in my food or drinks.

And as a generous and giving leader, I can't help but help her further indulge herself in her fantasies by sacrificing myself for her entertainment. I truly am the best Leader, aren't I?

Kushida forcefully shoved my head towards the abyss of darkness all the while chuckling to herself at the thought of having someone like me be under her complete misery, as if I was the puppet and she was the puppeteer who controls me.

'Alas, you got it completely wrong, Kushida. It has always been the other way around.'

"I don't know if that Horikita bitch informed you this, but she also had to face this kind of situation once, by yours truly.

So, if you don't want to slip from the top of the cliff, I want you to not only give me the key card by yourself but also resign from this institution the moment we finish our vacation. What do you say, Ayanokouji-kun? quite a good deal, right?"

"Go fuck yourself, Kushida. I would rather kill myself than follow the orders of a two-faced bitch like you."

She immediately slapped my face with all of her might, as her face was red in anger as I couldn't help but sigh to myself, feeling second hand embarrassment for this pitiful classmate of mine.

'Even a mosquito bite hurts more than her slap. I feel sorry for you, Kushida.'

"Why don't you be a good boy and follow my orders, Kiyotaka-kun? You do understand that, one push from me and you're dead, right?!"

Her grip over my hair gradually increased more and more as I started anticipating for the moment she would finally lose her cool. And I knew the perfect way to do it.

"Try your worst, bitch. I'm not scared of a clown like you."

Someone like Kushida, was a bitch by heart. She always knew how much of a scoundrel she was, and she always tried to hide it with her other persona, masking her real ugly self with the portrait of perfection and beauty. So when someone like me, who gives her the reality-check that she deserves, there is no doubt that she absolutely hates it. And just as I predicted, it seemed like that was the tipping point for Kushida's patience as I gradually started feeling more pressure on my back as if I was being pushed from behind.

'Bingo.'

"Then rest in peace, Ayanokouji-ku-----"

Before she could complete her sentence, I finally decided to put an end to the weak and injured facade of mine and immediately grabbed both of her hands before judo slamming the beige haired girl from the top off the cliff.

I noticed first hand how the initial satisfied and excited expression of Kushida turned into morbid fear as she finally realised how the tables have been turned against her. Alas for her, she didn't deserve such an early death and find peace in the afterlife. I needed her to be alive. That's why just before she could fall further down, I grabbed her hand with mine, immediately giving her a small array of hope for a small chance of her survival.

"Kukukukukukukuuukuku."

It seems like Ryuuen was not able to stay in character any longer and started chuckling to himself quite loudly, finding this situation quite entertaining.

"Kushida."

"Y-yes?!"

"Are you scared of dying?"

Tears welled in her eyes as her cold, husky tone from before immediately turned back to her 'cheery' high pitched squeal, as she looked at me with puppy eyes, thinking that I will actually fall for her.

'Just how delusional can a person get?'

"Y-yes p-please save me Ayanokouji-kun?! I p-promise I would

never try to do anything to you ever again...So please... I don't want to die yet..."

"I see....And?"

I intentionally started losing my grip over her hand, something which was well noticed by her as she looked at my right hand in horror while flailing her left hand which were suspended in the air, wildly trying to grab a hold of it.

"H-huh?!"

"And why should I care if you die or not?"

I forcefully lost my grip as Kushida let out a squeal of horror while Ryuuen started madly laughing at the scene.

Again just like before, I grabbed her hand yet again before she could fall down as she finally realised that now her life was at my mercy and that the situation completely turned against her.

Ryuuen finally walked towards me while putting his hands inside his pocket and having a small grin on his face.

"Looks like everything went exactly as planned, Ayanokouji. The bitch finally realised that her position is in the bottom of everyone's foot, kukukukuku."

Kushida gasped to herself and looked at Ryuuen with a look of betrayal and pain. However, all she received from the magenta haired boy was a small pebble crashing right onto her forehead with quite some force, immediately bruising that area, making her tear up.

"Now as for our deal, Ayanokouji....Give me the names of the Leaders of Class-B and Class-A."

"Chihiro Shiranami and Yahiko Totsuka respectively. I don't have any concrete proof but I'm 100 percent sure about my decisions."

"At least tell me how you found out and maybe then I'll believe you."

"Suzune found Class-B chatting about their class matters obliviously and that's how she found out about Chihiro, whereas for Class-A, let's say that I have a certain birdie who fed me knowledge about them."

"Kukukukuku a spy huh?! Very well. I'll believe in you this one time, but you should realise that from this point onwards , our co-operation is done as well."

"I understand. Thanks to both you and Ibuki... Because of your help, it was much easier to make the rat fall into our trap, isn't that right, Kushida?"

"Kukukukukukuku she is speechless. That pitiful look on her face looks quite sexy, doesn't it, Ayanokouji?"

"I'm in a relationship at the moment. So I would not comment on that matter."

"Relationship huh? Are you dating Suzune?"

"Never took you as someone interested in gossip but yeah, you are correct."

"Kukukuku so you are a fan of medium instead of big, huh? I feel you, holding the big ones feel rather tiring after a couple of minutes kuku."

"I'm not a boob person anyways...I don't know if it sounds odd, but I prefer thighs more."

"A man of culture, I see. Ibuki over there, has some nice thighs... wanna have some fun with her? She wouldn't mind kukuku."

"Nah, I'm good."

In order to further annoy Kushida and make her lose patience even more, both Ryuuen and I engaged ourselves in meaningless conversations, while my grip over Kushida's hand gradually started increasing to the point where I wouldn't be surprised if they were bruised.

"Anyways then, it seems like our work is done here. Do whatever you like with Kushida. See ya Ayanokouji."

"Yeah."

With that Ryuuen started walking away from the tip of the cliff as it looked like Kushida had a lot of questions within her mind. Of course I didn't care about whatever she had to say, but I wanted to realise her situation so I decided to answer some of her questions.

"You have something to say, don't you Kushida? Go ahead."

"H-how are you still moving so freely? Didn't Ryuuen beat your injured leg and make it even worse?"

"Oh? Never thought my attempted murderer would be this worried about me. As for your question, look at this."

I slowly picked up my leg in the air as I took out the huge rock, which made Kushida widen her eyes in shock and disbelief.

Yup that's right....You were never in control of this situation, girl. I was...

"B-but what about the time Ibuki constantly stomped and kicked you on your face and body?"

Hearing her question, I couldn't help but chuckle to myself in my mind.

"Have you ever watched WWE or any other wrestling shows, Kushida?"

"H-huh no? Aren't they fake?"

"That's the point. The whole situation was fake in the first place. All those chopping sounds you heard from Ibuki's 'attacks' connecting on my body? I was just slapping my own thighs and chest in order to create that sound."

If I could've, I would've copied Ryuuen's laugh while looking at

the hysterical expression Kushida was making on her face.

"Now...Kushida tell me, how does it feel to be in this position yourself?"

"H-huh?! W-what do you mean?"

Trying to play ignorant even till the end, I see. Well, not like I care much.

"What I mean is...having the person you trusted in this endeavour, betray you in the end..... Thinking that you had an advantage but it was all a trap from the start... And even me judo slamming you from the cliff, doesn't it remind you of the time you did the exact same thing to Suzune from the window? Kind of reminiscing right?"

And there it was....The face that I wanted to see, ever since I heard about her atrocities. The face of pure **terror** and **helplessness**. That look on Kushida's face was just so entertaining to look at, I knew that I shouldn't enjoy it all by myself.

I looked towards the side of one of the bushes and let out a small smirk, before lightly whistling to myself.

"It's your time now...Come over here, Suzune."

"....."

And soon, walking out the bush was none other than my girlfriend. Her eyes had a dull look as her face was so stoic that she might've been confused as my twin sister.

However the thing that further increased Kushida's terror and fear even more?

It was the fact that Suzune was holding Ibuki's camera in her hands, making Kushida realise the fact that Suzune has been recording the whole thing ever since the start.

"When did you stop the recording?"

"I stopped at the moment you countered her push and threw her from the cliff. I'll start recording again, when you pull her back up. Is it okay?"

"It's perfect. Right Kushida?"

"....."

Not a single word came out of her mouth as my beige haired classmate looked to her side quietly, most probably making calculations about all the future scenarios in her mind.

Now that all the things I wanted worked out....I can finally say, everything went all according to plan.

Now with this recording, we have a huge advantage over Kushida and we can do whatever we want with her....But also, poor Class-C will also have to catch the strays, since their 2 members 'injured' me and will be disqualified from this exam...

After all, I doubt that boomers like Chabashira-sensei and

Mashima-Sensei would realise that the attacks were fake from the start.

Truly, Two Birds with One Stone.

End of Chapter 75

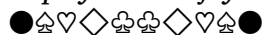
Words : 3265

I guess this answers the queries that a lot of you had about why Kiyotaka made himself look 'weak' xD.

Anyways it's I think my third time I wrote a whole Ayanokouji POV chapter...Kind of shocking if you tell me...Only 3 chapters out of 75 is just fully from Kiyotaka's point of view.

I told you all, the rewards are greater than the suffering....

Hope you all enjoyed the chapter. See ya.



Chapter 76 : Cut

Season 3 : Chapter 20

Ayanokouji POV

"Pick her back up, Ayanokouji-kun. I'll start the recording. Try to act as genuine as possible, okay?"

"Your wish is my command. Right Kushida? You will follow everything that Suzune says to you right now right? Just like a fucking slave."

Immediately her face soured as Kushida gritted her teeth in annoyance in anger, however she restrained to speak up or blurt out any profanities herself, since she had no idea whether Suzune kept the camera going or not.

Although I still felt a little odd about cursing at someone, I'm not going to lie, it did feel kind of satisfying to blurt that word out of my mouth because of which, I actually feel kind of light now. Is this the reason all the hot-headed people I've met love to curse so much? Just to keep their mind sane? Who knows?

Anyways it seems like I was once again dwelling in my thoughts as the sound of Horikita tapping her shoes on the muddy floor snapped me out of my thoughts. As soon as our eyes met, she gave me an annoyed look and a small glare, as I could clearly notice a small nerve pop out of her forehead in anger.

"Would you mind monologuing to yourself some other time, Kiyotaka-kun? We don't have much time before the sun rises out, you know. We only have about one and a half hour left. So let's get this over with as soon as possible."

Curse my mind, Suzune. Not me. I don't tell my mind to always think about unnecessary things of my own volition. It does on it's own. The brain truly is such a fascina-

"You are doing it once again, Kiyotaka-kun."

Suzune lightly threw a mud rock on my head as I let out a small 'Ow' unconsciously even if it didn't hurt at all in the slightest. Not wanting to further aggravate this Ice Demon any further, just like a nice, loyal husb- my bad boyfriend, I looked back at Kushida and tried my hardest to crack a smile [p.s. It failed miserably] before pushing Kushida off the cliff again.

"Ahhhhhhh!!!!!!!"

Immediately her horrified squeals reverberated throughout the

entire area, as Suzune closed both of her ears with a satisfied look on her face. And just before Kushida actually falls any further and dies, just like previous time, I grabbed hold of her and tried to console this poor, scared girl whose life is under my mercy.

"Don't worry Kushida I got you, okay?"

"mhmm"

"Alright 'gently' pull her back now, Kiyotaka-kun. I'll start the camera. You know what to do, right?"

"Yes Suzune-sensei. Leave it all to me."

Because of my light teasing, I noticed her cheeks turning a little red before she excused herself and started recording, as I pulled back Kushida as gently and comfortably as I can, and soon enveloped herself in a small, tight hug before raising my voice.

"Are you good, Kushida? You didn't get injured, correct?"

"U-uhmm"

"**Cut.** She looks like she doesn't have any idea what to say as a response."

Hearing my girlfriend's words I couldn't help but sigh to myself before looking at my two faced acquaintance with a gaze filled with mock disgust.

"How disappointing, right? Her only plus point is her acting skills and she can't even put them to use in such situations. I can't believe we truly thought a worthless, useless, feeble, fragile, weak girl could be a threat to us in the future.

She truly depicts herself as the perfect example of a Class-D student, doesn't she? And by that I don't mean defective ... I mean a Dick riding bitch."

Even if my trash talking skills were not on par to that of Ryuen or Koenji, I wouldn't lie talking like this and insulting someone right to their face without taking consideration of how they feel, truly feels enjoyable and entertaining. I can see now why Ryuen loves doing this.

In spite of my provocation, it seemed like Kushida had nothing left to say. Her pride was even though not destroyed, it was dormant after all the L's she received in just a couple of minutes. However both me and Suzune weren't satisfied with just this. We needed her to be completely **broken**.

And just like I always preached. The best way to defeat someone and completely destroy their inner will is by applying **fear**.

I looked back at Kushida and gave her a small pitied look, which I had no doubt that she absolutely hated with every sense of her being.

"Why don't you put your acting skills to use, Kushida? And maybe then this situation will end as quickly as possible."

All she did was meekly nod at my words as I once again threw her off the cliff before picking herself back up again.

"Are you alright Kushida? You didn't hurt yourself, correct?"

"**Cut.** You sound way too concerned for someone who literally tried to kill you a couple of minutes ago, Kiyotaka-kun."

And just like that, once again she was thrown off the cliff.

"**Cut.**"

"Too stoic."

"**Cut.**"

"Kushida-san's voice is very low."

"**Cut.**"

"Kiyotaka-kun, speak up your dialogues instead of monologuing it in your mind."

"**Cut.**"

"Kiyotaka-kun this is your attempted murderer, not your best friend or girlfriend that you would have to fake a sob."

"**Cut.**"

"**Cut.**"

"**Cut.**"

"**Cut.**"

"**Cut.**"

"**Cut.**"

"**Cut.**"

By the end of it, it seems like Suzune finally got the end result as she looked quite satisfied with herself.

Meanwhile, Kushida..... Yeah, her condition was not that good. Because of constantly being thrown off the cliff and being picked back up, it seemed like her body finally reached it's limit as she started vomiting all over the floor, while tears started streaming down her face.

Suzune walked towards me and handed me a water bottle, which I placed in front of my beige haired classmate before tapping her on

the shoulders, immediately making her look back at me with a horrified and pleading gaze, as she grabbed hold of both of my foot while sitting in a 'dogeza' position.

"Please!!! No more!!! Please don't throw me off the cliff anymore! I'm gonna die!! It feels like I am losing my mind!!!!!!"

I slowly grabbed Kushida's chin and made her look at me, directly in the eye, as her usual bright eyes were a shell of it's former self as they turned dull, hollow and lifeless.

"Perfect. That's exactly what I wanted, Kushida."

A small gasp unconsciously came out of her throat before she slowly started chuckling to herself helplessly...

"I played right into your hands, huh? I'm such an absolute idiot."

"Don't worry about that. Your breath reeks of vomit, right now. Have some water."

Without any further resistance, Kushida took the bottle of water from my hands and started gulping on it as if her life depended on it.

My raven haired girlfriend immediately let out a small smirk at that before walking towards us and slowly bending down, whispering into Kushida's ear.

"Let me tell you a fun fact, Kushida-san. While we were having dinner tonight, Yamauchi-kun was drinking a bottle of water. But apparently one of the fish bones got stuck in his throat as he had to forcefully spit all of the water and his food in the bottle. It was quite a disgusting sight, not gonna lie Wait Kiyotaka-kun, am I the only one who could smell a slight stench of rotten fish?"

Immediately both I and Suzune walked back a little as Kushida immediately spat out the water before cursing everyone to death and wailing to herself, not before spewing another round of vomit all over the floor. I looked at my raven haired girlfriend who was sadistically grinning to herself.

"Say Suzune, do you think her vomiting everywhere counts as pollution?"

"Oh dear. Now that you say it, indeed does, doesn't it? How do we take care of this situation, Kiyotaka-kun?"

Her fake concern behind her voice while she was still sadistically smirking at the sight of the downed Kushida made me realise the amount of pent up rage and anger that this girl was concealing all this time. If I don't keep it in control, it might be way too dangerous.

I would let her do whatever she wants with Kushida, but once she crosses the line, I would stop her ... since it's not Suzune's job to be the **monster** of the story as long as someone like **me** still exists.

Suzune immediately took out four water bottles from her bag

before taking slow, steady steps towards Kushida. Her eyes were hollow and devoid of any emotion, beneath which she was concealing all her hatred and distaste.

Kushida, who heard Suzune's footsteps approaching her, immediately crawled back in fear and nervousness, as her voice started wavering and shaking.

"W-what do you want, Horikita-san?"

"You made quite a mess of this place, Kushida-san. We might lose S-Points because of this. Who will take responsibility for that?"

Suzune immediately let out her signature ice cold glare as Kushida shifted in her place before replying to her words in nervousness.

"D-don't worry, Horikita-san. I-I'll clean this as quickly as possible."

"Kushida immediately started pouring the water from Yamauchi's bottle, draining all her vomit down the cliff as Suzune clicked her tongue in annoyance and disgust before kicking Kushida right on her face.

"You look quite dirty and contaminated yourself. I'm afraid that the presence of you will make us lose points with the reason being pollution. Why don't I get rid of you as well?"

"P-please Anything but that. I beg you, Horikita-san."

Kushida tried to grab her feet as well, but all she got in result was another kick right to her jaw.

"Don't you dare touch me with that nasty condition of yours."

Suzune's eyes then turned towards me as they slightly narrowed at me, before she looked towards the camera, which was on the ground.

"Kiyotaka-kun, it seems like after all this time Kushida-san's real personality is finally radiating from her physical body. Absolutely nasty with nothing credible. Why don't you snap a picture as a souvenir?"

"P-please stop, Horikita-san. I can't take this anymore."

"And? Did you care about my wellbeing when you hurled all of your friends into bullying me? Did you care about me when you threw me off the window while sadistically laughing to yourself? Did you care about me when you heard that I was admitted to the hospital with two of my ribs, one of my hands, one of my legs and a couple of my facial bones were broken?"

You didn't, right? So why should I care about someone like you as well?"

Suzune slowly crept up to Kushida and slightly whispered in her ear.

"Listen to me, quite clearly Kushida-san. I'm not as nice and

gullible as you thought I was. I hold grudges against everyone who wronged me. I'm nothing more than a petty, vengeful bitch.

So all of your niceties won't work on me anymore. And the fact that you not only threatened Kiyotaka-kun of sexually assaulting you but you also tried to kill him, yourself. Give me one reason as to why I should spare a criminal like you?"

In a fit of rage, Suzune threw Kushida on the floor and started stomping on her just like Ibuki was doing on me, however this time around it was fully real.

I noticed a small pool of blood coming out of the side of Kushida's lips, most probably she bit the side of it or bit her tongue. However it seemed that Suzune didn't notice it as she continuously slamming Kushida's face on the ground repeatedly, nearly making the beige haired girl fall unconscious.

I noticed that both Kushida and Suzune were very close to the tip of the cliff, and Suzune lost all of her calmness and was radiating an extremely hostile atmosphere, which made me slightly worry that she might do something, which she would later regret.

"Cat got your tongue, Kushida-san? Why so silent now? You had a lot to say while you were torturing Kiyotaka-kun didn't you? What happened to all that bravado, Huh?!"

Suzune immediately grabbed Kushida by the collars and started shaking the now meek and scared girl violently while demanding answers from her.

Immediately I started feeling that something wrong might happen at any given second, so I immediately ran towards the both of them and got a tight grip over the shoulders of my fuming girlfriend.

"Stop Suzune I don't think you need to do anything more. You got your point across, didn't you? Let go of Kushida."

"....."

Suzune looked back at me with slightly narrowed eyes and a slightly hostile glare, as if daring me to let go of her shoulders.

"Don't touch me at the moment, Kiyotaka-kun. I am busy right now."

"I will touch you and you can't do anything about it. Leave Kushida right now or you will kill her."

"And why does that matter huh?! She tried to kill both of us ... All I want to do is return the favour."

"So you have no problem lowering yourself to the status of a rotten girl like Kushida just to get your revenge? I expected better from someone like you. Do you think your brother will agree to this?"

Immediately one of her hands which was grabbing on to Kushida's collars was thrown towards me with quite some force

behind it as I grabbed the left hand of Suzune with which she tried to backhand me, as I couldn't help but sigh to myself.

Overwhelming rage seemed to be clouding her sense of rationalism. I'm sorry but in order to save both you and Kushida, I need to do this. I hope you forgive me for this.

Without waiting for a second, I gave the now resisting Horikita Suzune a tight slap on the face, immediately making both her and Kushida freeze in shock.

'I'm sorry. There was no other choice.'

Without any further words, Suzune dropped the now shaking Kushida who immediately cowered in fear as my girlfriend grabbed her cheek in shock.

"Take your clothes off and clean yourself with the water. They are fresh from the river, so there is no need for you to worry about it. Also I assume that you already know that you will have to drop out after we go back to school, correct?"

"Huh?!"

"I mean, it's your choice. Either you drop out of your own volition or I leak all the recordings about everything that happened tonight to everyone. Choose your own hell."

All she did was silently nod to my words and slowly start undressing as I looked away from the sight in front of me and walked towards the tree under which Suzune was sitting. As soon as I sat beside her, I looked at her face which seemed to be petrified and disgusted of

"I can't believe it. I nearly killed someone. What will nii-san think of me? What will Kiyotaka-kun think about me? He experienced first hand that I tried to kill Kushida-san

It's over for me. I wouldn't be surprised if he complains to the teachers about me as well. Everything is over now."

Suzune, who seemed to be fully tunnel-visioned, didn't seem to realise my presence as she started sobbing to herself, the sight of which for some reason made my heart slightly ache just like the time when I had my conversation with Chabashira-Sensei.

A small tinge of guilt twisted my insides as this whole thing happened because I involved Suzune in the first place. There was no need for me to do that, but I did it and there is no going back from that.

I gave her a tight hug as her dam immediately broke loose as she started sobbing on my shoulders while constantly muttering "I'm sorry."

"There is no need for you to be sorry, Suzune. It was in the heat of the moment and you were not thinking straight. You were thrown off a building by this girl, so I completely understand your

frustrations."

"B-but I nearly k-killed he-"

"That's right. You **nearly** killed her, but you didn't. I was there to stop you right? Rage clouded your sense of rationalism and you were not thinking about the consequences. And that's ok.

I'll help you with that, there's no need for you to beat yourself over a mistake, got it? After we go back to school, Kushida will be no more. She will be gone. Both of us will start anew, got it?"

"I'm so sorry, Kiyotaka-kun."

"Apology accepted. Got it?"

"mhmm."

"I apologise for slapping you as well. Does it hurt?"

"A little, but it's alright. It was necessary, so you don't have to apologise."

Still, I needed to make up for my mishaps. I read an article where it said that kissing your girlfriend helps a lot in making the situation a lot better. But should I?

While I was in a state of apprehension myself, the words that Suzune told me a couple hours ago immediately resurfaced back to my mind.

"If you want to grab a hold of me, then do so. If you want to hold my hand then do so. If you want to kiss, hug, cuddle with me, then you don't have to worry if I'm uncomfortable or not. If I indeed feel a little scared, I'll be the first person to let you know. As you said, communication is the key."

I slowly grabbed Suzune's chin and gave her a slight kiss on the lips, immediately making her blush for a second before she grabbed the back of my head and tightened our hold smashing our lips even further to which I once again slightly widened my eyes at the sudden assertiveness this girl gets in these kinds of situations.

Even though the feeling of kissing the person you're closest to feels euphoric and lovely, unfortunately unlike your heart, the body doesn't feel the shame.

Since both of us needed to take a breath as our lungs were now empty of Oxygen, both of us reluctantly parted way as a small trail of saliva connected our lips, which was immediately grabbed by Suzune by her index finger before she licked it off her finger a little seductively which made me feel slightly different than usual.

'I guess this kind of makes her feel better.'

End of Chapter 76

Words : 4017

Another pretty long chapter xD. Not gonna lie, I wanted to torture Kushida a lot more than I personally did, but while writing that I kind of felt like a really bad person not gonna lie AHHAHAHAHA. I don't know

how these other authors do this stuff. It's incredible. My respect for Checkmate's author grew so much while writing this chapter xD.

Anyways, hope you guys enjoyed it. Hopefully it was not underwhelming and it was satisfying

See ya.



Chapter 77 : Rumble

Season 3 : Chapter 21

After the whole situation with Kushida, all three of the students were walking back to their camp in utter silence, not uttering a single word. Kiyotaka and Horikita made the beige haired girl walk a little in front of them so that she doesn't do any shady stuff, to which she mindlessly obliged.

"Kiyotaka-kun, what should we really do with Kushida-san? Will she really going to be dropping out of the school of her own choice?"

"I mean, it's a given right? Kushida is utterly terrified of us and what we might do to her at any given second. She is feeling fear even going back to the Class-D camp within our presence.

I don't think she could manage to be in the same class as the both of us anymore. It was either to expel us both , so that she could start anew or it was to drop out of the school, so that she could save her reputation."

"I see ... Say Kiyotaka-kun, was it really the right way to teach Kushida-san a lesson? Was there no other way?"

Kiyotaka immediately stopped in his tracks and gave the girl beside him a slight glance before sighing to himself.

"Listen to me, Suzune."

"What is it?"

Kiyotaka gave Horikita a slight pat in the back, acknowledging her problems before patting her on the hand, as both of their paces slightly slowed down a little.

"One should never feel empathy for their enemies, you got it? When she threw you off the building, do you think Kushida felt guilty about it? So why should we feel guilty if we traumatised her in exchange for her trying to kill me in the same way as well?

I'm not saying that feeling sympathy for someone is not ok... But this is your as well as my attempted murderer. She is not your 'used to be best friend' Kushida Kikyou.

People like her will take advantage of this weakness of yours and soon screw you over. So, keep your chin up and make your heart as tough as a rock."

"It will take a little time, but I'll try."

"That answer is all I needed to hear. As long as you're willing to

try, then there would be no problems. I'm pretty sure, you know just how gruesome, abhorrent and disastrous this world can be when it wants to be, we can't survive this environment if we don't adapt ourselves and be immune to that sort of stuff as well.

As the quote says : **"You either die a hero, or you live long enough to be called the villain."**

We need to accept the 'bad' and 'heinous' parts of ourselves and improvise on it to keep moving further, otherwise we would break down in the middle of the path, unable to handle the pressure."

"....."

"....."

"I understand. The way you are saying all these things though, it's like you committed something heinous yourselves. Should I be cautious of you, Creepytaka-kun?"

"I think the one who should be cautious is me, since you've been getting way too frisky with me these last couple of days, Dommykita."

"I bet you like it when I take the lead, Freakykouji Kiyobaka-kun, don't you?"

"Who knows?"

Horikita immediately smirked in mock mischief as the leader of Class-D shook his head slightly in amusement before enveloping her in a side hug, to which his raven haired girlfriend reciprocated without any resistance.

'You have no idea about the atrocities I committed. Maybe one day when everything is over, I might share it with you. I pray to god that you will be by my side till that destined day comes and we will not be separated.'

Even though I don't know what this path will take us together, even though I don't feel the love you feel for me, I'll protect this small feeling of joy that is bubbling in my heart with everything I can and hopefully one day I'll be the person to willingly say I love you.'

●♡◇♣♣◇♡●

Ayanokouji POV

Day 7, Time : 8 : 03 a.m.

We are finally at the last day of the exam. After all the hardships and the obstacles of the wilderness, all of my classmates looked way too eager and enthused to leave this island for once and for all.

I mean, it's not that I don't get their frustrations, but I am habituated with things much worse than a so-called 'survival exam'. So this felt like a vacation to me, not gonna lie.

Anyways, this morning has been quite a hassle to be honest. Seeing the stark difference of Kushida's demeanour this morning with her usual one, made a lot of people confused and curious,

however like the lovely actor she is, Kushida somehow through some weird tricks up her sleeve, managed to convince them that she was just feeling a little sick.

Finally, all the students of our class, Class-D assembled in an organised line as we were waiting for the arrival of our homeroom teacher Chabashira-sensei, to take our final roll call of the exam.

While I was standing quietly with Suzune in front of me, I suddenly felt a warm breath of air coming in contact with my ear, as one of my friends Chiaki Matsushita leaned over me to speak to the both of us.

"Hey, it's kinda surprising to see the ever punctual Chabashira-sensei to be three minutes late huh? Do you think something happened?"

"Hmm, I don't think so Chiaki-san. Maybe, since it's the final day, the teachers are a lot more busy today in comparison to the other days, that's why I guess, sensei has been a little late. What do you think, Kiyotaka-kun?"

Suzune immediately passed the ball onto me as if her socialising battery turned back to 0 percent after just one conversation. Chiaki looked at me with inquisitive eyes, to which I couldn't help but sigh, realising that I have to come up with at least some sort of answer.

"I don't know, maybe she sprained her ankle or something."

Immediately the back of my head was whacked by the two demons who glared at me with annoyance. Hey, I tried to lighten up the thick atmosphere, I didn't need you spawns of the devil to lighten up the screws in my head.

Speaking of the devil, just when we started talking about her, Chabashira-sensei soon arrived at the camp with slightly ragged breaths. Suzune immediately gave her a bottle of water, to which our teacher received it with a small smile before taking a small sip of it.

"Alright, Class-D. First of all, I apologise for coming in four minutes late. All of us teachers have a lot of work on their plate at the moment, so it's quite a troublesome scenario. I hope you guys understand."

This whole situation was kind of funny and ironic to me, that this time it was a teacher who was apologising and making excuses about why she arrived late in the class.

Hirata, who was trying to maintain peace among all the three other lines which were organised, gave Chabashira-sensei a small, reassuring smile in return, trying to ease her worries.

"It's alright Sensei. You don't need to worry too much. We understand your situation."

With a couple of nods of agreement from my classmates, sensei sighed to herself before starting our roll call.

After she was done, my classmates finally left their line and joined back to their usual cliques and groups, engaging in conversation with them, as Sensei walked towards me, immediately grabbing our attention.

"Ayanokouji, it's time for the final part of the exam. The Leader Guessing. I'm assuming you are the leader, correct?"

You say that Sensei, but that big smirk on your face is betraying all the words that come out of your mouth. You are truly such a troublesome human being.

As soon as Chabashira-sensei approached me, all my classmates' attention immediately were drawn to me as I released a small sigh, already anticipating a headache, whereas Sensei and Suzune's smirk got wider at seeing my troubled expression, my girlfriend truly is a sadist.

What are you guys? Mother and daughter? How are you both so similar and different at the same time? It's kind of baffling if I'm being honest.

"Sensei if you want to call the Leader of the Class, then I'm the wrong guy you picked."

However, since this time all the attention was on me I let out a small smirk on my own as I finally revealed the real main character behind this whole scenario.

The others except Suzune immediately stared at me with confused expression, as my eyes went towards the big tree in the corner of the camp, where red met my golden brown as the person I was looking at, gave me a small smirk in exchange.

"Isn't that right, **Koenji**?"

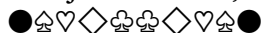
"Hahahaha, it seems like everything went all according to plan Kiyoy boy, colour me impressed."

Not having to hide this truth any further, Chabashira-sensei openly started chuckling to herself as everyone looked like their eyes were going to nearly pop out of their sockets.

To add further fuel into the flame, my 'perfect' classmate looked towards the girls and gave them a small wink and flipped his bangs with a refreshing expression on his face, before pouring a whole bottle of water over his body, literally showering in front of everybody without any hint of shame.

"How do you feel after finally breathing the same air that I'm breathing after seven whole days ladies? Oh why am I even asking? It's absolutely perfect just like me, am I right? Ha Ha ha ha."

And just like that, a huge uproar was created in the Class-D camp.



Time : 11 : 50 a.m.

All the students from the four classes assembled on the beach on the western side, from where we were dropped on the island. Since we were the 'lowest' of the classes, we arrived last, being on the receiving end of many mocking glares and chuckles from students of different classes, the main batch being Class-A.

My hot headed classmates like Sudou and Shinohara looked really pissed at their behaviour, but immediately calmed themselves down as I looked back at them for a second.

'Let them laugh all they want, because by the end of it, we will be the ones laughing at them.'

However, amongst all of the mocking gazes, one of them stood out to me. It was none other than the Leader of Class-A himself, Katsuragi Kohei aka Johnny Sins.

He was looking at Koenji as if he saw a ghost, a reaction which didn't go unnoticed by the narcissist himself, who immediately started flexing his so-called 'godly' body in front of all the girls, making some of them look away while others ogled at well trained figure.

It seems like Ryuuen got another person to fall right along with him as well. Well played, my comrade of the past.

Speaking of Ryuuen, his eyes were slightly widened in disbelief at the sight of Koenji as well, before he released a small sigh and walked towards my direction with a small grin on his face.

All of my classmates immediately looked alarmed but soon calmed down as I slightly raised my hand gesturing to them to lose their guard.

Not wanting others to hear our conversation, Ryuuen slightly leaned towards me and whispered in my ear.

"Kukukukuku I knew that the moment I retracted our alliance, both of us would be in a stalemate. But I guess, you had one ace up your sleeve as well, huh? How did you do it Ayanokouji? I clearly saw you renewing the spot back then."

"You can buy anything with points, Ryuuen. This simple thing applied in this exam as well. You already knew that, didn't you?"

I immediately took out Ibuki's camera and held it in front of him, making him chuckle in amusement.

"Kukukuku, so this is where it was. Ibuki was making my life hell the moment she lost this camera. You better take responsibility for this, Ayanokouji."

"Why are you trying to play the role of a matchmaker and are trying to make me and Ibuki a couple?"

"Kukuku, who knows? Back to the main topic. So, I presume you bought a duplicate key card huh?"

"Exactly. It was not that difficult to crack that code, was it?"

"Sigh, Definitely not. In our battle, this was a complete loss for me. But overall, I achieved my goal and what I wanted to do, so I'm feeling quite satisfied kukuku. Just look at baldy's face and tell me you're not having fun as well?"

Looking towards the direction Ryuen was pointing at, I saw Katsuragi glaring at my Class-C acquaintance with a look of betrayal. Just like Ryuen said, it was definitely a satisfying sight to look at.

My bad for exploiting you for my own pleasure, Mr. Johnny Sins.

"Well anyways, have fun enjoying this victory, Ayanokouji. We still have three years to go. Hope our journey will be as fun as this kukuku."

"You sound like you're about to confess to me. I apologise, but I already have a girlfriend."

"Real funny, real funny."

With a small pat of acknowledgment, Ryuen started walking away as I looked at his retreating figure with a look filled with curiosity and confusion.

Ryuen is a person who might give you the impression of a typical delinquent, the first time you see him. But in my eyes, he is miles different than them. From what I'm seeing, he is the type of person who enjoys all kinds of challenges and strives in overcoming all the possible hurdles in front of him.

Looking back at my thoughts, I couldn't help but marvel to myself.

Given my description, doesn't he represent a Shounen Protagonist more than those Class-B guys?



"Good afternoon, everyone. Over this past week, we, your teachers, have closely watched your efforts in this special test. There were some students who took on the challenge honestly and head-on. There were some who devised schemes to tackle the test with creativity. Many things have happened, but overall, the test results were splendid. Good work."

Mashima-Sensei's voice, even though it sounded as strict and cold as usual, a lot of students were still appalled and relieved to hear such praise from him.

"Well then, to get straight to the point. I would like to announce the results of the special exam."

Immediately the whole atmosphere quieted down as everyone, including the teachers waited in anticipation. Other than the Government Officials who were the ones who judged the result, literally none of us knew the results ... so it was quite an unnerving

feeling, I won't lie.

"We will not accept any questions regarding the test results, no exceptions. We would like you to accept the results you have been given, analyse them, and use them to help you for the next special exam. It is what it is. Don't fret yourselves over these results. I implore you to accept reality as it is."

Mashima-Sensei then picked up the card in his hands, which held the fruits of our labour in the special exam. There was pin drop silence throughout the area, as everyone looked at him with bated breaths.

"Now we will start the rankings.

The lowest class, in fourth place is,

Class C : 0 Points "

Immediately all the students of Class-A, who were standing behind Katsuragi started laughing at Ryuuen hysterically, despite their bald headed leader telling them not to do such a thing. However the magenta haired boy took all of the mockery with a small smirk, as he shrugged in indifference.

"Now, in third place,

Class A : 22 Points "

And just like that, all their previous mocking smirks turned into horrified glares as they couldn't believe what they were hearing. And this time? All the students who were under their affront started making fun of the so-called 'Elites' who lowered their heads in disbelief and shame.

Amongst all those students, a certain snake gave me a small thumbs up as I gave him one of my own. And just like that, Class-A under Katsuragi is walking on the path of destruction. It went just like you wanted Sakayanagi. Congratulations.

"Now, in second place,

Class B : 62 Points "

Ichinose and her classmates neither looked satisfied nor dissatisfied. They received the result with small, nervous smiles ... since it didn't exactly go as well as they were hoping for.

"Wait ... If Class-B got 2nd place, does that mean?!"

Katsuragi's dog who tried to push me from the ship back then, blurted out in shock as the other Class-A students widened their eyes in shock and despair, as Mashima-Sensei himself slightly widened his eyes at the result.

"And, in first place,

Class D : 393 Points "

.... Now, let the rumble begin, I guess.

End of Chapter 77

Class Ranking by the End of this Exam :

Class A : $1004 + 22 = 1026$

Class B : $663 + 62 = 725$

Class C : $492 + 0 = 492$

Class D : $94 + 393 = 487$

Words : 3935

Before anyone comments on it, yes ... Kiyotaka decided not to disqualify Class-C , because their presence resulted in Class-A and B lose a lot of points. So, don't worry, I didn't miss any plot point xD.

Finally the end of the Deserted Island Exam, which means ... this marks the end of Season 3 of A Man On A Mission.

Sigh, this was quite the arc wasn't it? Despite this season's main point being the island exam, a lot of things happened on the side as well, which were just as important as the exam itself.

Ayanokouji meeting Sakayanagi for the first time, Ayanokouji and Koenji teaming up, The 'Confession' , Kushida playing in the palms of Ayanokouji, Horikita getting her well deserved revenge, and the ultimate victory for Class-D.

Of course the aftermath of this exam is still going to be discussed and how everything took place and all, but this felt like the perfect way to end the season.

And as one knows, the end of one season means the start of another.

I'll start updating Season 4 of A Man on A Mission soon, after taking a small break, since I was on a roll these last few days.

Here is the cover for Season 4. Do let me know what you guys think of it :

Give me your opinions on the cover :)

Anyways, hope you guys enjoyed the chapter as well as Season 3. Meet you all next season. See ya ~



Chapter 78 : Judgement

Season 4 : Chapter 1

"And in first place,

Class D : 393 points."

Everyone's eyes widened in shock and disbelief including the Class-D students himself. Chabashira Sae, the homeroom teacher of Class-D, who was nervously biting on one of her pens while anticipating the result, dropped it in disbelief before looking towards the source of her disbelief with widened, gleaming eyes.

Similarly to her, all the class Leaders looked at Kiyotaka Ayanokouji in a different light than before as this shocking result cemented the fact that there is not a single class who is a pushover in the conquest to reaching Class-A and the class led by Ayanokouji may be their biggest opponents one day.

"Holy shit we did it."

"We got first place with such a huge margin."

"LET'S GOOOOO."

"WE DID IT!!!!!"

The immediately silent Class-D rose in uproar after the sense of realisation started hitting in as all of them started jumping and cheering in joy, a couple of them going as far as even hugging their leader, who uncomfortably hugged them back, not knowing what to do in certain situations.

".....How did they get so much points while we got only 40?"

"What is the meaning of this, Katsuragi-san?"

"We trusted you, didn't we?"

"How could you do us like that?"

The gloating side of Class-A who were mocking all the students beneath their class, finally had reality bite them in their ass, as they realised that the massive lead of Class Points that they had over other classes, shrunk a lot in just one exam.

However, instead of taking such a stepback like a man and accepting it and improvising on it, the Class-A students took the cheap route and instead started blaming their representative Katsuragi Kohei for all this mess.

"Oi Why are you blaming him? It's not like any of you did anything remarkable anyway?"

"Shut up dog. No one wants to speak with you."

"Keep that mouth shut. We don't want any rabies."

"Kiyotaka Ayanokouji should've killed you on the ship."

Katsuragi's loyal dog, Yahiko Tatsuya tried to defend his leader, however all he got in response was animosity send towards his way, immediately making him shut up.

"Kukukukuku, looks like your class is in quite the shambles, Katsuragi."

"Ryuuen."

"Now now, don't glare at me like that. Both of us got outsmarted by the wonderful mastermind of Class-D. It's not like it's my fault, is it? Kukuku."

All Katsuragi could do was sigh at his words, because he knew that what Ryuuen was saying was in fact absolutely true. Just like Class-A, Class-C also had to suffer the damage Ayanokouji Kiyotaka had caused them. Both of the classes caught strays of his attack, so as a leader himself, Katsuragi could see from where Ryuuen is coming from.

"By the way, just because both of us suffered this loss, it doesn't mean that the contract is terminated. You know that right?"

"....."

With a small smirk on his face, Ryuuen casually dropped the private fact about their contract in front of all the Class-A students who immediately looked towards their leader with confusion and suspicion.

"What contract?"

"What is he talking about?"

"You were involved with Ryuuen behind the scenes?"

"Why didn't you let us know?"

"I will explain everything to you guys when we reach the ship. Please wait till now."

"Kukukukuku. Don't think you can run away from paying me back, Johnny boy. Maybe if you didn't cater to everyone's needs and used the S-Points Class-C shared with you carefully, then maybe you could've gotten much more points."

Ryuuen then slowly grabbed Katsuragi's shoulders before leaning into his ear.

"But what's done is done right? You wanted to make your class happy, but in the end no matter how much you tried to create a peaceful atmosphere, these so called 'Elites' turned their back on you, without sparing a single second. Kukukuku it truly is quite a sad story isn't it?"

With that, Ryuuen walked away from a now mildly irritated Katsuragi Kohei who once again had to face the criticisms of his own class, this time though, it was about his deal with the Tyrant of

Class-C himself.



Time, 2 : 34 p.m.

Speaking of classmates and criticism however, the leader of Class-D got quite the opposite reception in comparison to Katsuragi. All of his classmates showered him praises and words filled with gratitude, as his worst critics finally decided to accept him as their actual Leader, since the results never lie.

Once they got back inside the ship, Hirata and his harem invited Kiyotaka to a lunch, however he swiftly rejected their offer and walked towards a certain person who was trying to get as little attention as she possibly could.

As soon as Kiyotaka touched her shoulders in order to get her attention, the girl in question immediately flinched in reflex before composing herself and weakly 'smiling' at Kiyotaka.

"Good afternoon Ayanokouji-kun. Congratulations for such splendid results."

"Leave the formal stuff. I need to talk to you about some matters. I believe you don't have a problem with it, correct?"

All he got in response was a small sigh followed by a weak laugh, as Kushida looked down at her feet.

"It's not like I have a choice, do I? My entire social life is under yours and Horikita-san's mercy at the moment. So do whatever you please."

"Very well. Wait a second, I'll call someone."

Receiving a small nod in response, Kiyotaka took out his mobile and typed in a certain number before placing it near his ear.

"... Hello man of the hour. Finally got some time to pay any attention towards me?"

"Shut up. You know very well how much I hate troublesome stuff like those."

From the other side of the call, a small chuckle was heard as Kiyotaka heard the sound of clothes ruffling on the bed.

"So? Did you call me for a certain reason? Or were you starving for my attention? Not like I blame you though ... I know I am amazing after all."

"It seems like you are in quite a good mood. Anyways as much as you were not incorrect with your last guess, I do have a certain reason behind calling you. Are you free at the moment?"

"Hmm, I just took my shower and am changing my clothes right now. Don't get any perverted thoughts by the way, or I will beseech the power of my compass upon you."

"Not that I was thinking but anyways, think whatever you want."

"Yeah I'll be free in 3-4 minutes."

"Good. Is Airi and Haruka in the same room with you?"

"No. Both of them left for lunch, and I think they will be hanging out with Maya-san and Chiaki-san, I think. Why?"

"Good to know. I am coming to your room along with Kushida. You don't mind, right?"

"....."

The line on the other side immediately got silent for a second, before Kiyotaka heard his girlfriend sigh in displeasure as she gave him a response.

"I knew that something like that might happen, as soon as we came back. Very well, it's quite an important matter so we need to deal with it as soon as possible. Come along with Kushida-san and make sure that she doesn't do anything suspicious or I will never forgive you, got it?"

"Alright alright. I'll see you in around 2-3 minutes then."

Without giving him any further response, Horikita immediately cut the call making Kiyotaka take a deep breath, before looking towards a nervous Kushida.

"You heard her. Let's not waste any more time and go."

"A-alright."

Without any further conversation, Kiyotaka started walking towards Suzune's hotel room, followed by a slightly anxious Kushida.

"Suzune, we are here. Can we come in?"

"Just a second please."

Small, hurried footsteps were audible to the ears of both of the students followed by the sound of the door opening as Horikita Suzune peeked out from it. As soon as her eyes met Kiyotaka's, she let out a small, pleasant smile.

However the smile immediately disappeared and was then replaced with an annoyed scowl as soon as she registered the presence of Kushida Kikyō.

The beige haired girl released a small, nervous smile trying to hide the sense of anxiety, which was further brewing inside her heart.

"H-hello H-horikita-san, good afternoon."

However, she didn't receive any response to her greeting as Horikita walked inside of the room, not even sparing a single glance at her arch-nemesis, who looked down at her feet feeling uncomfortable because of the silent atmosphere.

Kiyotaka soon walked inside the room followed by Kushida as all three of them sat on the bed with mildly serious expressions on their faces.

"So? For what purpose did you bring Kushida-san here, Kiyotaka-kun?"

"I wanted to discuss about Kushida's future in this school."

Once again, his words formed an uncomfortable silence inside the room as Horikita released a deep breath that she was holding for quite a long time, whereas the girl in question looked like she wanted to say something, however, because of the lack of courage or confidence, she couldn't bring out the words out of her mouth. This behavior of her was noticed by both the Leader and the Co-Leader of Class-D, who looked at each other for a second.

"You know Kushida? At the moment you are our main topic. So you can speak whatever is on your mind without feeling any fear. What do you want to do now? Speak whatever is on your mind. We will listen."

Once again, just like earlier, his words were met with silence for a couple of seconds, before Kushida seemed to make up her mind as she clinched and un-clinched both of her fists, before looking at Ayanokouji with teary eyes.

"I-I'll do whatever you guys want me to do. I can be your servant and even a slave if you want me to, Ayanokouji-kun. Just please, don't expel me or make me drop out.

Just like Horikita-san, I also wanted to forget about my past and start a new life from zero, once again. But seeing her on the bus, made me remember all of our times when we spent time together and when I bullied her. I realised that I can't have my ideal life as long as she was present in this school. That's why I decided that I needed to expel her from this school, no matter what it takes."

"Then what was your purpose in joining hands with Ryuen just to expel me?"

"That night you not only saw the other side of me, but also you had a strong hold over my secret, that you might've released whenever you wanted to. I couldn't take any more chances and let you do whatever you please. So when Ibuki-san came up to me with the proposal of sabotaging you, I accepted it without taking any time to double think."

As she finished her words, Kushida mirthlessly started chuckling to herself while wiping her teary eyes with her handkerchief.

"And look what it did to me. Now instead of expelling you or Horikita-san, my future is at the palm of both of your hands. What an absolute defeat."

Clicking her tongue in annoyance, Horikita immediately grabbed Kushida's hair and yanked it tightly, forcing the beige haired girl to look up. As soon as both of their eyes met each other, Horikita coldly glared at Kushida, while her grip over Kushida's hair gradually increased more and more, making her wince in response.

"If you think that we would feel sympathy for you, just because

you are crying and you feel guilty, then you are completely wrong and delusional, Kushida-san. Both me and Kiyotaka-kun feel no empathy for a disgusting, unpleasant, deplorable treacherous, piece of shit like you. Please pardon my language, Kiyotaka-kun."

"I don't mind. Say whatever is on your mind."

"Thanks for excusing my unpleasant words."

Without wasting any second, Horikita yanked Kushida's hair even tightly and smashed it on her bed, while clicking her tongue in disgust.

"I-I'm sorry for everything. I-I'll never try anything against you two ever again."

"That doesn't make everything you did wrong excusable, just because you feel guilty after being caught red-handed. Does it Kushida?"

"N-no, but please tell me what should I do, so that I don't have to drop out. I'll do anything you want, just please don't get rid of me from this school. I have nowhere to go, my family i-"

"We don't care, Kushida-san. As I said before, sob stories won't work against us. And don't lie about the poor condition of your family. They literally have a stable and flourishing business going on. I don't know who you are trying to fool with such cheap lies."

Horikita's words led to Kushida falling silent yet again, as the other two people in the room just looked at one another and released a small sigh of annoyance in sync. However, after spending a couple of seconds in an uncomfortable silence, Kiyotaka suddenly tapped the thigh of his girlfriend, making her look towards him in confusion.

"What is it, Kiyotaka-kun?"

"I have a better plan than getting rid of her, and I feel like you might like it."

Horikita immediately grimaced at the thought of not getting rid of her attempted murderer, however still thought about listening to her boyfriend's idea, since quite frankly he never gives any weak proposal.

"Sure, what is it?"

Kushida also looked towards Kiyotaka and Horikita with a look filled with anxiety and curiosity, anticipating what the next words of the Leader of Class-D might be.

"Hm, Kushida's main intention was to get rid of you ever since joining the school and seeing you, correct?"

"Go on."

"And she tried to lower both of our reputations for quite some time, but hilariously failed in every single one of her attempts, certainly this event being her biggest failure."

"Correct."

"And no matter how much she acts like she is guilty, or how much she regrets her actions, there's no doubt that Kushida still hates the both of us from the core of her heart. Isn't that right, my dear classmate?"

"N-no, N-not at all!"

"Yeah, you are fooling no one with that atrocious acting of yours. Try better."

"You are drifting away from the topic, Kiyotaka-kun. Continue."

"So I thought, killing Kushida or making her drop out this early seems kind of a light punishment, for someone who is a legit criminal running scot-free."

Horikita nodded to his words, while Kushida started frantically looking at the faces of both of her puppeteers, anticipating their next words.

"And, what do you propose Kiyotaka-kun?"

"I thought to myself, what could be a punishment which would not be as physical as last time, but would make Kushida hate her life. And it seems like I got the perfect answer. As a person, who hates another to death, how humiliating would it be that every single action of theirs will be monitored by their nemesis at every single time? They can't do this, they can't do that, without the permission of her enemy, and she has to follow all of her orders like a loyal dog.

I think you are getting the gist at what I'm trying to say, aren't you?"

All Horikita did was nod at his words with a small smirk of excitement as her red eyes started gleaming in satisfaction.

"Kushida, I'll give you your judgement.

We are not going to expel you or make you drop out from this class, only on one condition. Starting from this moment onwards till the rest of our high-school life, you will be the **slave of Horikita Suzune, the person you absolutely hate with a certified passion**. It's quite a good deal, don't you think?"

End of Chapter 78

Words : 3605

First Chapter of Season 4 To be honest, this might be a tricky season to write, since quite frankly I'm not a huge fan of the Zodiac Exam arc. It's pretty boring in my opinion, so I would include some new storylines with some different characters in the background, and the Kei event will of course take place ...

And I might include a little more fluff and slice of life stuff in this season, since there's not much plot to begin with and I already did the KiyKei stuff in my early chapters.

Anyways hope you guys enjoyed the first chapter of Season 4. See ya.



Chapter 79 : Slave

Season 4 : Chapter 2

"S-slave?!"

Kushida's eyes immediately widened in shock and disbelief as Horikita let out a sly smirk before laying her head on Kiyotaka's shoulders, looking down at the girl with a sadistic expression on her face.

"What? Not a fan of it? I think it's a pretty good deal in my opinion. I mean, if you don't want to agree, then go and say your final goodbyes to your dear classmates."

"W-wait w-wait I'll do it. I'll be Horikita-san's slave. I'll follow whatever she wants me to do. Just don't kick me out of this school. I beg you."

With gritted teeth, Kushida once again found herself in a 'dogeza' position as Kiyotaka got up from Suzune's bed and sat on his knees in front of Kushida, as he made the girl look up at him.

"Wanna know a fun fact, Kushida? "

"W-what is it?"

"It was never my intention to expel you or make you drop out, in the first place."

"H-huh? / Huh?"

This time, both Suzune and Kushida looked at him with confused eyes, wanting him to elaborate the words he said just now.

"I mean, if I wanted to get rid of you, I would have rather done it when our Class was at 0 CP, wouldn't I? I even had the evidence to do that, by the way. Wanna see the proof?"

Without waiting for a response, Kiyotaka took out his mobile phone and started playing a certain recording which was around a month old.

"Then I'll tell everyone you raped me."

"That's a false accusation, you know? No one will believe you."

"No, I don't think it would be a false accusation."

"I got your fingertips in my shirt. One word and you are done for. I'm going to leave this uniform in my room without washing it. If you betray me, I'll hand it over to the police. Co-operate with me and I'll not do anything to harm you...Am I clear?"

"You think I would like this? Don't joke with me. I would rather

have sex with Yamauchi, than do this with you."

With a moderately satisfied look on his face, Kiyotaka turned off his mobile device as Kushida was looking at him with a horrified look, almost as if her entire life had turned upside down.

Much like her, Horikita didn't also seem to expect this as her mouth widened a little forming an ' °o° ' for a second, before she shut her mouth and just stared at Kiyotaka with a solicitous expression on her face.

Releasing a satisfied hum, Kiyotaka put the phone inside his pocket before imitating the smug expression Satou tries to portray while teasing him.

[P.s. It failed horrendously]

"Now, I think you realise it right? If I wanted to, I could have expelled you when we had 0 Class Points. No loss, no gain. Perfectly Balanced, as it should be."

"Y-you recorded that entire scenario?"

"Yup. Recorded it and Edited it to my liking to turn the entire situation into my favour. I've been taking some online courses about editing and stuff, and Professor is also giving me some computer lessons. So, I know quite some nitbits about these kinds of stuff. Isn't that fascinating?"

All Kushida could do was chuckle in despair as tears fell down from her eyes on to the mattress, slightly wetting the area.

"I can't believe it. All this time, I was literally in the palm of your hands. All this time, I've remained ignorant and I thought that I actually had the ability and the power to get rid of you, and here I am, down on my feet begging for both of your forgiveness. How humiliating is this?"

"Not as humiliating as being the loyal dog of the person you absolutely hate the most, in my opinion."

"F-fuck. I was literally in the palm of your hands for all this time, huh?!"

"Exactly. But you wanna know why I am not expelling you? Because I can see the potential and the use of you, Kushida. You are someone who can be extremely strong if developed well enough, but alas, I won't do it since you will turn against us by then."

Horikita, who was fiddling with her phone immediately started chuckling at his words, before getting off of her bed and sitting next to her boyfriend.

"That's correct, Kushida-san. As much as I hate to disagree, if we have someone like you on our side, Class-D will ascend to Class-A in no time."

'And Kiyotaka-kun will finally get the freedom he desires and deserves.'

"That's why, ally yourself with us. As long as you serve under me, your secret and anything you do will be kept safe. But if you refuse, then be prepared to say Goodbye to your high school life. **Choose your poison.**"

"....."

Kushida remained quiet for some seconds, as both Kiyotaka and Suzune looked at her with an uninterested gaze, not really caring about whatever she says, since her future has already been decided.

"V-very w-well. I'll serve under you, Horikita-san."

With gritted teeth, Kushida said those words as it looked like she was having quite some difficulty mouthing those words out. This led to Horikita immediately smugly smirking to herself.

"Sama."

"Huh?!"

"Refer to me as Horikita-sama. Or you might face 'punishment' for your insolence, got that?"

With a very sweet, melodic voice Horikita laced out her words, with utter venom immediately making both her classmates shudder. One in fear, while the other in curiosity and surprise at her sudden change of tone.

'Should I call this version Devilkita or Mistresskita? Both of them sound like a good nickname, I won't lie.'

"I asked you a question, Kushida. You got that?"

Horikita apparently changed the way she speaks to people as she now started calling Kushida just by her name, instead of using her usual honorifics like 'Kushida-san'.

With an irritated expression, Kushida tried to glare at her master, however all she received was a quick kick thrown right at her face, as Horikita clicked her tongue in disgust.

"Don't you dare look at me like that. Don't ever forget that you will never be anything except my pathetic slave. Got that?"

"....."

Horikita got up from her bed and yanked the hair of Kushida before tightly slapping it without any remorse, making the beige haired girl tear up from enduring all the pain.

"I s a i d G o t t h a t ?"

"Y-yes Horikita-sama."

With a tired and defeated voice, Kushida weakly responded to her as Horikita let out another sweet smile, before patting Kushida's head, treating her just like a dog.

"Good job. Stay like this, and we will get along very well. **Got that?**"

"Yes Horikita-sama."

"Never try to trick me into any troublesome situations and always

obey me like the dog you are. **Got that?**"

".....Yes."

"Very well. Now Kushida, I would like to spend some alone time with my boyfriend and I don't want to see your dirty existence around my peripheral vision. So would you excuse yourself and kindly get out?"

As if she was a dog, Horikita shoo'ed the girl away with a nonchalant expression on her face, as Kushida obediently followed her orders.

"S-sure, I-I apologise for the inconvenience."

"Perfectly said, looks like you got used to your position pretty quickly huh? As expected of a rotten scumbag like you. Things like you deep down really know your position, it seems. Bottom of the barrel."

Kushida took all those harsh words coming towards her way with a small, weak smile on her face, before she kindly excused herself, leaving the couple all alone by themselves.

As soon as the door was closed, the raven haired girl immediately jumped on her boyfriend making both of them fall on the bed on top of one another.

"Looks like you really got yourself into character huh? Not gonna lie, I was quite surprised when you started acting so haughty, Mistresskita."

With a small sigh, Kiyotaka started patting the back of the girl who was lying on top of him, while sneakily moving away his lower part of the body, so that it doesn't touch some forbidden place by mistake.

"Hehe, what kind of name is that? I was just finding the situation really enjoyable. Looks like I got too carried away with my roleplay huh?"

With a smile on her face, Horikita started to ruffle Kiyotaka's silky hair unconsciously, as she released all of her body weight on him.

"It was perfect in my opinion. The way you instilled the fear inside Kushida was quite a sight to behold."

"You think so? I felt so empowered not gonna lie. Is this what those toxic feminist feel like after critising men for no reason?"

"Don't know about that. However, I wouldn't compare you with whatever the people you are talking about."

"I'm still pretty angry at you, you know?"

"Hmm, why so?"

"I understand that the Kushida situation was important, but you didn't even bother to say hello and just skipped towards the main topic. Is this how someone treats their Girlfriend?"

With a small uncharacteristic pout on her face, Horikita dropped her face on Kiyotaka's neck, tickling his neck with her breathing.

"This is such an uncomfortable position, I'm in. However, I don't want to move her away as well. Curse you love, how dare you make me rethink my life choices like this?"

"Oi that tickles, stop it."

"Now now, does it really?"

Horikita looked back at him with a mischievous smile on her face, immediately making the Leader of Class-D feel the slightest bit of fear at what he was about to experience.

And the next thing his girlfriend did was definitely one of the weirdest things Kiyotaka ever experienced.

With a quick speed, Horikita immediately dropped her head on his neck once again, before licking a small part of it, as she lightly bit it, immediately making Kiyotaka jerk at the suddenness.

"What in the actual hell?"

Horikita immediately got up from his body and sat on his pelvis with a small grimace on her face.

"Ew, Salty. Did you not shower, Kiyotaka-kun? Your body reeks of sweat."

"Well my bad for not knowing that my girlfriend is a crazy human being, who will start licking and biting my neck like an absolute cannibal out of nowhere. You are out of your mind, Crazykita."

"That's your punishment for bringing Kushida inside my room and forcing me to tolerate her presence."

"But I literally asked for your permission."

"Touche~"

With a nonchalant expression on her face, Horikita looked back at her phone while unconsciously licking her lips, tasting Kiyotaka's sweat yet again, making her grimace yet another time.

The Leader of Class-D though, found himself in quite the uncomfortable situation.

'She is literally sitting on top of my pelvis. I can't even adjust my position anymore. Now all I can hope is that she doesn't lean her body too behind, or an awkward situation may appear between us.'

"Say Suzune, this is quite the position we are hanging out in. I wonder what would happen if Haruka and Airi walked inside the room at the moment."

Immediately Horikita looked away from her phone and registered their position, before lightly blushing to herself.

However she soon composed herself and leaned down on Kiyotaka's body with a smirk on her face.

"And? Are you feeling shy? Never knew you had this side of you as well, Shykouji-kun."

"I'm not feeling shy. I'm just fearing for your social life, if by chance someone catches you in this kind of position."

"Hmph~ Not like it matters to me. I'm just doing lovey dovey stuff with my boyfriend. No one has any right to criticise me, do they?"

'Fair point, but it's not helping me in the situation.'

Kiyotaka looked back at his girlfriend whose face was now just inches apart from his face, since she dropped it down even further while the boy looked away for a small second.

A slightly intimate and weird atmosphere formed among both of the students, as the raven haired girl tucked a small strand of her hair behind her ear, before inching her face even closer.

"Say, Kiyotaka-kun..."

"What?"

'I don't like where this is going.'

"Since you are so worried about what others might think of us ..."

"....."

'Someone save me please.'

"Why don't we get rid of that fear pretty qui-"

Ring ♪♪ Ring ♪♪

And as if his prayers were answered, Kiyotaka's phone immediately started ringing, making Horikita scowl in annoyance as the brown haired boy received the call, without even seeing who the dialer was.

"Hello."

"Hello Ayanokouji. Good afternoon."

'Oh, it's Chabashira-sensei.'

"What is it, Sensei? Any troubles?"

"Nothing much. Did you have your lunch yet?"

"Not yet. Why are you asking?"

"Then meet me at the dining hall. Let's talk about the exam while having lunch. Sounds good?"

While on the call, Kiyotaka looked up to find his annoyed girlfriend scowling at his device, all the while biting her perfectly done nails in frustration.

"Hmm, do you mind if Suzune joins me as well?"

"Horikita huh? Sure, I don't find any problems with you bringing her along, but don't bring your whole entourage with you."

"Got it."

With that, he cut off the call, before looking back towards his annoyed girlfriend who once again, dropped her head on Kiyotaka's neck and lightly biting it yet again, making him smack his head on hers lightly.

"Why did you do this for the second time?"

"For leading me on and not finishing the job. Hmph~"

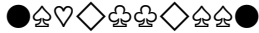
'Sigh ... Love truly is one troublesome aspect of life.'

End of Chapter 79

Words : 3152

New slave acquired! 👍. A little sparkle of Hornykita as well 🐼. Still ain't dropping the lemon this early though kukukuku.

Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.



Chapter 80 : Dream Come True

Season 4 : Chapter 3

Ayanokouji POV

Soon, both me and my girlfriend, the resident Ice Queen of ANHS, Horikita Suzune, walked inside the dining hall with newly changed clothes, as this demon walking beside me forced me to take a shower in her bathroom and even had spare clothes for me to wear.

I don't know which fact was more weird. The fact that she knew all of my measurements, or that she always kept a spare shirt for me along with her own clothes, as if she knew that one day it might come to use.

This woman is as scary as she is useful. Truly a dangerous combination.

As we were roaming through the dining hall, I couldn't help but see that unlike before the exam, this time, the room was not bustling with students everywhere. It was moderately pretty empty in comparison to before. Maybe, most of them are sleeping in their rooms after such a tedious exam...

I mean I definitely don't envy them. Not at all in the slightest. After carrying the class on my shoulders for seven days, I definitely don't feel annoyed at the fact that I have to spend my time talking instead of taking a well deserved nap.

I noticed a couple of Class-A 'Elitists' who were under the leadership of Katsuragi, quietly eating their lunch with frowns on their faces. There was a kind of gloomy atmosphere surrounding them, as if they didn't want to do anything with their life anymore.

I guess, getting such disastrous results after talking all that smack, made their fragile egos shatter to pieces. One of their eyes met with mine, as he glared at me for a second before he looked away, clicking his tongue in annoyance.

Seeing his reaction, the other Class-A students looked at me with the same hostility as well, however all of them immediately retracted their gaze, like a scared cat for some odd reason.

I found such a quick change of their reaction kind of odd, before side glancing at my girlfriend who was coldly glaring at all of those Class-A students with full intensity.

'So that's why they were acting like meek cats.'

"And these guys are the members of the best Class of the school. How deplorable."

Not that I disagree with you, Suzune. Looking down on others, not doing much work and still trying to take the credit for it, not taking accountability for their own actions and instead putting all the blame on their leader ... and just acting like stupid dumbasses in general. None of those actions depict those of the Elites.

"Hello Ayanokouji-kun, Horikita-san!"

Both of us looked towards the direction from where the sweet, melodic voice called us as we found the Leader of Class-B, Ichinose Honami, who was having lunch with her classmates on another corner of the hall.

Unlike Class-A, the atmosphere among the Class-B students looked just like usual, happy go lucky. How refreshing to see. The fact that in spite of not getting their desired results, they are still having fun among themselves instead of sulking like those Class-A 'Elites' was a very fresh sight.

Now this makes me wonder though, for how long can Class-B keep this attitude before this 'Unity' that is keeping this Class together like a super-glue, gets broken and shattered to pieces. Will they be able to keep up the same attitude, or will they crumble under the pressure? I would clearly lie to myself if I say that I'm not interested in finding out about that.

Registering our presence, Ichinose's classmates waved at us with smiles on their faces, as both of us gave a short nod in response, before walking away from them. It's not like we wanted to ignore them, but because of Suzune, we already made Sensei wait for quite some time. I don't want to agitate her even more. Sorry for walking away from you Ichinose, I promise I'll buy you a stress ball as a compensation.

"Can you see her, Kiyotaka-kun?"

"Sensei told me that she would be sitting on the farthest corner of the room, so that we can peacefully chat while having lunch, without any distractions. So let's look towards that direc- Oh there she is."

Following my gaze, Suzune looked towards Chabashira-sensei, who was lightly waving at us with a small smirk on her face. It seemed like she was not frustrated about waiting for us, which was good to know. She was once again back to wearing her usual outfit that she wears 24/7.

"Say Suzune, do you think since she is the Class-D teacher, just like the students, Chabashira-sensei is also broke? Maybe that's why instead of buying new clothes, she wears the same thing all the ti-"

Unfortunately, I couldn't finish my sentence as the witch beside

me decided to pinch my waist with an annoyed look on her face.

"Don't you know that it's taboo to comment on a woman's age and her clothes?"

"I mean I didn't, but now I know. But think about it, am I wrong though?"

"I don't know. Maybe she prefers wearing that instead of other designs. She is a teacher for god's sake. I doubt she would be broke. Maybe she has a couple of spare pairs of the same dress, and this is kind of her 'dress-code'."

"Now that you say it, you're not wrong, I guess."

Soon, both of us walked towards her location and sat in the opposite direction of our Homeroom Teacher, who immediately poured both of us a glass of water from the jug beside her.

"Both of you took quite some time, you know? It's not a good habit to make your teacher wait."

There was a small playful tone to her voice, which was quite different than her usual, cold tone. She playfully pointed her fingers at me with a small smirk on her face as I shrugged my shoulders in indifference, and lazily pointed my fingers towards my girlfriend.

"Blame this lass over here. Apparently I reeked of sweat, so she forced me to take a shower before meeting you. That's why it took quite some time."

Immediately I felt Suzune lightly kick my shin while looking at me with a sickly 'sweet' smile as if saying '**I dare you to repeat your words, once again dear.**' In a way, she looked quite intimidating, and even if I didn't feel fear, arguing with her in front of my homeroom teacher seemed troublesome.

Hearing my words, Sensei's smirk got wider as she then directed her eyes towards a slightly embarrassed Horikita Suzune, who was still glaring at me.

"It was necessary. Do you really think it would be a good etiquette to have lunch with your teacher while smelling like you mowed through a jungle? Excuse us for being late Sensei. But trust me, you couldn't eat in peace if this idiot over here didn't shower."

All she received from her words was a small smirk from our teacher, as she took a sip of red wine from her glass.

Did I really smelt that bad though? Well, I won't disagree though. But what makes this funny is that, despite me not taking a shower, Suzune still licked my neck. This fortifies the amount of freakiness that is being kept hidden under that cold exterior of hers.

"So, when did you decide to become Ayanokouji's wife, Horikita?"

"W-wife?!"

Suzune immediately sputtered in surprise while slightly glancing at me with the side of her eyes. Don't look at me with your puppy

eyes, woman. I won't help you in the slightest. Hope you suffer in embarrassment. This is your punishment for biting my neck, not one but 2 times. Karma really is a bit- a respectful woman.

"We have not thought about marriage yet, Sensei. It's still way too early for us at this stage."

"So, both of you acknowledge each other as your significant other?"

What are you trying to do Sensei? Never took you as a gossip queen who would enjoy spending time listening to the love stories about their students. Well, appearances can be deceiving, I guess. Maybe, the fact that Sensei doesn't have her significant other (my prediction) makes her so invested in other people's love stories.

"Yes!"

With gleaming eyes, Suzune immediately started nodding to Sensei's words vigorously, with a proud smile, as if dating someone like me was a huge achievement. Such a quick response from Suzune made Chabashira-sensei turn her head towards me in surprise as all I could do was pat Suzune's head, to which she didn't pose any resistance as she further leaned into it.

Yup, there is no doubt about it. This woman really was a cat in her previous life. All the licking, biting, scowling, glaring, the frequent mood swings Now all I need to find are some cat ears and then she truly can be called Neko-kita. Maybe I can ask Airi about the cat ears. She does take quite some candid photos of herself, doesn't she? She might have a pair of them in her collection.

"She sure sounds pretty enthusiastic, doesn't she?"

"Indeed, she does. Maybe I'm kind of amazing."

"You definitely are. Although I won't lie, I am kind of surprised at the fact that the little sister of the headstrong, super serious Manabu Horikita is head over heels for someone and is acting like a maiden in love."

"It's alright Sensei. Nii-san also fanboys a lot about Kiyotaka-kun. Both of us Horikita's were kind of enamoured with this enigmatic boy in first sight, although nii-san's attraction towards him, unlike me is platonic hopefully."

With a slight grimace, Suzune took a sip of her water, as I couldn't help but imagine a sight of Horikita-Senpai adjusting his glasses like an absolute badass before handing me a love letter and squealing to himself.

.....

.....

.....

.....

Dammit, why did I imagine such a cursed sight? Curse you brain as well as you Suzune for making me experience such visual torture. I hope you sleep at night with both sides of your pillow being warm for the rest of your life. Actually no, nevermind, I wouldn't want her to endure such a cruel punishment.

Sensei chuckled at my Suzune's words, before her playful gaze turned a little more serious as she leaned her head on her hand, as the waiter gave us three plates filled with exotic food.

"I already ordered before you guys came here, in order to save some time. I hope you don't mind."

"It's fine Sensei."

"So now that the whole exam is over, would you mind explaining to me how you did all that? I only know bits and pieces over here, and to be honest I was quite surprised when I heard the results. I was expecting you to get around 220-250 Points, but 393? I was mind blown."

"I could tell. You looked like a deer in headlights. When the results were announced, I noticed your jaw dropping in shock. It was quite an entertaining sight, right Crazykita?"

Suzune immediately picked up an unused fork as she pierced through a cutlet with a swift, quick speed before biting off the piece of cutlet, all the while glaring at me, as if saying '**Stop teasing me, or you will face the same fate as Cutlet-kun.**'

"If I'm being completely honest, it's nothing too complex or insane, Sensei. I just had some useful tools during this exam, and all I did was implement them to the best of my abilities. "

"And just like I said to you before, I prefer a simple yet effective plan, more than something extremely complex. So feel free to share. The fact that this so-called 'simple' plan of yours reduced the 398 CP gap that you had with Class-C to just a mere 23, makes me interested in hearing it much more."

"Very well, suit yourself then. First of all, as both of you know, I was never the Leader of the Exam. It was Koenji, all along."

"That, we know. At least I do. You knew as well, right, Horikita?"

"I came to know of this fact later on in the exam, but yes."

"So during this whole exam, my main motive was not just to win it. My main aim was to confine a certain rat in my trap before she does something harmful to the class, just out of spite. I wanted to get control over her, as soon as possible."

"And who is this 'her' you are talking about?"

"That's confidential, Sensei. I don't think it would be a good decision to tell you the name, since we promised her about not telling anyone. But you don't need to worry about that. We got everything in control, as the rat now serves under this 'Devil' right

here.

With a smug smile on her face, Suzune nodded to my words, to which Chabashira-sensei looked at her with a slightly weirded out expression, as unlike me, the only side she saw of Horikita Suzune was the residential ice-cold way she portrays while she is in the class.

"Ok ...ay? So mind telling both of us everything that you want to say? You can definitely keep certain parts secret, which you think would be advantageous for you in the long run, since this results makes me trust you so much more in comparison to before."

I let out a small smirk at her words before slightly leaning towards her.

"More trust, huh? Before this exam what was your trust percentage, Sensei?"

To my words, Sensei also smirked in response as if deciding to play along as well.

"55 percent. But this result made it increase to a 70 instantly."

"Just 70 huh? I thought it would be a little more."

"For each time you advance to a new class, the percentage will increase higher and higher. And it will fully turn to 100%, the moment I get the liberty to utter the words, **"Congratulations on doing the unthinkable and becoming the first Class-D in the history of ANHS, to not only fade out after a first couple months but to also advance to Class-A, making this a historic feat."** Tell me Ayanokouji, do you have what it takes to get my full trust?"

"It would be as easy as brushing my teeth and going to toilet. Give me a little more time, and I'll make your dream come true, Sensei."

My words immediately made her widen her eyes for some reason, before a small, beautiful smile formed on my face, as Chabashira-Sensei lightly ruffled my hair.

"I would be waiting for that day, then."

End of Chapter 80

Words : 3343

Like I said before, just like Season 1, I'll once again slowly but surely bring back the little slice of life moments instead of Plot driven hype inducing chapters everytime.. so my apologies if this feels slow, but it is what it is :D.

Thanks a lot for 2000 followers :)

Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.

●♡◇♣♣◇♡●

Chapter 81 : One Sided Massacre

Season 4 : Chapter 4

While all the first years were enjoying their time in the cruise ship after the gruelling week-long exam, on the other side, we see a group of five students sitting in the Student Council room, looking through all the reports of the exam that just took place.

"Hahahaha Class-C and Class-A really got wrecked hard on this exam, huh? Getting below 50 points in such a scoring exam? Utter blasphemy."

The Vice-President of the Student Council, Nagumo Miyabi smirked to himself while graciously accepting the cup of tea that Tachibana handed it to him, while staring at him with a slightly bewildered expression on her face.

"Why do you sound so happy about that, Nagumo-kun? Doesn't the fact that Class-A got humiliated this badly kind of chokes up your ideals about Meritocracy and all?"

"Tch Tch, I think you don't understand me clearly, Tachibana-Senpai. This whole Class-A to Class-D thing doesn't matter that much in the first year, since the classes are chosen by the school officials themselves. That's why I would rather wait a year and then decide which class is actually superior and which is not, after seeing their own success and failures through my own eyes.

I'm not the type of person to act all high and mighty and look down on other students only if I get 'placed' in Class-A by the school officials. The way the students are assigned in this school is kind of weird, after all. Like can you believe that someone like me and Asahina were assigned to Class-B while that loyal dog of Horikita-Senpai was assigned to Class-A."

The person Nagumo was referring to was another second year student, who was also a member of the Student Council, who went by the name of Kiriyama Ikuto. The black haired boy looked at the taunting Nagumo with a moderately stoic gaze before redirecting his attention back to his book, making Nagumo's shit-eating grin even wider.

"You see? How can such a timid and quiet dog be the so-called 'Elite' while I am here? Well not like it matters to me, since they could not even manage to keep their top spot after only four months, further proving how rigged the whole class selection is.

They coul-

"Boo~ are you done bragging Mr. Notice-me-Senpai? I hate to break it to you, but I'm here to see the Exam results instead of hearing your boring monologue. I would rather watch trashy soap operas if I wanted to listen to such stuff."

Other than the four members of the Student Council, another Second Year, who goes by the name of Fuka Kiryuin, slumped her head on the desk with a bored expression on her face, while Nagumo's eyes twitched in annoyance.

"Why the actual fu-"

Immediately Nagumo met the glare of Tachibana and stopped himself from continuing his words.

"Crap, my bad. No cursing in the Council room. Anyways, why are you here, Kiryuin? Don't you have anything better to do other than annoying me?"

The platinum blonde haired girl to whom Nagumo was referring to, slightly raised her head to meet his eyes as she gave a small sigh to herself.

"Do you really think someone like me would actually take my free time off the day, come to this boring room surrounded by nothing but boring people, just so I could annoy someone worthless like you? I have my standards, thank you very much."

All the three members of the Student Council glared at Kiryuin while the President himself facepalmed to himself, having seen this exact scenario play out over tens of times.

"Then why are you here?"

"I'm just here to check the results of the Deserted Island Exam, in order to see whether there are some interesting first years who can make my life entertaining. Also, before you and Loli-senpai start running her mouth about this being only accessible to the members of the Council and stuff, I already got permission from both of your crushes. So don't start babbling right in my ears, 'kay?"

With an extremely sweet smile, Kiryuin directed her gaze back towards the reports as Tachibana started lightly blushing and grumbling to herself, while praying that the SCP didn't hear the words of this bratty second year.

Nagumo on the other hand, started taking deep breaths in order to calm himself down while slumping on his seat with a tired expression on his face.

'Why are all the actual beautiful girls of my year the most troublesome to deal with? I wish I was born a year later and be in the same class as Ichinose Honami. That would've been the only time, I wouldn't be annoyed at being in Class-B.'

"Your simp energy is radiating all the way over here, Nagumo.

Keep it within yourself, you disgusting insect."

Unable to take such verbal harassment from a person other than Asahina, Miyabi immediately slammed his head on the desk before looking at the Student Council President, Manabu Horikita."

"Senpai, why did you give this bit- disrespectful woman the permission to intrude in the private affairs of the Student Council?"

"....."

".....I owe her some favours, that's why"

"Why do you owe it to someone like her? You could've asked me for help! I would've done it for free if it was you."

"I told you your simp energy is going haywire, Nagumo. Keep it in check, will ya?"

"Shut your mouth Kiryuin. Do whatever you want to do and leave the Student Council Room immediately after that."

"Hai hai~"

With an uninterested gaze, the platinum blonde haired girl shrugged him off as she put both of her feet on the desk and started reading one of the reports with a small smirk on her face.

Her actions ticked off all the members of the Student Council, but they remained quiet, not wanting to argue with the pompous princess anymore.

"Hmm, 0,22,62 and 393 ... quite the imbalance in points, I must say. To think that 300 given points would be reduced to such low numbers, that too by Classes like A and B, whereas the Class which did the unthinkable being Class-D ... these first years are a little more peculiar than our batch, don't you think so, Nagumo?"

"I think you are getting it wrong, Kiryuin. Not 'these first years', there is only 'a first year' who is peculiar and fascinating enough to grab my attention."

"Hoh? And who is this unfortunate being? Is he or she the one behind this one-sided massacre?"

"No Nagumo. Don't reveal his inform-"

"His name is Ayanokouji Kiyotaka. And I'll make him my successor and have him carry on my torch after I graduate from this institution."

As soon as she heard the name, Kiryun Fuka immediately let out a wild smirk, while Manabu released a small sigh, mentally apologising to his hopefully 'future brother-in-law.'

'I was only one second behind from saving you, Ayanokouji. I sincerely apologise for setting this wild animal behind you. I hope you don't leave my sister behind as a revenge for this.'

"Ayanokouji Kiyotaka huh? He is quite the popular dude. I remember all the first years fangirling over a picture of him. At first I found him kinda basic, but this makes the situation different.

Prez-kun, once he comes back from the ship, I want you to set up a meeting with him. I wanna get to know him."

"I guess that would be the final favour I'll owe to you?"

"Yup!"

"Very well, but I wouldn't be responsible if Ayanokouji walks away after meeting you for a couple of seconds. That responsibility falls on you, got it?"

"Well, if he does indeed walk away, then that would be a plus in my eyes. A boy who has the ability to resist the temptation of a beautiful, charming, delightful, alluring, glamorous, magnificent, aesthetic, hot girl like me, then he would intrigue me even further."

Nagumo immediately clicked his tongue in annoyance before opening the door of the Student Council Room, beckoning the bratty girl to leave the room, as Manabu Horikita immediately fixed his glasses before looking at Kiryuin with a cold glare, who stared back at him with a nonchalant expression on her face.

"What happened Prez-kun? Are you on your period?"

"The mouth of this GIRL!!!"

Tachibana started glaring at Kiryuin like an annoyed dog while Manabu Horikita still kept his cold, impassive gaze immediately making the entire room go silent, as his fellow council members were anticipating what he was about to say.

"Let me tell you one thing clearly, Kiryuin."

"What is it?"

"You can meet, talk or do whatever with Ayanokouji. But he is already in a relationship with my little sister, Suzune. So don't you dare steal him away or try to be a homewrecker or this would not end well for you."

Horikita Manabu lied as naturally as he breathed. In truth he didn't even have an idea whether Ayanokouji liked his sister back, but the thought of the brown haired boy walking along with Fuka Kiryuin of all people while his little sister looked at them with sadness in her eyes...

As her Nii-san, HE WOULD NOT ACCEPT THAT.

I'm trying to help you as much as I can Suzune, so be useful and actually woo him into our family for god's sake. He is the only person I would accept as my gracious brother-in-law, so don't mess it up, my dear sister. Don't mess up the chance and confess to him just like you planned.'

Unlike his cold exterior, Manabu was internally quite nervous at the thought of Ayanokouji rejecting Suzune's proposal, but he didn't let it show to anyone else. Fuka Kiryuin, who was still staring at Manabu with an almost stoic gaze, just sighed to herself before waving him off.

"That's it? I thought you were going to say something serious. Don't worry Prez-kun, as a lady, I have my own dignity. I would never steal any boy from a girl, no matter how interesting or fascinating they are. I just want to see if Ayanokouji suffuses my lack of interest in this so-called 'Elite' school."

With that Kiryuin walked out of the door, not before sending one last disgusted gaze towards Nagumo, who glared at her with annoyance in return before softly muttering to himself.

"Fucking bitch. Just because she is a little pretty, she thinks the world revolves around herself. I can't stand someone like her."

"Aren't you the same in that regard, Nagumo?"

It seemed that Manabu heard his muttering but decided to excuse his cursings.

"Even if I am self-absorbed, I at least put in the effort in order to have some pride, unlike that egoistic girl who thinks that she is so high and mighty that she doesn't even need to engage herself in anything. She insults us 24/7 for being boring, all the while sitting on the same bench every single day, doing absolutely nothing. Fucking hypocrite."

Reluctantly, Kiryama also nodded to Nagumo's words since he was also quite frustrated from the lack of cooperativeness from Kiryuin.

"Well, not like I care either way. But Horikita-Senpai, I would like to warn you about one thing."

"What is it, Nagumo?"

"Don't let Ayanokouji get too close with Kiryuin for now. He is still in his first year and other than this exam, he didn't succeed at anything too big for now. If he by chance gets polluted with Kiryuin's lethargic habits, then it would lead to quite a problematic situation. This is the first time, a Class-D has potential to give challenge to the other classes, and I would hate to see the person behind this situation suddenly stop his pursuit and start loafing around, you know?"

"I agree with your reasoning, Nagumo. Don't worry about that though. As long as my sister is there, I doubt Ayanokouji would take a step back. That boy yearns for a lot of things in order to satisfy his curiosity, and taking a step back at such an early stage hinders that goal of his. So if I was you, I wouldn't worry about him."

All Nagumo could do was let out a small smirk before walking out of the room.

"I hope you are not wrong about that, Senpai."

End of Chapter 81

Words : 2939

Introduction of the fan favourite Senpai, while an unusual alliance of Manabu and Nagumo got together in order to protect their favourite Kohai from the hands of this devilish Senpai....

Will they be successful or meet failure?

Who knows.....

Anyways hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.



Chapter 82 : The Resolve Of The Weak

Season 4 : Chapter 5

Kei Karuizawa POV

Alright. Today is the day, I guess. A huge part of my facade ends today which would result in the freedom and the emotional welfare of not just a part of me, but a lot of other students as well.

Today, I'll break up with Hirata-kun and free him from this unnecessary burden.

I still vividly remember the day that I 'confessed' to him. At first, I never cared about him. The only reason I decided to approach him in the first place was because of his handsome face and his great personality.

The moment Hirata-kun introduced himself, I knew that he was the one. He will be the Leader of this Class and will be the one to represent us to other classes. I came to realise the fact that, he was, without a shadow of my doubt, the one who could protect me from my past catching up.

That's why, when Ayanokouji declared on the first day that he wanted to be the Leader of Class-D, I was the very first person to protest against him. If I was completely honest, it didn't matter to me whether Hirata-kun or Ayanokouji became the leader ...

But I also knew of the fact that most of the girls would take an already popular Hirata-kun's side over a less popular Ayanokouji. So before anyone could protest, I started the propaganda against him with my brazen, raspy, gyaru-like voice just to show that I had the most vocal power among all the girls and that I won't put up with any of his shit.

I acted towards him exactly like how my oppressors acted against me at first. I felt a lump of bile rise in my throat but I didn't break my facade. In a way, I couldn't. Because I knew that in order to protect yourself from others, you can't be the meek, helpless person that you once were.

That night, I told Hirata-kun about my entire past. About all the different ways I was tortured day in and day out. How I was slapped, kicked, punched, cu-

No I don't want to remember that day. My hand slowly went towards my waist as I visibly cringed at the sensation of the wound

I was feeling with my hand.

That day, hearing my story, it was as if he experienced something similar in any way, I saw Hirata-kun tearing up at my story, before he accepted the proposal of being my 'Boyfriend' where he will use his social power and get along with everyone, while I leech of his popularity like a fucking leech and cling to him everywhere I go.

In a way, all those months, I felt utterly disgusted with my pathetic attempts at grasping at any hints of relevancy I could, while being the spoilt, rough-mouthed, 'beautiful', harsh 'girlfriend' of the kind, handsome, nice Hirata Yosuke.

I knew that none of my classmates actually liked me, and I mean why should they.... All this time, I acted like nothing but an absolute bitch to them but for me it was fine, as long as I was safe.

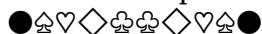
Or that's what I thought.... The day where I had an actual conversation with Ayanokouji for the first time, I realised just how delusional I actually was all this time.

This 'fake' persona of mine made others dislike me already, which might result in creating future enemies. Hirata-kun was someone who never believed in violence or never wanted to ...

And as a person who has been subjected to violence for most of her life, I knew very well that not every situation can be dealt with peace. So I couldn't just rely on Hirata-kun for my safety. I needed to learn how to rely on myself.

It's quite a difficult task I won't lie, but Ayanokouji and Horikita-san did help me everyday after class where they taught me a lot of things, and I would lie if I don't feel a little cool hanging out with the smart students without my facade.

I felt a little relieved to know that there are people who wouldn't ostracise me because of being weak ... The time I spent with the two of them felt peaceful.



"Good evening, Karuizawa-san. Are there any problems?"

Hirata soon walked into an empty hallway where his 'girlfriend' was waiting for him. As soon as their eyes met, Karuizawa let out a small smile, before bowing in front of him, bewildering Hirata at her sudden gesture.

"Eh? What are you doing Karuizawa-san?"

"I am extremely thankful for all your help these last few months, Hirata-kun. However, I came to realise that if all I do is cling by your side for my own good, I wouldn't be able to develop myself further, and would be the same weak and selfish Karuizawa Kei, who gets trampled by others. "

"Karuizawa-san What're you talking about?"

Hirata's eyes widened a little at hearing her words, which made Karuizawa's stomach churn a little in guilt as she realised that her fear was turning out to be true.

Her words sounded like she was using him and disposing of him of her free will which made the situation worse, since it was true in its own twisted way.

However before the situation could escalate into something worse, or get filled with any other misconception or misunderstanding, Karuizawa didn't wait for Hirata to continue and stated her piece.

"That's why I want to end this false 'relationship' of ours, since because of me, you also can't interact with others freely of your own will. I am extremely thankful for all your help, and I am sorry if my words make it sound like I am disposing of you as if I took everything you did for me as granted, because that's clearly not the truth. B-but I—"

Karuizawa couldn't finish her sentence as her guilt caught up to her heart and a horrid bile rose in her throat.

"I see, I'm very happy to hear that Karuizawa-san."

"Huh?"

With a dubious expression on her face, Karuizawa raised her head only to see a small, pleasant smile on her 'ex-boyfriend' Hirata's face as he lightly placed his hand on her shoulder.

"I'm really happy to hear that you are trying to move on from your past, instead of bottling it in and having it control your present. You see, unlike you I still couldn't achieve that, as I live with the guilt of horrific memories of my past, and I can't bring myself to look ahead. But seeing you do this makes me really happy. I'm proud of you."

"Hirata-kun"

With slightly teary eyes, Karuizawa looked at Hirata with a dazed look on her face as he gently wiped the tears with his handkerchief.

"Also you don't have to feel guilty in the slightest. I never felt that you were in any way using me, got that? If protecting yourself is categorized as 'using' then in that sense I was also using you in order to cope with my 'self guilt'. No matter what, in the end we are classmates and friends. We should always look out for one another right?"

Hirata gently patted Karuizawa's head as drops of tears started falling on the ground, before Karuizawa enveloped Hirata into a tight hug, surprising the greenish-blond haired boy.

"Thank you so much. Thank you so much for everything you did for me. I will always be grateful to you. I'll forever be indebted to you."

After quietly walking through the halls as if he was a wanted criminal, Hirata soon walked inside his hotel room, where he was greeted by the odd sight of two of his quite 'unique' roommates playing jigsaw puzzle together.

"Fu~ That's the wrong piece, Kiyo-boy. My perfect intuition is telling me that this piece will attach towards that corner instead of this one."

"What are you talking about? You are telling me to attach the tail of the male cat right beside the posterior of the female one? What kind of sicko are you?"

"That's not being called a sicko, Kiyo-boy. As a perfect being, one should always experiment with different things in order to get better results and strive for more 'perfectness' Ha ha ha ha."

All Hirata could do was smile in amusement at the antics of his two weird yet very talented roommates.

"Good evening Ayanokouji-kun, Koenji-kun."

"Salutations, pretty boy. I assume your date went well?"

"Haha it was not a date, Koenji-kun. But yeah, I enjoyed my time."

"Good evening Hirata. Did you have dinner yet?"

"Hmm, not yet."

"Ken, Akito, Hideo and I were planning to have dinner together, while this fellow over here included himself in our group as well. Want to join us?"

Kiyotaka looked at Hirata with a curious expression on his face, while pointing his finger at a laughing Koenji.

"You shouldn't say it like that, Kiyo boy. The fact that I am even letting you all experience my magnificence, you should be grateful for that instead of disrespecting me by pointing your fingers. However I would pardon this gesture of yours this time, since I hold you in such high regard."

"... Sure, I guess. So, what's your answer Hirata?"

'Ever since the day my highschool started, all the time I ate with the girls which resulted in me not being able to connect and interact with my male classmates that much. So, in a way this is a good opportunity for me to be free from all the love talk and gossip and just enjoy my time with the boys..... This sounds like a good time.'

As if he made up his mind, Hirata nodded at Kiyotaka's words with a smile on his face.

"Sure."

"Very well. I'll let the others know about your inclusion."

Hirata sat on his bed while he kept nervously fiddling with the pink box in his hands, not knowing what to expect inside. Kiyotaka, who was observing him with a curious look, soon sat down beside

him with an impassive expression.

"A gift from one of your admirers?"

"Haha, you could say so."

"I see. Well, I won't interrupt your private time. I'm taking a small nap. Can you wake me up within an hour?"

"Sure."

Kiyotaka slumped on his bed tiredly as Hirata looked at him with sympathy as the boy in front of him worked tirelessly for the sake of the class.

'If it's anyone who deserves any kind of rest the most, it's you Ayanokouji-kun.'

Steeling himself, Hirata then looked back at the box before opening it gently, not wanting to destroy any content which was inside it.

The first thing that popped out of the box was a small letter, under which there was a lunchbox which was emitting the aroma of a freshly baked cake.

As Hirata picked up the lunchbox, he discovered a small cute panda key-chain lying in the corner of the box.

Hirata opened the letter and started reading it.

'Sorry for walking away from you like that. Take this gift of mine as a token of gratitude for all the troubles you had to put up with

This was my first time cooking anything. But with the help of one of my friends, I somehow finished making this cake. So, if it's not to your liking, I apologise in advance :).

Also, you've never told me what you liked. So I just took the recommendation of one of my friends on what you would like And all he said was "Get him anything Panda related. One could never go wrong with Pandas." So yeah, it's not my fault if you don't like the present :(

Jk Jk.

I hope we continue to be the best of friends and if you require any help in the future, don't hesitate to call me for help, not like I can do much though xD.

—Karuizawa Kei'

With a happy smile on his face, Hirata picked up the keychain with an amused expression while he took a small bite of the freshly baked fruit cake.

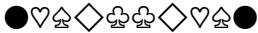
'This is a wonderful gift, Karuizawa-san. I love it very much.'

End of Chapter 82

Words : 3332

It took quite a while to finish this chapter and still I feel quite unsatisfied by it. Well, Kei and Hirata interactions are kind of hard for me to write, but I tried my best.

Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.



Chapter 83 : Calculations

Season 4 : Chapter 6

Ayanokouji POV

"So, let me get this straight. During day 1, you made a deal with Ryuen Kakeru of Class-C so that he helps you in trapping the so-called 'rat, am I correct?"

"Yes sensei."

Nodding to my words of affirmation, Sensei posed another question, to which Suzune briefly stopped herself from eating as she started paying full attention to my words.

"What is he getting out of this?"

"The deal was that, I'll give him the names of the Leaders of the other two classes. There was a condition in the contract that, if I want to co-operate further with him and Class-C, then I would have to pay him around 75,000 points monthly, but I didn't agree to it"

With a cocked eyebrow, Suzune dropped her forks on the plate, before tapping me on the shoulders, getting my attention.

"Wait, Kiyotaka-kun. So, if you gave Ryuen-kun the names of the other two leaders, then why was Class-C in the last position? Shouldn't they at least get good enough points to be above Class-A and B?"

Chabashira-sensei nodded to her words and took a small bite of Cutlet-kun before wiping my face, to address them both.

"You see, the moment I rejected the further operation clause in Ryuen's contract, it was known then and there that the moment we were finished in trapping the 'rat, both of us would snitch against each other.

A certain birdie from another Class also told me about a deal between Ryuen and Katsuragi of Class-A, where Class-C would transfer Class-A a large sum of their S-Points, and I think Class-A has to pay back all those points as a means of Private Points in the coming months as a means of compensation, which led to Ryuen taking a 0-Point Strategy.

And then on the third day, news came that excluding Ibuki and the spy from Class-B, all the students of Class-C returned to their ship, correct?

But, it was just not those two. Ryuen was there as well, and he already knew that once our deal was done, I would write him as the

leader.

So, he tried to trap me in a Stalemate by naming me as the Leader as well, since showed him that when I went to renew the spot, it glowed green, indicating my success. But alas, all of that was simple bait while my main trump card was most probably hanging out somewhere all alone, admiring himself.

This is why Class-C took the last place since they lost around 100 S-Points because of yours truly. Otherwise, if Ryuen didn't try to name me as well, and just accepted the defeat, Class-C would've taken third place with 68 Points. But... it is what it is, the game's the game, I guess."

As I finished my discussion, I graciously started feasting on Cutlet-kun yet again, as I couldn't help but marvel at the taste of an actual good meal instead of just fruits and burne- ahem roasted fish. While the other two women along with me were quietly eating among themselves, trying to digest the information dump that I'd bestowed upon them.

Horikita opened her mouth for a second, before closing it while subtly glancing at Chabashira-sensei who slightly narrowed her eyes at my girlfriend with a suspicious look on her face.

"What is it, Horikita? Do you wish to discuss some matters with Ayanokouji privately which I'm obstructing?"

"Uhhh ... I have some queries related to the exam, but I'm not sure to what extent will Kiyotaka-kun will reveal the information."

"Speak whatever is on your mind. Then it's up to me to decide whether I give you a proper answer or a vague one. One should never suppress their curiosity."

Hearing my kind of self-assuring words, Suzune released a small breath before gazing at me with a strict look.

"We recorded the whole incident which took place yesterday. If you wanted to, we could've disqualified Class-C altogether with this. Then why did you refrain from such actions?"

Suzune's sudden declaration immediately resulted in Sensei looking at me with slightly widened eyes as if she wanted to say **'Spill the beans asap.'**

"What is Horikita talking about, Ayanokouji? What does she mean by disqualification?!"

"Don't worry about anything Sensei. Ryuen didn't do anything worthy of being disqualified. It's just that I could've trapped him if I wanted to, but I refrained from doing so."

"But why is that? That's what I am curious about."

Suzune looked at me with a dazed expression and a small frown while her eyes were gleaming in curiosity. The girl was at her phase where she gets intrigued by any sorts of strategies and mind

games, trying to implement them into a puzzle inside her mind. This development of hers made me a little proud since, in a way, I raised that girl.

"It's a pretty simple reason. At first, I indeed thought that I would disqualify Class-C from the exam so that they don't gain any points ... But after thinking to myself, I realised that there's no point in doing that since their presence in the exam in a way will weaken the competition for us.

Either way, Class-C only got 18 points, whereas because of Ryuuen, Class-A and Class-B lost a huge sum of points, which made the incredibly vast difference between our classes narrow down a lot."

I took out a piece of paper from my pocket before straightening it as both of my female acquaintance's eyes found themselves being drawn towards that sheet of paper with curiosity.

"What is this, Ayanokouji?"

"A rough draft I made after the exam, where I speculated about how all the classes gained their end results. It may not be 100 per cent perfect, but I think my calculations are pretty correct. Take a look at it, it would clear all your doubts, and then you will realise why I decided to not disqualify Class-C from the exam."

Chabashira-sensei gently picked up the sheet as Suzune immediately jumped off her seat before sprinting behind Sensei's chair as she leaned on it, wanting to read the contents of the page together, to save time.

My Calculations on the Island Exam

Class-A :

Addition : 0 points from renewing the spots.

Guesses :-

-50 (guessed by Class-D)

-50 (guessed by Class-C)

+0 (Didn't make any guess about the Leaders of Class-B or Class-C [since Katsuragi thought he and Ryuuen were in a temporary truce ; whereas he had no concrete proof about Leader of Class-B])

Total Loss : 150 Points

Remaining S-points : 192

Other factors :-

-20 [Hashimoto polluting the area]

Total Points : 22

●♠♥♦♣♠♦♥♠●

Class-B :

Addition : 0 points from renewing the spots.

Guesses :-

-50 (guessed by Class-D)

-50 (guessed by Class- C)

+0 (refrained from guessing any leaders of the other classes and decided to take the passive approach)

Total Loss : 100

Remaining S-points : 162

Total Points : 62

●♠♥♦♣♣♦♥♠●

Class-C :

Addition : 0 points from renewing the spots.

Guesses :-

+ 50 (guessed Class-A correctly)

+ 50 (guessed Class-B correctly)

-50 (guessed by Class-D)

-50 (guessed Class-D wrong)

Total Loss/ Gain : 0

Remaining S-points : 0

Total Points : 0

●♠♥♦♣♣♦♥♠●

Class-D :

Additions : [18 x 5] = 90 points from renewing the spots.

Guesses :-

+ 50 (guessed Class-A correctly)

+ 50 (guessed Class-B correctly)

+ 50 (guessed Class-C correctly)

Total Gain : 150

Remaining S-points : 153

Total Points : 393

●♠♥♦♣♣♦♥♠●

Class Standings :-

Class-A : 1004 + 22 = 1026

Class-B : 663 + 62 = 725

Class-C : 492 + 0 = 492

Class-D : 94 + 393 = 487

After they were done reading the rough draft made by Kiyotaka himself, both of their jaws lightly dropped at the accuracy of how he calculated everything, while the brown-haired boy was watching their reaction with an amused face.

"It seems like I don't need to do any unnecessary explanations anymore, right?"

"When did you do all this stuff?"

"Unbelievable."

Both the girls mouthed out in awe before taking a sip of their water, trying to compose themselves. However no matter how hard she tried to keep a neutral expression on her face, both the ends of Chabashira's mouth found themselves automatically turning upwards, as she couldn't help but smile at her luck.

This might be it. Her final chance to finally reach her dream, Class-A. Will all her regrets be replenished once she finally reaches the unreachable 'Class-A' or will the guilt stay with her forever? Chabashira was curious to know the possibilities and it seemed like she would finally have her answer since the boy in front of her already lowered such a huge gap in just one exam. What were they going to do in the future? She would lie if she says that she wasn't shivering at the thought of it.

"You look quite happy Sensei. Not that I disagree with the sentiment."

"Well it's the first time I'm managing a Class which actually might give the other classes a run for their money. So of course I'm quite excited to spectate how things might go. By the way, how did you find Class-B's leader Ayanokouji?"

"Well ... it was Horikita who discovered the leader. Not me. So it's better if you ask her."

Hearing Kiyotaka's words, Chabashira looked at Horikita with a slightly impressed gaze.

"You figured the leader of Class-B all by yourself? Quite an impressive feat if you ask me."

"It's actually not that impressive, Sensei. The Class-B students weakened their guard against me and were openly discussing about Class matters. In the absence of their leader, they act like headless chicken without any least bit of IQ."

From the small conversation I eavesdropped on, I came to a conclusion that their main motto is that 'If everyone works together in harmony, no matter what happens they will get their success. Kind of stupid if you ask me.'"

As she heard Horikita's words, a small sadistic smirk crept upon Chabashira-sensei's face, which was immediately noticed by both of her students. The next words, the homeroom teacher of Class-D muttered, cleared all the questions about why she looked quite ecstatic about the outcome.

"....So Chie finally got that kind of Class. How ironic can that be"

'I see ... Chabashira-Sensei seems to hold a sense of hostility towards Hoshinomiya-Sensei. Well, not that I blame her ... That teacher is as sus as the imposters in Among Us. I also wouldn't want to be anywhere near the adult version of Kushida.'

"You don't like Hoshinomiya-Sensei, right?"

"Hmm, it's not like I dislike her, you can say she gets on my nerves for some reasons that I don't want to explain."

As Kiyotaka nodded to her words, his phone vibrated for a second as he took a look at it

☐

Karuizawa Kei : *Ayanokouji!!!!, I need your help asap!* \ (` 0) /

me : *What is it? I'm having lunch •_•*

Karuizawa Kei : *I want to give Hirata-kun a gift and other than him, you are the only guy I am close to. So I need your help. After dinner please help me out. Pretty please. We are friends right? ~(^~^~)~ (^~^~)~ (~^~^~)~*

me : *Sigh very well. I'll text you after I'm done with lunch.*

Karuizawa Kei : *Yayyyyyyy!!!! THANK YOU SO MUCH!!!!* \ (^o^)

me : *No worries mate. I'll help you to the best of my abilities. Let's give Hirata the best birthday gift.*

☐

Putting his phone in his pocket, Kiyotaka looked back towards his two accomplices, all the while his mind was thinking about one and one thing only, as he already decided about Hirata's gift.

"Are we done with this conversation for now?"

Both Suzune and Chabashira looked at him for a second, then looked back at his plate which was now crystal clean, immediately making their face go °o° for a second.

"How did you finish your meal this early? We aren't even halfway through?"

"While you and our dear Sensei was awing at that stupid sheet of paper, I took that as my chance of devouring Cutlet-kun. Hunger makes people do stuff in a way they never expect."

Chabashira smirked at him when she heard the word 'dear' come out of Kiyotaka's mouth, however her eyes immediately narrowed as soon as the brown haired boy stood up from his chair.

"Ayanokouji What are those red marks on your neck?"

Kiyotaka looked at his Sensei, who looked back at him with a neutral gaze after which her gaze moved towards the now petrified Suzune, who just let out an awkward smirk at her Sensei's intense gaze, before looking back at her boyfriend with a plea of help.

'Yeah I'm not taking any part in this. You did the mad thing, you will do the talking. All the best my dear girlfriend. I will pray for you •_•'

"I would love to explain it to you Sensei, but unfortunately my friend Karuizawa Kei apparently needs my help with something. So have a nice day, both of you."

Suzune immediately glared at him with an expression of I will kill you.

However, unfortunately for her all she received was an uncharacteristic small smirk from Kiyotaka before he turned his back away from her.

'You betrayed me, Kiyotaka-kun.'

Without saying anything further, the Leader of Class-D started jogging away from the dining hall with his usual ever present •_• look while Chabashira and Horikita were still in a staring contest.

"Horikita, **explain.**"

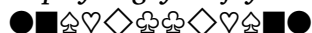
'Curse you 3000, Kiyotaka-kun.'

End of Chapter 83

Words : 3143

Finally got done with this chapter. My bad for the late updates and the kind of slow schedule. Since my college started this week, I am not getting as much free time as I used to. So the updates might be a little slow in comparison to before. However, I'll try my best :)

Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.



Chapter 84 : Boys

Season 4 : Chapter 7

"This is the best!!!!"

The redhead of Class-D, Sudou Ken roared in happiness and excitement as he tore a piece of meat from the skewer while wildly munching on them.

"Calm down Ken. At this rate, people might think you are a wild barbarian."

"Who gives a fuck about what others think. Their opinion doesn't have any impact on my life. They wouldn't pay my bills in the future, no? So why should I care?"

He took a big gulp of water after finishing his small rant as the other four boys dining with him just silently nodded to his words.

"Hmm ... you're not wrong to be honest."

"But there must be an etiquette on how one should act, no? I understand your reasoning Ken, but you need to calm yourself a little and be a little more professional. You are improving though, so have my praise."

Finishing his lecture, Kiyotaka elegantly started eating while the other three sweatdropped at his actions.

"Speaking of conduct, I must say you've gotten a little more approachable, Ayanokouji-kun."

Hirata smiled at Kiyotaka, to which all he received in response was a blank look from the Leader.

"Approachable? In what sense? I don't think I changed that much."

"I don't know how to explain it.... You've gotten less forceful with your methods and you do not antagonise our classmates as much as you did in the past. Because of this, the harmony of the class increased quite a lot, as they started seeing you as a reliable, dependable leader instead of a dictator who only looks for his own benefits."

"..... I see. In my opinion, others play quite a huge part in that as well. Suzune, Chiaki, Maya, Airi, Hasebe, Kushida, Karuizawa, Ike, you guys as well, all gradually came to terms with the seriousness of this school and have adapted to that in your own ways and became a lot more reliable to manage. So, in a way, the class is in quite a good state, because of which there is no need for me to play

the 'Bad Cop' unlike before."

"Speaking of Suzune, you and Horikita have gotten quite close recently huh?! And by close, I mean CLOSE. What's the secret man?! Spill it."

With a big grin on his face, Sudou nudged Kiyotaka on his shoulders as Sotomura, who was quiet for all this time, started creepily chuckling to himself.

"Ku ku ku, you shouldn't involve yourself too much in Kiyotaka-dono's matters too much, Ken-shounen. Or, by the end of it, you might start having a crush on the all mighty Kiyo-dono as well."

"Hah?! What the fuck do you mean?! I ain't gay bro. Also why are you calling me shounen?! I literally am a couple months older than you."

"Ku ku ku, you might older than me in age, but you can never touch this vast experience that is stored in this almighty treasure chest of mine, which I call my legendary brain."

Sotomura tapped his head while continuing to chuckle further, while Kiyotaka looked at their interaction with mild amusement.

"Weirdo."

"Anyways, do you guys have any plans tomorrow?"

Hirata Yosuke broke the ice with a small, harmless question, making his classmates turn his head towards him.

"Hmm, I don't have any plans yet. But who knows, I might have some matters spring up in the future. Unnecessarily I have quite the busy schedule."

"No need to brag about it and don't try to change the topic, Kiyotaka. Tell me about your matters with Horikita."

"It was never my intention to deviate from the topic though. Hirata did it. You are quite interested to know about my love life, huh? What's the matter Ken, got a crush on Suzune?"

"What? Not at all. I was just interested to know. We are boys after all."

'Yeah ... boys, sure sure.'

"Umm Sudou-kun, if he doesn't want to say, there's no reason to ask Kiyotaka-kun and make him uncomfortable, is it?"

Like an experienced peacemaker, Hirata once again tried to save Kiyotaka from the awkwardness, however the brown haired boy gave him a small gesture, indicating that it's alright.

"It's alright Hirata, don't worry. As for your so-called curiosity, yes Ken, Suzune is my girlfriend. We got together during the Island Exam."

As soon as Kiyotaka uttered those words, Sudou's eyes widened for a second before a small smirk crept up on his face.

"Haha good job, Kiyotaka. I knew you had it in you from the first

day. I can't believe it took this long for you to finally get together. Congrats bro."

Sudou started patting Kiyotaka's back, as Akito smirked at him.

"How does it feel to be a part of the second official couple of the class? Feels good?"

"Hmm, feels neutral I guess. How do you feel, Hirata? Aren't you together with Karuizawa?"

Kiyotaka threw the ball towards Hirata with a very innocent 'curious' question as all he received was a weak, tired smile from the boy, who looked a little unsure on how to answer the question.

'Now what will you do, now that I threw you under the bus, Hirata? Will you be surprised and blurt out something weird which might put not only yours but Karuizawa's dignity in peril ... or will you answer this with composure and protect both of your reputations.'

"Umm, me and Karuizawa-san are not together anymore, Ayanokouji-kun. We broke up tonight, actually."

"Heh?!!"

All the boys except for Kiyotaka looked at him with a slightly shocked and bewildered expression.

"Why is that?! Did something happen, Hirata? Who caused this break-up? Want me to beat them up?!"

Like the musclehead he was, Sudou immediately punched his palm with an angry look on his face, as he was ready to start a fight for his friend, not taking in the thought that there doesn't need to be a serious conflict behind the parting of 2 people.

"Nothing at all, Sudou-kun. You don't have to get riled up hehe. It was a mutual decision and we are still close friends."

"I see, I see."

With a deep sigh of relief, Sudou sat down as Hirata looked genuinely happy that someone actually cared for him.

'I've noticed one thing about Ken all this time. He may look unapproachable or someone violent, which is I mean, not completely wrong ... but once he gets attached to a person, platonically or romantically ... he holds a deep sense of care for them, and is ready to go on a war for the wellbeing of his friends, like an absolute warrior. If his so-called 'defect' gets completely repaired, Ken Sudou without a doubt would be one of the most powerful assets in my arsenal without a shadow of doubt.'

With that, the waiter served the other three boys their dishes as they quietly started indulging themselves in them, while engaging in small meaningless talks about how their day went, who did what and if something funny happened regarding one of their classmates.

This was the ultimate peace Kiyotaka was looking for. A sense of tranquillity and peace where no one has to worry about hurting

someone's feelings or have any twisted motive behind their words.

However, much to his annoyance, his candid space of serenity was immediately broken as the sound of his notification disturbed the atmosphere.

Akito immediately smirked at Kiyotaka who just rolled his eyes in response.

"Busy schedule strikes again, huh?"

"Real funny, Akito. You made the whole gang laugh •_•"

Kiyotaka's sarcastic comments contrasting with his bored, unbothered expression made the situation look hilarious without any reasons as they stifled their laughs.

The Leader of Class-D took out his phone and released a small sigh as he looked at the person who texted him.

hashimoto :

Hello boss. Am I bothering you at the moment?

me :

I am having dinner at the moment. Is there any particular reason you are texting me?

hashimoto :

I apologise for disturbing you while you were having dinner. But after that, would you mind meeting up with me in my hotel room? I will text you the number.

me :

Is this Sakayanagi's order? Or are you inviting me to hang out with you?

hashimoto :

Although, I would be ecstatic in just hanging out with you, unfortunately this is Princess's orders just like you predicted. So, it's a serious matter.

me :

Very well. I'll be coming soon. *Sigh* you Class-A guys are quite troublesome, you know?

hashimoto :

I'll take that as a compliment.

me :

It wasn't a compliment, but whatever.

●♠♥♦♣♠♦♥♠●

'This is the room, correct? The number Hashimoto texted me matches it.'

Kiyotaka soon rang the doorbell as he heard the sound of footsteps coming from the other side of the door. Soon the door opened as he was greeted to a sight of a smirking Hashimoto, who immediately bowed down to his 'boss' resulting in the brown haired boy to roll his eyes.

"How are you boss? This is our first time talking face to face, ever since the Island Exam, right? Congratulations on the result, by the way. I guess princess, indeed was correct after all. You really are special."

"I appreciate your compliments, spy-kun. You did a fantastic job as well to be honest. It's because of your work that Class-A lost 120 points, I assume that Sakayanagi is quite pleased with the results?"

"Such words from you mean a lot. As for your question, we still haven't come in any contact with princess. She instructed me to have your presence when she calls me. Which is why I requested your presence in the first place. Please come inside. There is one more person inside who also works for princess."

"Thanks for having me."

"Wait for a bit. I'll call Princess real quick."

With that, Hashimoto moved to his side while Kiyotaka entered the room. The first thing he noticed was the presence of a purple haired beautiful girl, whose hair was arranged in a side ponytail.

I see. Wasn't she the one who was holding the umbrella for Sakayanagi that day?

As soon as their eyes met, all she did was send a small nod towards Kiyotaka's direction as a way of greeting, to which he nodded back as he sat on Hashimoto's bed, maintaining a small distance with the purple haired girl, not wanting to make her uncomfortable.

'She is a quiet one, huh? Should I introduce myself to her? Will it bother her? She doesn't look like she is a talker.'

Being trapped in a mental dilemma, Kiyotaka slightly glanced at his acquaintance, who was surfing through her phone with a bored look on her face. As their eyes met for a slight second, Kiyotaka gazed away from her, resulting in her releasing a small sigh.

"I am Kamuro Masumi from Class-A. What's your name?"

The girl, named Kamuro, tucked her purple hair behind her ear and gave him a very tiny smile, trying to appear approachable, to which Kiyotaka mentally thanked the girl for saving him from this situation.

"Ayanokouji Kiyotaka from Class-D. Nice to meet you, Kamuro."

"Ayanokouji huh? You are quite the famous guy, you know? That loli never stops talking about you. Whenever I go near her, all I hear are your name along with phrases like 'fate', 'destiny', 'meant to be.' "

"For real?"

"For real."

"She sounds like an obsessed stalker."

"An annoying one at that."

"An annoying and a short one at that."

"An annoying, short and a crippled one at that."

An amused smirk crept up on Kamuro's face as she finally found a person who actually had the guts to roast that damn loli unlike all her other spineless classmates who are scared of that damned cripple for no reason.

Well not like she could talk much, since she is literally in the palm of that Loli's hands as well. In a way, it was ironic of her.

"You are the first person to actually insult that cripple, Ayanokouji."

"Did you not check the mirror? You started the show."

"I mean other than me. Not scared of her hearing you?"

"Is there something to be scared of about her?"

His words caused her to fall silent as she silently nodded to him, her smirk getting a tad bit wider, because of his eccentric yet fearless words.

"You sure are confident, aren't you?"

Kamuro let out a teasing smirk however all he got in response was a blank look and a nonchalant shrug.

"Am I supposed to be nervous about a person who doesn't have the ability to defeat me?"

"....."

'I see. Is this undying confidence the reason that the loli is interested in you? Cuz your words certainly makes you a little intriguing in my eyes.'

"Fufufu those are quite some bold words that you said, Ayanokouji-kun."

'Oh shit.'

End of Chapter 84

Words : 3044

College has been a living hell It's so boring lmao. Not gonna lie me and my girlfriend were actually excited to attend college, but its just so ... dead. And the worse part is the travelling ngl. The buses are so crowdy and it takes such a long time to reach home.

My free time is gone just like that. It took nearly three days to complete this chapter while it usually takes only three hours 🐼🐼.

Hopefully I can still continue to update without delaying too much.

Anyways hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.

●♠♥♦♣♠♥♠●

●♠♥♦♣♠♦♥■●

Chapter 85 : Alliance

Season 4 : Chapter 8

"Fufufufufu those are quite some bold words that you said, Ayanokouji-kun."

As soon as she heard that soft voice of one Sakayangi Arisu, all the initial sass of Kamuro Masumi instantly disappeared as her eyes slightly widened in shock at the fact that the 'loli' might have heard all the trash-talk these two were doing against her.

She looked at Kiyotaka with a slightly panicked expression, however her face turned into that of surprise as she didn't notice any change in expression in the face of the Leader of Class-D. Just like usual, he was gazing at the face of Arisu Sakayanagi with a calm, composed expression on his face.

"Sakayangi ... Good evening. How are you doing?"

"Fufufufu exchanging pleasantries right after being caught red-handed insulting me? How daring of you, Ayanokouji-kun."

"It was never my intention to insult you. However if you did get offended by it, then apologies."

'Dude You don't sound apologetic at the slightest.'

"You don't have to ask for my forgiveness, fufufu. However I must warn you about one thing, Ayanokouji-kun. I don't like to be called a 'cripple'. Although you were not the person who said that, I still thought that it would be a good idea to let you know. Please keep that in mind."

Sakayanagi looked straight into the eyes of Kamuro Masumi with a smug grin on her face as she was saying those words, making the other Class-A students slightly shiver. The reason for this sudden shivering was not Arisu's ever-present smug smile, however. It was the hostile glare she was directing towards Kamuro while keeping her smirk.

Not wanting to show her uncomfortableness, the purple haired girl clicked her tongue before looking away, while Hashimoto chuckled in nervousness.

"Hehe ... my apologies for barging in both of your privacy like that. But princess wanted to eavesdrop on your conversation, so I had to follow her orders."

"Fufufufu, don't use the word 'eavesdrop' Hashimoto-kun. All I was doing was collecting some information. And it seems like I got

more than enough after catching a certain lady snitching about my daily affairs. Oh, how are you doing, Masumi-san? I didn't register your presence till now."

With an extremely polite and cute smile, Sakayangi waved towards Kamuro who just wanted to kill herself.

"So what did you want to discuss, Sakayanagi?"

"Oh? Right. First of all, I want to congratulate you in this huge victory, Ayanokouji Kiyotaka-kun. To lower down such a big difference from other classes in just One Special Exam is quite a feat in my opinion."

"I appreciate your praise, I guess. But I did nothing that remarkable. This guy over here was a huge help as well. If anything, he deserves more praise than me."

Kiyotaka pointed towards Hashimoto, immediately causing the blonde haired boy in sputter in surprise before he let out a small smirk.

"Of course, how can I not praise Hashimoto-kun He did a fantastic job, after all."

"Hehe, it was nothing at all. Thank you for your kind words, princess."

"No no, the one who should be thankful, is me. After all, even after seeing my weakness, you placed your trust in me and did this much work, just so I could take the throne from Katsuragi-kun. If someone should be grateful, it should be me."

While Hashimoto and Sakayanagi were talking with another, Kiyotaka sat beside Kamuro, who was fiddling with her phone while wearing a scowl on her face.

"Jealous that the Snake is getting praised by your leader and not you?"

All he received in response was a small scoff as Kamuro dropped her phone on the bed, before side glancing at the brown haired boy, as she whispered in a low voice not wanting Sakayangi to hear her words.

"Jealous? Bitch please. I would rather kill myself than be chummy with that rotten hearted bitch. That stupid snake doesn't even realise that the 'loli' is just emotionally manipulating him in order to keep a leash on him.

She realised that just getting hold on someone's secret is not enough to keep them in check. So she is now trying to sweet-talk him into loyalty. And the simp over there is just further falling into her trap as she strokes his ego time and time again with her 'pleasant' praise."

"I don't think that's the case though."

"Huh?! What do you mean?"

Kamuro narrowed her eyes in confusion, as Kiyotaka continued all the while keeping his gaze on the figure of Hashimoto who was happily receiving all the praise, Sakayanagi was dushing towards him.

"From the times I talked with him, and the way he talks and acts, I can say one thing. Hashimoto is anything but a gullible guy. In my opinion, he also knows that Sakayanagi is manipulating him, but he is playing along with it, since he knows that Sakayanagi is someone superior to him, and trusting on her would give him a ticket to victory. Hashimoto is a shrewd and selfish person. In order to trap him, just sweet talking won't be enough."

"I see. How can you assess more of his character than his own classmates, by the way? What kind of freak are you?"

"Hey now ... that's just mean. All it takes is a good eye and having some experience on reading people."

"Well, whatever."

"What a way to kill the conversation. Congratulations."

"Not like you could've carried the convo on your own. Also I don't want to be caught by the damn loli again."

Taking his eyes off the beautiful purple head, Kiyotaka then directed his gaze back towards his phone as his eyes met Sakayanagi's, as she gave him a small smile.

"What is it, Ayanokouji-kun? Do you have something to say?"

"I would like to know why did you call me to partake in the discussions between you and your subordinates."

Kamuro immediately clicked her tongue in annoyance at being called the subordinate of Arisu, whereas the lilac haired girl just giggled at her pawn's frustration, like the absolute sadist she was.

"First of all, I mainly called you here to congratulate you on that incredible victory. However, my main motive was to form a temporary alliance, Ayanokouji-kun. What do you say?"

Kiyotaka raised his eyebrows in curiosity for a second, before his stoic expression returned back to it's former shelf.

"Alliance huh? But didn't you want to compete against me? Don't think I didn't notice the texts where you wrote **'I'll defeat you'** during late night, but deleted them in a second. Nothing gets past me."

A small shade of light pink formed on Sakayanagi's face as she blushed in embarrassment having being caught in her late night chuunibyou faze, however soon she got rid of the look of embarrassment and replaced with a small, smug grin, all the while trying her best to ignore the loud continuous laughter coming from Kamuro and the occasional chuckles from Hashimoto.

"Hahahahah, I told you Ayanokouji. That loli is an absolute

freak!!! She is literally obsessed with you."

"Looks like I need to get a couple of bodyguards huh? What do you say you two? Wanna ditch Sakayanagi and join my clas-"

"YES!!!!!"

Without even wasting a second, Kamuro immediately jumped up from the bed with an excited look on her face while staring at Kiyotaka with pleading eyes as if she was saying '**please save me from this small menace.**'

However unlike Kamuro, like the absolute sly snake he was, Hashimoto actually looked like he was in deep thought, something which didn't go unnoticed by the Second Leader of Class-A.

"Ayanokouji-kun ... I would request you to please not poach my classmates at the moment fufufu. Also Masumi-san, you look way too eager to ditch me. Why is that? Was I not good to you?"

"Oh shush you damn loli. You made my life he-hmpph!!!"

"Now now Kamuro, that's not how one should talk their leader, right? Quiet down."

It seemed like Hashimoto wore the Hirata cape as he tried to be the peacemaker in this situation, not wanting to further deviate from the main topic.

"Fufufu thank you for the assist, Hashimoto-kun. Now as we were saying, what do you think about this temporary alliance of ours, Ayanokouji-kun?"

"I need some details. Explain everything. At one time, you declare yourself as my rival, but now you want my class to team up with your faction. What is your motive?"

"My motive is to tear down the leadership and reputation of Katsuragi-kun to the point that he can't be seen as an actual credible leader by his own supporters. And of course, I can do this all by myself but where's the fun in that?"

Throughout my whole life, because of my lack of physical abilities, all source of my entertainment came from mental stuff. And my main goal in this school is to find some entertainment and fierce competition which can fulfill that wish of mine. And there is no one better than the 'False Genius' to play the role of the antagonist in my dream world. That's why I want to join hands with you to destroy not only Katsuragi-kun's reign but other classes as well ... before the entire Warfield is between just the two of us."

'False Genius? What does she mean by that? I don't think it's a good decision to ask her about that in front of Kamuro and Hashimoto. We need to talk face to face, all alone for such candid discussion.'

"So ... your goal is to destroy not only destroy Katsuragi's reign, but also weaken Class-B and C, and you give me this proposal, with me getting the liberty of having my competitions get weakened

even further, am I correct?"

"Straight to the mark."

"I see. I'm sorry Sakayanagi, but I am a pretty greedy guy. Just this one advantage is not enough for me to accept this alliance of yours. Do you have something better to offer? Otherwise I would have to refuse your proposal."

"Fufufu, I expected this from you. That's why I also thought about another thing to add on top of that."

"Hoh? And what is it?"

"While we are in a temporary alliance, you can make use of Masumi-san and Hashimoto-kun whenever you want for your schemes without my permission."

Sakayanagi said that with a sadistic smirk on her face as Kamuro's eyes dilated in cold fury as she clenched her fists in frustration, as she muttered to herself.

"You have to be kidding me. Not one but now two?"

"Fufufu how is the deal, Ayanokouji-kun? Pretty good deal right? Both of my 'friends' are pretty efficient at their job, and you will soon see their uses once they warm up to you."

Kiyotaka slowly nodded to her words as Hashimoto clapped his hand once getting their attention.

"I don't mind working for boss. I already took notice of his abilities and I can confidently say that he is quite incredible. If in the end, working for him gets us an absolute victory, then I'm ready for it."

He ended his piece with a sparkling smile and a small thumbs up to which Sakayanagi started clapping for him in a cute manner, applauding him for his ambition.

"Well said, Hashimoto-kun. What about you Masumi-san? You seemed to have quite a good impression about Ayanokouji-kun. You don't have any problems right? Of course if you do agree, you have to take double shifts ... since I can't navigate without your help fufufu."

"For fucks sake Why do I always receive the short end of the stick every single time ... Does god hate me?"

"No ... I don't."

Kamuro slapped her head with a distressed look on her face as she is imagining the incoming headache future she will receive every single day.

"Looks like she is a little unsure. Would you mind if I try to change her mind, Sakayanagi?"

"Sure. Go ahead, Ayanokouji-kun."

From the other side of the screen, Sakayanagi Arisu watched with a faint giggle and an amused expression, as she saw her childhood

friend, the 'False Genius' of the Whiteroom, Ayanokouji Kiyotaka whispering something in the eyes of her plaything, Kamuro Masumi, whose depressed look immediately disappeared and was then replaced with a serious expression, as she whispered something back in his ear. Their exchange was quite amusing to the Class-A girl as she was wondering what the two were talking about

"Are you serious, Ayanokouji?"

"I never lie unnecessarily. So what I'm saying right now is truth. Work for me and if you satisfy my needs dutifully, I might save you from the grasps of Sakayanagi. Reject my offer, and find yourself in eternal despair of serving for her for these three years like her slave. The choice is yours, Kamuro."

"....."

"....."

" Very well, I accept."

With that both Kiyotaka and Kamuro shook hands, seeing which Sakayanagi once again started giggling in happiness and joy for some reason and Hashimoto smirked at the sight.

"Looks like Tsundere-chan got swayed by Boss's charm-"

"Fuck off, Hashimoto."

End of Chapter 85

Words : 3048

Nothing much to say today ... I'ma just go and vibe to the new Spy x Family Opening all day now that the chapter is done.

Hope you guys enjoyed it. See ya.



Chapter 86 : Odd

Season 4 : Chapter 9

Ayanokouji POV

Three days have passed since the inhabited island test. During these days, nothing that interesting or serious took place ... as most of the students spent their time chilling with their groups or playing games and stuff... or for some people sleeping all day.

Even though the exam ended three days prior, it seemed like there were still a couple of students who were still exhausted after their fight for survival.

With nothing much to do, I sat on one of the sunloungers as I took my shirt off, not wanting to miss the chance of getting melatonin on my body as well as to get some Vitamin-D ...

In front of me was quite the splendid side of the girls of Class-D and Class-B consisting of Ichinose, Kushida, Satou, Amikura and others, playing in the pool, all of them wearing bikinis or swimsuits. While they were lost in their activities, I couldn't help but notice the short bounces and jiggles that everytime they were moving, no matter how hard I tried

However, not like anyone would notice my 'curious' gaze, since even if I was looking at them, the bored look in my eyes will make it seem that I'm not interested.

Their self-esteem might get destroyed by that, but hey, at least I won't be framed as a pervert.

Well, can someone blame me though? After all, us boys still are little beasts and sexually active animals.

Beside me, a couple other boys were also looking at the wet figures of the girls with dreamy expression on their faces.

Since it's a luxurious ship, which is most probably going to be a once in a lifetime experience for most of the students here, they found themselves further indulged in their fantasy of being a couple with a beautiful girl.

Hey, I mean ... it's not out of the option though. If people were to fall in love here, it wouldn't be that strange in my eyes.

Besides that, I heard a couple of rumours that students were apparently hooking up with each other secretly ... and that around nineteen couples were born in this cruise ship. Quite the number I must say.

However, doing dirty stuff in the ship, it takes quite some balls to do that, I must say. Respect to whoever you are.

My mind immediately went back to what happened between me and Suzune in her room back then as I released a small sigh ...

That doesn't count as dirty stuff right?

"Ooh Ichinose-san is sooo hot Her boobs are moving everywhere!!!"

Disturbing me from my thoughts, my gaze went towards the two disgusting creatures who were sitting in the ground beneath my feet, while drooling over the girls. It was none other than Ike and Yamauchi.

I almost forgot their presence since they were quiet. Can someone zip their mouth please? I wish they always stayed quiet.

"Forget about Ichinose-san. Look at Kikyou-chan, Haruki!! She looks so cuuute!!!"

As if sensing their disgusting gaze upon her, in the midst of playing, Kushida turned towards the both of them and gave them a small wave, immediately resulting in them roaring in excitement wearing dumb smiles on their faces.

"Did you see that, Haruki? She waved at me!"

"What are you talking about? It was me to whom she waved. Don't imagine such unrealistic things Ike."

"Oh please. The only unrealistic thing here is your ego, which makes you believe that you can pull a girl with that sort of looks."

Oof ... Now that one there was a violation, personally I wouldn't have it.

Yamauchi's face turned red in anger, however before he could yell anything further, I lightly tapped him on his head with my foot, causing him to look at me in confusion.

"I'm pretty exhausted, and I want to chill. If you guys want to fight, why don't you do it somewhere else and not disturb me."

"Huh? Why should we go? This spot doesn't have your nam-hmpph"

Before Yamauchi could finish his rant, Ike immediately covered his face with a troubled expression, before showing me a small, nervous smile.

"Shut up Haruki. Umm we apologise for disturbing you, Ayanokouji-kun. We will go somewhere else."

Without waiting any further, the brown haired boy started dragging Yamauchi away from me, ignoring all the complaints coming their way.

"They are as infuriating as usual, huh?"

I looked up only to find his raven haired girlfriend, Horikita Suzune walking towards his direction while wearing a black

coloured swimsuit, her hair this time instead of being decorated in her usual braids, was flowing freely. Her outfit was quite provocative I must say ... not like I was complaining.

As her eyes met mine, she let out a small smirk as she turned around intentionally giving me a small view of her back, before sitting down on my lap as she wrapped my arms around her body, just beneath her breasts before she leaned over me, making herself comfortable.

[Had to crop out the remaining version of the picture, so that Wattpad doesn't force a mature tag on this book xD]

Hey now, this is just plain exploiting. Just because I agreed to be your boyfriend, doesn't make me your portable chair, you devil.

While I was cursing out the Second Best Horikita in my thoughts, she was still adjusting herself as my hands unconsciously grazed upon her perfectly ramen shaped bowls

Hey, maybe it's not that bad

Suzune immediately turned back to me with narrowed eyes and an annoyed look on her face.

Wait, did she realise that I was talking about her in my thoughts? Woman's intuition is scary after all ... I still can't believe that Karuizawa of all people, yesterday read my mind and immediately chose the panda key-chain as she told me that she knew that I would choose that exact one.

Like ... how in the actual hell that someone like Karuizawa read my mind. Masterpiece of the Whiteroom being bested by that gyaru? Old man would be ashamed.

Horikita's glare intensified even more as she poked on my shoulders with her sharp nails, bringing me out of my thoughts.

"What's up?"

"We can't have a simple conversation if a certain someone thinks that it is cool for him to go into a monologue instead of answering my question."

"....."

"....."

"What was the question again?"

Suzune let out a tired sigh before looking at me with a disappointed gaze as if I was nothing but a piece of trash.

"sigh I was asking if the both of them were acting as infuriating like they usually do."

"Well, not as much as they used to. Yamauchi appears to still be in his rebellious phase, but Ike seems to be behaving a little better than he used to. Albeit it's small, it's progress nevertheless in my eyes. Also, Ike did quite a good job in the Island Exam... so you can

say, he is kind of in my okay grace for now."

"Hm, I guess By the way, I don't appreciate the way you were looking at the bodies of the girls over there, Kiyotaka-kun. Should I be scared that I might get cheated on?"

With a small scowl on her face, Suzune's eyes found themselves being drawn towards the huge bosom of Ichinose Honami of Class-B, before she looked down at her own pair of mounds.... her scowl increasing even more.

I guess, in spite of being nearly perfect at everything she does and getting over some bad memories, she still has some insecurities about herself.

"Well don't worry about that, Suzune. In my opinion big sizes are overrated. Medium is premium, you know?"

"The way you are discussing about breast sizes in front of me so shamelessly is giving me the chills. "

"Hey, you were the one who started the conversation."

I was just trying to ease your worries, you devil. Don't try to portray me as a pervert for god's sake. Give me my good will back asap.

"Anyways ... What is your opinion on our situation right now?"

"What do you mean?"

"I mean ... isn't it kind of unusual that we are getting a whole week break now. I mean if you look at it from simple terms, the school is rewarding us with the vacation after the Island Exam but this is no normal school, is it? The fact that we are getting a whole week break is kind of suspicious in my eyes."

Suzune's narrowed eyes started scheming throughout the whole area while she appeared to be in deep thought. However, for some reason, her scrutinizing expression turned into that of fury as she started glaring at some of the boys who were sneakily trying to take a peek at her, alongside the other girls. As soon as they saw her ice cold glare, they immediately turned around in fear, before nervously laughing to themselves.

"Disgusting perverts. It seems like other classes have these types of boys as well."

"I mean, not like I blame them. If someone sees a beauty, their eyes automatically find themselves being drawn towards that unconsciously."

Suzune lightly blushed at my compliment, before clicking her tongue for some reason.

"Are you trying to justify yourself for being caught perving on Ichinose-san?"

"Hey now, both of us know that it's not true. I was just watching their game it's not my fault that their breasts get in the wa-"

I stopped myself from speaking any further as Horikita's raven hair shadowed her eyes before she looked at me with a sadistic gaze.

I immediately grabbed both sides of my neck so that Neko-kita wouldn't sink her teeth into mine and give me any more hiccups.

"Kiyotaka-kun ... to regret in suffering or to regret in despair? Which one would you choose?"

What will you do huh? Your only attack is now guarded by me. You are tactless now.

"How about neither-"

I immediately felt a small burning sensation on my chest as I looked down, only to find Devil-kita lightly pinching my nipple with a wild smirk on her face.

"I guess you chose to regret in suffering then."

"Ow ☹"

●♠♥♦♣♠♦♥♠●

After hanging out with Suzune in the pool, both of us decided to part ways while agreeing on meeting each other during lunch. As I was walking inside the halls, towards my hotel room, I came across one peculiar yet intriguing sight in front of me.

There were wet stains throughout the whole corridor as a certain someone was walking through the halls with his dripping wet body. He was wearing nothing but a small, tight speedo as he was walking gracefully with relaxed steps as if he had all the time in the world.

"S-sir! This is a problem for us, if you walk through the corridor while you're wet!"

One of the members staff, noticing the emergency situation of my peculiar classmate, rushes down to talk to him. The staff was already carrying a towel in his hands, as if he's always been carrying it for situations like this. Quite adaptable, I must say.

"Ha Ha Ha. It looks like you've found me"

"Yes, sir. It's the fourth time I've found you like this. I've told you countless times before but please wipe your body off before returning to the ship. D-doing something like this will greatly inconvenience the other guests"

Poor staff-kun. It seems like he already has his hands full with just one person. However for purging all the evils, at least one person should always be used as a scapegoat or a bait. It seems like you are the person chosen for the task this time staff-kun. Gambare gambare ♡•

"I make it a principle to never wipe my body down."

Kouenji said while water droplets dripped from his whole body. Suddenly he stopped walking before smirking towards the towel handed staff.

"Huh? ... uh I do have a notebook and a pen."

"Do you know that the signature of a celebrity can unexpectedly have a premium price, sometimes being worth tens of millions abroad?"

Not responding to the staff's ignorant question, Koenji snatched the pen and notepad from his hands.

"W-What is this?"

Do not make me look like a fool, I am the man who will carry Japan's future on his back in the future. As thanks for helping me, I will allow you to work on a much larger luxury ship then. One large enough to make this one look like a commoner's ship."

However it seemed like, unlike me, the elder man didn't think of it that way ... as he dejectedly looked back at the floor with a tired gaze as the dripping wet Koenji walked away from him all the while boisterously laughing to himself.

Words : 3226

Anyways I hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya :D



Chapter 87 : No Time to Rest

Season 4 : Chapter 10

"Suzune That's not how you start the game."

"Huh? Why? What is wrong with my move?"

"Everything."

After having their lunch, Kiyotaka and Horikita walked inside her room, as they started playing chess, just to cure their overlooming sense of boredom. Although the black haired girl looked confident and was smirking at the thought of defeating Ayanokouji in at least one thing, the initial excitement of hers died down immediately after 2 back to back losses within 4 moves and 8 moves respectively.

The fact that Airi Sakura, the little sister of the group, was spectating the game and was witnessing Suzune's humiliating back to back defeats soured her mood even more.

Ironic fact being that, the so-called 'little sister' of the group was four days older than Kiyotaka himself.

"What happened, Suzune? It looks like you are a little annoyed? Did the constant back to back losses hurt your shallow pride? I told you not to challenge me, did I?"

It seemed like all this practice of Kiyotaka to mimic Satou's foxy tone finally came to use as despite his boring, monotonous voice, he somehow was able to draw the end syllables of his words in a teasing tone, immediately irking his raven haired girlfriend, who looked back at him with an irritated look.

"..... I think it would be a safe decision for you to keep that mouth of yours shut, Kiyotaka-kun. Otherwise who knows, after your nipple, what might come in danger next."

With an ice cold glare, Suzune's eyes quickly directed towards his crotch, as the masterpiece of the Whiteroom, in spite of his inhumane feats and records, couldn't help but lightly shiver at the thought of having his manhood being attacked.

"N-now now both of you, calm down. Horikita-san, there is no need to be h-hostile correct? A-also Kiyotaka-kun, stop antagonising her."

As if she was the reincarnation of the Great Monk Hirata Yosuke, Sakura tried to calm the atmosphere with her meek voice as the glowering Horikita lowered the intensity behind her glare, still

narrowing her eyes at her boyfriend.

"Your wish is my command, Sakura-sama. I won't antagonise this devil anymore."

"Who are you calling a devil? If there is a person befitting of a title which screams evil, it should go to someone like you, Mr. Text-to-speech."

'Ok ... now that's just plain rude. Just because I can't talk like you guys, you had to violate me like that? Personally I wouldn't have such level of disrespect.'

"Big talk coming from someone who moved her queen four times in the opening stages of the game. And you had the audacity to act like a smartass."

"I never played chess seriously. I tried looking for tutorials once, in order to impress nii-san with my skills, however it didn't result in anything."

Going on a tangent, Horikita muttered to herself, before she realised that Kiyotaka was not the only person present in the room, immediately making her cringe in embarrassment as Sakura let out an awkward smile.

"H-horikita-san surely likes her brother, huh?"

"She is a bro-con for real. I'm telling you, Sakura. Sometimes I feel that she might-"

However, before he could say anything further, Horikita took out her trusty compass, before facing it right in front of him with a sickly sweet smile on her face.

"I dare you to finish the sentence, Kiyotaka-kun."

"

"That's right. You should know the limitations of your jokes. Good boy, good boy."

As if she was a satisfied mother, the raven haired ice queen of Class-D started patting Kiyotaka's head, while he stared back at her with an uninterested gaze.

However their interactions came to a halt, as all three of their phones started buzzing at the same time, immediately making the three Class-D students look at each other's face for a second, before they nodded to one another and took out their phone.

Co-incidentally, an announcement started over the ship's speakers at the same time.

"This is an announcement to all students, you will have received a mail to your phones earlier. Check the contents of the mail and follow those instructions closely. If you have not received the mail, please contact your nearest available faculty member. This is a very important announcement so please make sure to not miss it. I repeat-"

As the speaker repeated the message one more time, Sakura and Horikita pretty much huddled next to Kiyotaka, one sitting on his lap, while the other leaning her whole body on his shoulders.

'Sigh Why do these girls like to make me their portable cushion? I am the Masterpiece of the Whiteroom for god's sake ... Masterpiece.. more like the master-bed for these girls to take a rest on ...

Okay, that was a terrible joke. It seems like I really have a zero percent sense of humor. This makes me want to cry. But alas, I can't even do that.'

"It seems that the speaker is talking about this mail, correct?"

"I think so."

Without waiting any further, all three of them opened the link to the dropbox where the mail was sent to them. The message which was written there was :

「A special examination will be starting soon. Gather at the designated time in the designated rooms. Students who are more than 10 minutes late for the meeting will receive a penalty. Go to room 204 on the second floor by 18:00 today. Since there is only 20 minutes left until then, please wash your hands and keep your phone in silent mode or turn it off entirely.」

'Another special test, huh? This is way too different than what they did with the Island Exam ... neither this seems like it would be similar to an usual exam. Well, I guess expecting the unexpected seems to be a motto in this institution. Only 20 minutes left, huh? We need to go quickly.'

"Kiyotaka-kun, can I see your mail?"

"Sure."

Both Kiyotaka and Suzune exchanged their phones as they read each other's messages, trying to find the slightest difference between them. The entire basic structure was the same, however there was one distinguishable feature. While, in Kiyotaka's mail, the gathering time was 18:00, in Horikita's mail it was 20:40.

"What's your timing, Airi?"

"Mine is 19:20 ... in room 205."

"Looks like both of you still have some time to prepare yourself."

"Not like we can do much. We have no idea what kind of 'test' this is. The most we can do is discuss with our classmates who got the same gathering time with us."

Hearing Horikita's words, Sakura nervously gulped to herself.

'Despite hanging out with us ever since Sudou's trial, she still feels socially anxious around unknown strangers. I understand her discomfort.'

Horikita also noticed that look on Sakura's face and couldn't help but sympathise with the pink haired girl.

'Hmm, the specific time given is 18:00. Should I wait outside till then, or should I just walk inside?'

Maybe the meeting might start early if everyone is present. So it doesn't hurt to go inside early, I guess.'

He knocked on the door 3 times, quickly getting a reply of 'Enter'. As he stepped inside the room, Kiyotaka registered the presence of the Homeroom Teacher of Class-A, Mashima-Sensei, who just gave him a short, curt nod as a greeting. Kiyotaka's eyes drew towards the other two males students who were sitting before Mashima-Sensei. One of them was none other than his friend Hideo Sotomura, while the other one was Yukimura Teruhiko.

As soon as Sotomura saw Kiyotaka walking inside the room, it was as if his previous nervousness disappeared as he let out a small chuckle.

"Ku ku so one of the two students in our group was none other than my best friend Ayanokouji-dono."

"Good evening to you as well, Professor."

Both of them exchanged a small nonchalant fistbump, to which Sotomura started grinning to himself while muttering about 'Their fistbump being the ultimate proof of being bros.'

"Good evening Yukimura. Good evening to you as well, Mashima-Sensei."

The other two people in the room responded to his greeting with similar words, as the brown haired boy quietly sat down in the opposite direction of Yukimura and Professor.

'There is an empty chair beside me, which means that there should be one more person joining our group. Seeing the arrangement of the three of us and Sakura, Ken and Chiaki being together in one group, there is no doubt that all the groups are separated by their respective classes. I wonder who the last person in our group will be. Hopefully it's not someone like Shinohara or Yamauchi...'

"There should be one more person who will be joining us, we will quietly wait for them to arrive first."

With that all the four males in the room sat in an uncomfortable silence, a number of questions and queries going through their mind.

Yukimura who looked sceptical of all of this, wanted to open his mouth and ask something to his Leader, however he refrained from letting his voice out.

Soon, as the clock hand struck 17:59 a small knock could be heard on the other side of the door. All of them looked towards the direction of the door, as Mashima-Sensei once again told the person on the other side of the door to Enter.

'Please not Yamauchi, Shinohara

Please not Yamauchi, Shinohara....'

"Excuse me."

As if his prayers were answered, a recognisable voice could be heard as the person who entered the room was none other than Karuizawa Kei. She awkwardly smiled at Sotomura who was waving at her like a madman, before slightly narrowing her eyes at Yukimura, a person she was not that big of a fan of ... after their constant quarrels in the Island.

Soon, she registered the presence of Ayanokouji and let out a small sigh of relief before sitting on the empty chair beside him, before whispering in his ear.

"Would you look at that? I'm one minute early. Aren't I awesome?"

"Want me to gift you the Eiffel Tower as a reward for your incredible hard work of coming one minute early, oh mighty Karuizawa Kei?"

"Bleggghhh."

All she did was teasingly showing him her tongue with a mocking expression before Mashima-Sensei coughed in his hand, bringing back the serious atmosphere of the room, as all the four students directed their attention towards him.

"Sotomura, Yukimura, Karuizawa, Ayanokouji. I will start explaining the rules of the special exam now. From here on out, this marks the start of the **Zodiac Exam**. "

End of Chapter 87

Words : 3019

Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya :D



Chapter 88 : "Zodiac"

Season 4 : Chapter 11

As soon as Mashima-Sensei said the word 'Special Exam', Karuizawa raised her hand with an inquisitive expression on her face.

'Please don't be a dumb question like why am in a group filled with boys and not with my friends or stuff like that. Please ask something in topic. I don't want to deal with the second hand embarrassment.'

"What is it, Karuizawa?"

"I'm sorry if I appear rude, but what do you mean by Special Exam? Weren't you the one who told us that we can enjoy our remaining week freely after the Island test? So, how come we get such last minute news of another test happening?"

Karuizawa started off with a barrage of questions, which was most probably subtly in everyone's mind.

"I understand your frustrations, however I'm not liable to answer your questions as of now. So keep quiet and sit down, as I start explaining the rules of the Special Test."

With a stern glare, Mashima-Sensei addressed Karuizawa, making her quietly go back to her initial position, before slightly shifting her chair closer towards Kiyotaka.

'It seems like the rumours about Mashima-Sensei were in fact true. Unlike Chabashira-sensei, who is moderately relaxed and someone who preferred to teach leniently and with calmness, Mashima-Sensei appeared to be a teacher who was cold, strict, flat and indecisive in his tone.'

"In this special exam, all the 1st year students will be divided up into groups based on their zodiac signs and the entirety of the examination will be conducted in groups of students sharing the same zodiac sign like the four of you here. The purpose of the test is to assess your 'thinking ability'.

There are three required attributes that people who function well in society are required to master: Action, Thinking and Teamwork. These skills are necessary for you all to become successful adults. The last test on the island emphasised teamwork quite heavily, however, this one will emphasise your thinking.

The ability to critically think, analyse the situation at hand and resolve the problem given will be tested in this exam. The ability to

work creatively with imagination and work determinedly towards resolving the problem, such traits will become vital for this task. Therefore this exam will be conducted with 12 groups split up according to their zodiac signs and the exam will occur under those conditions.

Any questions?"

Just like before, Karuizawa once again raised her hand with the intention of clearing her query.

'It seems like she truly wants to participate in the exam and actually do something of her own merit, instead of relying on others. I don't know how much she will be successful in this, but I like the fact that she wants to work for the class, even if it is for her own sake.'

"You just said that this exam will be split into 12 groups. So, why are there only four of us here? Shouldn't there be more?"

'Good question. It was on my mind as well. The whole exam is split between 12 groups. Which means all classes should be split into 3 groups each. By simple calculation, each group should at least have 13 or 14 students. But it seems to be not the case. So I wonder how exactly they will make it work.'

"Firstly, the four people here will henceforth be considered part of the same group for the remainder of the exam. There are other rooms with other students too, receiving the same explanation you are receiving now. Some of them might later also become part of your team."

Hearing these words coming out of Sensei's mouth, Kiyotaka raised his hands with a curious look, as the other three students looked at him.

"What is it, Ayanokouji?"

"You said that there are other rooms where the students are receiving the same explanation. Does that mean that all the 160 students will be divided in around 40 sub-groups? Which may join together into 12 groups based on the 12 Zodiac signs?"

The other three's eyes slightly widened at the revelation as Mashima-Sensei nodded at him for a second.

"Close but not accurate. There wouldn't be 40 sub-groups which might come together into 12, since if you calculate it, it will not make sense. That's why given the number of students and the twelve Zodiac signs, we decided to put 3-5 students from each class in groups. 4 students per class is not a constant number. But good observation nevertheless."

"I assume that the groups coming together means that they will be from different classes, correct? Because if they were from the same class, you could've told us that together, instead of separating us."

"Correct."

"W-wait a minute. Does that mean we have to team up with other classes?! But that doesn't really make sense. Aren't they supposed to be our enemy in a sense?"

"I agree with Karuizawa, Sensei. So far we've been only competing against other classes. It's hard to believe that we are supposed to abandon all of that and start working together all of a sudden."

'Even if I agree with both of your sentiments, not that it matters much, since even if you both refuse to accept the situation, not like you can do much about it, since it's the school that makes the rules.'

"Don't think that way, Yukimura, your high school life has just started. Don't always think about competing and be more thoughtful of the future."

"S-sorry about that."

"Right now you don't need to think about 'understanding' but simply to 'think'. The group you are assigned to is the zodiac sign (Rabbit). Here's the list of all the members assigned to this zodiac. You will be required to return the list when you leave the room so feel free to memorise the list if you wish."

A postcard sized piece of paper was passed between the four students. The name of the group (Rabbit) was written at the top, followed by the names of the fourteen students assigned to this group. And just like Mashima-Sensei said, the remaining students appeared to be from Classes A, B and C.

Zodiac : Rabbit

A-Class: Takemoto Shigeru, Machida Kouji, Morishige Takuro

B-Class: Ichinose Honami, Hamaguchi Tetsuya, Beppu Ryouta

C-Class: Ibuki Mio, Manabe Shiho, Yabu Nanami, Yamashita Saki

D-Class: Ayanokouji Kiyotaka, Karuizawa Kei, Sotomura Hideo, Yukimura Teruhiko

'Ibuki and Ichinose huh? I guess I would get at least some sort of company from the other classes and won't have to operate with complete strangers. However, just like Karuizawa and Yukimura, I also feel a little sceptical on how we can cooperate with the so-called thorns in our path to Class-A.'

"In this exam we will be completely ignoring any differences between classes A to D from the start. If you can do so too it will definitely be an easier path to clearing this exam. From this point onwards, you guys no longer belong to Class D but rather to the (Rabbit) group. Whether you pass or fail no longer matters in your class but in the entire 'group' as a whole now."

'I see. I think I'm starting to understand what this is about although I'm not certain about the bigger picture yet.'

"There are four outcomes in this exam, no more and no less. Explanations regarding this have also been printed onto paper for your perusal, however, you may not take them out of this room nor photograph them. So memorise them here if you wish to."

A slightly crumpled paper was paraded before the four of them where the basic rules of the exam were given as follows:

Explanation of the Special Examination of Different Groups.

In this test, the cornerstone will be a "target" student that is chosen from each group. By using your critical thinking skills, you will achieve one of the four possible outcomes by the end of the exam.

8am on the day the exam starts, you will need to mail the other groups of the fact that you have chosen a "target" student from amongst you.

The exam itself will mostly take place between 4pm and 9pm tomorrow (students will be free to act as they wish during the day).

- For one hour each day, twice, you will need to gather together with your assigned groups and talk.

- Content of the talk will be left up to the discretion of each group.

- At the end of the exam, you will need to identify the "target" students of other groups. This will be done between 9:30 and 10:00PM. Only one answer can be submitted from each group.

- The answers must be sent to faculty members through a certain address that will be provided to your mobile phones.

- The "target" student cannot be the one to send the answers.

- You must only answer the identity of the "target" student of the group you are assigned. Any other answer will be marked as invalid.

- Details of the results of the exam will be mailed to students by 11:00PM of the same day.

Those were the basic rules of the exam that one could see from the surface. Behind it were a lot of other sub rules and regulations which were not meant to be broken at any cost. There were four possible results of the test which were the following :

-Result 1: If the answers of the "target" student as well as the other group members are all correct, they will all receive private points (including members other than the "target" student themselves).

-Result 2: If there are incorrect answers or unanswered questions by people other than the "target" student, only the "target" student will receive 500,000 private points.

While Kiyotaka was reading through the page, Mashima-Sensei continued his explanation.

"For instance, let's just say Yukimura, you were chosen as the "target" student of this group. That means you must be the "target" student only since only one "target" is allowed for this exam. Now, supposing Yukimura is chosen as the "target" that means the (Rabbit) group's "target" name will be written down as Yukimura. Once the choosing is complete, simply share this with the other members of your assigned group. And between 9:30 and 10:00 PM at the end of the exam everyone in the group simply needs to mail the answer "Yukimura" to the faculty. If this is done, the first outcome condition will be satisfied and everyone in the group will receive 500,000 private points as compensation. In addition, the "target" student will receive 1 million private points for successfully guiding the group to this outcome." Mashima-sensei continued his explanation.

"W-woah!!"

"1-1 m-million?!"

'Of course for a big spender like Karuizawa, it would seem like a gift from heaven. However, I would lie if I say that I'm not tempted by that massive sum of points as well. As someone who only has around 178,000 points ... 1 million points really is tempting. Such a massive sum of points is something any class would want for themselves.'

"Now for the 2nd possible outcome. In the case that the identity of (Rabbit) group's "target" were to be uncovered incorrectly by the end of the exam and the faculty were to be notified of this. Only the "target" will be receiving the points of 500,000 while the rest will go without points."

'I see. So this outcome benefits only the target and no one else. I doubt someone would really want to go with this outcome instead of the guaranteed opportunity of getting 500,000 points. I guess the only reason someone would go for this outcome is so that other classes don't get any sort of points. Most probably the classmate of the "Target" will try to manipulate the situation.'

"The position of "target" certainly is an enviable one. I'd say it's even unfair to the other members. No matter the outcome we get, they'll still have points and in the first one they even get a million points!"

'It seems like this bimbo wants to be the target herself. There's literally dollar signs coming out of her eyes Sigh ... you are way too much of a shopaholic, Karuizawa.'

"Sensei, what are the 3rd and 4th possible outcomes? You still haven't explained it to us".

"Did you understand the first two outcomes? If so, I can proceed to explain the remaining outcomes."

"Yes...I've got it. Please tell us the remaining outcomes".

"The remaining outcomes are printed on the back of the paper, but be sure to wait before turning the paper over."

As Mashima-Sensei's sharp eyes glowered over the Class-D students ... they started reading the rules, Kiyotaka and Yukimura appearing to understand them while the "dumb" duo appeared to be scratching their heads, being overwhelmed with the amount of information.

"W-wait a minute. There are too many letters here. It's hard to follow."

"Very well, I shall explain slightly more. Have you ever played the Jinrou game before?"

"Jinrou game? It was trendy for a little while so I have played it before. It's pretty interesting."

'Jinrou game? Sigh... I feel like an old man who is out of touch with the younger generation.'

Apparently Karuizawa noticed Kiyotaka's puzzled expression and whispered in his ear.

"You didn't play the Jinrou game?"

"Unfortunately no. Never had the ability to do so."

I was never familiar with the concept of games, nor with the concept of playing with others before coming to this institution. Even when we play together, the only games me and Hideo play are some computer games ... since he finds board games "boring". I blame my lack of knowledge on you, Hideo. Take responsibility.'

Hearing Kiyotaka's reply, Karuizawa just looked at him sad, understanding eyes ... before looking back towards the teacher, not wanting to indulge herself in a depressing or uncomfortable conversation in front of others. However her eyes once again started darting towards Kiyotaka for a second, before she released a small sigh before looking at him.

"Don't worry. Let me explain the rules to you."

"Thanks."

"Friends gather together and are split up into two categories: villagers and wolves. And the last survivor's group is the one that wins the game. Did you follow?"

"Of course."

Karuizawa's face lit up in happiness as she realised that she actually taught someone something.

"So what did you realise after knowing the rules?"

"The only thing I realised is that, not only do you suck at studying but that a preschooler might teach me better than you did. What was that explanation? Go into details, miss."

Her excited expression immediately disappeared which was now surrounded by a depressive aura as the other two boys chuckled at

the blonde haired girl. Mashima-Sensei then started explaining the rules in more detail, which went like this :

It was an American who first invented this game called the Jinrou game. No restrictions on the number of players in the game although there is a restriction on the minimum number of players required for the game itself. The game itself has players divided into two roles: villagers and wolves and each player must play one of these roles. There may be additional roles added but the gist of the game is that the last survivor's group wins whether it's the villagers or the wolves. Wolves mix in with the villagers and pretend to be one of them. The game itself takes around roughly two hours and in that time, the villagers need to identify which one of them is a disguised wolf and execute the suspect. On the other hand, at "night", the disguised wolf can 'devour' the villager. By doing this, each side can reduce the number of players on the other side. When the last survivor is the only one remaining, victory and defeat will be decided.

'But I wonder why this exam would get compared with such a game? With the currently established rules, "wolves" and "villagers" are being forced to cooperate with each other instead to aim for the most desirable first outcome. To put it simply, there is still a trick hidden in this exam that neither "wolf" nor "villager" knows of yet.'

"Of course, you already know there can only be one "target" in the group. Once the identity of the "target" is revealed the third and fourth outcomes become possible for the group".

"And that...is what's written on the other side of this paper...is it ok to turn it over now?"

Mashima-sensei simply nods when Karuizawa asks that and together, all four of them turn the paper over to the other side. The remaining two possible outcomes were written there. For these two remaining outcomes, the answer will be accepted by the faculty at any time during the exam period in the 24 hours. The school will also still be accepting answers for these remaining outcomes 30 minutes after the end of the exam. But if there is still a mistake in the answer during these periods a penalty will apply.

-Result 3: In the case that someone other than the "target" answers the question before waiting for the allocated time and answers correctly, the class the answerer belongs to will receive 50 points each and the answerer themselves will receive 500,000 points for themselves. On the other hand, classes whose "target" have been identified will receive a penalty of -50 points for their whole class. Once this has been achieved, the test will be over for the group. However, if a member that belongs to the class of the "target" answers correctly, the previous result will be made invalid

and the examination for that group will continue.

– **Result 4:** In the case that someone other than the "target" answers the question before waiting for the allocated time and answers incorrectly, the class the answerer belongs to will receive a penalty of -50 points each but the "target" will still receive 50,000 private points. At the same time, the class to which the target belongs also obtains 50 class points. If the answer is given incorrectly, the group's exam will end. However, if a member belonging to the class of the "target" is the one who answered incorrectly, the answer will be considered invalid and will not be accepted.

I see, so the remaining outcomes paint a more detailed picture of the exam. If only outcomes 1 and 2 were possible, the "targets" will share their answers with everyone in the group and there would be nothing to do but cooperate. However, by adding the option to "betray" one's own group, the dynamics of the exam were changed in a single stroke. If the "target" were to reveal his identity to everyone in their group, they will inevitably be preyed upon by "traitors" instantly.

Since there are now more outcomes than the first one available, no one will wait that long. The traitors will immediately aim to secure points only for themselves. And the "target" themselves, in an attempt to sabotage the other classes' chances for points and increase their own class's chances, will deliberately hide their identity and try to pass off others as the "target" student. Of course, that means everybody gets less points for not 'cooperating' but in return, they will gain the chance to have the other classes penalised.'

"Naturally, the school will take into consideration issues of privacy and even at the end of the exam, we will only release the results for each group and each student. The names of the "target" and the person who uncovers their identity will not be disclosed. It is possible to issue you a temporary ID if you wish. However, there need not be fear about having one's identity revealed after the exam. Of course, if you do not wish to hide your name, you can proudly display the received points too."

I understand now, there is also the possibility that the "target" can just keep silent about their identity without revealing it to anyone else in the group and secure a lot of points that way, or share their identity with the rest of the group and aim for the best outcome. For instance, even if Yukimura were the "target", I could theoretically pass off Sotomura or Karuizawa as the "target" to the members from the other classes and mislead them that way. That means the outcome will depend on the amount of 'goodwill' between the members. Quite a bit of investigating and misdirection will be required.

It makes sense now to compare this to the Jinrou game. But the

advantage of the "wolves" cannot be said as absolute. After all, the "villagers" also have the option to mercilessly slay their targets. In fact, there is even the possibility of infighting breaking out between the "villagers" in this case. I go over the rules again in my head silently. The school has established 12 groups based on the number of zodiac signs, allocating all the 1st year students to their respective groups consisting of a certain number of people. And each group contains a mixture of students from all classes being forced to cooperate as "friends".

The number of people might vary slightly depending on the group but roughly 14 people are placed into each group it seems. And in each group, there will only be one student marked as the "target" and said "target" will be informed that they are the target and they are the answer. So in other words, even if the "target" does not actively participate at all in the game their profit from this is also guaranteed. Therefore, if the rest of the members are unable to correctly identify the "target", they are the ones who will be unable to answer correctly. In other words, that is the basic gist of the exam we are currently undergoing.'

The four options available to the group now are:

- Share the identity of the "target" and clear the exam together as one.

- Answer incorrectly and the group loses but the "target" still receives points.

- A traitor uncovers the identity of the "target".

- The traitor disregards the judgement of the "target".

The only difference in those options is the amount of points awarded to each member of the group.

The best outcome would be for the identity of the "target" to be shared with all and wait until the end of the exam to answer correctly to receive 500,000 points each with the "target" receiving 1 million points. But the difficulty of aiming for such an outcome is extremely high. There is a possibility of being betrayed from within. Since the members will naturally want points in reward for undertaking this examination, they will betray before they get betrayed themselves.

Then if someone else answers incorrectly only the "target" will win in that case hence the other members will also prioritise finding the "target" in their own group firstly. Most of the students will likely wish to avoid taking risks by cooperating and if they cannot be convinced to work together, will most likely turn traitor within their group. Besides, it will be very difficult to aim for the first outcome if the "target" themselves simply stays silent and avoids having their identity revealed. In either case, the "target" will be receiving 500,000 points almost with a guarantee so it might as well be considered a ticket to heaven. However, there are also downsides to being given this position.

Once you have been chosen as the "target" it is up to you to keep silent on this matter or share this information with others. Depending on the circumstances, there may be harassment or jealousy targeted at you from other classes or even your own class due to the preferential treatment given to the "target". There is also the danger of a traitor uncovering the identity of the "target" in which case they will no longer have to wait until the end of the exam to mail their answer to the faculty. That way, the test for the group ends immediately and the traitor gets 50 points for their own class while getting private points for themselves too. That means while sabotaging another class, one can act to contribute to both themselves and their own class. An ideal result for most students.'

"The prohibited items and actions are listed there as well. So, look through them thoroughly."

The forbidden actions are, for instance, stealing the mobiles of other students and use of intimidation to coerce the reveal of information such as the identity of the "target" students. Mailing the answers to the faculty by using another student's mobile without permission will result in the greatest punishment for the student known as "expulsion". These are all strict conditions not present in the uninhabited island test.

Furthermore, in the case any suspicious activity is uncovered, a thorough investigation into the matter will be launched by the school to ensure no violations of the rules occur. Naturally, in the case you lie about the forbidden actions you've taken, the possibility of "expulsion" is always there. It seems everything will be monitored by the school behind the scenes. Once the exam starts, communication between students of different groups will also be forbidden for a certain period of time. To break this rule will be to risk "expulsion". '

"You will be meeting at 1pm and 8pm tomorrow for your group discussions. The room you will be meeting in has your group name written on a plate in front of it. Once you have entered that room, you will not be able to leave until the required time for discussion has passed. If an emergency occurs in that time period, contact your homeroom teacher immediately. Make sure you've used the toilet before the meeting time as well."

"What do you mean we'll have to stay in the room? How long will we be there?"

"As is written in the explanation, the time for discussion will be 1 hour each twice a day. Other than your self-introduction to other members of your group, you may use that time however you like. Once one hour has passed, you may choose to remain in the room or leave at your discretion."

"I see. Got it."

"Once the "target" has been decided, the school will not accept

any request for changes to this. In addition, any actions such as copying, deletion, transferring or alteration of mails to the faculty are strictly forbidden so keep this in mind."

"I wanna be the target. They are getting so many advantages!!!"

"Ideed is, Karuizawa. But think of it that way. During the whole exam, let's suppose you are the target. During the whole tenure, the only focus of everyone else is to find your identity and they might use "any" method as long as it's legal to find you. And I mean "any" method. Can you handle the pressure? Or will you crumble?"

Hearing Kiyotaka's words, Karuizawa fell silent as if she appeared to be in deep thought.

With that Mashima-Sensei got out of his chair and walked out of the room, as Kiyotaka and Karuizawa got up as well. Yukimura looked at both of them with an annoyed expression.

"Hey, since we are one group, it is essential that we need to deepen our unity. Why don't we chat for a while?"

"Not interested. / I would rather do something more worthwhile."

Both Kiyotaka and Karuizawa ignored Yukimura's words and walked out of the room, while Sotomura awkwardly smiled at him before running away as well, making the bespectacled boy click his tongue in annoyance.

"Why did I have to be in the same group as these guys out of everyone?"

●♠♥♦♣♠♦♥♠●

As Kiyotaka walked out of the room with Karuizawa walking a little ahead of him, he sneakily walked behind one of the corners of the hall and took out his phone to call a certain someone.

"What is it, Ayanokouji? Another exam, another thing you want to buy?"

"It seems like you know me very well, Sensei. Aside from teaching, did you also train in becoming an esper or something?"

Chabashira chuckled from the other side of the call.

"It's not that. I just realised that as soon as you know the rules and regulations, you will already come up with a plan. So I was readying myself for a call."

"I see. So, would you mind if we meet with each other?"

"Sure. Meet me in the bar. If the bouncers don't let you in, just tell the bouncers that I called you."

"Drinking this early? You sure are daring, Sensei."

"Shush. I didn't start intaking any sort of alcohol ... yet. Just shut up and meet me at around 20 minutes."

"kay."

●♠♥♦♣♠♦♥♠●

End of Chapter 88

Words : 6016

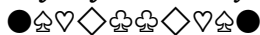
A canon rehash with a couple of changes I could've skipped all this, but hey, Word count and I couldn't be bothered to search through all the rules and stuff in different websites. Anyways, this marks my longest chapter yet, I think.

Did you guys watch the episode 1 of Chainsaw Man btw? If yes, then what's your opinion on it.

As a manga reader, it was just really euphoric to see the scenes I've read in the manga come to life. The episode hit so much harder in the feels in comparison to the first chapter of the manga.

10/10 for me. CSM and My Hero Season 6 are definitely the two shows this season I'm the most excited about, followed by Spy x Family and Blue Lock.

Anyways that's all for this chapter. See ya :D



Chapter 89 : Game

Season 4 : Chapter 12

"Pleasure to do business, once again with you, Sensei."

"The pleasure is mine. All the best. Hopefully this expensive purchase doesn't go to waste."

Chabashira chuckled to herself as she took a small sip of her red wine, as Kiyotaka sneakily put his purchase inside his pocket .. not wanting any third party to notice this transaction.

"The future is uncertain. However, if there is anyone in our class who gets to be the VIP, this would come in handy."

"Good to know. So, did you notice any specific oddities in the exam, yet? Like anything you want clarification about."

"Hm, not really. However there is one thing that caught my eye. I don't know if it's intentional or not, but the Dragon group consists of some very important students huh? There is Suzune, Kushida, Hirata, Ryuuen, Katsuragi, Kanzaki ... it's almost like it's a group comprised of the class leaders except me and Ichinose."

Chabashira didn't meet Kiyotaka's eyes which were curiously looming over her, as she took another sip of her beverage.

"And? What of it? Are you disappointed that you're not in that group?"

"Not really. I was just curious about the way the students were placed. In a way, it's beneficial for me since I won't have to listen to Ryuuen's taunts all day, and I can use this as an opportunity to see how much Suzune has grown since Day 1."

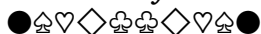
"Good to know that you are not displeased about the placement. Now, you better leave, since some other teachers also have plans here. I don't want you to be seen with me at this moment."

"Alright. Thanks for the help, Sensei."

"That's my job. Don't worry."

With that Kiyotaka sent her one last wave before turning towards one of the end corners of the room, as he saw the figures of Hoshinomiya-Sensei and Mashima-Sensei approaching Chabashira-sensei.

'Guess it's my time to leave. No point in invading their privacy.'



Kiyotaka in fact did not leave. He just stayed behind the wall and kept eavesdropping on the conversation of the homeroom teachers,

hoping to find at least some sort of valuable information from this.

'I truly am a scumbag. But hey, can someone blame me though? This is way too good of an opportunity to not capitalise on.'

However much to his dismay, most of the conversation among the teachers didn't revolve around the exam or any class matters yet. It was filled with small talk and useless stuff.

"You know, it's been a while. Since the three of us got together like this."

"It's fate, in the end we all chose the path of the teacher."

"Stop it. There's no point in talking about that."

"Oh yeah, speaking of which, I saw you on a date. New girlfriend? Mashima-kun, you're surprisingly motivated on that front".

"Chie, how about you? What happened to your former man?"

"Haha, I broke up with him after two weeks. You see, I'm the type of girl that does it with a man and breaks it off before the relationship gets serious and I have to commit to it. That's way too much hard work right?"

'I see. So she is the kind of girl who just wants to have fun and have sex before dumping the poor fellow, who might have actually feelings for her. If that's the case, shouldn't it be better for her to be a hooker instead of men's hearts? She will have fun and exciting sex and she will make cash as well. Not that I'm interested in paying for her. Just a suggestion.'

Hoshinomiya groggily smiled at the two of them who looked at her with weirded out expressions.

"That's usually what a man in a relationship says, you know?"

"Ahh, but I'm not doing it with Mashima-kun. You're my best friend after all, I'd hate to ruin our friendship."

"Relax. It's not about that".

"Uwaaa...that's a shock all on its own."

Hoshinomiya-sensei pours whiskey into an empty glass and drank it all in one, large gulp. Compared to that, Chabashira-sensei was slowly sipping on her wine slowly inching away from her colleague, not wanting to meet the possibility of being on the other side of Hoshinomiya-Sensei's barf.

'That woman is way too drunk. She can't even form a coherent sentence which actually makes sense, properly.'

"Speaking of relationships, what about you Sae-chan?"

"Hmm?"

"Do you still talk with him anymore?"

For some reason Chabashira's eyes darkened at the word **him** which didn't go unnoticed by the Homeroom Teacher of Class-B, as a big and 'pure' smile formed on her face.

"You don't right? Not like its anything shocking given the situation in which it ended. Love truly is heartbreaking right? Just because of one person's fault, so many people suffer."

In spite of her smile, only a fool would miss the dark look Hoshinomiya-Sensei was sending towards the homeroom teacher of Class-D, who was tightly gripping on the glass as if her life depended on it. A small scowl formed on her face for a second, before she replaced it with her usual stoic look, not wanting to give Chie the privilege of messing with her.

"We indeed did not talk anymore. More importantly, what are you going to do, Chie?"

"What're you talking about so suddenly?"

"Generally, the policy here is to put all the representatives of each class in the (Dragon) group."

"I'm not intending on messing around here. Indeed as far as attitude and grades go, Ichinose-san is the top of my class, but the probability of success in society cannot be measured by numerical parameters only. I decided there is a hurdle she must overcome before that. Besides putting her in (Rabbit) group is fitting. A rabbit is cute right? And Ichinose-san is the cutest girl ever!"

"In a way, Hoshinomiya-Sensei's words made complete sense, since as an actual leader, Ichinose was not on the same level as someone like Ryuuen or me, since she didn't have the courage to make a sacrifice or take damage. Just like Hirata, she was a pacifist. And in an institution like ANHS, the possibility of peace is nearly impossible. But for some reason, I could sense a small hint of malicious intent behind Hoshinomiya-Sensei's words."

"I hope you're right."

"Hoshinomiya's words are indeed reasonable, is there some hidden meaning behind them?"

"I just don't want you to make judgments based on personal grudges."

"Are you still talking about what happened 10 years ago? I thought we got over that..."

"I wonder, you're the type to run your mouth as soon as I'm not immediately in front of you. You're the type that's not satisfied unless you're one step ahead. That's why you put Ichinose in (Rabbit) group right?"

"What do you mean? Explain, Hoshinomiya."

"I genuinely thought Ichinose-san needed to learn a lesson so I had her removed from (Dragon) group. Speaking of which, Sae-chan chose Ayanokouji-kun to be a part of Rabbit group instead of Dragon group as well. I can ask you the same question as well. Are you planning on taking revenge on me for all these failures by

putting Ayanokouji-kun against Ichinose-san hmm?"

"That's not my intention. As of now, Ayanokouji is kind of like a one man army, who does most of the job. I decided to take him off the Dragon group and replace him with some potential strong members who still need some development with the intention of seeing them grow further on their own."

Besides, he already destroyed Class-C and Class-A last exam. I bet he'd be bored facing them this quickly once again. To completely defeat your Class's leader as well as not taking a huge pressure, which he would've gotten in dragon group ... I saw this as a win-win. Since I don't want Ayanokouji to burn out after all. He is my only hope for Class-A.'

Getting enough information from this conversation, Kiyotaka walked out of the bar with his usual bored look on his face.



As Kiyotaka walked inside his room, he was greeted by the sight of Hirata who was combing his hair, preparing himself for his meeting which was taking place within half an hour.

As their eyes met, he gave the brown haired a boy a small nod of acknowledgment before approaching him.

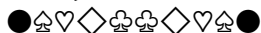
"It seems that a rather unusual exam is about to begin huh? Yukimura-kun told me about it earlier. Hearing his explanation, I'm not going to lie, I was a bit confused."

"It is complex at first. But once you see the rules and hear the explanation properly, it would be clear. But yeah, this examination is way too different than the Island one, that I won't disagree with. By the way, are you going to your room now? There's only around 18 minutes left."

"Yes. Apparently from what I've heard from Yukimura-kun, we have to cooperate with other classes, right? Might as well introduce myself and form a good relationship with them, so that we might not face any difficulties later on."

"Hmm. That makes sense. Would you mind if I accompany you as well? I want to talk with Suzune and Kushida as well."

"Sure, I don't have any problem."



Soon, Kiyotaka and Hirata reached the location where the meeting of the Dragon group was taking place. The whole area was crowded however Kiyotaka immediately noticed the black braided hair of his girlfriend, who was at the moment whispering something in Kushida's ears.

He approached them and put his hands over Suzune's shoulders, immediately making her grasp his hands incredibly tightly, nearly breaking it as a relax.

"Who is touchi-oh it's you. My apologies."

"No worries. So, how is it looking so far?"

"I had a chat with Chiaki-san since a certain someone thought about not even meeting up with me even once. Like what were you even doing?"

"I was having a discussion with Chabashira-sensei about the exam. I'll let you in on it later, after your meeting. So, I assume Chiaki gave you the gist of it."

"Yes, she indeed did. I was just telling Kushida-san to keep her guard up since she will have to face Ryuuken-kun."

"Mhmm."

Kushida nodded to Horikita's words slowly inching away from her, however her hand was grabbed as the raven haired girl gave her a menacing smirk before forcefully pulling her.

"Where are you trying to run away, Kushida?"

"N-no where Horikita."

"What did you just say?"

Horikita's eyes narrowed at her as she gave the beige haired girl an ice cold glare, making her freeze on the spot.

"H-horikita-sama."

"Good girl."

She lightly patted Kushida's head for a second before looking back towards her boyfriend who was looking at the both of them with an amused look.

"She became obedient pretty quickly huh? How surprising."

"It truly is. However I'm glad that I have the assistance of Kushida-san since she is a useful ally to have. Aren't you glad that we are working together as well?"

Horikita looked at Kushida with a sweet smile as she grabbed her hand, applying a small amount of force on it, as all Kushida could do was let out a tired smile before nodding to her words.

Kiyotaka looked behind him to find Hirata conversing with Kanzaki and the other Class-B students with a small smile on his face, as a certain baldheaded leader soon approached the Class-D trio.

"If I'm not wrong, you're also from the 20:40 group are you not?"

The person was none other than Katsuragi Kohei, the leader of Class-A who just suffered a big humiliating loss in the previous exam. Katsuragi's eyes went towards Kiyotaka for a second as the both of them nodded to one another as a means of greeting.

Suzune however, did not like the fact that her 'conversation' with Kushida got destroyed as she looked back at Katsuragi with hostile eyes.

"If so, does this have something to do with you?"

"No. But I just wanted to talk to you all since starting from

tomorrow we'll be cooperating together as part of the same group."

"You want to talk now? That's funny. Before this, all of you Class-A students looked at us as if we were nothing but trash. But now you're saying we will be cooperating? Don't make me laugh."

Katsuragi however nodded to Horikita's taunt before directing his eyes towards Kiyotaka, as the bald headed boy looked back at him with an extremely serious and judgemental gaze.

"Honestly I've never paid any attention to Class-D before the Island Test, but results don't lie right? If one day, your Class rises from Class-D to Class-C remember that, us Class-A will show you no mercy and crush you to pieces."

'Is that a threat, Johnny?'

Horikita immediately was about to fire back at him, however she kept her mouth shut as she saw a small glint of amusement in Kiyotaka's usually dull eyes.

"Crush us to pieces? Save your own Class first, baldy. Cuz apparently it seems like all of your so-called 'loyal' followers are losing their faith in the all mighty Johnny Sins."

Kanzaki Ryuuji, who was walking by the corridor, stopped in his tracks as well, listening to the conversation.

"All this bravado of your Class-A this, Class-A that. Cry me a river. Don't you realise? In the first actual exam that the school presented us, the so-called 'Elite' class got 22 points while us defectives got 393. And this is just the start. We have three years left after all. While, for you ... I guess it's only 1 or 2 months that you remain as the leader maximum, since a certain woman is about to dethrone your failure of a leadership after all."

Kiyotaka's words resulted in the entire corridor turning silent as the Leader of Class-A glared at him with anger, however all he received in exchange was a bored gaze, before he looked back at his girlfriend.

"This guy truly thinks that he is an all mighty messiah and that he can just say whatever he pleases whenever he wants. Why don't you hand him the second L and completely destroy his pride, dear?"

All he received in return was a small smirk as the ice devil of Class-D looked at Katsuragi with a cold glare.

"What a way to put a target behind my back, Kiyotaka-kun. You truly know how to get on my nerves. Fine, I'll play your game."

'Now this marks the start of the actual exam. No I am not talking about the Zodiac Exam, I'm talking about the exam of Horikita Suzune. Will she be able to stay on the same level or even defeat the other leaders, or will she crumble under the pressure? I won't lie but I'm looking forward to it.'

End of Chapter 89

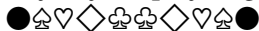
Words : 3454

So as you can see, the reason Kiyotaka is in the Rabbit group is because of Chabs. Since in her opinion, everything in Class-D is being handled by Kiyotaka himself and she fears that he might burn himself out at this rate and lose the motivation. That's why she wants to develop her other capable students so He doesn't have to do all the work by himself.

I was thinking at first of maybe putting Kiyotaka in Dragon Group and Horikita in Rabbit, but decided against it, since it wouldn't be that impactful since we already finessed Ryuen once.

Anyways Hopefully this chapter makes it clear for all the guys who said "Kiyo should be in Dragon Group." XD.

Anyways hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.



Chapter 90 : Target

Season 4 : Chapter 13

Kiyotaka and Horikita decided to meet with one another the next day, during breakfast, since the black haired maiden was apparently mentally drained to discuss the rules and regulations after the meeting. Not seeing any harm in doing so, Kiyotaka agreed to her words and postponed the meeting.

It was now breakfast time, as the dining hall was filled with students of different classes, eating and merrily chatting with one another. Kiyotaka made sure to avoid the buffet popular with the students and walked towards the deck of the ship, where there was a small cafe named 'Blue Ocean'. Unlike the buffet, there were hardly any students here, which gave this restaurant a calm and cosy feeling to it.

The time was around 7:53 a.m. a couple of minutes prior to the designated meeting time with the person he was waiting for. Kiyotaka walked inside the cafe and ordered two cups of black coffee, as the door to it opened as Horikita Suzune walked inside.

"Good morning."

"Good morning. Did you have a nice sleep?"

"So so, I guess. I got way too habituated to sleeping with the support of my soft toys, so in a way it hindered me a little. Guess, I need to cut off that bad habit."

She let out a faint chuckle before as she opened the menu card and started browsing through it.

"You didn't have any breakfast right?"

"Nope. I ordered two cups of black coffee for us. I didn't know if you would have preferred to eat now or later. So I decided to stall it."

"Well, I'm not quite sure about it. What do you recommend? I think eating right now would hinder the time, no? And we don't have much time left till the 'meeting' starts."

"Let's just eat later. A cup of coffee would be enough for now in my opinion."

"Very well. Now first of all, would you mind telling me about what you and Chabashira-sensei discussed about the exam, before it even started?"

"I guess. But for that, I need to confirm something to myself. I

presume you remember the names of the members of all the other classes who are in your group?"

"Yeah. I wrote it down after reaching my room. Our group is kind of amazing actually. Almost as if it was on purpose and not mere coincidence."

With that, Horikita handed him a slip of paper where she wrote the names of her group which was named Dragon.

Dragon

Class A : Katsuragi Kohei, Nishikawa Ryouko, Shita Shinji, Koharu Yano

Class B : Ando Sayo, Kanzaki Ryuuji, Tsukabe Hitomi

Class C : Oda Takumi, Suzuki Hidetoshi, Sonoda Masashi, Ryuuen Kakeru

Class D : Kushida Kikyuu, Hirata Yousuke, Horikita Suzune

"Hmm a couple of unknown names but the group sure is stacked. Katsuragi, Ryuuen, Kanzaki, Suzune, Kushida, it's almost like a fantasy squad made by the teachers."

"I guess Sensei's words were indeed correct, after all."

Kiyotaka mumbled to himself, as Horikita's eyes twitched as if she was a bunny.

"What was correct?"

"Last night after me and Sensei had our discussion, Mashima-Sensei and Hoshinomiya-Sensei joined her and indulged themselves in alcohol. I eavesdropped on their conversation, trying to get any information and judging from my conversation with Chabashira-sensei and their small talk with one another, I came to a couple of conclusions.

All the groups are divided and formed by the personal opinion of the homeroom teachers, mostly according to merit."

"H-huh?! If that's the case, then why are you or Koenji-kun not in Dragon Group? Both of you get the top grades in our class no? Similarly, Ichinose-san is in your group as well. I can say that the Rabbit Group is as strong as the dragon group, but that's not the case. Since other than you two, there's no one else that important, no? I'm confused."

"You misunderstood my sentence. I said 'mostly according to merit'. You didn't put your focus in the main highlight of my words, which was that 'the groups are formed by the personal choices of the respective homeroom teachers.'"

"I mean, that I understood it from the very beginning. But why did Chabashira-sensei then put you in the Rabbit group instead of facing Katsuragi and Ryuuen?"

"I think that's because she wants to see what you will do. How you will fare against the leader of Class-A and Class-C by yourself

without my help or assistance."

"... But why so sudden?"

"After the Island Exam, when we had food together with Sensei, I told her about how you got the information about Class-B's leader correct?"

"Hm.."

"In my opinion, prior to that, Sensei believed to herself that I am the only person in the class who actually has the stand alone ability to fight with the other classes seamlessly, while the other members of Class-D just act as a back up support if I somehow fail.

But the moment I put that target on your back, Sensei's way of thinking changed a little as well. And she wants to nurture the already capable students in our class, for example Hirata, you and Kushida and put you in a den with Ryuen and Katsuragi so that all of you develop through hardships and adversity. Sensei now wants all of you guys to grow stronger as well, so that our Class becomes so strong that none of the other classes can even touch us."

"... I see. That certainly makes sense. The fact that Sensei trusts me with such a difficult task means that I have to complete it even more, right?!"

Horikita's previous air of slight nervousness was now completely replaced with an array of confidence as she learned the true motives of her homeroom teacher.

The clock soon hit 8 : 00 a.m. as Ayanokouji and Horikita's phone started buzzing at the same time. Both of them opened their device to indeed find that the School sent them the mail. As Kiyotaka finished reading his contents, his girlfriend showed him her phone where the following was written :

「After a period of thorough consideration, you have not been chosen as the "target". Please act together as one and challenge the exam in that manner. The exam itself shall begin from 1:00 PM today onwards. The exam will be held for three days from this point onwards. If you belong to the (Dragon) group please come up to the room marked as such on the second floor immediately. 」

Both of their mails were nearly identical to one another, the only difference being the name of the group they were assigned to.

"I guess, the mail would be kind of different if we were chosen as the 'Target'."

"I don't know whether to be overjoyed or sad about the fact that I'm not that target."

"If you are the target, under given circumstances, you would be able to lead your group to any of the four possible outcomes. However the constant pressure of being found out and being on

complete edge during the exam, would make others be suspicious of you. It's quite a hectic job in my opinion."

"Still I'm not pleased about the fact that the mail said that after a period of thorough consideration, we were not chosen as the targets. Almost as if we were unworthy of being one."

"Don't pay any mind to such puny things. Our main goal is to achieve victory, nothing more nothing less. Use your brain and observe everything around yourself. Use Kushida, consult with Chiaki, Karuizawa, Hirata, Ken, anyone ... use all your connections to your advantage and try to achieve the unthinkable by beating Ryuuen and Katsuragi. Can you do that?"

Horikita's beautiful eyes almost started blazing with conviction as she curtly nodded to Ayanokouji's words before taking a sip of her coffee.

"I can do that. I'll be looking forward to your results."

"I'll be looking forward to seeing what sort of direction you will lead your group in. Impress me."

Even though I'm saying all of this. There is a small sense of unease that I can't put into words. The words Mashima-Sensei said back then furthered my resolve. The "Target" is not chosen at random. There is a certain difference between the students who were chosen as the "Target" and the students who were not. I need to figure it out soon.'

As Kiyotaka was lost in his thoughts, his concentration was broken when two pairs of footsteps approached the both of them. They looked up only to find Ibuki Mio and Ryuuen Kakeru of Class-C.

"Nice weather, isn't it? How are you two doing?"

Ryuuen pulled two chairs from the near table and gave one to Ibuki, who sat beside Horikita maintaining distance as Ryuuen sat close to Ayanokouji as he slung his hand over the shoulders of the Leader of Class-D.

"The only time I will answer the question is when you don't try to attach a bug on me, Ryuuen."

Kiyotaka immediately grabbed it and smashed it into pieces while Ryuuen just chuckled to himself.

"So observant kuku. My apologies. I just couldn't go to sleep last night, so I thought that I would use your boring voice as background music, so that it puts me to sleep kukuku."

Ibuki started laughing with Ryuuen, as Horikita, in spite of being annoyed by their presence, bit her lips, not wanting to let out a laugh.

How cruel of you. To join hands with the enemy to make fun of me? How could you?'

"So funny Ryuuen. Since you can't get your desired job after

graduating from the school, you should heed my advice and become a stand up comedian."

"Kukuku and who says that I won't get my desired job?"

"Isn't it obvious? Obviously as long as I'm here, the only Class which will rise to Class-A is our class. Not you, not Ichinose, not Katsuragi. So being someone wiser than you, I thought about giving you some advice on your future."

All three of them went silent at Kiyotaka's words as Horikita finally released her teeth from her lips and started chuckling to herself, meanwhile Ryuuen just let out a small smirk as if that insult didn't bother him in the slightest.

"How amusing? Just because you got the upperhand over me in the Island Exam, you are exuding such arrogance. Arrogance doesn't fit you, Ayanokouji."

"It's not arrogance if I speak the truth. Also, you're quite fixated on me, aren't you? Don't tell me do you swing that way?"

Ibuki immediately started cackling madly while looking at Ryuuen, to which all he did was grin in response.

"No I don't. I like ass and tits. Too bad Ibuki has none of them."

Her laughter immediately stopped as she nearly turned into a statue, as Ryuuen started his trademark laugh, while looking at her.

"Kukukukuku. Anyways for what I was here for. Seems like you will be in the same group as me, Miss girlfriend. Let's get along shall we?"

With his usual smirk on his face, Ryuuen tried to shake Horikita's hand to which she grimaced to herself.

"How about let's not get along?"

"Kukuku why? Scared that I will break you unlike your boyfriend?"

Horikita immediately blushed in embarrassment at the vulgar words of Ryuuen, as Kiyotaka looked at them cluelessly like a deer in headlights.

'Break her? Why should I break her? Is there some hidden meaning behind his words.'

"Please refrain from uttering such filthy words. And no, I'm not scared of you at all, Ryuuen-kun. Your cheap provocation won't work on us, so why don't you leave us alone?"

"Very well. Let's go Ibuki, we are done here. Amuse me, Ayanokouji. I can't wait to see what string you will pull this time."

"I'm taking a step back from this exam. Suzune will be the person leading us. So unfortunately I can't amuse you. "

Horikita once again glared at her boyfriend for putting another target behind her back, as all she received in response was an innocent and clueless look from the Leader of Class-D.

"Miss Girlfriend will lead the exam? How boring kuku. And here I was looking forward to getting destroyed by you once again and having our class drop down to Class-D. But alas, fate truly is uncertain. Let's go Ibuki. Our turn is done here. See ya Ayanokouji, Horikita."

Ibuki gave both the Class-D students a small nod with a glare before following the retreating back of Ryuen.

" *sigh* You are making my life really troublesome, you know? At first Katsuragi-kun and now Ryuen-kun. It's like you're using me as bait."

"I told you before, right? You have enough resources and connections to fight against both of them. And even if you can't, there's no need to worry, since I am still here as your back-up."

"That makes me feel a little less pressured. Anyways, are we done for now? I'm feeling a little sleepy, I think I need a small nap."

"Yes. We have nothing left to discuss. All we have to do now is proceed in our own groups. Make sure to report anything that comes up."

"Hmm. I'll go then. See you, Kiyotaka-kun."

"Goodbye."

Horikita soon walked out of the cafe, as Kiyotaka looked outside the window while sipping his coffee which had already lost its warmth. His phone suddenly buzzed as he looked at the message a certain person sent him.

「**Karuizawa Kei** : I have been chosen as the Target. Thought about letting you know.」

'I see. Quite convenient. Now this gives me a little more freedom on how I can navigate through this exam. Let the show begin I guess.'

End of Chapter 90

Words : 3007

I'm planning to speedrun the Zodiac exam for the Rabbit group and then focus a little more on the other groups, mainly finishing this arc pretty early, since to be honest, I don't really care for it, and I want to conclude this series fast. There's not that many chapters left before the end of the story after the Zodiac Exam, and I want to get to that as soon as possible.

Anyways hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.



Chapter 91 : Simplicity

Season 4 : Chapter 14

Ayanokouji POV

Soon all four of us Class-D students walked inside our designated rooms and felt the gaze of the students of other classes upon us immediately. It seems like after our overwhelming win in the Island Exam, and the fact that everyone knows that I am the Leader of Class-D put everyone on edge instantly the moment I walked inside.

How amusing. Is this what that man feels when everyone else feels guarded and scared by him as well? To have such power that all your enemies have to think of hundreds of ways to defeat you and make them expect that you are making a complex plan just like them in return to retaliate however all it takes is one simple move to catch them all off-guard and mow through them without any difficulty.

This is the exact way Ryuen navigates in these kinds of exams. None of his plans are ... well, pretty difficult to figure out. But since he gained the reputation of being a schemer and always trying to look through the plot holes, even his simple moves makes everyone think there is a reason behind it.

Ichinose Honami the Leader of Class-B, who was at the moment discussing something with a blue haired boy wearing spectacles, finally seemed to realise my presence as she gave me a beautiful smile as a way of greeting.

"Hello Ayanokouji-kun. How are you doing?"

"I'm pretty good. How are you?"

"Hmm our situation is fine I guess. Our class expected to gain some more points in the Island Exam, but that didn't seem to be the case. But it's alright, since we have three whole years left. It's just the start right?"

"True."

As expected of someone like Ichinose Honami. Even if she faced adversity in the very first stage of the battle, instead of breaking under the pressure or giving up, she took the loss and is facing forward, trying to see the bright side. She really is like a symbol of optimism and a bundle of sunshine I would lie if I say that I was not a fan of her personality or her mentality. Even in this dark and cruel world, someone like her looks at it and understands it, and

still somehow finds the slightest bright and positive outlook amidst it and embraces it fully.

Yukimura and Sotomura sat down in the middle, right beside the chairs of the three Class-B students as Karuizawa sat beside me, all the while confusingly looking at a certain girl of Class-C who was glaring at her for some reason. Trying to figure out her reasons, I leaned beside Karuizawa before whispering in her ear.

"What's up with her, Karuizawa? Did you steal her man or something?"

"Huh?! No. I don't even know why she is looking at me like that. Want me to go and ask her?"

"Hm, not now. The meeting will start pretty soon. Asking her about her problems right now, might lead to an air of hostility which will make the situation troublesome. Let's just stay quiet for now."

"Alright.... Hey, Ayanokouji-kun."

"Hm?"

"Her gaze upon me is making me feel uneasy for some reason."

Karuizawa indeed was correct. The girl from Class-C with light green hair was looking at Karuizawa as if her dog got killed by her. It was that of an infinite hatred and nothing else.

"Did you do something that might've made her have a wrong opinion of you?"

"I ... don't remember."

"It's alright. Don't worry much about it. If she tries something funny, I'll deal with it. Act like you always act. Don't give away the fact that she is making you uneasy."

"Got it."

With that Karuizawa lazily started scrolling through her mobile phone, not paying any attention to her surroundings as if she didn't care about anyone in the room. However if someone reads the room carefully, they can clearly notice the blonde haired girl slowly inching closer towards me.

Soon, the announcement reverberated through the speakers as the previous air of nonchalance turned into that of seriousness almost immediately.

「From this point onwards, we will begin with the first group discussion.」

Just that. A small announcement, but since no one from the different classes knew each other that well, none of them wanted to take the initiative in starting the discussion, resulting in the formation of an awkward atmosphere throughout the whole room.

I almost thought about speaking up and carrying out my plan, but it got interrupted as Ichinose stood up from her seat with an array

of confidence and a bright smile on her face.

"I do know most of the people here, but I suppose in accordance with the school's instructions, we should introduce ourselves firstly. Since there are also people who might not know each other yet."

Most of the students nodded to her words, internally feeling glad that someone broke the awkward atmosphere as some Class-A students could not hide their surprise at her taking the lead.

One of the Class-A students named Machida immediately rebutted to Ichinose's statement with a heavy and serious tone in his voice.

"I don't think there's any need for that. The school's just saying it as a formality. Only the ones who want to introduce themselves should do it."

"If Machida-kun doesn't wish to do it, then I certainly can't force you to. But there may be a recorder hidden somewhere in this room. If we blatantly disobey the instructions from the school, it may not just be you but the whole group that gets punished, you know?"

With a small smile, Ichinose immediately replied to his statements, putting it in such a way that even Machida couldn't refute with her reasoning.

"Fine then.", he replied reluctantly to which Ichinose just flashed him a bright smile in response.

"Thanks."

With that starting from Ichinose, all the students started their introductions one by one, stating their names, classes and their hobbies. Soon it was my turn as I stood up to introduce myself. Other than Ichinose and her classmates and my classmates, both the groups of Class-C and A looked at me with a kind of hostile gaze.

"Looks like there is no need for me to introduce myself, since most of you look like you want to rip my head off. Anyways, for the people who don't know me, I am Ayanokouji Kiyotaka, the Leader of Class-D. I like Pandas and Compass Devil."

"C-compass Devil? Is that a new character in Chainsaw Man that I missed, Kiyo-dono?"

"You can say that, Hideo."

Karuizawa, understanding the meaning behind my words and seeing the ignorance of Hideo, chuckled to herself.

However the peaceful atmosphere got destroyed as Machida and his other classmates looked at me with a small glare.

"Of course we are suspicious of someone like you. You were not only increasing your points to such a margin, but also were responsible for the lowering of our points as well. And your antics last night made you a clear enemy of our class, Ayanokouji."

Machida stated with a confident tone in his voice as his

classmates nodded to his words, while the three students in Class-B watched the sight with bitter smiles on their faces. It seemed like Ichinose wanted to intervene but I stopped her with a gesture of my hand, before looking at Machida.

"Everything you said was correct, except one thing Machida."

"And what is it?"

"I never made myself the enemy of the whole Class-A. I only made myself the target of the 'Katsuragi faction', the weaker half of Class-A. Not like you guys can do anything to me though. Your boss is way too defensive to even lay out a single plan. He was so defensive with his tactics that he missed out the trap that Ryuen set up for him in their contract and now the whole class is paying for it.

Also, I wouldn't be surprised if your Leader Katsuragi gave you some weird orders like "Keep your mouth shut till the end of the exams and don't cooperate". Since he is the type of person, who doesn't want to advance himself, and doesn't want others to grow as well."

All three of the Class-A students widened their eyes at my words in shock.

"H-how did you know that?"

"Oh? That's what he really said? I was just guessing. Thanks for the confirmation though. As expected of Katsuragi. He sure is predictable, right Ichinose?"

"Hehe~ I would refrain myself from commenting on this matter. Although I must say one thing, the whole not speaking and discussing the whole exam, I'm not a fan of that idea, Machida-kun."

"And why is that Ichinose? Isn't the real shortcut in ending the exam is by letting the identity of the 'target' be hidden till the very end? With that only the 'target' will win the 500,000 points which we can divide between all four classes."

"But even if the Private Points gets distributed, it's not like every single one of us would even get a perentage of the share we would've gotten if we just agreed to vote together. Other than Class-A and Class-B, the other two classes are low on private points. I don't think this would be fair to them. Also your plan in a way just benefits yourself, since you guys wanted a stalemate so that just like Ayanokouji-kun said, you want none of the classes to grow."

"So you would rather risk the idea of someone becoming a traitor only so that every student gets a decent amount of private points?", asked Machida with an annoyed expression on his face.

"Yes. Big risk big gain am I right?" However Ichinose's strong resolve appeared to not even crack at the slightest under the

pressure of the Class-A boy as she was still smiling peacefully.

Machida's eyebrows started twitching in frustration and it seemed like both Ichinose and Machida would engage in a heated debate as soon as possible, but unfortunately I was not at all interested in hearing their argument since it wouldn't result in much, either way. The only possible result of their argument will be Machida and his classmates excluding themselves from the discussion, which is not the result I want. That's why I decided to speak up with only one intention in my mind. That is to get all the attention on myself.

"What an idiotic plan. As expected of Katsuragi's goons. They are just as predictable as their leader. I can't believe how you guys were selected as students of Class-A."

"Big talk coming from a lowly Class-D trash. Stay in your position like the dog you are. All the other classes except our Class shouldn't even dare to speak up."

It seemed like my taunts made Machida lose his composure as just like his classmates, his 'Elitist' mentality got exposed in front of everyone else, as they looked at him with an annoyed gaze.

"That's not a nice thing to say, Machida-kun. Just because you are a part of Class-A doesn't mean that you have any right to look down upon the students of lower classes." said Ichinose. Her usually smiling expression turned into that of a frown, which made Machida click his tongue in annoyance.

"It's fine Ichinose. Don't worry about it.", I replied to her before looking back at Machida, who was narrowing his eyes at me.

"As for calling me a lowly trash, it seems like you are forgetting one thing Machida. This lowly trash worked hard and maintained harmony among his class which resulted in him getting his class around 400 points while you were sucking your leader's thumbs the whole time without doing a thing, and couldn't even save your leader when your other classmates started berating him. You truly are an 'Elite' in my eyes."

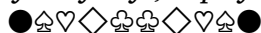
With a glare filled with hatred, Machida once again clicked his tongue in annoyance, before one of his classmates Morishige, asked me the question that I had wanted all this time.

"You sure are talking big, aren't you Ayanokouji? If you think our plan is stupid, why not propose one yourself."

With that all the attention got directed towards my direction as the Class-A boys smirked to themselves.

"Sure. I already thought of a simple plan, with which everyone can get a decent amount of points having to do only one thing."

"And what is it, Ayanokouji?", Yukimura replied to my words with a question, curiously overflowing through his gaze, as Karuizawa also looked up from her phone with glistening eyes.



Chapter 92 : Agreement

Season 4 : Chapter 15

Ayanokouji POV

"It's simple really ... All you guys have to do is show your emails one by one to show whether you guys are the 'Target' or not. If we figure out who is the 'Target', we will count down to ten and just as we reach 1 together, everyone will vote at the same time. With that there would be no increase or decrease from either classes and every single person will get 500,000 private points each. Quite the good deal, don't you think?"

My proposition led to the whole room turning silent as I started studying each of the reactions of my groupmates. Some were looking convinced like my classmates and the Class-B members, some looked like they didn't care like Ibuki, her classmates looked reluctant on agreeing with me, while the Class-A group appeared to be the most suspicious about my deal.

Machida looked towards his classmates for a second, who gave him a small nod, resulting in him looking back at me with narrowed eyes.

"And how will you ensure that none of the students will turn traitor amidst all of this? Do you have any safety measures for that?", he asked. His question led to the other students widening their eyes at the thought before they looked back at me with curious gazes as well.

"A safety measure? I have none of that."

Their curious gazes turned into that of disappointment as Machida chuckled at my remark and was about to comment something, however I cut him off before he could say anything.

"However, look at it from another way. Aside from the almighty Class-A, every other class is in a way a little deficient of points, no? I doubt someone would give up the opportunity of getting easy points so that they don't let the other students get any. This is a group exam right? Let's finish this as a group. Also, in spite of being from different classes, I'm placing my trust on all of you. Nobody will screw us over right?"

I wanted to laugh at my statement. Of course they would. I knew about that more than anyone else. Aside from their personal greed of Private Points, they wouldn't hesitate to throw someone under the bus to get a hand on those 50 Class Points as they too want to

play a role in the Class-competition. I knew that all too well. No one can be trusted when their future is in the line.

My question led to some of the Class-C students except Ibuki reluctantly look towards one another while the three Class-A boys started grumbling to themselves at my 'idiotic' words.

"I thought of you as someone cunning, Ayanokouji. Now after hearing your words, you sound like a cheap reboot of Ichinose. How disappointing.", said Machida with an almost disgusted look on his face, as Ichinose wore a bitter smile.

"Being compared to someone like Ichinose is a compliment in my eyes. Thanks for your kind words, Machida."

"Tch." He clicked his tongue in annoyance as I looked back at the Leader of Class-B who was at the moment discussing something with her classmate.

"What's your opinion on this, Ichinose? Do you agree with my plan?"

She looked away from her classmate before showing me a small smile of agreement.

"Um well, we don't have any problems with you carrying out the plan, but don't you think it's way too early to already carry out the decision? Why don't we just discuss and talk among ourselves first before all coming to a mutual decision?"

In spite of agreeing to my plans, it seems like Ichinose also wants to consider the discomfort of the members of Class-A and Class-C and wants everyone to be on the same page, resulting in her lack of agreement.

However, much to my shock, a surprising assist came towards my way as Karuizawa looked away from her phone, directing her eyes at the Leader of Class-B.

"Why do you want to prolong the exam, Ichinose-san? Ayanokouji-kun came up with a great plan, no? If we just finish the exam together, all of us will get 500,000 points each and we will be able to enjoy our remaining time in peace, not having to worry about any exams."

"That's the problem with you Class-D students. All you care about is vacation and free time. Just because you want to put your trust in us, doesn't mean that no one will break it. If at least one person acts like a traitor, then the entire group will lose. Who will take the responsibility then, huh?"

"Of course, it will be the traitor who takes the responsibility. Let's make a verbal agreement then. The person who will act as the traitor will have to pay that 500,000 points to the group as a compensation which will then be distributed among the rest of the members. Sounds like a good deal, right? It's not a contract so

anyone can break it if they want to.

However I doubt that anyone would want to do that since they will be under the targets of the rest of the classes from that point onwards. Having someone plot against you 24/7 to get some sweet revenge will be pretty troublesome, right?"

All of my words were pure and utter bullshit. Right now I was just using the influence, reputation and the fear that I have amassed upon myself from the others, after the results of the Island Exam and am using that to make every single of my word sound meaningful and direct as if there were no holes within my claims. The fear of the traitor being targeted by not only me but Sakayanagi and Ryuuen as well, I doubt someone would want a taste of that.

With that I put a barrier in the plans of any of the Class-C students to act as the traitor as none of them will have that sum of points. The only person who can now act as a Traitor is someone from Class-A. And someone like Machida, who cares about staying at the top, more than his own personal expenses, I doubt he would hesitate to pay the 500,000 points compensation since he would receive 500,000 points in return and 50 Class Points for his Class. And realising that no other class can act as a traitor because of this contract except him and the passive Ichinose, this whole situation is a win-win for him. No matter how defensive Katsuragi wants their strategy to be, no one will let go of a free W.

And just as I predicted, as they heard about my proposal, the three Class-A students huddled with one another and started whispering to each other for a couple of seconds, before Machida looked back at me with a confident smirk on his face.

"Very well, we accept your conditions Ayanokouji."

Bingo.

"What about you, Ichinose?"

"I don't have any problems with it, I guess since everyone else agrees to it as well. How about you, Ibuki-san?"

"I don't care either way. Do whatever you please.", she replied with a nonchalant tone as I looked back at my classmates.

"You guys have no problems with it as well, right?"

All three of them agreed to the plan to which I internally sighed to myself. It was easy to catch them in my trap. If I'm being honest, I thought that Ichinose would catch onto my plans and set up an argument, however she didn't pose anything of sorts and just went along with it, which I found a little surprising. Well, not like it matters to me though.

"Very well then. Let's go one by one. No one should have any problems with that right?"

All of them nodded to my words as one by one everyone started showing their phone as everyone had the same mails written on it.

「After a period of thorough consideration, you have not been chosen as the "target".」

Soon it was our turn as Yukimura, followed by Hideo showed their mails getting the same result ... as then all the eyes then directed towards Karuizawa and myself.

"Karuizawa-san it's your turn now.", said Ichinose.

"H-huh?! O-oh sure." With a nervous expression on her face, Karuizawa shakily started twiddling her phone, an act which didn't go unnoticed by either Machida and Ichinose. Karuizawa's unease in showing her phone made the both of them narrow their eyes in suspicion for a second before they widened in surprise as they saw the mail.

"Here it is." She showed the mail where just like the other students, the same mail was written on it.

「After a period of thorough consideration, you have not been chosen as the "target".」

Ichinose rose her eyebrows curiously as if she was not expecting that result, before her smile then slowly found themselves being drawn towards me as the other members of the Rabbit group also looked at me.

"So, it seems like you are the only one left, Ayanokouji-kun. I assume you are the Leader?", asked Ichinose to which I just released a small sigh before nodding to her.

"Yes. I indeed am the Leader."

With that I showed everyone my device as unlike the others, only my mail was completely different.

「After a period of thorough consideration, you have been chosen as the "target". We wish you all the best in the exam.」

"I see. So that's why you wanted outcome 1 the most, so that you can get confirmed 1 million points, am I right, Ayanokouji?", asked Ibuki with a small frown on her face.

"Can you blame me though? All humans are in a way controlled by their sense of greed and hunger. And just as Machida said, "a lowly Class-D trash" like me won't be getting such golden opportunities of obtaining 1 million points ever again. A man gotta look out for his needs right?"

Ibuki scoffed at my words with a sarcastic smirk on her face while the Class-A boys almost looked at me with pitiful smirks, most probably thinking of the fact that they would snatch those points from me when one of them acted as the traitor.

Suddenly out of nowhere however, my phone started ringing to which I looked at it confusingly, not expecting someone to call me

during the meeting. And what amplified my confusion even more was the fact that the dialer was none other than Ichinose Honami, who was calmly smiling at me.

"Sorry about that. Unfortunately while scrolling through my phone, I accidentally clicked your number.", she said with her ever present smile on her face as I couldn't help but sigh to myself.

No. That was not an accident Ichinose. You noticed the nervous expression on Karuizawa's face ever since the voting started and when you saw that she was not the Leader and I was, you felt suspicious and thought that we exchanged our phones with one another. And that's why you called me just to see if the phone in my hand rang or the phone in Karuizawa's hand rang.

You may ask how do I know all of this? It's because I fully prepared myself for this exact situation. I knew that she is not someone who would just let go that fact this easily, which still makes me wonder why she is even going along with this voting plan. Since I clearly know that my plan is favouring those who are in Class-A.

I looked at the time and inwardly smirked to myself. My time management throughout the whole meeting looked to be pretty decent. I looked around the whole room to find all the students readying their phone in order to vote at the same time.

"It seems like everyone is ready, so let's start the countdown shall we?"

They all nodded at me as Machida let out a relaxed smile, before smirking at his classmates.

Like dude, at least try to act conspicuous. Your expression is giving everything away. Acting like I didn't see their gestures to one another, I started counting as the whole room got silent while everyone started narrowing their eyes at one another, warning them to not act as the traitor. It was quite the humorous sight seeing them all agree to such a stupid plan and playing under my fiddle, however in the end it's the result that matters, am I right?

Ten

The entire room got silent as the only thing which was audible was my counting. Every single student in my group looked focused and concentrated.

Nine

Eight

Seven

Six

Five

Four

Three

I noticed Machida taking a small glimpse at his phone as his thumbs started hovering over his device as just like me, Ichinose also noticed to which she surprisingly didn't panic or resist and just smiled at the sight as if she didn't care about it at the slightest.

Two

On-

And just as I expected, right before all of us were about to vote simultaneously, with a victorious smirk on his face, Machida did so just a millisecond before the others.

Bingo.

「The (Rabbit) group's test has ended. The students from the (Rabbit) group are no longer required to participate. Please be careful not to disturb the other students」

End of Chapter 92

Words : 3103

I hope everything made sense this chapter. If anyone of you have any queries, feel free to ask. I'll try to answer them as much as possible. Anyways, Imma go watch the Episode 2 of Chainsaw Man now, have a good day.

Anyways hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.

●♠♥♦♣♣♦♥♠●

Chapter 93 : Victory

Season 4 : Chapter 16

"Machida are you serious right now?", with gritted teeth asked Manabe with a frustrated look on her face. She was most probably annoyed at the fact that she missed the chance of getting 500,000 points and now she has to deal with whatever small percentage of shares she will get now. Alas unfortunately for her, she won't be getting that as well.

"Goddammit, why am I even shocked? I should've known that one of the Class-A students wouldn't hesitate to do this since your stupid 'verbal agreement' favours them the most out of everyone", said Yukimura as he pointed his fingers at me with an accusatory look on his face.

"Oi, why are you throwing Ayanokouji-kun under the bus now? When he asked for everyone's agreement, you agreed, right? Why did you not get suspicious back then? Don't try to act all smart and try putting the blame on Ayanokouji-kun.", Karuizawa looked away from her phone and glared at Yukimura as he looked away from me with an annoyed expression on his face, unable to refute her words.

"Now now guys, none of you have any fault in this since everyone agreed, am I right? Class-A got the better of us in this exam, and I hope you will keep your word and distribute the points among us, Machida-kun."

Ichinose immediately tried to lighten the tense atmosphere before her gaze went towards Machida, who was looking like he was on top of the world, basking in his victory.

"Of course, I don't mind giving away the measly 500,000 private points to you guys since I don't require it either way. However I must say, thank you for your generosity Ayanokouji. It's because of your 'deal' that us Class-A will further take a lead in the Class battles. At first I was on edge but it seems like the Island Exam was a fluke huh? You are nothing that much.", with that Machida finished the conversation with a victorious smile as he walked out of the room, his other two classmates following him as the remaining students in the room glared at the three of their retreating backs with frustration.

Attempting to form a frustrated expression, I clenched my fists in

irritation as Yukimura who was accusing me before, now stared at me with a guilty look in his eyes.

"Don't worry man. Mistakes happen with all of us. We just need to improvise on this mistake and learn from it. I'll be expecting more from you in the next exam. All the best, Ayanokouji."

Trying to console me, Yukimura patted my shoulders before walking out of the room, followed by Hideo who just gave me a small smile and a pat of reassurance on my shoulder. The students of Class-C went back to glaring at Karuizawa while Ibuki just released a sarcastic chuckle before walking out of the room.

Karuizawa, who was watching our interaction with a frown on her face, got up from her seat before tugging at my sleeves.

"Let's go, Ayanokouji-kun. We need to discuss this surprising situation with Horikita."

All I did was lazily nod to her words as we started walking out of the room, however Karuizawa's hand got immediately grabbed by the girl of Class-C named Manabe who was looking at my classmate like she was her prey.

"Karuizawa-san, correct? I have some questions for you, will you please answer me?"

"Listen. We are already frustrated with the results and we need to discuss things with our classmates, so we are quite busy at the moment. So I can't answer you at the moment.", Karuizawa replied before yanking her hand away from Manabe who just scowled at her.

"Also please refrain from grabbing my hand so tightly. It's almost like you have an ulterior motive of hurting me behind your interrogation.", with a moderately shocked look on her face, Manabe widened her eyes as Karuizawa started pulling me once again.

"Let's go. Let's not waste any time.", she said.

I realised that beneath her confident mask, Karuizawa in fact was feeling extremely uncomfortable because of this Class-C girl, as her hand was slightly shaking.

"Hey wait!! I wasn't done talking yet.", Manabe tried to gain Karuizawa's attention once again, however this time instead of my blonde haired acquaintance, I looked back towards the Class-C girl who immediately turned silent upon noticing my gaze upon her.

"Even if you aren't done talking, she is done. Don't bother us."

Not even looking back Karuizawa walked out of the room with short quick steps, as I followed her. Soon both of us met up with one another, as her previous uncomfortable expression slowly started to dissipate as a small victorious smile crept up on her face as we high fived one another. Both of us sat inside a nearby

cafe which was quite empty at the moment.

"Looks like everything went well just as you planned huh?", she said.

"Yup. It was quite easy right? All it took was one simple tweak and a little bit of bullshit and all of them got swayed pretty easily, I guess. By the way, your acting while showing your phone was pretty good, y'know? I guess all this time you acting like a bit-disrespectful woman came into use this time."

Karuizawa smiled at my praise before faintly giggling to herself. However soon both of us felt another presence walking towards us as it was none other than Ichinose Honami, the leader of Class-B. Seeing the both of us, all she did was let out a big smile.

"Congratulations on the victory, Ayanokouji-kun. Looks like you played Class-A right within your palms huh? As expected of you.", she said.

Karuizawa immediately widened her eyes in shock at the fact that someone heard our discussion to which Ichinose gave her a reassuring smile.

"Don't worry about anything, Karuizawa-san. I won't reveal anything to anyone. You can place your trust on me."

"....."

"Say Ichinose, I was wondering this for quite some time, but you were aware that I was not the Leader, right?"

"Of course I was aware. The moment from when you revealed that you were the Leader, and you wanted everyone to vote together so that all of us get Private Points, I started feeling suspicious from that point onwards. That's why I said at that time, that we should discuss a little more before coming to an agreement, since I didn't know what was going through your mind.

But the moment, you told everyone about your 'Verbal Agreement' I immediately realised that it was nothing but a ploy to trap Class-A and make them lose some Class Points, since all of us know that the Class-C members wouldn't have that much points and wouldn't let go of 500,000 points just for 50 Class Points, and that it will be uncharacteristic in your eyes if me and my classmates to act as the traitor. So that leaves Class-A."

Ichinose finished her speech with a calm and composed expression as Karuizawa couldn't help but widen her eyes and look like the Pikachu meme once again, surprised at the observation of the leader of Class-B. In a way, I also felt very impressed with Ichinose, however I still had some queries I needed some answers.

"If you knew that much, then why did you just go with the flow and didn't pose any resistance. With this the gap between Class-B and Class-D will lower even further, you know?"

"You are not wrong but think of this, because of this victory of Class-D, in a way the gap between Class-A and Class-B will get lower as well. Also because of this early 'victory' of Class-A, there is no doubt within my mind that the students of Class-A will be feeling a lot more overconfident and throw away their not speaking tactic and will take a more reckless and aggressive approach which we can use against them, right?", with a faint smile Ichinose replied to my question as I once again couldn't help but feel surprised at the intelligence of the girl in front of me. I won't lie, I'm feeling a little glad that I ended the examination early on my own terms, otherwise if Ichinose gained control, I doubt that everything would have gone this smoothly for me.

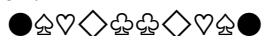
"Anyways, Ayanokouji-kun when I called you to check whether the phone was yours it indeed rang, proving that it was yours. So how was the mail in your phone? Would you mind answering that question?", Ichinose asked with a curious look on her face, as she sat beside me, sandwiching me between her and Karuizawa.

"It was pretty simple really. Both Karuizawa and I took a screenshot of each other's emails and sent it to one another. What I showed you guys was in fact just a screenshot. Nothing more nothing less."

To my words, all Ichinose could do was release a faint chuckle of amusement.

"That was it? How did it not even cross my mind... I thought you made up some complex ways about switching the mails but it was just a simple screenshot.", she remarked with an amused smile as Karuizawa couldn't help but chuckle at her contagious smile as well.

I guess that's all I need to reveal Ichinose for now. There's no need to tell her about the backup since I can just use it on some other groups and get Class-D the complete victory in this exam as well.



Soon, after hanging out with Karuizawa, Airi and Haruka whom I met in the lounge, I soon walked inside my room where I saw Hirata and Yukimura sitting on their bed silently. As soon as they took notice of my presence, both of them smiled bitterly at me.

"Good work there Ayanokouji-kun. It's quite unfortunate that the result didn't go our way."

Yukimura once again frowned, remembering our 'defeat' as I released a small sigh to myself, contemplating if I should just reveal my plan to them or not. In a way it would be beneficial, since Yukimura won't spread the news that we lost, since it would hurt my reputation, but also Hirata knowing my plan would come in handy since he might help me with the other groups as well.

With that I released one small sigh before walking towards the both of them and sat on Hirata's bed before looking at them.

"Forgive me for lying, but actually we didn't lose. I lied about the fact that I was the 'Target'. It was Karuizawa all along."

Hearing my words both of them widened my eyes, as Yukimura's eyes flashed with betrayal and anger for a second, before he composed himself.

"I suppose there was a reason you didn't say that to me, right?", he asked to which I nodded.

"Yup. I didn't tell Hideo either. If I told all of you, who knew at least by chance if one of your masks slipped, our plan would've been destroyed."

"So, what did you actually do Ayanokouji-kun? I assume that you don't mind telling us, since you revealed this much already.", Hirata asked with a curious expression on his face to which I nodded and started narrating the whole process on how I tricked the Class-A boys.

By the end, a smug smile creeped up on Yukimura's face as Hirata tried his hardest to not smile.

"Hah! Those Class-A boys were acting so prideful and egoistic. I can't wait for them to know the results. Imagine the pitiful look on their faces.", said Yukimura as he maintained his smirk as the fourth boy in the room, none other than Koenji Rokusuke finally looked away from his mirror towards my direction before smirking at me.

"Even though that was not the most beautiful plan and had some minor holes, I must say you did the job pretty efficiently Kiyo-boy. Colour me impressed once again. Because of your early victory, I, the perfect existence, also feel motivated enough to end the exam on my own terms as well.", Koenji said, flipping his blonde bangs away from his face.

Hirata and Yukimura immediately looked at him with shock in his eyes as I couldn't help but also feel slightly surprised at Koenji's words.

"Wait! Does that mean, you also figured out the 'Target' of your own group, Koenji?", asked Yukimura to which Koenji once looked at his phone with a smirk on his face as he started twiddling with his device.

"This whole exam is nothing but a simple game of finding the liar, glasses boy. Of course, someone like me will have no trouble finding that exact liar. Now I expect gratitude from all of you because of my generous help. I'll be going to the shower now, adieu."

With that Koenji dropped his phone on his bed and slung his towel over his shoulders as simultaneously all of our phones rang as

we checked the mail.

「The (Monkey) group's test has ended. The students from the (Monkey) group are no longer required to participate. Please be careful not to disturb the other students.」

End of Chapter 93

Words : 3114

Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. A lot of things are still kept in the dark, but finishing this exam early made sense for Ayanokouji here, because of which I followed this plan. Of course, every action of his had layers of back up behind it, which I'll reveal later. However this marks the end of the (Rabbit) and the (Monkey) group kukuku.

Belated happy birthday to Ayanokouji and Ryuen btw. Forgot to say that in last chapter. Hope you guys enjoyed this one. See ya.



Chapter 94 : Pattern

Season 4 : Chapter 17

Ayanokouji POV

Soon because of the exams being completed this early between (Rabbit Group) and (Monkey Group), all of our phones started buzzing with numerous texts from our group chat as Hirata tried to calm the atmosphere down and told everyone that me and Koenji got the victory in our respective groups to which a lot of cheers and congratulations were reciprocated through the texts.

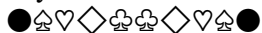
Now not only our own Class, I'm pretty sure Ryuen, Katsuragi and Ichinose will be quite surprised by the quick completion of the monkey group as well. However, based on what Ichinose said earlier, I have no doubts that she might think that someone from Class-A acted as the traitor this time as well, which we can use quite nicely as a camouflage that Ichinose herself created for us.

Quite convenient, I must say. But I can't help but think there is indeed a pattern in this exam, that I need to clock as soon as possible. Soon Koenji walked out of shower humming to himself as water droplets started dripping on the mat from his body, to which Yukimura clicked his tongue in annoyance at the antics of the blonde haired boy.

"Koenji, would you mind revealing the identity of the 'Target' in the Monkey group? I'm fully confident that there is a pattern hidden inside this exam and your help will mean a lot.", with a couple of sweet words, I tried to inflate Koenji's ego wanting to coerce him into giving me the name as all he did was a small 'hmph' before turning around from me.

"The 'Target' is "....." from Class-B, Kiyo boy. You're welcome."

Without speaking any further Koenji lied down on his bed and started humming a song as I kept the name he gave me in the back of my mind.



"You two are completely nuts, you know?"

With an exasperated tone, Suzune blamed me as she passed one glass of cold drink towards my way.

"I'll take that as a compliment. I believe that if I let the meeting continue even further, things might have gotten troublesome for me if Ichinose or Machida gained a little too much control. Also, hey

now look at me. I'll be chilling for the remaining three days while you will have to experience a certain man's 'kukuku' for the time being. Being an associate of the V.I.P sure is hard, huh?"

I immediately got my well deserved result for teasing the woman beside me as she started pinching my cheek with a 'very pure' smile on her face.

"Can you repeat your words again? I think I didn't hear it correctly."

"....."

"Good boy.", she said with satisfaction before letting go of my cheek. "Say, Kiyotaka-kun, how confident are you that Class-D will win the Rabbit Group?"

"100 percent. But I want a little more information so that there is a way I can crack the whole pattern. By the way, are Karuizawa and Kushida the only 'Targets' from Class-D?", I asked her before taking a sip of my cold drinks as she shook her head before replying to me.

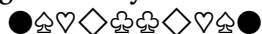
"Minami-san is the final 'Target' from Class-D. She is the 'Target' in the Horse Group."

"Alright. Good to know. So we have 4 Targets in our hand. 3 from our class and 1 from Ichinose's. Now all we need to check is if there is something troublesome hidden in it. Let's leave for now. If someone from other classes finds us at the moment, it would lead to a troublesome situation. If I find any pattern, I'll be sure to let you know, got it?"

Suzune nodded to my words before getting up from her chair.

"Yeah sure. Have a good night. I'll be trying to figure out the pattern by myself as well. I'll try to see if I can figure something out or not."

With that Suzune walked away as I did the same as well. In spite of finishing my group, it seems like my work is far from complete. I sighed to myself.



While everyone was asleep late in the night, a certain brown haired boy was found scribbling on his notebook. There were a couple of pieces of crumpled paper surrounding his bed as he was constantly writing something then erasing it the next second.

It seems like it's not by either ascending order, nor descending order. I tried to look at it alphabetically but that doesn't seem to be the case as well.... Sigh.. Hmm, let's try to connect the dots.

Karuizawa was the target of the Rabbit Group.'

With that Kiyotaka took out the sheet from where he wrote the names of the members of the (Rabbit) Group.

A-Class: Takemoto Shigeru, Machida Kouji, Morishige Takuro

B-Class: Ichinose Honami, Tetsuya Hamaguchi, Ryouta Beppu

C-Class: Ibuki Mio, Manabe Shiho, Yabu Nanami, Yamashita Saki

D-Class: Ayanokouji Kiyotaka, Karuizawa Kei, Sotomura Hideo, Yukimura Teruhiko

'Alright ... so In terms of numbers, (Rabbit) group is the fourth group of the Zodiac signs which we all know. If we use that fact in this format, in terms of the position of the way the names were arranged, the "Target" should have been Ichinose. But that's not the case. It's Karuiwaza.'

Lost in his thoughts however, Kiyotaka noticed something among the names as he slightly narrowed his eyes at it.

'Maybe it has something to do with our alphabets. Let's try it with the letter of our given name first. Since (Rabbit) is the fourth group, let's try it that way to see if by ascending order, the fourth name becomes the Target or not.'

With that, he once again started scribbling the names as he wrote the following :

(Rabbit) [given name] : Beppu, Hamaguchi, Hideo, Honami.

Seeing the results in front of him, Kiyotaka once again released a sigh.

'It's Ichinose once again Sigh. She is like that one character in a gacha game you get over and over again. Even after the exams she is causing me trouble. Alright let's start with our surnames in terms of alphabetical order this time. Hopefully I don't get Ichinose again.'

With this, Kiyotaka started scribbling in ascending order, based on their surnames as he got the following result :

(Rabbit) [Surname] : Ayanokouji, Ibuki, Ichinose, Karuizawa.

Seeing the result in front of his eyes, Kiyotaka nodded his head for a second, feeling a little bit satisfied after getting at least one conclusion.

'So I got Karuizawa after using the method of arranging the letters of the surname according to the number of the group. Since (Rabbit) is the fourth group of the Zodiac Sign and in terms of ascending order, Karuizawa is the 4th person in terms of surnames, she is chosen as the Target.'

This theory of mine is still not credible enough. Let's see if it matches with that of Kushida as well. Dragon is the fifth group. So I guess, let's see if Kushida comes in 5th position there.'

With that Kiyotaka took out his phone and started texting his girlfriend.

「**ayanokouji** : would you mind sending me the paper where you noted down the names of the members of the (Dragon) Group?

seen

horikita suzune is typing

horikita : sure. give me a second.

horikita suzune sent an attachment file. Click to open.

ayanokouji : thanks a lot. I think I figured out the pattern but it's way too early to say that. I'll let you know when I am 100 % confident.

seen

horikita suzune is typing

horikita : alright. Good to know. But you should go to sleep right now. It's way too late to stay awake you know? It might be detrimental for your health.

ayanokouji : why are you awake then?

horikita :

ayanokouji : i know that just like me you are trying to figure out the pattern. My exams are over. I have a lot of free time. I can catch up on my sleep whenever I want. Whereas you still have meetings to attend. Go to sleep.

seen

horikita : very well. It seems it's your victory this time. However don't stay awake for too long or I will beseech the power of the demonic compass upon you.

Good night♡.」

Kiyotaka looked at the final text his girlfriend sent him with a weirded out gaze as it was the first time she sent him an emoji while texting.

'Whatever. Now let's see if my theory is indeed correct or not.'

With that he opened the image file and slowly started jotting down the names of the members of the (Dragon) group on the empty area of the paper.

Class A : Katsuragi Kohei, Nishikawa Ryouko, Shita Shinji, Yano Koharu

Class B : Sayo Ando, Kanzaki Ryuuji, Tsukabe Hitomi

Class C : Oda Takumi, Suzuki Hidetoshi, Sonoda Masashi, Ryuuen Kakeru

Class D : Kushida Kikyuu, Hirata Yousuke, Horikita Suzune

Kiyotaka soon memorised the names of the (Dragon) group and started writing them in the following order.

Dragon : Hirata, Horikita, Kanzaki, Katsuragi, Kushida.

'Bingo. It seems like this indeed is the case. However what if by chance, this pattern only works for our class though ... it's never too bad to stay over conscious.'

With that he sent a message to a certain trusty spy of his, who within a second sent him all the three names of the Targets of Class-A with a message of *'put it to good use, boss👉.'*

●♠♥♦♣♠♦♥♠●

Ayanokouji POV

I woke up at around 10:23 a.m. I looked around the room only to find Koenji humming to himself while scrolling through his mobile phone. Other than him, it was completely empty. It seems like both Yukimura and Hirata are doing their own stuff. As I sat up, Koenji's eyes went towards me as he lazily raised his hand as a means of greeting.

"Good morning Kiyo-boy. I assume you had a decent sleep?", he asked to which I just gave him a small nod before walking towards the bathroom.

"Yeah. Unfortunately I stayed up very late, having to crack the pattern of the exam. So you can say my sleep schedule got screwed up because of it."

All Koenji did was hum to my words with his smug smile as he dropped his phone on the bed.

"So? Have you figured out the pattern, Kiyo-boy?"

"Yup. Having the names of 7 Targets out of 12 made it pretty easy to figure it out. All I needed was to figure it out by putting the names in that exact 1 pattern and then it got pretty easy to figure them all out. Why are you asking? Do you want to know?", I asked him as I started brushing my teeth, to which Koenji appeared to shake his head, refusing my proposal.

"Nope. It's fine for me. I would rather enjoy the remaining days by myself relaxing and enjoying my free time instead of worrying about this exam that I already completed. I know that you want your class to advance as much as possible, but I just want to let you know one thing, Kiyo-boy? You don't have to work 24/7 you know? Otherwise where's the freedom in that?"

With that Koenji put on his headphones once again before humming to himself once again as I couldn't help but rethink his words over and over again.

In order to gain freedom for the rest of my life, I'm putting the small freedom that I gained on the line and am completely wasting it, just for a future which might be uncertain. Ironical, isn't it? Even after staying miles away from that man, it seems like his shackles are still bound all over me controlling each of my actions.

I sighed to myself before splashing some water over my face.

There's no need to think about it now that I've put myself in this deep end. I've made the choice of accepting his proposal right? So I have to stay true to my words. I know that man is anything but a liar ... He can deceive someone or keep information to himself, but he is not someone who will ever lie with a straight face, unlike me. He is too prideful for that.

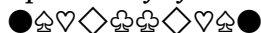
I'll stay true to his word, and if graduating from Class-A is all it takes for me to get my freedom, I'll do whatever it takes. That's a

promise.

Emd of Chapter 94

Words : 2901

Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter ... You guys might get a double update today, later on, if I feel motivated enough ... since I've already completed half of it already.



Chapter 95 : A Tyrant's Frustration

Season 4 : Chapter 18

On the other side of the ship, a certain leader of Class-C was at the moment chilling all by himself not caring about any of the results that were happening around him. He was drinking his iced tea with a relaxed expression on his face as if even if the world ended right now, he wouldn't care about it in the slightest. Beside him stood his trusty right hand man, Albert Yamada who would never leave his side after the historic day of when Ryuuen defeated him making him acknowledge the Magenta haired boy as the true Leader of Class-C. What a beautiful day that indeed was.

Soon, both of the Class-C boys heard some footsteps coming towards their way as arrived a scowling Ibuki, who immediately glared at Ryuuen making him chuckle to himself.

"Kukuku why do you look so angry, Ibuki? Did you finally get rejected by Ayanokouji or something?"

And just like always, Ryuuen's provocation did wonders as Ibuki's glare intensified even more as she looked away from Ryuuen for a second.

"What does Ayanokouji have to do with me feeling irritated? I'm just annoyed at the fact that in spite of you having your own group to take care of, why are you still bothering me.", she said as her eyes found themselves being drawn towards the beautiful sea.

"Kukuku, no matter how far we stay away from each other.. I'll always call you 24/7 Ibuki. I love you, after all.", maintaining his smirk, Ryuuen leaned over his chair as the scowl on Ibuki's face intensified even more.

"Am I starting to experience motion sickness or is it your words that make me wanna barf?"

To her words, all Ryuuen did was laugh to his heart's content before his gaze turned a little serious in comparison to before.

"Say Ibuki, is Ayanokouji really the 'Target' of the (Rabbit) group? Or is it some sort of farce?"

"Don't know about that. Like he literally showed the mail in front of everyone and Ichinose of Class-B called him during the meeting and it was that exact phone where the mail was shown was where the call was seen. So I don't know if Ayanokouji did some insane stuff to find the plot holes of the rules. From what I saw, he indeed

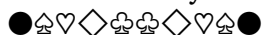
was the Target. You can ask Manabe and the others about that if you have any suspicions.", said Ibuki, not even sparing a glance at the Tyrant of Class-C who just cracked his neck continuing sipping on his drink.

"No need for that. I already got my answers. But the fact that he indeed is the Target is quite troublesome in my opinion. Because of this sudden result, the pattern that I was making in my head doesn't make that much sense anymore.", said Ryuuen as his eyes narrowed in suspicion.

"Also it's weird for Ayanokouji to try the Ichinose strategy. And it's clear as day that his verbal agreement favoured that damn baldy's class the most. Which makes me wonder, are their class in some sort of alliance that we missed? I need to keep a close eye on Horikita and Katsuragi during the meetings. Very well, your work here is done Ibuki. Leave."

"Thank god. The stench of you being an asshole was making me go insane.", replied the blue haired to which Ryuuen did his signature laugh trying to annoy her even more.

"Kukuku love you too bitch."



Ryuuen POV

Much to my disappointment, I couldn't find a single noteworthy interaction between Horikita and Katsuragi. Not only they didn't say a word to one another, they refrained from even looking at one another. Normally I would've found the situation amusing and light more fuel on the fire between them, but this situation is different.

The lack of interaction between any of the Class-A and Class-D students is making me question my theories now. Is there no deal between Ayanokouji and Katsuragi? But if that's the case, then why the hell did he reveal his identity to Katsuragi's goons for no reason? Goddamit why am I not in the same group as Ayanokouji? The suspense is killing me kukuku.

Sigh Might as well focus on my group now. I got the names of the Class-B leaders from Kanzaki but it seems like one of them has already been found out, since the discussion of (Monkey) group was completed yesterday. Which leaves the other two ..

With Kanzaki's deal of sparing at least one of them, in exchange for helping me find the pattern of the exam, I accepted it nevertheless. But now that I have the 6 names of the Targets, I kind of figured out the pattern But there's only one anomaly. That is Ayanokouji.

By following the pattern that I figured out ... The Target of the Rabbit group should be Karuizawa but not Ayanokouji... But Ibuki, Manabe and the other 2 extras of our class were eyewitnesses that

Ayanokouji was the target, and it was proven that he didn't switch phones with Karuizawa since Ichinose apparently called him and that exact phone dialled.

Dammit what I am thinking. It's Ayanokouji after all. There is no point for him in forming a deal with Katsuragi ... If he is not in a deal, then I'm 100 percent sure that he trapped that bald motherfucker's goons in some sort of way, which makes me frustrated since I can't figure it out at the moment. But, if that's the case, then without a doubt, Ayanokouji somehow swapped the mails between him and Karuizawa.

Ayanokouji.... In spite of telling me that he is taking a backseat in this exam, it seems like he still has the intention of controlling everything behind the shadows.

In the Island Exam, I tried to go on a one on one against him and tried to ploy some schemes which in the end bit me right in my ass kukuku. There's no point in playing around this time. Before he figures out the pattern, might as well notify everyone about their respective leaders.

Releasing a small chuckle, I once again scanned the whole room where most of my precious group mates were all silently glaring at one another. Kukuku all of them looked so innocent and cute. Might as well pinch their cheeks later on when they all look shocked and distraught at our overwhelming victory.

I took out my phone and immediately opened the Class-C group chat.

Class-C

ryuuen : Alright motherfuckers. I figured out the pattern on how the exam works. I'm telling the names of the leaders of all the respective groups. Don't think too much and just follow my le-

I couldn't finish my text as all of our phones immediately buzzed together as we opened the mail, as my eyes slightly narrowed at what I was seeing.

「The (Horse) group's test has ended. The students from the (Horse) group are no longer required to participate. Please be careful not to disturb the other students」

Wait what If I'm not wrong, the Target of the (Horse) group was one of the extras of Class-D named Minami... I didn't even tell any of my servants the names, so who the hell snitched?!

Once again, I looked around the room and noticed a very minute smile on Baldy's face while Horikita, Hirata and Kushida looked completely calm, in spite of the fact that they might lose 50 Class Points.

Goddammit this is making me pissed. I once again opened our group chat and started typing the names however immediately once

again all of our phones started buzzing this time... but this time, something insanely fucking crazy happened.

Unlike usual, the buzzing didn't stop after just one mail. It kept going on and on.

「The (Rat) group's test has ended. The students from the (Rat) group are no longer required to participate. Please be careful not to disturb the other students」

「The (Ox) group's test has ended. The students from the (Ox) group are no longer required to participate. Please be careful not to disturb the other students」

「The (Tiger) group's test has ended. The students from the (Tiger) group are no longer required to participate. Please be careful not to disturb the other students」

「The (Snake) group's test has ended. The students from the (Snake) group are no longer required to participate. Please be careful not to disturb the other students」

「The (Goat) group's test has ended. The students from the (Goat) group are no longer required to participate. Please be careful not to disturb the other students」

「The (Rooster) group's test has ended. The students from the (Rooster) group are no longer required to participate. Please be careful not to disturb the other students」

「The (Dog) group's test has ended. The students from the (Dog) group are no longer required to participate. Please be careful not to disturb the other students」

「The (Pig) group's test has ended. The students from the (Pig) group are no longer required to participate. Please be careful not to disturb the other students」

Are you Fucking kidding me? This ... is insane. My eyes instinctively went towards Horikita. All she did was give me a small smirk which further intensified my frustration.

The stupid fucker Kanzaki was looking at me with a questioning gaze, most probably wanting to know if I was the reason behind this absolute chaos

Sigh, this time it's Ayanokouji as well, isn't it? That fucker was without a doubt the person behind this whole fiasco. He has been pulling the strings behind everyone all along huh? Just like me he figured out the pattern but he was one step quicker than me.... What a defeat. I wanna laugh.

Beggars can't be choosers, I guess. In this situation, the least I can do is take away 50 points from Class-D. Not like it will amount to much ... but there's literally nothing else left for me to do... Goddammit.... This is so frustrating. Not only losing 150 points from our Targets being figured out but also losing our lead to

Ayanokouji's class In just Two Special Exams, he completely overturned the entire tide of the Class Battle ... Imagining what he will do in the remaining three years ... it will be exciting to see.

Sighing to myself, I simply went towards the mail and voted Kushida's name to which instantly the mail buzzed around all of our phones.

「The (Dragon) group's test has ended. The students from the (Dragon) group are no longer required to participate. Please be careful not to disturb the other students」

That mail was followed by another mail sent by the school where the following was said :

「Since all the groups have completed their respective exams, the school has decided to post the results of the Special Exam tonight instead of the designated time. Please remain patient for your results and learn from your mistakes, for the betterment of your future. The school thanks you for your participation.」

In spite of the mild frustration that I was feeling at being completely bested by Ayanokouji, this time all being my fault, I still felt the hint of excitement bubbling inside of me as I saw the news that we will be getting the results tonight.

To see how much each Class grew or fell during this exam in comparison to the last one will be a treat to see. I can't wait for it.

"Ryuuen-kun, you were the one who acted as the traitor right?"

Snapping me away from my thoughts was none other than Ayanokouji's girlfriend Horikita who kept smirking at me with a victorious smile, as if she did something...

"Indeed I did. Much like your boyfriend, I came to realise the pattern as well. It was unfortunate that he was one step quicker than me. Otherwise the victory would've been under my hands.", I smirked at her, hiding my inner frustration as that bitch still kept smirking at me, which nearly made me want to rip her face apart.

"That should be thanks to me. Kiyotaka-kun warned me about someone like you figuring out the pattern sooner than later and instructed me to immediately notify him the moment you pick up your phone, so that he can make you feel how it feels to have your prize getting snatched right in front of your face.", the bitch ended her long rant as the other idiots of our group kept looking at her with a dumbfounded gaze.

"I hope you feel satisfied enough after guessing correctly at least one Target out of the 9, Ryuuen-kun. Congratulations."

With a sarcastic chuckle, the bitch walked out of the room followed by the male Ichinose and the traitorous two face, who looked at me with a sadistic smile on her face, which made me

These fuckers really think they are the shit, all the while playing right into the palms of their leader who is controlling them however he wants to... Fucking pathetic.

After the departure of the Class-D fucker, it seemed like Baldy and Kanzaki finally comprehended the whole conversation between us as their eyes widened in realisation.

"What the hell exactly happened?", the purple fucker mumbled out to which all I could do was just laugh at our situation.

"Kukukuku, all of us are completely fucked. That's what happened."

Words : 3034

Tried writing a Ryuuen POV for the first time... Most probably I half assed it but this is the best I could do...

At first I promised you guys of a double update, since I thought the chapter was ready, but after rereading it again, I didn't feel that satisfied. So after some tweaks and changes , this is the end result. Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter.

Btw guess how many points Class-D is getting after this exam. Winner gets a 🏆.

See ya.



Chapter 96 : Class-A?

Season 4 : Chapter 19

It was around 10:45 p.m. in the night as Kiyotaka Ayanokouji, the leader of Class-D walked inside the cafe where he had the discussion with Ichinose and Karuizawa that exact morning. Now, unlike before however, the cafe however was moderately empty as most of the students went to sleep, not bothered to stay awake for their results.

From the notice he got, the school will mostly likely reveal the results at around 11:00 p.m. which was quite late in comparison to usual.

Soon, he walked inside the cafe where he registered the presence of two of his classmates who were lazily chatting with one another, while sipping their coffee. Their distinctive hair colour combination made it nearly impossible to not notice them. As Kiyotaka approached them, they sensed his presence and greeted him with smiles, to which he nodded in return.

"It seems like we are the first to arrive huh? Good evening."

"Good evening Ayanokouji-kun.", said Karuizawa.

"Good evening Kiyotaka-kun.", said Haruka as a small smile was present on her face, before as if a lightbulb just turned on inside her brain, she started rummaging through her bag before taking out a phone, similar to that of the devices that the school gave everyone on the first day of the school. Karuizawa looked at the mobile with a curious and astonished look on her face.

"What's this?", she asked to which a sly smile formed on Haruka's face as she looked at Kiyotaka with an excited glint in her eyes.

"Hey! Can I explain it?! Please!", her actions led to Kiyotaka looking at her weirdly as he slowly nodded to her request feeling uncertain about this sudden excitement bubbling inside his blue haired acquaintance.

"....Sure, but what's with the sudden energy? Did you get high after drinking too much Red Bull or something?" Haruka shook her head in refusal as a small smile formed on her face.

"Nothing like that. It's just whenever you guys discuss exams and class matters, all of you sound so serious and dedicated, you guys look so cool!

Whereas for me, unlike you guys I'm neither smart nor do I get

involved in such matters ... So, when you asked me to be a part of your plan, I felt really ... excited, you know? It's like a feeling of achievement and self satisfaction after you take part in a team victory of sorts. It felt really ... cool. I want to experience it more, I guess."

Finishing her words, Haruka looked up to find Karuizawa staring at her with an astonished and impressed gaze as Haruka started awkwardly chuckling to herself.

"Hehe it seems like I went on a tangent of sorts. Nevermind Kiyotaka-kun, you can expl-"

"No go ahead, Haruka. I'm interested to hear your explanation as well. Right, Karuizawa?", to his words, Karuizawa vigorously started nodding her head before redirecting her smile towards the blue haired maiden.

"I don't think you've realised it, Hasebe-san, but you were the one who sounded really cool. Please explain to me what happened.", said Karuizawa as Haruka's eyes slightly widened in surprise as she looked at her brown haired friend as if she was asking for his permission.

"You really don't mind?"

"Nope. Go ahead."

Hearing Kiyotaka's words, a small excited smirk formed on Haruka's face as she lightly coughed in her hand before standing up from her chair as if she was an orator, who was about to narrate a story.

"Very well. Listen up Karuizawa-san."

"Hmm Hmm."

"So, you know how Class-A in your group acted as a 'traitor' and voted out Ayanokouji-kun right?"

"Duh~ of course I know. I was the 'Target' after all."

"Hush. Let me talk, will you?"

With a frown on her face, Haruka bent her body as if trying to intimidate the blonde haired girl ... However the cute pout on Haruka's face made all her intimidation appeal fall into negative. And just like a master of art, Kiyotaka swiftly directed his gaze away from the two big personalities of his blue haired friend which moved quite fashionably with every single move of hers.

'Someone give her a boob holder, or one day they will pop out.'

"Sure sure. *But you were the one who asked me the question tho ...*" With a pout on her face herself, Karuizawa muttered those words as Kiyotaka couldn't help but sigh to himself.

"I thought you were going to discuss our conversation Haruka. Never thought it would change into a pouting competition."

Both the girls blushed in embarrassment as Kiyotaka looked at

them blankly before sipping his coffee which he ordered a couple of minutes ago.

"Well, alright. So, just like how Class-A figured out the 'Target' in the Rabbit group, Kiyotaka-kun told me that, after their so-called 'success' over the Leader of the enigmatic Class-D leader who got such a big lead in the Island Exam, the Class-A students will start underestimating their competition and might follow the same plan yet again.", as Haruka finished her piece, it was as if all her previous excitement died down as she lazily slumped back on her seat as she started drinking her coffee.

"Sigh I never thought I would say so many words in one sitting. Explaining stuff is pretty hard, huh? You go now. I'm passing the baton to you, Kiyotaka-kun. Gambare Gambare."

With a jolly smile on her face, Haruka slapped the back of Kiyotaka who just stared back at her with a disappointed gaze behind his stoic look to which Haruka nervously chuckled.

"Very well. You were actually explaining pretty well Haruka.", to his words of praise, she smiled.

"Too bad your MP was as low as Karuizawa's intelligence.", her smile fell.

"Oi, that's mean. I don't think I've said this before, but I'm smart af!", with a proud smirk, Karuizawa pointed to herself, however her smirk immediately fell off when the brown haired boy spoke up.

"Oh really? Then please tell me the answer of 11x11 within 5 seconds. 1 2 ..."

With a panicked expression on her face, Karuizawa started scribbling on her hand while using her fingers as a pencil.

"3 4 .. Fi-"

"It's 111!", once again another proud smirk formed on Karuizawa's face which further widened as Kiyotaka nodded to her words with an almost impressed look on his face.

"Yeah. You're an idiot after all."

Karuizawa's smirk fell as Haruka puffed her cheeks containing her laughter.

P.s. she failed.

"Pfft- the answer is 121, Karuizawa-San."

"Hey, I was under a time limit. That's unfair." With an annoyed huff Karuizawa looked away as Kiyotaka took the final sip of his coffee before staring at the both of them.

"Alright. So, as Haruka said ... I thought about the chance that Class-A might get too overconfident and try the same strategy again. Because of that, in spite of the chance, that they follow through with that actual plan, I gave Haruka this new phone with an entirely new sim card and added some fake call records and

transactions so that none of them get suspicious. And just like he instructed her, Haruka at first swapped her and Minami's sim card, and then swapped Minami's sim card with the new one."

"Huh ... but why do so much work? We edited the screenshot with new time and date no? Was it not enough to fool them? Why do you think they will ask to check the phone by themselves?", asked Karuizawa to which Kiyotaka shook his head.

"You don't get it Karuizawa. Ever since it was revealed that I was a part of Student Council, everyone started taking me as a serious threat which further increased even more after our results in the Island Exam ... because of this, they were hesitant to raise such allegations on me, intimidated by my position.

However, I thought that they would charge the Horse group more and further solidify their suspicions, since in their eyes, the other students were not a threat. By the way, did they actually do it Haruka?"

"Nope. They didn't do anything else."

"What a bummer."

"Say Ayanokouji-kun ... how much did all of this cost? All of it sounds way too expensive.", said Karuizawa twirling her blonde bangs.

"Hmm, it indeed was quite costly but with this I can make future deals conspicuously without revealing my identity to anyone. As for your question, it required 550,000 private points."

Immediately both of the girls gasped in shock as all Kiyotaka could do was shrug his shoulders.

"You guys don't have to worry too much though. As the newest members of the Student Council, both me and Suzune will receive 200,000 points each month either way."

"Hehe the perks of being rich huh? I'm so jealous.", with twitching eyebrows Karuizawa said that with a very 'sweet' smile on her face as Kiyotaka couldn't help but want to annoy the blonde gremlin even more.

"Wanna know a fun fact, Karuizawa? After all the transactions, I still have around 160,000 private points left, cuz unlike a certain someone I know how to keep the money in my pocket."

"Hmph."

Soon, breaking them away from their conversation were two pairs of footsteps as the three of them noticed Horikita Suzune walking towards their direction with surprisingly quite a beautiful smile on her face. Behind her was walking none other than her slavally Kushida Kikyuu, who nervously waved at the two girls who waved in return.

Kiyotaka noticed an excited glint in the eyes of his girlfriend who

nearly ran towards him and sat on his lap, making their blonde haired acquaintance let out a whistle.

"Real smooth, Horikita-san. Real Smooth."

All the black haired maiden did was lightly blush in response, however she still kept sitting on his lap, making him release a small sigh.

"As much as I enjoy the feeling, PDA is a no no. Mind getting off of me?"

Horikita looked like she was in deep thought for a second before she looked back at him with a small grin on her face.

"Hmm, how about no?"

"Sigh as troublesome as ever. By the way, how was Ryuuen's reaction? Did he look frustrated?"

Before Horikita could respond to her, Kushida spoke up with an angelic tone in her voice.

"Well, at first he looked very confused but soon it seemed like you were behind the whole fiasco to which he looked really frustrated. The irritated and defeated expression on his fucking face was so delightful to see, it was so satisfying to see."

With a sadistic grin on her face, Kushida replied to Kiyotaka's question to which Haruka and Karuizawa looked very uncomfortable not expecting to hear such crass words coming out of the Class Angel's mouth.

'Wow You really are not holding back anymore, are you Kushida? Fair play, I guess.'

"H-hehe it seems like you don't like Ryuuen-kun that much, Kushida-san.", nervously uttered Karuizawa to which Kushida clenched both of her fists in frustration glaring at the empty table, before masking it with her angelic smile.

"Like hell I'll like that traitorous son of a bitch. That fucker toyed with my feelings and then threw me away. I hope he kills himself."

The contrast in Kushida's tone and her crass, insulting words, made Karuizawa and Haruka feel shivers in their spine as both of them looked towards Kiyotaka asking him for context of the sudden hatred, as he whispered in both of their ears.

"Don't worry. Kushida actually liked Ryuuen but got rejected. That's why she hates him now. A maiden's love is truly terrifying isn't it?"

"Ah, so that's the case."

"Naruhodo naruhodo."

"Hehehe who knew that out of all the boys in the school, she will fall for him out of all people."

"I guess bad boys are her type."

Kushida looked at Karuizawa and Haruka with a confused gaze as

the two of them kept muttering to themselves.

"Wait... I think you two are misunderstanding something."

Bzz Bzz Bzz

Snapping them away from the conversation, all of their phones buzzed in synchronicity as they looked at each other with a moderately excited gaze.

"After this exam, which Class do you think we will advance to?" asked Karuizawa to which Haruka nonchalantly shrugged her shoulders.

"Class-C? I don't really know."

"What about you two?", the blonde haired girl then directed the question to which both Kiyotaka and Horikita gave her the reply at the same time.

"Class-A / Class-A"

Both of them looked towards each other immediately as Suzune wryly smiled at him.

"You already did the calculation?", she asked.

"You bet I did.", he replied.

"W-wait are you serious?", as if she didn't believe that answer Karuizawa once again asked for the confirmation as Haruka and Kushida who looked just as shocked, wore bitter smiles on their faces.

"Y-yeah. Isn't it way too early?", asked Kushida to which Kiyotaka sighed in response.

"Just read the mail. I guess they will post the Class standings by the end of it."

With that all of them clicked the mail where the following results were given :

(Rat) —> Due to the Traitor's Correct Assessment. Outcome 3.

(Cow) —> Due to the Traitor's Correct Assessment. Outcome 3.

(Tiger) —> Due to the Traitor's Correct Assessment. Outcome 3.

(Rabbit) —> Due to the Traitor's Wrong Assessment. Outcome 4.

(Dragon) —> Due to the Traitor's Correct Assessment. Outcome 3.

(Snake) —> Due to the Traitor's Correct Assessment. Outcome 3.

(Horse) —> Due to the Traitor's Wrong Assessment. Outcome 4.

(Sheep) —> Due to the Traitor's Correct Assessment. Outcome 3.

(Monkey) —> Due to the Traitor's Correct Assessment. Outcome 3.

(Bird) —> Due to the Traitor's Correct Assessment. Outcome 3.

(Dog) —> Due to the Traitor's Correct Assessment. Outcome 3.

(Boar) —> Due to the Traitor's Correct Assessment. Outcome 3.

Following the results of the outcomes were the increase and decrease in Class Points and Private Points which were written below.

Class-A : -250 Class Points + 0 Private Points

Class-B : -150 Class Points + 0 Private Points

Class-C : -100 Class Points + 500,000 Private Points

Class-D : +500 Class Points + 5,500,000 Private Points.

Seeing the results, all the three girl's jaws nearly dropped to the floor in shock as Kiyotaka and Horikita shared a small fist bump after their overwhelming victory...

"T-this T-his is ludicrous.", said Haruka.

"When I thought you guys said Class-A, I thought you guys were being too optimistic ... But now I think it's not that far away.", said Kushida.

"You're wrong on that part Kushida. It's not 'that far away' it's now we are 'far away at the top'. I made the calculations an hour ago based on the results. See it with your own eyes."

With that Kiyotaka handed the three girls a sheet of paper as their eyes widened in surprise as they read the contents in it.

Class Standings [Post Zodiac Exam]

Katsuragi's Class : $1026 - 250 = 776$

Ichinose's Class : $725 - 150 = 575$

Ryuuen's Class : $492 - 100 = 392$

Ayanokouji's Class : $487 + 500 = 987$

Prior Standings :

Class-A : 1026

Class-B : 725

Class-C : 492

Class-D : 487

New Standings :

Class-A : 987 [Class-D]

Class-B : 776 [Class-A]

Class-C : 575 [Class-B]

Class-D : 392 [Class-C]

[.....] = Former Class

'I guess my mission is already gaining quite the headstart huh? How amusing indeed.'

End of Chapter 96

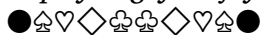
Words : 3554

Quite a few of you guys guessed the results correctly for which all of you get a bread. Congratulations :).

Sheesh, finally got done with the Zodiac Exam. Truth to be told,

unlike the Island Exam, I didn't have any plans for this one. I just wrote the arc on the fly... These were some troublesome chapters to write ngl. But hey, finally got through the trouble and finished it. That's all that matters I guess.

Hope you guys enjoyed the chapter. See ya.



Chapter 97 : The Finale

Season 4 : Chapter 20

It's been a couple of days since the results of the Zodiac exam, and we all returned back to our dorms. After the results of the Zodiac exam, It was as if the entire first year batch turned around at once. For the first time in the history of ANHS a Class-D advanced to Class-A, even that within such a short time. For everyone else, it was truly what one calls a miracle. I still remember when Chabashira-sensei first saw me and Suzune after the results ... she enveloped the both of us in a big hug which made me feel some sort of way...

For some reason, I felt safe and comfortable, which was pretty unusual. I almost didn't want to let go of her hug ... but what happened next was even more shocking as I noticed small droplets of water forming near the tear ducts of Chabashira-sensei's eyes ... as she laughed it off with a big, beautiful smile on her face.

Chabashira-sensei's teary laugh of accomplishment, Suzune's excited smile of achievement, my friends' cheers and happiness ... It was at that time, I realised one thing.

In spite of advancing to Class-A being my own personal selfish mission all along, my own personal needs kind of intertwined with these people whose influence rubbed off on me in various peculiar ways which sort of made me think twice before taking every single step ... as I think to myself, will this action of mine result in anyone having to pay for the consequences....

I knew just how much screwed up in the head I was. I knew just how wrong my mentality was ... which is why whenever I interacted with anyone with a different sort of thinking in comparison to me ... I tried to learn from them as much as I possibly could.

Ignore the abilities ... Ignore the statistics ... Ignore the Talents ... Ignore the Records.

I wanted to learn 'How to be a proper Human Being to live in this society as a respectable man without causing any harm to my loved ones...'

I know ... it might sound pretty ironic coming from someone like me... but that's what I believe. These past few months, these people unconsciously helped me a lot in learning such new things and

helped me experience moments that the 'Young me' would've never thought would be possible in my lifetime.

I ... never liked that man. More like never cared for him. His selfish way of dumping all his personal desires over a little child without even taking any opinion from him was pretty annoying ... him killing all the 'failures' was disgraceful in my eyes ... but even so, I never really 'hated' him, most probably since he took my emotions away at such a young age.

But I would lie if I say I'm not thankful to him. It's because of his 'Test' that I finally experienced all of these new things and I couldn't be more fulfilled than that. If there was a condition that I would have to return after three years, I still would've been fulfilled enough to return back to that place without any resistance.

But, fortunately that's not the case. I don't have any idea on what went inside that man's head when he thought that it would be a good idea to admit me in this institution.

Who knows, maybe he realised how much of a hardass he was and wanted to give me a vacation Yeah, no way that's happening. He is too much of a visionary to let his masterpiece lay free without any test and let it rot.

But whatever is on his head, whatever twisted plans he is making about me, I'll still be grateful to him since he gave me this opportunity to learn so many new things...

The moment I will meet him once again ... No matter what he plans for me, hopefully I won't forget to say "Thank you" to him.

"Kiyotaka-kun, what's up?"

Snapping me away from my thoughts was none other than my girlfriend who was sleeping on my bed, wrapping herself in a panda onesie. She looked incredibly cute and cuddly, because of which I just shook my head before wrapping Cuddlykita in a hug, making her a small spoon, as she just giggled in return.

"Nothing much. I was just thinking to myself about how much my life has changed in just a few months. It's just so crazy you know?"

Suzune sighed to my words before turning her body towards me and hugged me tightly like a koala.

"Sometimes I think that as well. It's crazy how everything around you is black and white one time, and within the next cut, it gets filled with colours huh? The way life just throws the curve ball at us so unexpectedly is insane ... like we were just Class-D two days ago, and now we are the 'Top' Class now.

Before everyone looked at us with disgust, now they look at us with envy and jealousy. Before they looked at us with a mocking gaze, now they look at us as if we are a threat.

Life truly is unexpected, don't you agree?"

happen f-for a long time rig- *cough*"

"Drink some water please. Please refrain from speaking too much."

A bespectacled man wearing a white lab coat took off his glasses and wiped away his tears from his eye duct before looking down at the man he was talking with.

"Say ... Morishige, where am I?"

The man Morishige was talking to, looked like he was in a state of trance as if he had no idea of where he was, what's going on with him, what's around him ...

It was as if he was hypnotised.

"You are in the hospital, Professor. The Doctors tried their best but it seems like this is it... We tried everything. We offered them all the money we could just so they could save you, but all of them said one thing. It is impossible now."

Morishige grabbed the man's hand as tears started streaming from his eyes, some falling even on the man's pale white T-Shirt.

"You gave me everything, Professor. You gave me food, a place to stay, people with whom I could spend time with and you helped me nurture my own skills...

I could never repay you for all the things that you did for me, Professor. I'm truly grateful."

The person he was talking to, tried to chuckle at his sweet words, however that resulted in yet another coughing fit, draining his last remaining energy from him as well. However in spite of his assistant panicking trying to make him drink some water, he stated his piece.

"You know Morishige... I'm not a *ve-cough-ry* good person. For my own goals, I destroyed lives, I destroyed relationships, I destroyed families-*cough-* ... all for the sake of my selfish desires. No one in the facility actually cared for me since I was not a person to care for in the first place But you *cough* were there for me. For which I'm truly grateful you-*cough-ng* man."

"Professor...."

"Say, is it day or night at the moment?"

"It's 12 in the afternoon Sir."

"Hah ... So amusing.. Because all I see is darkness in front of me."

"....." not wanting to say a thing, the bespectacled man kept quiet, trying his best to control his tears streaming from his face ... as he saw his 'Father Figure' slowly perishing right in front of his own eyes.

"My head hurts It's as if someone is constantly beating it up with a hammer. Say.. what was my name again?"

'Dammit... he is losing his sense of thinking and memories ...'

".... It's Atsuomi Ayanokouji Sir."

"Oh right, Ayanokouji... this reminds me of my son. His name was Kiyotaka right?"

'You literally were writing him a letter the other day, Sensei.'

Morishige sadly smiled at Atsuomi's words not wanting to interrupt the man who was most probably saying his last words, as the elder man kept muttering to himself.

"Yeah ... Kiyotaka. He is such a healthy boy don't you think? He looks just like you ...

.....

.....

It's unfortunate that he had to get the same kind of eye as mine instead of yours ... but I'm glad that he got your face.

.....

.....

This boy of mine ... I'll raise him well just like you wanted to.

I'll be the best mother and father in the world so that he could never feel your absence...

Why do you have to go away so quickly...

We had so much more things to do together.

We could've raised Kiyotaka together...

Why"

The man found himself in yet another coughing fit ... as blood started dribbling through his mouth as Morishige quickly wiped out the blood with a towel, all the while trying his best to keep himself together.

Atsuomi however, didn't pay any attention towards it as if his mind was completely detached from his body.

"This boy ... I will make him the best human being. The perfect person.

And I will make him the happiest person in the world ...

I promise you Keiko..."

Beep beep beep

The heart monitor started going haywire for a few seconds before it completely stilled. Morishige let out a shaky breath as he looked down at the man, who for the first and final time, was sleeping with a smile on his face.

On that day, Atsuomi Ayanokouji... died of Grade IV Brain Tumour- Glioblastoma.

Morishige who was listening to Atsuomi Ayanokouji's mutterings all this time, just took off his glasses and slumped on the chair beside him, as he heard the quick footsteps of the Doctors and the

nurses coming towards their room.

As if all his energy was drained out of his body, Morishige stood lifelessly in front of his bed as he had no idea on what to do anymore. The only reason people actually took notice of him was because he was the trusted assistant of Professor Ayanokouji... and no one else really interacted with him other than work, that much. It's as if the fact that he actually respected Professor, made everyone dislike him...

And because of this, here he is all alone, with no else left by his side anymore. No family, no wife, no friends. His only source of interaction is also gone now...

I don't think I also have anything else left to do with my life. Even the Professor is dying. What is my purpose for being alive now?'

His eyes then found themselves being drawn towards the letter, which was sitting on the empty counter beside his bed. Morishige sadly smiled before picking up that letter and stuffing it in his pocket.

"....."

I guess you left me with one last mission before I end my life, Sensei. I guess all I need to do is now send this letter to Ayanokouji Kiyotaka and then serve my purpose to this world."

●♠♥♦♣♠♦♥♠●

The moment I opened my eyes, all I saw was darkness ... My eyes couldn't register a single thing as it was completely pitch black.

So this is death, huh? How intriguing.

Ching!!!!!!

Suddenly out of nowhere a shrill ear piercing sound started reverberating throughout the whole area as I couldn't help but cover my ears as instant reflex. That shrill sound went on and on for a couple of minutes after which it stopped.

And just like before the atmosphere got turned completely still, yet again. But soon however, some deranged, modified voices started creeping through my ears as I concentrated hard on figuring out what they were trying to say and unsurprisingly, they were cussing out.

"YOU KILLED HIM."

"You murderer. You killed my son."

"Why did you have to kill my daughter?"

"What did we ever do to you?"

Ah, I see... So this is hell? I looked down at myself to see that I'm back at my younger self's bodies without any wrinkles, without my frown Without my scarred palms.

Sigh.. This brings back memories.

I always thought that hell meant burning fire, with temperature

so hot that you would want to kill yourself but cant and then repent for your sins... but this, to relive your past self's actions, dying in the guilt, having everyone pointing their fingers at you..

Drip

Huh? I felt something fall over my head ... I touched the back of it only to find my palms covered in blood.

Small droplets of blood gradually started falling by the means of rain, soon covering my entire body in it.

"How does it feel huh?"

"This is the blood of every single life that you took away."

"You murderer."

"I hope you never get happiness and stay trapped in here for eternity."

How do I feel ... huh? I feel disappointed that I never got to finish my goal.

I feel disappointed that I couldn't witness my Masterpiece prosper in life.

But ... More importantly I felt disappointed in myself.

I did so many cruel things all for my goal... But in the end I lost to some simple illness which made it incomplete...

This made me think to myself... was everything I did upto all this point meaningless??

All the lives I ended , all the families I destroyed, all the blood that I made them shed ... was it all pointless? What exactly was my mission all along?

This blood in my hand ... What's the point of it staying in my hand ... Is this the blood of failure?

I truly am the worst person in the world huh? The worst of the worst.

This blood ... I feel disgusted by it. I feel disgusted by myself ... I want to end it ... I want to end myself ... I just want everything to end now.

"Is that what you truly want?"

Huh?

That voice

I.. I know that voice. There's no way am I mistaking that voice for someone else.

I looked around frantically trying to find the source of the location from where the voice was coming from, but unfortunately couldn't do so because of the pitch black darkness I was trapped in.

Sigh

However, much to my surprise, a small beam of light suddenly came out of nowhere as the darkness started slowly dissipating

As now, I found myself sitting underneath the clear blue skies

amidst the clouds.

I felt a pair of hands grabbing my bloodied, dirty palms as the touch felt Reminiscing. The smooth, soft skin of hers ... the feeling of her hand on mine .. there's no way I could ever forget it.

"Keiko"

Just like before, she looked at me with the beautiful smile I fell in love with, as I couldn't help but find the pain in my heart bearable anymore.

"Hello Atsu. Long time no see huh? Looks like you don't use your glasses anymore. I still have a pair with me. Want it?"

What is this situation? This makes me want to laugh. I couldn't believe what I was seeing in front of my eyes

It was none other than my wife I wanted to cry and tell her how much I missed her. I wanted to smile at her, finally finding her yet again but alas, I couldn't give her a suitable response and just let out a dry chuckle.

"What's with you? You look like your highschool self. Did dying turn you back to your younger days?"

"Hmph. Big talk coming from someone who couldn't fulfil his promise... You couldn't keep Kiyotaka happy after all."

Hearing that name. ... It makes the lingering pain in my heart increase more.

"That boy ... he was truly exceptional. I wanted him to make my dreams come true since I was too weak and pathetic to do it by myself. You must hate me for this right?"

"Of course. I hate you with all my heart. You are nothing but a murderer after all. Do you have any idea how shocked I was to find my ever loving husband, turn into a cold hearted killing machine amidst my absence?"

She pointed her fingers at me with a small frown on her face as I couldn't help but slightly bow my head in apology. I guess even after all these years, my husband instincts are still kicking in.

Hearing her words ... almost made my heart shatter to pieces but I couldn't help but smile at her.

"As goody-two shoes as ever huh?"

"A person who took the lives of hundreds and hundreds of people has no right to mock me."

"....That seems about right."

"You know Atsu, I hate you for everything you have done. I wanted to slap you, kick you, punch you numerous times watching you all the way from up here... but of all the disgraceful and deplorable things you did... even if you didn't fulfil my wish, in a way you unknowingly achieved it."

Huh?

With a snap of her finger, a vortex-like screen appeared in front of our screen as I saw Kiyotaka sleeping in bed together with a beautiful black haired girl who was clinging to him with her dear life. However what I saw, made my eyes nearly pop out of its sockets, as Keiko smiled at me.

"You see it, right? Kiyotaka is the happiest he has ever been. He has friends, a caring teacher, some entertaining rivals, and a nearly perfect girlfriend who always looks out for him.

That boy... experienced so much growth in such a short time that it's nearly unbelievable. Just look at him now, just like when you eternally slept, Kiyotaka is also sleeping while unconsciously smiling to himself. Like father, like son, am I right?"

That's right... Kiyotaka was .. smiling. I can't believe my eyes. I felt Keiko grab both sides of my face as she kindly smiled at me.

"You wanted to fulfil my wish, correct? You knew that your time was coming to an end and you wanted Kiyotaka to enjoy his youth in a safe and sound environment right?"

Since we all know that the Class-A condition was nothing but bullshit, it's way too easy for someone like him. Just look at this, his class already advanced from D to A in only 2 exams..."

A small smirk crept up on my face as I saw the results.

"As expected of my masterp-ow."

I couldn't finish my sentence as I felt Keiko pinching my cheek while looking at me with a frown.

"Not your masterpiece. He is your son. **Our** son. Got it?"

"....."

I couldn't give her a reply as she lightly caressed my cheeks with her kind, caring smile.

"That's our son and always will be. Your last mission in your life was to fulfil my promise and make Kiyotaka the happiest he has ever been, right?"

"....."

I couldn't reply to her words, as she pouted at me before viciously pinching my cheek with a frustrated smile on her face.

"Right?"

"...yes."

Her frustrated look immediately disappeared as her smile turned jolly again.

"Well, you certainly completed it. Now.... since we are both trapped in this void and have nothing much to do anymore, let's watch our baby boy grow into a fine man together, shall we?"

That- doesn't sound bad, at all.

Her contagious smile brought back some of my memories that I tried to hide inside the deepest corners of my hearts, as they started

resurfacing back inside my mind again.

While I was carrying out my mission, all for my goals, I really tried to forget, how much I was in love with this woman, huh

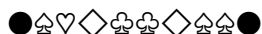
Snapping my away from my thoughts, I felt Keiko's hand grabbing me as she looked at me with her beautiful smile and nodded at me to which I tried my hardest I could....

"Your wish is my command."

The End

Or.....

Is it?



"Good afternoon Ayanokouji-kun. I'm extremely sorry for calling you today on such short notice."

The man in front of Kiyotaka smiled at him, however for some reason Kiyotaka could feel a small tinge of sadness, hidden behind the words of the man in front of him.

"Don't worry about it, Chairman Sakayanagi. Our training for the Sports Festival was close to being done, so I had enough free time to not find this as a hindrance to our practice. The fact that you called me must mean that it's quite an important matter, isn't it?"

Chabashira Sae, Kiyotaka's homeroom teacher was peeking through the peephole with a moderately concerned look on her face, as she had no idea on the reason The Chairman called her favourite student out of nowhere.

"I see. I'm glad to know that this meeting is not obstructing any of your plans. And as you said before, yes. This is quite the important matter, and I thought that I should let you know as soon as possible."

'What's going on? Does this have something to do with that man?'

"I'm feeling a little lost, mr. Chairman. Would you mind clarifying the situation?"

"Very well...."

He quieted down and sat completely still for a second, as if he was thinking to himself 'How should I choose my next words...' Before he composed himself and masked his uncomfortable expression with the trademark smug smile of the Sakayanagis.

"You do know that there is a rule that there should be no communication between the people of this institution and the outside world for three years, right?"

"...Right."

'Where are you going with this?'

"But under certain circumstances, that rule can change if I convince the Government Officials hard enough for them to oblige. Perks of having social power, I guess."

He mirthfully chuckled to himself as the brown haired boy slightly narrowed his eyes... trying to comprehend the situation he found himself in....

"And the situation I found myself in last night was ... how I do say, really peculiar in my eyes.

"What do you mean, Chairman?"

Sighing to himself, Mr.Sakayanagi stood up from his chair and

out of his pocket, he took out a Letter? Before he walked towards Kiyotaka and gently placed it in his palms, before kindly smiling at him.

"I know that the situation you are finding yourself in is quite problematic and odd and that you have no idea about what is going on Trust me and read this letter. I promise you, all your doubts would be erased. Also before you ask, don't worry I didn't read any confidential information."

'Confidential information?'

With that Chairman Sakayanagi gently patted Kiyotaka's shoulders before sitting back down as the brown haired boy finally opened the letter and started reading the contents inside of it.....

If one could read faces and expressions, they could clearly notice Ayanokouji's dull hollow eyes slowly widening further and further as he was reading through the letter.

Aside from that, his hands unconsciously crumpling the end sides of the letter, his feet constantly tapping on the ground and the minute twitching of his eyebrows... There was only one possible theory... Ayanokouji was shocked, conflicted and anxious....

Soon, after he was seemingly done with his letter, his hands lazily fell to his side as the letter fell on the ground, as the brown haired boy looked at the clear blue sky from the windows of the institution with a hollow, stoic look on his face, as he muttered to himself.

"And here I thought that I would say 'Thank you' to you once I graduate.... You really are dead, huh...."

"Life truly is unexpected, don't you agree?"

The words that his girlfriend said to him yesterday started ringing in Kiyotaka's ears as he couldn't help but agree to it.

"It indeed is. Life truly is unexpected."

The End

Words : 5776

Total Words of the Entire Story : 306,261

This marks the end of the book which literally took so much of my time to make lmao.

***February 21st :** I still remember the day when I started writing this story, only because I got inspired from the story of a good friend of mine LumineNoLongerActive 's "Kiyopon can't communicate" and wanted to make a relatively 'hated' character of that time Horikita ... and just wanted to turn her into a loveable character.*

Who knew that such a small inspiration and a small wish to turn a character 'I disliked' to someone I like would result in it having 97 chapters and 400k reads by the end

I spent lot of time and effort in order to finally go through with it in

the end and not drop it in the middle.

There were a lot of times I felt like there is nothing much left for me to write or that I got bored writing this... but still in the end, I somehow got through it and this was the end result.

Now ... I know a lot of you are gutted that I'm ending this at just after the Zodiac Exam ... and not continuing with it... but to be honest, I thought this would be a decent enough conclusion to the story xD.

Hope you guys enjoyed the story and feel free to share your opinions on what part you enjoyed and what you didn't enjoy....

I know a lot of people dropped this story on the last couple of chapters, maybe they got bored of it or maybe they are not online anymore, but for the people who stayed through the end, I thank you all for reading this to the end. I can't be more thankful :). Every single comment whether it was a joke comment or a genuine criticism, all of them meant a lot to me and I enjoyed reading every single comment....

I guess this is the end of this journey huh

Who knows maybe we will start a new one later on...

Classroom of the Elite : After Story (Kiyotaka x Suzune)

?

Only time will tell, I guess :).

Hope you guys enjoyed the ride. See ya.

